



Bodleian Libraries

UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

This book is part of the collection held by the Bodleian Libraries and scanned by Google, Inc. for the Google Books Library Project.

For more information see:

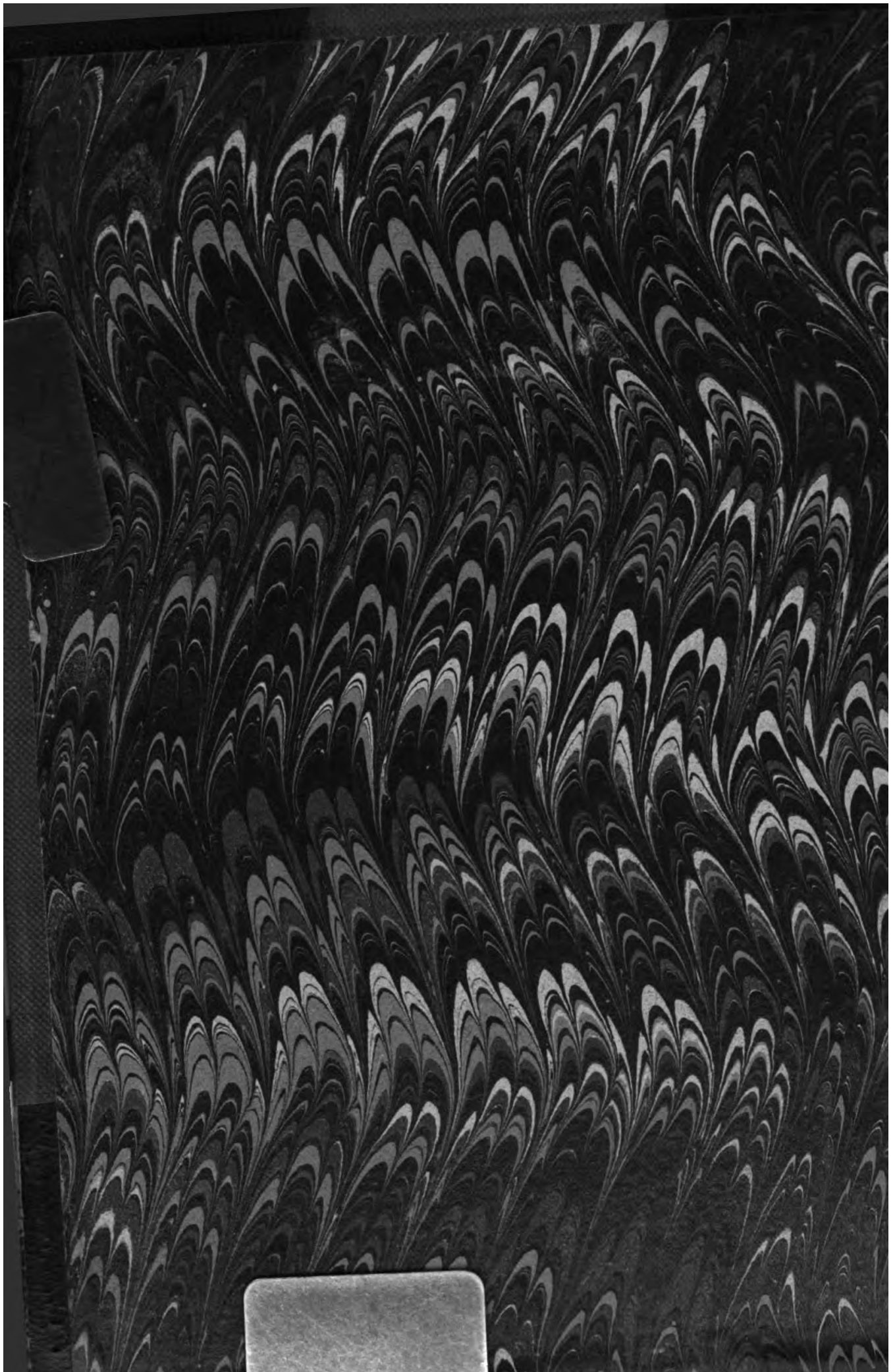
<http://www.bodleian.ox.ac.uk/dbooks>



This work is licensed under a Creative Commons Attribution-NonCommercial-ShareAlike 2.0 UK: England & Wales (CC BY-NC-SA 2.0) licence.

OXFORD
UNIVERSITY
SCHOOL OF
ENGLISH

ENGLISH FACULTY LIBRARY
St. Cross Building, Oxford



3

Oxford University
ENGLISH FACULTY LIBRARY

Manor Road
Oxford OX1 3UQ
Telephone: (0865) 71050

Opening Hours:

Monday to Friday: 9.30 a.m. to 7 p.m. in Full Term.
(9.30 a.m. to 1 p.m., and 2 p.m. to 4 p.m. in Vacations.)

Saturday: 9.30 a.m. to 12.30 p.m. in Full Term only (closed in Vacations).
The Library is closed for ten days at Christmas and at Easter, on
Encaenia Day, and for six weeks in August and September.

*This book should be returned on or before the latest date
below:*

CANCELLED 1994

28 JUN 1996

CANCELLED 1990

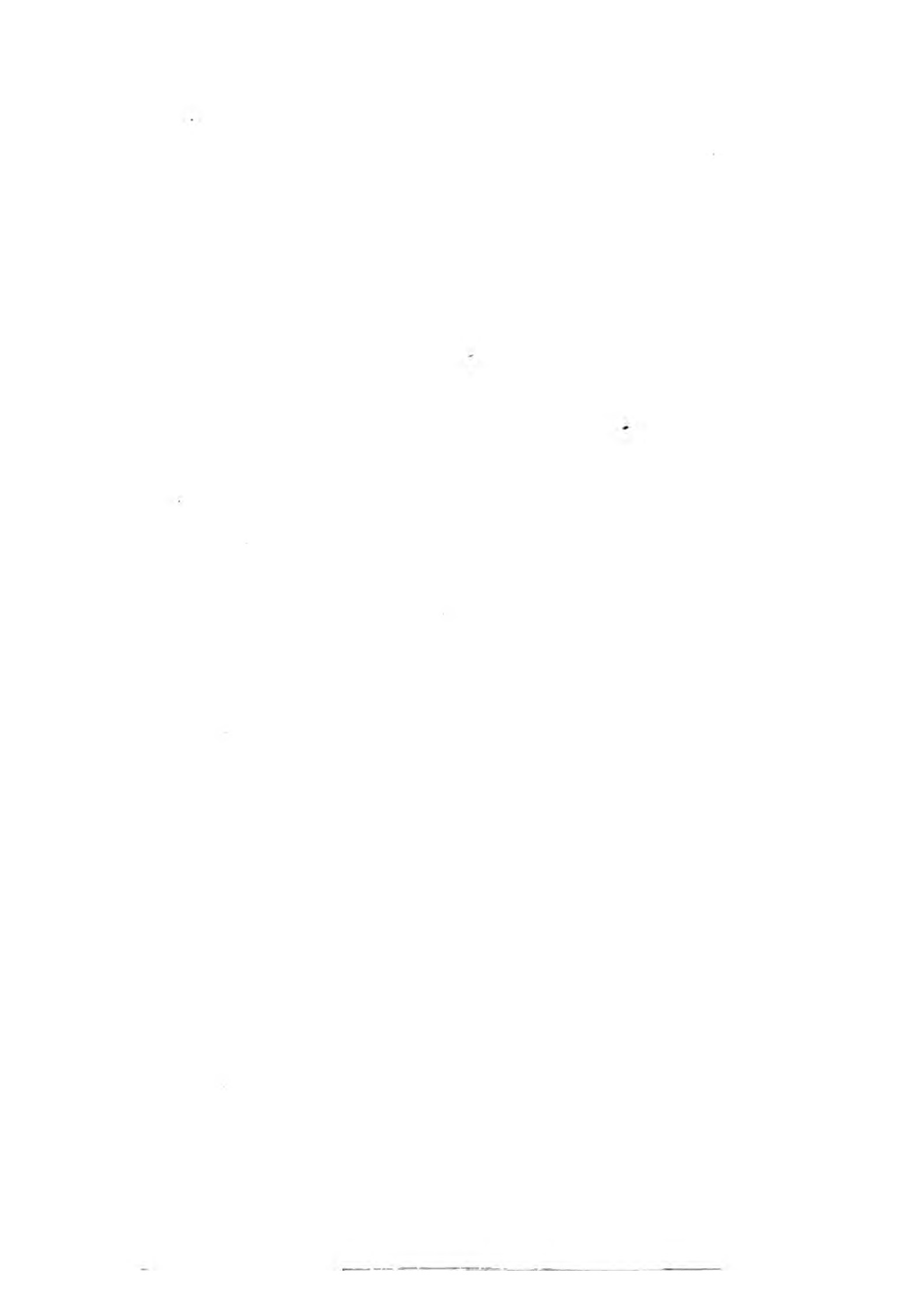
CANCELLED
56 MAY 1999

*Readers are asked to protect Library books from rain, etc.
Any volumes which are lost, defaced with notes, or otherwise
damaged, may have to be replaced by the Reader responsible.*



300029463R

G 11.2 [Per]



Bishop Percy's
Folio Manuscript.

Ballads and Romances.

EDITED BY

JOHN W. HALES, M.A.

LATE FELLOW AND ASSISTANT TUTOR OF CHRIST'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE

AND

FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL, M.A.

OF TRINITY HALL, CAMBRIDGE.

(ASSISTED BY PROFESSOR CHILD, W. CHAPPELL, Esq., &c. &c.)

Vol. III.

LONDON :

N. TRÜBNER & CO., 60 PATERNOSTER ROW.

1868.

Price Fifteen Shillings.

Early English Text Society.

Committee of Management :

DANBY P. FRY, Esq. RICHARD MORRIS, Esq.
FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL, Esq. H. T. PARKER, Esq.
FITZEDWARD HALL, Esq. REV. GEORGE G. PERRY.
REV. J. RAWSON LUMBY. REV. WALTER W. SKEAT.
HENRY B. WHEATLEY, Esq.

(With power to add Workers to their number.)

Honorary Secretary :

HENRY B. WHEATLEY, Esq., 53 BERNERS STREET, LONDON, W.

Bankers :

THE UNION BANK OF LONDON, REGENT STREET BRANCH,
14 ARGYLL PLACE, W.

The Publications for 1864-65 and '66 are out of print, but a *Reprinting Fund* is now open for reprinting them. The texts of 1864 are now at press. More subscribers are wanted for the other years. A few copies of separate texts remain: of No. 4,—Sir Gawayne and the Green Knight, ab. 1320—30, edited by R. Morris, Esq., 10s.; and No. 5, of the Orthographie and Congruitie of the Britan Tongue, be Alexander Hume, ab. 1617 A.D., edited by Henry B. Wheatley, Esq., 4s.

No. 1 is Early English Alliterative Poems, ab. 1320-30, A.D.; 2, Arthur, ab. 1440 A.D.; 3, Lauder on the Dewtie of Kyngis, &c. 1556 A.D.; 6, Lancelot of the Laik, ab. 1500; 7, Genesis and Exodus, ab. 1250; 8, Morte Arthure, ab. 1440; 9, Thynne on Chaucer's Works, 1598; 10, Merlin, ab. 1450, Pt. I.; 11, Lyndesay's Monarche, &c. 1552, Pt. I.; 12, The Wright's Chaste Wife, ab. 1462.

The Publications for 1866 are—

13. SEINTE MARHERETE, be Meiden ant Martyr. Three Texts of ab. A.D. 1200, 1310, 1330. First edited in 1862 by the Rev. Oswald Cockayne, M.A., and now re-issued. 2s.
14. THE ROMANCE OF KYNG HORN, FLORIS AND BLANCHEFLOUR, AND THE ASSUMPTION OF THE BLESSED VIRGIN. Edited from the MS. in the Library of the University of Cambridge, by the Rev. J. Rawson Lumby. 3s. 6d.
15. POLITICAL, RELIGIOUS, AND LOVE POEMS, from the Lambeth MS. No. 306, and other sources. Edited by F. J. Furnivall, Esq., M.A. 7s. 6d.
16. A TRETICE IN ENGLISCH breuely drawe out of be book of Quintis essencijs in Latyn, þat Hermys be prophete and king of Egipt, after þe flood of Noe, fader of Philosophris, hadde by reuelacioun of an aungil of God to him sente. Edited from the Sloane MS. 73, by F. J. Furnivall, Esq., M.A. 1s.
17. PARALLEL EXTRACTS FROM TWENTY-NINE MSS. OF PIERS PLOWMAN, with Comments, and a Proposal for the Society's Three-Text Edition of the Poem. By the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 1s.
18. HALL MEIDENHAD, ab. 1200 A.D. Edited for the first time from the MS. (with a translation), by the Rev. Oswald Cockayne, M.A. 1s.
19. SIR DAVID LYNDESAY'S MONARCHE, Part II., the Complaynt of the King's Papingo, and other Minor Poems. Edited from the first editions, by Fitzedward Hall, Esq., D.C.L. 3s. 6d.
20. SOME TREATISES BY RICHARD ROLLE DE HAMPOLE. Edited from Robert Thornton's MS., ab. 1440 A.D., by the Rev. G. Perry, M.A. 1s.
21. MERLIN, OR THE EARLY HISTORY OF ARTHUR. Edited for the first time from the unique MS. in the Cambridge University Library about 1450 A.D. Part II. Edited Henry B. Wheatley, Esq. 4s.
22. THE ROMANCE OF PARTENAY OR LUSIGNEN. Edited for the first time from the unique MS. in the Library of Trinity College, Cambridge, by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 6s.
23. DAN MICHEL'S AYENBITE OF INWYT, or Remorse of Conscience, in the Kentish dialect, 1340 A.D. Edited from the unique MS. in the British Museum, by Richard Morris, Esq. 10s. 6d.

The Society's Report, January 1868, with Lists of Texts to be published in future years, etc., etc. can be had on application to the Hon. Secretary, HENRY B. WHEATLEY, Esq., 53 Berners Street, W.

Bishop Percy's Folio MS.

Ballads and Romances.

Vol. III.

LONDON: PRINTED BY
SPOTTISWOODE AND CO., NEW-STREET SQUARE
AND PARLIAMENT STREET

Bishop Percy's
Folio Manuscript.

Ballads and Romances.

EDITED BY

JOHN W. HALES, M.A.

FELLOW AND LATE ASSISTANT-TUTOR OF CHRIST'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE

AND

FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL, M.A.

OF TRINITY HALL, CAMBRIDGE.

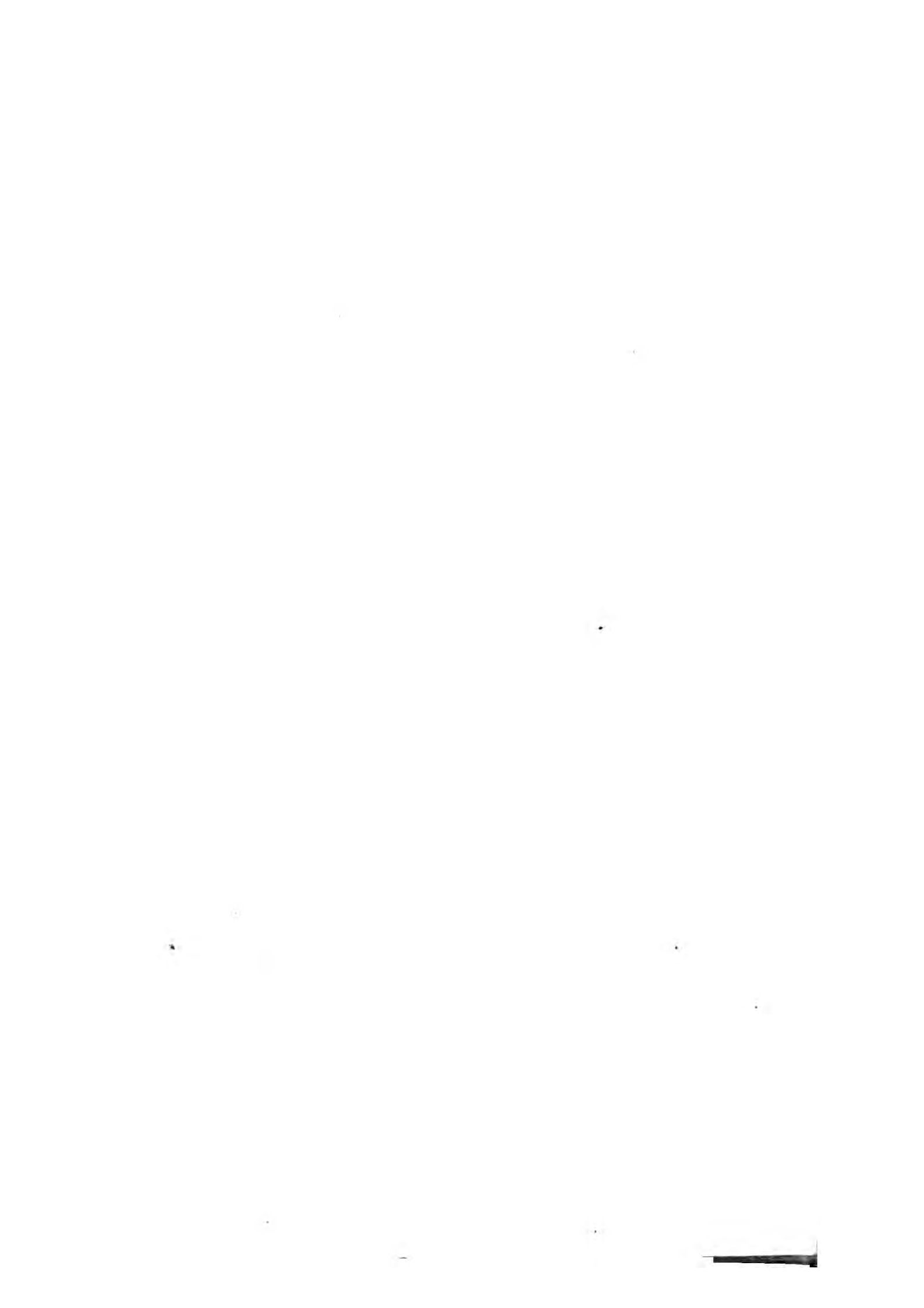
(ASSISTED BY PROF. CHILD, OF HARVARD UNIV., U.S.; W. CHAPPELL, Esq., &c. &c.)

Vol. III.

LONDON :

N. TRÜBNER & CO., 60 PATERNOSTER ROW.

1868.



PREFACE

TO

THE THIRD VOLUME.



OF this third volume the Historical Ballads are the principal feature. Though the Robin Hood set are continued by *Adam Bell*, and *Younge Cloudeslee*, the Arthur set by *The Carle off Carlile*, the Romances and Romance-poems by *Sir Degree* and *Sir Cawline*, yet the Historical Ballads far outweigh these in number and importance. Starting at *King Edgar*, they take us down through *William the Conquerour*, *The Drowning of Henery the I his Children*, *Edward the Third*, the *Seege of Roune* (1418-19), *Proud where the Spencers*, the *Murthering of Edward the Fourth his Sonnes*, *The Rose of Englande*, *Sir John Butler*, *Bosworth Feilde*, *Ladye Bessiye*, *Sir Andrew Bartton* (1511), the *Wininge of Cales* (1596), *The Spanish Ladies Love*, to *A Prophecye* of James I.'s time, 1620 A.D., written some twenty years before the MS. was copied.

More Songs also appear in this volume than in either of the previous ones, and include the beautiful *Nut-Brown Mayde* (though in a poor text), *Balowe* (in which Mr. Chappell and Dr. Rimbault have helped us), and a spirited hawking song, *A Cawilere*. But the piece of chief merit is undoubtedly the fine alliterative poem in two fitts, now for the first time printed, *Death & Liffe*. The best authority on English alliterative poetry, the

Rev. Walter W. Skeat, has been good enough both to 'introduce' and comment on the poem for us, and also to write us an Essay on Alliterative Metre, which we commend to the study of our readers.

Of the other Introductions, Mr. Hales has written all, except those to *Sir John Butler* (which is by Dr. Robson), *Æneas & Dido* (by Mr. W. Chappell), and the following by Mr. Furnivall: *In olde Times paste, Thomas of Potte, The Pore Man & the Kinge, Now the Springe is come, Carle off Carlile, A Cavilere, Sir Andrew Bartton, Kinge Humber, Seege off Roune*. For the slightness of several of the Introductions we hope that our readers will accept the excuse of other pressing engagements, which have kept back the volume since Nov. 11, 1867, when the text was all finished, and the MS. returned to its owners.

We again return thanks to Messrs. Skeat, Dyce and Chappell, to Mr. G. E. Adams (Rouge Dragon), Doctors Robson and Rimbault, and to Mr. Alfred Tennyson for a letter on the origin of the legend of Godiva.

February 29, 1868.

CONTENTS
OF
THE THIRD VOLUME.

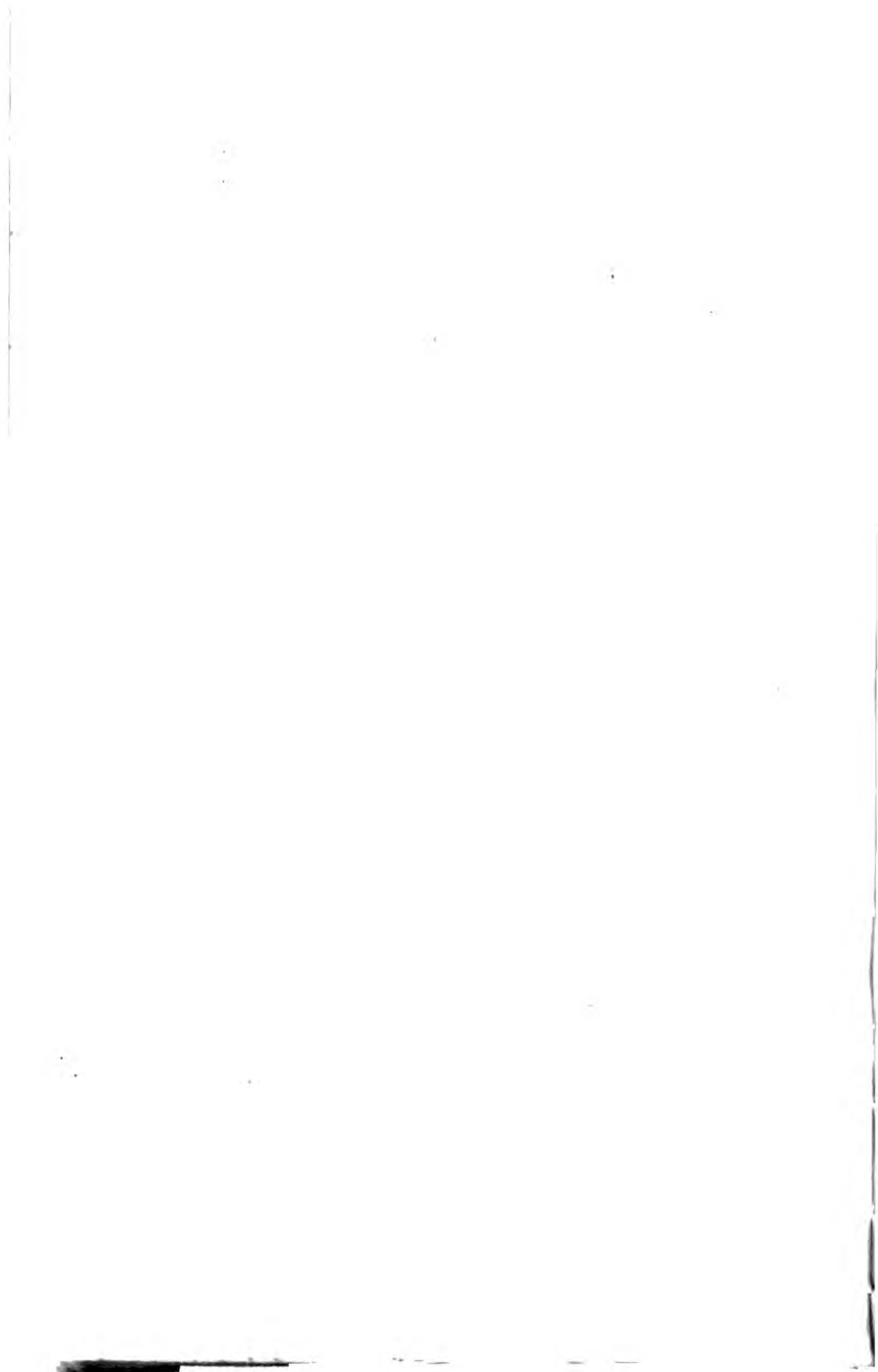
	PAGE
AN ESSAY ON ALLITERATIVE POETRY, BY THE REV. W. W. SKEAT	xi
NOTES	xli
SIR CAWLIN	1
SIR DEGREE	16
DEATH AND LIFFE	49
ADAM BELL, CLIME OF THE CLOUGH, AND WILLIAM OF CLOUDESLEE	76
YOUNGE CLOUDESLEE	102
IN OLD TIMES PASTE	119
DARKESOME CELL	123
MARKE MORE FOOLE	127
THOMAS OF POTTE	135
WILLIAM THE CONQUEROUR	151
THE DROWNING OF HENERY THE I HIS CHILDREN	156
MURDERING OF EDWARD THE FOURTH HIS SONNES	162
THE FALL OF PRINCES	168
THE NUTT-BROWNE MAYD	174
THE ROSE OF ENGLANDE	187
THE PORE MAN AND THE KINGE	195
SIR JOHN BUTLER	205
WILL STEWART AND JOHN	215
NOW THE SPRINGE IS COME	230
BOSWORTH FEILDE	233

	PAGE
ÆNEAS AND DIDO	260
THE SQUIER	263
O NOBLE FESTUS	269
CARLE OFF CARLILE	275
HERO AND LEANDER	295
CRESSUS	301
SONGS OF SHEPARDES	303
THE LAUNIAN SHORE	308
COME MY DAINTY DOXEYS	313
TO OXFFORDE	315
LADYE BESSIYE	319
ARE WOMEN FAIRE ?	364
A CAULERE	366
A PROP[H]ECYE	371
MAUDLINE	374
COME, PRETTY WANTON	385
HEE IS A FOOLE	386
LULLA, LULLA !	387
A LOUER OFF LATE	389
GREAT OR PROUDE	391
THE SPANISH LADIES LOVE	393
SIR ANDREW BARTTON	399
PATIENT GRISSELL	421
SCROOPE AND BROWNE	431
KINGE HUMBER	435
IN THE DAYES OF OLDE	441
AMINTAS	450
WININGE OF CALES	453
EDWARD THE THIRD	457
AS YEE CAME FROM THE HOLYE LAND	465
LEOFFRICUS (OR GODIVA)	473
PROUDE WHERE THE SPENCERS	478
KINGE EDGAR	485
CHRISTOPHER WHITE	494
QUEENE DIDO	499
ALFFONSO AND GANSELO	507

CONTENTS OF THE THIRD VOLUME.

ix

	PAGE
BALOWE	515
GENTLE HEARDSMAN	524
I AM	529
—CORIDON	530
SEEGE OFF BOUNE	532
SUCH A LOVER AM I	542
APPENDIX	544
GLOSSARY TO THE THREE VOLUMES	547
INDEX TO THE THREE VOLUMES	573



AN ESSAY ON ALLITERATIVE POETRY.

BY THE REV. W. W. SKEAT

(Editor of "Piers Plowman.")

NOTHING has more tended to obscure the rules and laws of English prosody, than the absurd and mischievously false terminology that has been made use of in discussing it. Whilst it is pretty clear that it is based on quite a different system from the Latin and Greek metres—on an *accentual*, that is, not on a *temporal* system—we have attempted to explain its peculiarities by terms borrowed from the Latin and Greek, such as trochees, dactyls, &c., and we make perpetual use of the words *long* and *short*. The truth is, the whole terminology of English prosody, if it is not to be misleading and fruitful in all kinds of errors, has yet to be invented. Instead of *short* and *long*, I think the terms *soft* and *loud* might be employed with great advantage. Dr. Guest¹ shows clearly enough that “an increase of *loudness* is the only thing *essential* to our English accent,” in opposition to the theory of Mitford, that it consists rather in sharpness of tone, though the two are often found together. Whichever view, however, is the more correct, this at least is certain, that, whereas the words *long* and *short* are almost sure to mislead, the words *loud* and *soft* will by no means do so in an equal degree; and I shall therefore henceforth employ these terms only. I define a *loud* syllable as that whereon an accent falls, a *soft* syllable as an unaccented one. In German, the terms heaving and sinking (*hebung* und *senkung*) have some-

¹ Guest, *Hist. Eng. Rhythms*, vol. i. p. 77.

times been employed to denote this *raising* and *sinking* of the voice.¹

It were much to be wished that we had some genuine English terms to supply the place of the *trochee*, the *iambus*, the *dactyl*, and the *anapæst*. A trochee means a long syllable succeeded by a short one; but an *English* trochee is something quite different, viz., a *loud* syllable followed by a *soft* one, and it may even happen that the loud syllable is as rapid as the other, as for instance in the words *Egypt* or *impact*, which have so puzzled some writers, that they have, in despair, named them *spondees*! Were it allowable to give new names, they should be given on the principle of representing the things meant by help of the accents on the very *names* themselves. Thus a loud syllable followed by a soft one might be called (not a trochee, but) a *Tonic*; a soft one, succeeded by a loud one, might be called a *Return*; a loud one, followed by two soft ones, might be named (not a dactyl, but) a *Dominant*; and, finally, instead of *anapæst*, we might use some such term as *Arabesque* or *Solitaire*, until a better one can be thought of; for single words thus accented are rare in English, the nearest approach to them being exhibited by such words as *refugee*, *cavalier*, and *serenade*; and none of these even are free from a slight accent on the *first* syllable. I feel convinced that until some such new terms are invented, writers upon English metre will continue to say one thing, and to mean another. I shall therefore introduce hereafter the terms above defined, merely to save all misconception and a good deal of tedious explanation.

The Anglo-Saxon and Early English alliterative poems are, for the most part, closely related in their structure to the Icelandic measure called *Fornyrðalag*. Their versification, however, is often less regular, and, in the poems of the four-

¹ Dr. Latham, in his English Grammar, gets out of the difficulty another way, viz., by employing algebraical symbols.

teenth and fifteenth centuries especially we meet with several infringements even of the most important and cardinal rules of it.

In what follows, therefore, I hope I may be understood as speaking with reference to the Anglo-Saxon and Early English poems *only*, and with reference rather to Early English than to Anglo-Saxon; for many remarks that are perfectly true and important as regards these contravene the rules of Icelandic prosody, and relate to licences that, regarded from that point of view, would seem almost intolerable.

The principal rules of alliteration, such as we actually find them to be from a careful survey of Early English literature, may be very briefly stated.

Supposing the poem to be divided into *short* lines,¹ as e.g. in Thorpe's editions of Cædmon and Beowulf, the following canons will be found to hold, at least in those lines which are of the strictest type :

1. The complete verse, or alliterative couplet, consists of two lines, each containing two loud syllables, coupled together by the use of alliteration.

2. The initial letters which are common to two or more of these loud syllables are called the *rime-letters*. Each couplet should, if possible, have *three* of these, of which *two* belong to the first line, and are called the *sub-letters*; and *one*, which is called the *chief-letter*, to the second line.

3. The *chief-letter* should begin the *first* of the two loud syllables in the second line. If the couplet contain only *two* rime-letters, it is because one of the *sub-letters* is dropped.

4. If the *chief-letter* be a consonant, the *sub-letters* should be the *same* consonant, or a consonant having the *same sound*. If a vowel, it is sufficient that the sub-letters be vowels. They need not be the same, and in practice are generally different.

¹ In "Death and Liffe" and "Scottish ffeilde," the *sections* of each long line answer to the *short lines* of Beowulf.

We sometimes meet with a combination of consonants, such as *sp*, *st*, and the like, taking the place of a rime-letter. In this case the other rime-letters often, but not always, present the same combination, though the recurrence of the *first* letter only of the combination is sometimes deemed sufficient.

These rules may be exemplified by the following examples, in which the feet consist either of a loud syllable standing alone (which I shall call a *Tone*), of a loud syllable and *one* soft syllable (which I shall call a *Tonic* as above explained), or of a loud syllable followed by *two* soft syllables, i.e. of a *Dominant*; from which it appears that the one thing *essential* to a foot is its *loud syllable*.

(1) <i>swiðe gesælige</i> ; <i>synna ne cūþon</i> ;	very happy ; sins they knew not. (<i>Cædmon</i> , ed. Thorpe, p. 2. l. 12.)
(2) <i>hām & heah-setl</i> <i>heofena rices.</i>	home and a high seat of heaven's kingdom. (<i>Cædmon</i> , p. 3, l. 9.)
(3) <i>ēðel-staðolas</i> <i>ēft gesette.</i>	the native settlements might again establish. (<i>Cædmon</i> , p. 6, l. 25.)

In example (1), the rules are all fulfilled: the initial letters of *swiðe* and *sælige* are the *sub-letters*; that of *synna* is the *chief-letter*. In example (2), the first foot of the first line has but *two* syllables. In example (3), the vowel *e* is the rime-letter, and there is but *one* sub-letter. These rules alone will not, however, carry us very far on our way. One most important modification of the verse may be thus explained.

Lines do not always begin with a loud syllable, but often one or two, and sometimes (in Early English especially) even three soft syllables precede it. These syllables are necessary to the sense, but not to the scansion of the line. This complement, which I shall call the *catch*, answers to the Icelandic *málþylling*. The use of it is a very necessary license, and lines in which it occurs are more common than those without it. No special

stress should, in reading or reciting, be laid upon the syllables of which the *catch* consists. The following are examples of its use :

<i>dóme & dúgeþe</i> &) <i>dreáme benám.</i>	of sway and dignity and joy deprived them. (<i>Cædmon</i> , p. 4, l. 19.)
<i>geond-)fólen fyre</i> &) <i>fær-cýle.</i>	filled throughout with fire and cold intense. (<i>Cædmon</i> , p. 3, l. 29.)
<i>ge-)grémed grýmme</i> <i>gráp on wráþe.</i>	provoked bitterly, he gripped in wrath. (<i>Cædmon</i> , p. 4, l. 29.)

Here *&*, *geond*, *&*, *ge*, are the catches. The third example shows us the combination *gr* used as a rime-letter. I add a few examples from Early English.

In) *cúntinaunce of clóthinge,*
queinteliche degyset ;
To) *préyere and to pénaunce*
pútten heom mónye ;
Bote in a) *Máyes mórwnyng*
on) *Máluerne húlles,*
Me bi-) *fél a férlý,*
A) *féyrie me thouhte ;*
I) *slumberde in A slépyng,*
hit) *sównede so múrie.*
(*Piers Plowman*, ed. Skeat, A. *prol.* l. 24, 25, 5, 6, 10.)

I have said, in rule 2, that rime-letters are the initial letters of certain *loud* syllables. In a large number of instances, the rime-letters are made to begin *words also*, such words being chosen as *commence* with loud syllables, as in—

wéreda wúldor-cíning
wórdum hérigen ; (*Cædmon*, l. 3.)
Wórchinge and wóndringe
as the) *wórlð ásketh ;* (*Piers Pl. A. prol.* 19.)

This is undoubtedly the best arrangement, but it cannot always be followed; when it is not, care should be taken that the

initial syllable of the word is as soft and rapid as possible, as in *gescælige* and *bifalle* in the lines

swiðe gescælige
sýnna ne cúþon ; (*Cædm.* ed. Thorpe, p. 2. l. 12.)

Mony) fêrlyes han bifalle
in a) féwe 3eres. (*P. Pl. A. prol.* 62.)

Indeed, these can hardly be considered as exceptions ; for *ge-* and *bi-* are mere prefixes, and it is with the syllables succeeding them that the words themselves truly begin.

The more this rule is departed from, the more risk is there of the true rhythm of the line being unperceived.

Occasional instances may be found where rime-letters begin *soft* syllables, of which I shall adduce instances ; this, however, is decidedly bad, the fundamental principle of alliterative verse being this, that alliteration and heavy stress should always go together.

The *second* line of the couplet is nearly always the *more regular*. Sometimes, but rarely, it contains *three* loud syllables. In the first line, however, the occurrence of three loud syllables is by no means uncommon. Examples :

hýhtlic heofen-tímbur ; hólmas dæilde—	the joyous heavenly-frame ; the waters parted (he). (<i>Cædmon</i> , p. 9, l. 23.)
---	---

fægre freóþo-þeawas, freá eállum leóf—	fair kindly thews, the Lord dear to all. (<i>Cædmon</i> , p. 5, l. 29.)
---	--

Now is) Mæede þe Mýyden i-nómen,
and no) mó of hem álle. (*Piers Plowman*, A. iii. 1.)

Another variation, not uncommon in Old English, is that each line of the couplet is alliterated *by itself*, independently of the other line. Examples :

For) Jámes þe géntel
bónd hit in his bóok
what þis) Móuntein be-méneþ
and þis) dérke dále.
(*Piers Plowman*, A. i. 159, 1 ; see also iii. 93, vii. 57, 69.)

The following licences are also taken :

(a) The *chief-letter* falls on the *second* loud syllable of the line ; as in

Vn-)kuýnde to heore kún
and to álle cristene ; (*P. Pl. A. i. 166.*)

(b) Sometimes there are two rime-letters in the *second* line, and *one* in the first, which is the converse of the usual arrangement.

An example is furnished by the line—

týle he had sýluer
for his) sáwes and his sélynge. (*P. Pl. A. ii. 112.*)

(c) The chief-letter is sometimes omitted, which is certainly a great blemish, and such lines of course occur but rarely. Examples are :

I wol) wórschupe þer-wiþ
treúthe in my lýue. (*P. Pl. A. vii. 94.*)

And) beére heor brás on þi bác
to Cáleys to súlle. (*P. Pl. A. iii. 189.*)

(d) Rime-letters sometimes begin *soft* syllables, even when the soft syllable occurs in the initial catch. An obvious instance is afforded by the line—

In Gla-)mórgan with glée
thare) gládchipe was évere. (*Morte Arthure, l. 59.*)

(e) By a very bold licence, the *chief-letter* even occurs in the initial catch of the second line. This, according to all the rules of Icelandic prosody, involves an absurd contradiction ; but there are not only *some*, but *rather numerous* instances of this in Old English, and I add several examples in order that the point may become more obvious. I could add many more.

And) éndeþ as Ich ér seide
in) próftable wérkes. (*P. Pl. A. i. 120.*)

þer to) wónen with wróng
whil) gód is in héuene. (*P. Pl. A. ii. 74.*)

yit I) *préye þe, quod pèrs,*
par) chàrite, zif þou cónne. (P. Pl. A. vii. 240.)

God) *ziueþ hím his bléssyng*
þat his) lýflode so swýnkeþ. (P. Pl. A. vii. 239.)

where it should be noted that *his* is not without a slight emphasis on it, notwithstanding its position. In *William and the Werwolf* this licence is rather common, and I may instance lines 2836, 3000, 3113, 3133, 3137, 3467, 3614, 3984 as occurring to me after a very slight search. One instance may suffice; the rest are quite as decisive:

&) *fairest of alle fāson*
for) ény ríche hólde. (Werwolf, 2836.)

(f) Occasionally no alliteration is apparent at all. I fail to discover any in the line,

whi þat) *véniaunce fél*
 on) *Sául and his children. (P. Pl. A. iii. 245.)*

yet this line is undoubtedly genuine, as appears by a collation of MSS. See also *Werwolf*, l. 5035.

In fact, a continual and oft-repeated perusal of thousands of alliterative verses has convinced me that our old poets considered such licences quite allowable, provided that the *swing* of the line was well kept up by the regular recurrence of loud syllables. A line wholly without alliteration was quite admissible *as a variation*, and is not to be rejected as spurious. If however two or three irregular lines occur *close together*, they may then be regarded as probably not genuine. When, for instance, we meet with

lérne his láwe | at is so léle,
 &) *sipþe téche it fúrþer, (P. Pl. ii. 31.)*

and, only three lines below, come upon

when) *heó was me fró*
 I) *lóked and bylélde,*

it is not surprising to find that these lines rest on the authority

of one MS. only, and are in all probability an interpolation. In the same way I was first enabled to suspect the spuriousness of l. 817-821 in *Pierce the Ploughmans Crede*, which lines are, in fact, omitted in *both* the existing MSS. But *occasional* licences, even when most bold, are scarcely to be regretted. They give freedom to the poet, and relief to the reader, who in old times was often a *listener*.

It appears further, from rules 2 and 3, that the *second* line should contain but *one* rime-letter. The point aimed at was no doubt this, viz., that in order to give the greater force and stress to the syllable containing the chief-letter, it is desirable that the *second* loud syllable in the *second* line of the couplet should NOT begin with a rime-letter. Hence couplets with *four* rime-letters are by no means good. Yet there are several instances in *Piers Plowman*, as

In a) sómer sésun
whon) sófte was the sónne. (*P. Pl. A. prol. 1.*)

That I) wás in a wilderness
wúste I néuer whére. (*P. Pl. A. prol. 12.*)

There is, however, no such objection to four rime-letters, if the first three can be got into the *first* line of the couplet. The following lines are very effective:—

With) déop dích and dérk
and) drédful of síht. (*P. Pl. A. prol. 16.*)

Fairè floúres for to fécchè
that he bi)-fóre him séye. (*Will. and Werwolf, 1. 26.*)

Skáthylle Scóttlande by skýlle
he) skýstys [*read* skyftys] as hym lýkys. (*Morte Arthure, 1. 32.*)

As regards the *number* of rime-letters in a couplet, *three* has generally been considered as the standard, regular, and most pleasing and effective number; but it is not always easy to be attained to, and hence couplets with only *two* are common enough. I think it would be well worth inquiry as to whether or not the *frequent* occurrence of *only two* rime-letters in an

Anglo-Saxon couplet is a *mark of antiquity*. I imagine it will be found to be so,¹ for it would appear that their system of verse was but a rough one at first, and was elaborated in course of time. It is tolerably certain, on the other hand, that the frequent introduction of a *fourth* rime-letter in Early English poems is a mark of lateness of date, as is curiously shown by the alterations made in the Lincoln's Inn MS. of *Piers Plowman*, where the lines

Wende I) wýdene in this world
 wóndres to hére—
 Vndur a) bród bánke
 bi a) Boúrne sýde—
 I sauh a) Toúr on a Tóft
 triȝely I-máket—

have been improved (?) by altering the words *here*, *syde*, and *I-maket*, into *wayte*, *brymme*, and *ytymbred* respectively.²

With regard to the *complement* or *catch*, Rask says:³—
 “The chief-letter does not necessarily stand first in the second line, but is often preceded by one or more short words, yet not by such as require the tone or emphasis in reading. These short precursory words which, though independent of the structure of the verse, are necessary to the completion of the sense, constitute what may be called the *complement*, which, in arranging verses that are transcribed continuously, we must be careful not to confound with the verse itself, lest the alliteration, the structure of the verse, and even the sense, be thereby destroyed.” This statement Dr. Guest tries to hold up to ridicule in strong terms,⁴ but I take it to be perfectly sound and correct as regards the main point at which Rask is aiming, though requiring some *limitation*, for though the catch *may* consist of “one or more words,” it is rarely of more than two

¹ Such, I find, is also Dr. Guest's opinion; Guest's *Hist. Eng. Rhythms*, vol. i. p. 141.

² See *Piers Plowman*, Text A, ed. Skeat, p. xxii.

³ Rask's *Anglo-Saxon Grammar*, translated by Thorpe, 1830, p. 136.

⁴ Guest, *Hist. Eng. Rhythms*, vol. ii. p. 6.

syllables. The *catch*, as Dr. Guest points out, is not absolutely *toneless*; yet it is clear that the accented syllables which occur in it have a comparatively *lighter* tone, a *slighter* stress, than those in the body of the verse; they do not attain, in fact, to the same *strength* of accent as those syllables possess which have accent and metrical ictus *both*, and to which *special* force is lent by the use of rime-letters. Even in modern English verse, all accents are far from being *equal*, much depending on the position of words, so that we may even to some extent *alter* the accent on a word by merely shifting its place. Thus if we alter

Larger constellations burning, mellow moons and happy skies,

into—

Constellations burning larger, mellow moons and happy skies,

we give a very different effect to the words *larger* and *constellations*; whilst in both cases the accent on *mellow* is *comparatively* slight. Whilst allowing to the *catch*, when of two or three syllables, a *slight* accent, we neglect it, in scansion, as compared with the heavier ones that follow.

In further illustration of the statement, that special stress is given to syllables by the use of rime-letters, I may draw attention to the fact that this is true in poetry that is by no means professedly alliterative. It was not by chance that Shakespeare wrote—

Full fathom five thy father lies;—
Though thou the waters warp;

and the like; or that Gray wrote—

Ruin seize thee, ruthless king;—
Weave the warp and weave the woof,
The winding sheet of Edward's race;

or that Pope chose the words—

Puffs, powders, patches, bibles, billets-doux;

where the absurd contrast between “bibles” and “billets-doux” is much heightened by the fact that they begin with the same letter. It may be said that alliteration draws attention rather to the *words* themselves than to their initial syllables, but in *English* it comes to much the same thing, owing to our habit of throwing back the accent, and in English poetry, accent and alliteration go together; or if not, the alliteration fails to strike the ear, and has but little effect. Hardly any alliterative effect is produced by the repetition of the *w* in *Edward's* in the above line from Gray. This is why the licence of beginning a *soft* syllable with a rime-letter is over-bold and almost ruinous. See Hyde Clarke's *English Grammar*, pp. 137–145.¹

All Anglo-Saxon poetry is alliterative, and very nearly all of it alliterative only, without any addition of rime whatever. This is by no means the case in Icelandic; their poets delighted in adding various complexities, such as *full-rimes*, *half-rimes*, *line-rimes*, and *assonances*. Space would fail me to discuss these here, nor is it necessary perhaps to do more than point out the very few examples of rime which are to be found in Anglo-Saxon.

There are some instances of full-rime in Cædmon, but they occur in words close together, and in the same short line, as in the lines “*gleam and dream*,” “*wide and side*,” &c.; they are found also in other poems, as “*frodne and godne*” in the “Traveller's Song,” “*lænne and sænne*” in “Alfred's Metres, &c. : see Guest, vol. i. p. 126, &c. There are also *half-rimes*, as in “*sar and sorge*,” “*his boda beodan*,” &c. The most curious example is in the Riming Poem in the Exeter MS.,

¹ Compare—
 τυφλὸς τὰ τ' ἄτα τὸν τε νοῦν τὰ τ' ὕμνατ'
 εἰ. (Sophocles, *Œd. Col.* 371.)
 Neu patriæ validas in viscera vertite
 vires. (Virgil, *Æn.* vi. 833.)
 Il pietoso pastor pianse al suo pianto.
 (Tasso, *G. L.* vii. 16.)
 nie Saite noch Gesang,

Nein! Seufzen nur und Stöhnen und
 scheuer Sklavenschritt.
 (Uhland, *Des Sängers Fluch.*)
 But minds of mortall men are muchell
 mard
 And mov'd amisse with massy mucks
 unmeet regard.
 (Spencer, *F. Q.* iii. 10, 31.)

which is written in rime throughout, the alliteration being mostly preserved at the same time, as in

wic ofer wóngum,
wénnan góngum ;
lisse mid lóngum,
leóma getóngum.

(*Codex Exoniensis*, ed. Thorpe, p. 353.)

See also the most extraordinary lines in the same poem (p. 354), beginning

fláh máh flíteþ,
flán món hwiteð,

where there is indeed abundant proof that the Anglo-Saxons were acquainted with rime in its modern sense.

Other examples occur in the "Phoenix" (p. 198 of the same vol.) in the oft-quoted lines

ne) fórstes fnæst
ne) fyres blæst,
ne) hægles hryre
ne) hrimes dryre.

Of another curious example I shall speak presently.

The following notation may perhaps prove useful for marking the scansion of Anglo-Saxon and Early English alliterative poems. If we denote a *Tone* by *T*, a *Tonic* by *t*, a *Dominant* by *d*, and a catch by a line (—), it is easy to represent the scansion of Cædmon, to the extent of any number of lines, by putting a comma at the end of a line, and the mark | at the end of a couplet. The poem begins thus :

Us is) riht micel
þæt we) ródera wéard
wéreda wúldor-cíning
wórdum hérigen,
módum lúfen ;
he is) mægna spéd,
heafod eálra
heáh-gesceáfta.¹

For us it is very right
That we the heaven's Warden,
The Glory-King of hosts,
With (our) words should praise,
With (our) minds should love ;
He is of powers the Speed,
The Head of all
High-created (ones).

¹ The accents merely mark *stress* ; I am obliged here to ignore the usual system of accents which regulates the length of the vowels.

The scansion is as follows :

— T t, — d T | d t t, t d | t d, — t T | t t, t t | .

I have no space here to discuss Cædmon's "longer rhythms." I cannot see that they present any difficulty. The lines have more feet in them, and that is all. Commonly, these lines have *four* feet, whereas the more usual length is just half this, or of *two* feet.

With some slight modifications, the same method is applicable to the scansion of all other existing English poems that are written in alliterative verse. It will be found upon comparison that the one striking and chief point of difference between Anglo-Saxon poems, as Cædmon's, and Early English poems, as *Piers Plowman*, is this, that whereas Cædmon's poem abounds in *tonics*, and has the *tonic* foot as its base and foundation (the *dominant* being merely a variation of it), *Piers Plowman* is the exact contrary, and its base is the *dominant* foot, for which the *tonic* is occasionally employed. Beyond this there is very little difference, excepting that in the later poems there is, as might be expected, a freer and more frequent use of initial *catches*.

There has been much discussion as to whether alliterative poems should be printed in *couplets* of *short* lines, or in *long lines* comprising two sections. It is more a matter of convenience of typography than anything else; but if there be a choice, it is better to print the later (Old English) poems in *long lines*, as they are *invariably so written* in MSS., and it may be allowable to print the earlier (Anglo-Saxon) poems in short lines, because, though written as prose in the MSS., metrical dots occur very frequently (though seldom regularly), which are often not separated from each other by more than the length of a half-line.¹ Even these, however, are sometimes

¹ Such, at least, has been the usual practice with respect to Anglo-Saxon poems, the idea probably being taken from the usual method of printing Icelandic poems. But it should be noted that when such a poem as *Piers*

printed in long lines, and I believe this to be the least confusing; for nearly all those who have adopted short lines have forgotten to *set back* the second line of the couplet (as should always be done), and then the eye of the *reader* cannot detect how the lines *pair off*.

In printing the later poems in long lines, the two parts of the couplet (which is now but *one* line) become *sections*, as before explained, and the pause which was formerly made at the end of the first [short] line becomes *the middle pause*, marked in the *Scotish Feilde* by a colon, and in *Death and Liffe* by an inverted full-stop. This pause was always made, there can be no doubt, in reciting such poems aloud, and in some manuscripts is carefully marked throughout by a dot, though others omit it. It is very essential to the harmony of the verse, and is worth retaining, as it greatly assists the reader. It should be noted, also, that the second section of the verse is almost always the most carefully and smoothly written, and very rarely contains more than two feet, on which account it is often shorter than the first section. The greatest stress of all generally falls on the first loud syllable of this section (i.e. on the one commencing with the chief-letter) which is just what it should do. This stress is heightened in many instances by the introduction of a very short catch at the beginning of the second section, consisting of one soft and rapid syllable.

That this is the usual rule appears from the following analyses of the catches beginning the second sections in the 109 lines of the Prologue to *Piers Plowman*:

Second sections *without* catches, 28.

With a one-syllable catch, 67.

With a catch of two syllables, 12.

Plowman is written as *prose* (as in MS. Digby 102), there is the same marking off into half-lines, and it may be questioned whether the printing in *half-lines*

has not been an utter and an unnecessary mistake, adopted rather because it happened to be convenient than because any good reason could be given for it.

With a catch of three syllables, 2; though there may be doubt about these; I refer to the lines,

That) Poúl précheth of hém¹
I dar not) préouen héere (l. 38);

and—

That heore) Párisch hath ben póre
seththe the) Péstilence týme (l. 81).

In l. 104, the catch seems to contain the chief-letter. The line is—

Cóokes and heore knáues
cryen) hóte píes, hóte.

It should be observed further that the catch in the second section is very frequently modified by the way in which the first section *terminates*. If this ends in a *Tone*, a catch of one or two syllables is required for smoothness, to make up, as it were, a *Tonic* or a *Dominant*; if it ends in a *Tonic*, the catch should have but one syllable; if it ends in a *Dominant*, the catch should be dispensed with.²

The earliest alliterative poem after the Conquest is, perhaps, Layamon's *Brut*. In this poem, of which there are two copies that often do not agree as to the readings, rimes are continually found mixed up with the alliteration, without any preparation or warning to the reader, and the scansion of it has consequently caused some perplexity. To be sure of the right scansion, I think that most heed should be paid to such passages as stand the same in both MSS., and I fancy that instances may be

¹ *hém* is here emphatic; see the context.

² Modern poets learn this rule by the ear. Thus, in Lord Byron's lines—
Know ye the land where the cypress and myrtle

Are) emblems of deeds that are done
in their clime;

Where the) rage of the vulture, the love
of the turtle,

Now) melt into softness, now madden
to crime,

the words *myrtle* and *turtle* are succeeded by a catch of *one* syllable; but *clime* by one of *two* syllables. Let the reader change *Are* into *Are as*, and *Where the* into *The*, and see how he likes it then; the former of these changes is by no means pleasing. See this worked out in Edgar A. Poe's essay on *The Rationale of Verse*, which, though very mad towards the conclusion, contains some good hints.

detected in which the rime was superadded as an after-thought, either by the scribe or by the poet himself. The following lines occur at p. 165 of vol. i. of Sir F. Madden's edition, in the *second* column :

He was) wís and wár
 he) wélde thes riche
 al) hit hine louéde
 that) liuede on lónde,

which lines are clearly alliterative. But in the *first* column, i.e. in the other MS. copy, the first couplet is altered to—

he wes wís he wes fáir
 he wélde that riche *hær* ;

where the word *hær* (here) is clearly inserted to make a rime, though neither the sense nor the rhythm require it. The variations between the two copies render it dangerous to theorize on the *rhythm*, though we may feel tolerably confident about the readings as far as the *sense* and the *language* are concerned. But it seems worth remark that there is an Anglo-Saxon poem of 20 couplets to be found in the Saxon Chronicle—the one to which I said I should have to refer again—which presents the same kind of mixture of alliteration and rime as is found in Layamon. It is on the death of Ælfred, the son of Æthelred, and is entered in the Chronicle under the date 1036.¹ One couplet is clearly rime—

súme hí man bénde
 súme hí man blénde ;

whilst another is a fair alliterative specimen,

thæt hi blísson
 blithe mid Criste.

Most of the lines are still less regular, but this poem exhibits, I believe, the nearest approach to Layamon's rhythm that is to be found in Anglo-Saxon, and it is on this account that it seems worth while to mention it.

¹ Grein, *Angelsächsische Bibliothek*, vol. i. p. 357. See A.-S. Chron., ed. Thorpe, p. 294.

I now give a list of all the poems I have as yet met with that have been written as alliterative, yet *without rime*, since the Conquest. It is a very short one, but many of the poems are of great length, most of them are of importance, and they all possess considerable energy and vigour.

The oft-quoted statement of Chaucer, in the prologue to the "Persones Tale," that alliterative metre was not familiar to a *southern* man, deserves notice. The best examples of the metre are to be found in poems written in the *northern* and *western* dialects. The example which seems to contain most *southern* forms is the "Ploughmans Crede," which must, however, have been written after Chaucer's remark was made.

1. Layamon's *Brut*, about A. D. 1200. The author was a native of Ernley on *Severn*. There are two texts (MSS. Cotton; Calig. A. ix., and Otho, C. xiii.). *Both* of these were edited by Sir F. Madden for the Society of Antiquaries, in 1847, in 3 vols. 8vo. (Here, however, a considerable admixture of rime is occasionally found. It should be compared with the "Bestiary" from MS. Arundel 292, printed in *Reliquiæ Antiquæ*, vol. i. p. 208.)

2. *Seinte Marherete*, about A. D. 1200. See MSS. Reg. 17. A. xxvii., and Bodl. 34. This poem, as edited by Mr. Cockayne, was reissued by the E. E. T. S. (Early English Text Society) in 1866. The metre is tolerably regular.

3. *William of Palerne*, translated from the French by one William, at the request of Humphrey de Bohun, Earl of Hereford, then residing at *Gloucester*, about A. D. 1360. The MS. is in King's College, Cambridge, No. 13. It was printed by Sir F. Madden for the Roxburghe Club, 1832, 4to; and I am now preparing a reprint of this edition for the E. E. T. S.

4. *Alexander* (A); a fragment originally written at about the same date, preserved in the Bodleian Library (MS. Greaves, 60), now being edited by myself for the E. E. T. S. in *William of Palerne*. (Sir F. Madden conjectures it to have been written

by the author of No. 3. A comparison of the language of the poems, lately made by myself, confirms this supposition.)

5. *The Vision of William concerning Piers the Plowman*, together with *Vita de Dowel, Dobet, and Dobest*, by William Langland, said to be a native of Cleobury Mortimer in *Shropshire*. Of this there are three texts at least. A. About A. D. 1362; MS. Vernon in the Bodleian, printed by Skeat for the E. E. T. S. (1867, 8vo), and collated with MS. Harl. 875 and several others. B. About 1366-67; first printed by Crowley in 1550, 4to. An excellent MS. in Trin. Coll. Camb., marked B. 15. 17, was printed by T. Wright (1842, 2 vols. 12mo). There are several other MSS., such as Laud 581, &c. Bb. A text slightly altered from B, and found in MS. Bodley 814, MS. Additional 10574, and MS. Cotton Calig. A. xi. Never printed. C. A little later than B. MS. Phillips 8231, printed by Whitaker (1813, 4to); and in several other MSS.; as, e. g. MS. Vesp. B. xvi.

6. *Pierce the Ploughmans Crede*, about A. D. 1394; first printed by R. Wolfe (1553, 4to), and reprinted from his edition by Crowley, Whitaker, and T. Wright. MSS. still exist; one in Trin. Coll. Camb. R. 3. 15, and another in MS. Bibl. Reg. 18. B. xvii. These are more correct than R. Wolfe's printed copy, and the former has been lately printed by myself for the E. E. T. S. (1867, 8vo). The author is evidently the same as the author of the *Plowman's Tale*, which is inserted in some editions of Chaucer.

7. *The Deposition of Richard II.* (A. D. 1399). A fragment only is known, existing in MS. Camb. Univ. Lib. Ll. 4. 14; printed by T. Wright for the Camden Society (1838, 4to), and reprinted in *Political Poems* by the same editor. This is the only other poem that *can* be attributed to William Langland, and I think it quite probable that he wrote it. Mr. Wright, however, thinks differently, and the question requires much careful investigation.

8. Two poems, one on *Cleanness*, and a second on *Patience*, (MS. Cotton, Nero, A. x.), printed by R. Morris for the E.E.T.S. (1864, 8vo). The dialect is *West-Midland*, and Mr. Morris supposes it to be Lancashire. The MS. can scarcely be older than A. D. 1400.

9. *The Destruction of Jerusalem*, called by Warton (*History of English Poetry*, vol. ii. p. 105; 1840) *The Warres of the Jewes*. MS. Cotton, Calig. A. ii.; MS. Camb. Univ. Lib. Mm. 5. 14; and elsewhere. To be edited for the Early English Text Society.

10. *Morte Arthure*; about A. D. 1440. MS. in the Thornton volume at Lincoln, printed by Halliwell (1848, 8vo), and reprinted by Rev. G. G. Perry for the E. E. T. S. (1865, 8vo). The scribe was archdeacon of Bedford in the church of *Lincoln*, though a native of *Yorkshire*.

11. *Alexander* (B and C). There are two fragments, one (C) preserved in MS. Ashmole 44 and MS. Dublin D. 4. 12, the other (B) in MS. Bodley 2464. *Both* were printed by Stevenson for the Roxburghe Club (1849, 4to). The fragment C has traces of a *northern* dialect, and is about A. D. 1450. But the other is much older (probably *before* 1400), and its language approaches that of fragment A (*No.* 4), though I hardly think they belong to the same poem.

12. *The Destruction of Troy*, translated from *Guido de Colonna*; an edition is now being prepared for the E. E. T. S., to be published in 1868. The dialect is certainly of a *Northern* tendency. The MS. is in the Hunterian museum at Glasgow, numbered S. 4. 14. I have observed a line in it (l. 1248) which almost entirely coincides with l. 4212 in the *Morte Arthure*, and other indications show some connection between the two. Either they are by the same author, or one is imitated from the other. The *Morte Arthure* seems superior to the *Troy* poem, which makes the former supposition doubtful; but this point will no doubt be settled when the edition of the

latter poem which is now being prepared for the E. E. T. S. shall have been printed.

13. A poem of 146 lines, beginning—

Crist crowned king, that on Cros didest;

of which 27 lines are quoted by Bishop Percy (*Rel.* v. ii. p. 312; from 5th ed.) a small 4to. MS. in private hands. It is a pity he did not quote the remaining 119 lines at the same time. He conjectures it to be of the reign of Henry V.

14. *Chevelere Assigne, or the Knight of the Swan*; temp. Henry VI.; ed. Utterson (Roxburghe Club), 1820. A short poem of 370 lines, contained in MS. Cotton Calig. A. ii., the same, be it observed, as contains a copy of No. 9. The editor draws attention to its having a few rimed endings, but the author clearly did not regard them as essential. The following list comprises all of them: *where, there* (12, 13); *lene, tweyne* (28, 29); *were, there* (31, 32); *swyde, leyde* (158, 159); *faste, caste* (166, 167); *swanes, cheynes* (198, 199, and again at 350, 351); *were, mysfare* (237, 238); *myskarrye, marye* (260, 261). There are also several *assonances*, such as *wenden, lenger* (302, 303). The following is a specimen to show the effect of the superadded rime:

And it) wéxedde in my hónde
&) wéllede so fástè,
That I) tóke the other fýue,
&) fró the fýer cástè.

It is a faulty specimen of verse, upon the whole; the alliteration is not always well kept up, and many of the lines halt, as does the fourth line of these here quoted; unless, indeed, we alter the whole system of accents, putting three *Tonics* in every line, not counting the catches.

15. A fragment of a poem, not in very regular rhythm, about Thomas Becket, beginning—

Thomas takes the juelle, & Jhesu thanks.

It is printed in the Appendix to *Lancelot du Lac*, ed. Stevenson (Maitland Club), 1839.

In the same Appendix is another short poem in this rhythm, not very regular. It begins with the line—

When Rome is removyde into Inglande.

Of another poem we find the first line in the preface :

Quhen the koke in the northe halows his nest.

All three poems are from MS. Univ. Lib. Camb. Kk. 1. 5, the same MS. that contains *Lancelot of the Laik in Lowland Scotch*.

16. *The Tua Maryit Women and the Wedo*; by William Dunbar, about A. D. 1500; see Dunbar's works, ed. D. Laing, vol. i. p. 61. Conybeare quotes from this in his *Illustrations of Anglo-Saxon Poetry*, p. lxxii.; and shows how the author sometimes kept up the same rime-letter throughout *two* couplets, as in the following :

Silver SHóuris down SHook
as the) SHEen cristal,
and) birdis SHóuted in the SHáw
with their) SHRill nótis ;
the) Gólden GLittering GLéam
so) GLáddened their héartis,
they) máde a GLórious GLee
among the) GRéen bóughis.

17. *Death and Life*; printed in the present work, probably by the author of No. 18.

18. *Scotish Feilde*; printed in the present work, vol. i. p. 199, written about A. D. 1513, by one of the family of the Leghs of Baguleigh in *Cheshire*.

19. *Ancient Scottish Prophecies*, reprinted by the Bannatyne Club, 1833; some of them having been printed by Waldegrave, 1603. The alliteration is often imperfect, though some are perfectly according to rule, and may be cited as among the latest English specimens of this kind of verse.

Vpon) Lóndon Láv
a)-lóne as I láy :—
Striueling that strait place
a) stréngth of that lánde :—

Then a) chiftaine vnochosen
 shal) chóose for himsélfe,
 And) ride through the Reálme
 and) Róy shal be cálled. (See pp. 26, 31, 35.)

20. I may add that the "Reply of Friar Daw Topias" and "Jack Upland" (see Wright's *Political Poems*, vol. ii. pp. 16-114) are more or less alliterative, and without rime.

21. There is yet at least one more poem, of which a fragment exists in the Vernon MS. fol. 403, and which must be older than A. D. 1400. I hardly know what it is (though it makes mention of the baptism of Vespasian); but I have already called attention to it in my "Piers Plowman," text A., p. xvii. *note*.

22. See also two scraps printed in *Reliquiæ Antiquæ*, vol. i. pp. 84, 240.

It was, in my opinion, a mere mistake, a superfluous exertion of human ingenuity, when rimes were regularly superadded to the alliteration, and the lines arranged in regular stanzas. Yet some of these gallant efforts possess great merit; I have no space for more than the names of some of the more important.¹

1. *Songs on King Edward's wars*, by Laurence Minot, about A. D. 1352, in a *northern* dialect. They are *not all* founded on a basis of *Dominants*, and therefore *not all* of the type now under consideration.

2. *Sir Gawayne and the Grene Knigt*, about A. D. 1530, ed. Sir F. Madden, 1839; re-ed. Morris (Early English Text Society), 1864.

3. *Golagros and Gawayne*; and

4. *Awntyrs of Arthure*; in the same vol. as Sir. F. Madden's *Gawayne*.

¹ Here, again, I am speaking of *English* poetry, in which the addition of rime to alliteration makes the poet's work a dance in fetters. The *difficulty* of writing such poems in English is very great, whence many of the specimens are rather short. A like objection does not apply to Icelandic poetry.

5. "Susanna and the Elders, or the Pistill of Susan;" see *Select Remains of Scottish Poetry*, by D. Laing, 1822.

6. *Tail of Raul Coilzear*; see the same work.

7. "Saint John the Evangelist," printed in *Religious Pieces*, ed. Perry (Early English Text Society), 1867.

8. *The Buke of the Howlat*, by Sir R. de Holande, about A. D. 1455. Printed by Pinkerton, 1792; and for the Bannatyne Club, 1823.

9. The prologue to book viii. of Gawain Douglas's translation of the *Æneid*.

10. See also three poems in the *Reliq. Antiq.* at p. 291 of vol. i., and pp. 7 and 19 of vol. ii.; and a fourth in Guest's *Eng. Rhythms*, vol. ii. p. 298.

In the above poems the longer lines are of the standard length, and have the true swing. Poems (such as those of William Audelay) in which alliteration abounds, but which are not of the true type, are very numerous.

These are all that I have noticed, though I dare say these lists are not altogether complete.

It may be interesting to observe that the alliterative rhythm is suitable for all Teutonic and Scandinavian languages. Examples from some old German dialects will be found in Conybeare's *Illustrations*, at p. li. It is also the rhythm of the *Heliand*, an Old-Saxon poem of about A. D. 840. The best examples, both ancient and modern, are to be found in Icelandic, in which language they are all-abundant at the present day.

I have before remarked that, in Anglo-Saxon, the prevalent foot is a *Tonic*, but in Old English the prevalent one is a *Dominant*. Something of this change may be observed in canto xxi. of Tegnèr's *Frithiofs Saga*, written in Swedish in 1825; and doubtless any one writing in this metre in modern English would have to do the same, or would find it convenient to do so at the very least. Our older poems remind one of the

ringing of hammer-blows on an anvil, or the regular tramp of an army on the march; our later ones have often the rapidity and impetuosity of a charge of cavalry, and a sound as of the galloping of horses. One special characteristic belongs equally to both, that it was evidently considered a beauty (and rightly so) to make every line, if possible, end with a *Tonic*, and not with a *Tone* or a *Dominant*. By forgetting to pronounce his final *e*'s, a modern reader is very apt to lose something of this effect; yet an analysis of the 109 lines in the prologue to the earliest version of *Piers Plowman* gives the following results:

Lines ending in a *Tone*, 7.

Lines ending in a *Dominant*, 1.

Lines about which there may be doubt, 21.

Lines certainly ending in a *Tonic*, 80.

That is, 73 per cent. at the very lowest computation, which is quite enough to give a very decided character to the verse.

This is the place to mention also an empirical rule, which is the result of my own observation. In verses beginning with such a common formula as "He saide," or "And saide," and the like, these words *sometimes* form no part of the verse whatever, not even belonging to the initial catch. We may well suppose that they were uttered in a lower tone by the reciter, who immediately after raised his voice to the loud pitch which he had to maintain in recitation, and proceeded to give the words of the speech which such a phrase introduced.

The same rule holds good for the words "quoth he," "quoth I," &c., even in the middle of a line. This accounts for the greater length of lines wherein such phrases occur. I may instance the following:

"And seide—

Hedde I) loue of the kyng,

luite wolde I recche." (*Piers Plowman*, A. iv. 51.)

“ Woltou) wédde this wómmon—quod the kyng—
 gif) I' wol assénte ? ” (*Piers Pl. A. iii. 113.*)
 I) wás not wónt to wórche—quod a wastour—
 git) wól I nót biginne. (*Piers Pl. A. vii. 153.*)
 & sayd—
 O) louelye liffe,
 ceáse thou such wórdes: (*Death & Liffe, 258.*)

The usefulness of the rule consists in this: that the examples of it are rather numerous, especially in *Piers Plowman*.

Alliterative verse is well deserving of careful study and attention. Although not altogether confined to “ Gothic poetry ”—for it has been “ employed by the Finlanders, and by several Oriental nations ”—it is a special characteristic of it.¹ It is the prevailing measure in Icelandic and Anglo-Saxon, and appears in the Old Saxon of the *Heliand*, as well as in the song of “ Hildibrant and Hadubrant,” and in the “ Wessobrunn Prayer.”² It has been employed by poets during some fifteen hundred years, and is employed still. Considering it as an English rhythm, we may fairly say that, at any rate when unfettered by rime, it is of a bold and vigorous character, and is marked also, in the later poems, by considerable rapidity. This characteristic, viz. of vigour, has been very generally conceded to it, but it has not often been credited with other merits which it possesses in quite an equal degree, when employed by a skilful writer. It has much versatility, and is as suitable for descriptions of scenery and for pathetic utterances as it is for vivid pictures of battle-scenes or even for theological disquisitions. See Mr. Perry’s preface to *Morte Arthure*, p. xi. Owing to a loss of many very convenient words of Anglo-Saxon origin, it would be found much more difficult to compose in it at the present day than formerly, besides the additional difficulty arising from a want of familiarity with it; for though the ear of a

¹ Marsh, *Lectures on English*, 1st series, p. 550.

² Bosworth’s *Anglo-Saxon Dictionary*, pp. cxxiv, cxxvi.

modern Englishman can perceive alliteration, it is not trained to perceive it *at once*, as readily as it does rined endings. But the metre is in itself a *good* one, and might still be employed by us with effect if skilfully adapted to suitable subject-matter. The same not overwise energy that has been bestowed upon the attempt to naturalize hexameters, would have revived this metre long ago, and the gain would have been greater. The verses quoted above from Dunbar, though they are more loosely and irregularly written than they should be, are quite sufficient to show that something may be made of it, though I have nowhere seen any example of it in modern English except in a few lines of my own, some of which are quoted in the preface to Text A. of *Piers Plowman*.

There is yet one more point too important to be disregarded. It has often been remarked that the metre of Milton has so influenced English writers that many a passage in modern English prose presents a succession of nearly perfect blank verses. There are several such in Dickens's *Old Curiosity Shop*. Now this suggests that alliterative verse may have influenced Old English prose in like manner. This is a point which has hardly ever been considered; but it might throw much light on the rhythm of such prose writings. The succession of *dominants* would introduce a remarkable rapidity, very different from the measured cadence, which is due to an imitation of Milton. There is an undoubted instance of the kind in one of Dan Jon Gaytrigg's sermons, in *Religious Pieces in Prose and Verse* (ed. Perry, Early English Text Society). There the cadence is so evident that the scribe has in many places *written it as verse*, and I can safely repeat what I have once before said, that it affords an example of "the regular alliterative verse, *perfect* as regards accent, *imperfect* as regards alliteration; in fact, the very kind of metre into which the old *Piers Plowman* metre would naturally dege-

nerate.”¹ It contains several *perfect* lines, alliteration and all, such as,

Wélthe or wándreth, whéthire so betýde.

Mr. Perry has remarked that he does not see his way to bringing the whole of the sermon into this form. But I am clear that I see mine, and I could easily show that, with a little close attention, very nearly the whole piece can be marked off into well-defined lines from one end to the other, though it occupies over thirteen pages. What makes me sure that this is no mere fancy, is that a similar attempt to mark off other prose pieces in the same volume failed signally. I could not find a single true line in a whole page of it, whilst in a page of the *Sermon* I found forty. Be this as it may, the hint is, I am sure, well worth attention.

A good example of this rhythmical prose, founded on alliterative verse at its base, appears even in Anglo-Saxon times. The prologue to the A.-S. version of “St. Basil’s Advice to a Spiritual Son,” was marked as *verse* by Hickes; but its latest editor, Mr. Norman, remarks that “although not in verse, it (like some of the Homilies, as for instance that of St. Cuthbert, &c.) may be said to be a sort of alliterative prose.” I should add that the prologue is not the only part of it to which the remark applies. I propose for it the name of *Semi-alliterative Rhythmical Prose*, for it is marked rather by the *want* of alliteration than by its *presence*, the rhythm and length of the lines being at the same time well preserved. Or it may be termed, with almost equal fitness, *Imperfect Alliterative Verse*, as it is open to any one to call it *bad verse* instead of *good prose*. I think that good prose is the fairer title of the two.

For the help of the student who wishes to see more of this subject, or to form judgments about it for himself, I subjoin the following references :

¹ *Religious Pieces*, ed. Perry, p. vi. of Preface.

- Guest, *History of English Rhythms*, vol. i. p. 142, &c.
 Rask, *Anglo-Saxon Grammar*, tr. by Thorpe, 1830, p. 135.
 Conybeare, *Illustrations of Anglo-Saxon Poetry*, p. xxxvi., &c.
 Marsh, *Lectures on English*, 1st series, p. 546.
 Craik, *Hist. Eng. Literature*, i. 243.
 Whitaker, *Preface to Piers Plowman*.
 Professor Morley, *English Writers*, i. 264.
 Percy, *Reliques*, ii. 298, 5th ed.¹
 Vernon, *Anglo-Saxon Guide*, p. 135.
 Warton's *History of English Poetry*, vol. ii.
 Hyde Clarke's *English Grammar*, p. 137.

I may also refer him to further remarks of my own, at the end of Mr. Perry's edition of *Morte Arthure*, and in my edition of *Piers Plowman*, Text A. preface p. xxx.; also to my essay on the versification of Chaucer, at the end of the preface to the Aldine edition, as edited by Mr. Richard Morris (Bell and Daldy, 1865). On the more general subject of English metre, see Guest's *English Rhythms*; a Treatise on Versification, by R. W. Evans; and the excellent essay by W. Mitford, called *An Inquiry into the Principles of Harmony in Language, and of the Mechanism of Verse*, 2nd ed. 1804.

¹ The reader must be warned against three extraordinary misstatements in this essay, following close upon one another near the end of it. These are (1) that Robert of Gloucester wrote in anapæstic verse, whereas he wrote in the long Alexandrine verse, containing (when perfect) six *Returns*; (2) that the French alone have retained this old Gothic metre [the twelve-syllabled Alexandrine] for their serious poems, whereas we may be sure that Michael Drayton, the author of the *Polyolbion*, meant his poem seriously; and (3) that the cadence of *Piers Plowman* "so exactly resembles the French Alexandrine, that I believe no peculiarities of their versification can be produced which cannot be exactly matched

in the alliterative metre." This is indeed a curious craze, for the alliterative metre is founded on *Dominants*, the Alexandrine on *Returns*. Percy gives some examples, and the metre which he selects for murdering is the *French* one, as the reader may easily judge for himself, when he finds that the line

Lē succès fût toujours | ün enfant dē l'aüdāce

is marked by him as it is marked here, and is supposed to consist of FOUR ANAPÆSTS! Yet one more blunder to be laid at the door of the "Anapæsts"! Would that we were well rid of them, and that the "longs" and "shorts" were buried beside them!

NOTES.

p. xxviii., Allit. Essay, Chaucer's lines are :

But trusteth wel, I am a suthern man,
I can not geste, rim, ram, ruf, by letter.

v. iii. p. 202, l. 42-3, ed. Morris.

p. 16, l. 1, 2. *Sir Degree*. The Affleck MS. of this Romance is not complete. It wants both beginning and ending, and a few other lines. Some of its deficiencies were supplied by Mr. Laing from the Cambridge University MS., which contains the first 602 lines of the romance. The Affleck MS. starts with

Knizt
Ferli fele wolde fonde
And sechen aventouris, bi nizte and dai,
How zhe mijte here strengthe asai ;
So did a Knyzt SIRE DEGARRÉE.
Ich wille zou telle wat man was he.

and ends with—

“ Certes, Sire, (he saide,) nai ;
Ac zif hit your wille were,
To mi Moder we wende i-fere,
For sche is in gret mourning.”
“ Blethelich, (quath he,) bi Heuene King.”

From line 1070 to line 1115—the end—is printed by Mr. Laing in the Abbotsford Club *Sir Degarré* (as he gives notice) from a black-letter edition (Copland's).

The Romance has been printed *five* times in editions known to us, not *four* only as stated in p. 16, l. 6, for the edition printed by John Kynge, mentioned on p. 18 below, is noticed by Mr. Laing in these words: ‘Among Selden's books in that [the Bodleian] Library, there is a copy of the edition printed at London by John King, in the year 1560, 4to, 16 leaves (Dibdin's *Typographical Antiquities*, vol. iv. p. 338).’ Further, Mr. Laing mentions that “the late learned Archdeacon Todd, in his ‘Illustrations of Gower and Chaucer,’¹ has described a fragment on two leaves containing 160 lines of this Romance, as forming part of a Manuscript supposed to be of the Fourteenth Century, now the property of the Earl of Ellesmere; but the volume, at present, is unfortunately not accessible.”

Mr. Laing also states that the Wynkyn de Worde 4to is in 18 leaves, and is described in Dibdin's *Typ. Ant.* ii. 376; that the mutilated Douce transcript, apparently made from W. de Worde's edition, is dated 1564;

¹ Page 167, Lond. 1810, 8vo and 4to.

and that Utterson reprinted Copland's edition (probably about 1545) which is in the Garrick collection in the British Museum.—F.

- p. 56, l. 11, "noe truse can be taken," i.e. no truce, no peace can be made:—

"Could not take truce with the unruly spleen
Of Tybalt deaf to peace."

Shakespeare's *Romeo & Juliet*, iii. 1.

"With my vex'd spirits I cannot take a truce."

Shakespeare's *King John*, iii. 1.—Dyce.

The linking of *treasure* with *truse* makes me hold still that the two are like in kind, and that my note is right.—F.

- p. 135, *Thomas of Potte*. Ritson printed another version in his *Ancient Songs*, 1790, p. 248, from a large white letter sheet, published May 29, 1657; among the King's pamphlets in the Museum. Its title is "The Two Constant Lovers in Scotland; or, a Pattern of True Love: expressed in this ensuing Dialogue, between an Earls daughter in Scotland, and a poor Serving-man; she refusing to marry the Lord Fenix, which her Father would force her to take; but clave to her first love Tomey o' the Pots. To a pleasant new tune." A slightly different version of the present Ballad was printed in 1677, for F. Coles, T. Vere, J. Wright, and J. Clarke, and reprinted by Ritson in his *Pieces of Ancient Popular Poetry*, 1791, with collations. Utterson had an undated edition printed by A. P. for F. Coles, T. Vere, and J. Wright. From this, collated with the 1677 ed., Mr. Hazlitt printed the Ballad in his *Early Popular Poetry*, ii. 251, with the heading, "The Lovers Quarrel or Cupids Triumph. Being the Pleasant History of fair Rosamond of Scotland. This may be sung to the tune of Floras Farewel." Ritson printed a different version of the tale in his *Ancient Songs*, 1790. See other bibliographical details in Halliwell's *Notices of Popular English Histories*, No. 15, p. 17, 18, and Hazlitt's *Early Popular Poetry*, ii. 251-2. Compare the opinions of the deceased wife of *The Knight of la-Tour Landry*, ab. 1370 (p. 178-9, E. E. Text Soc. 1868) against her daughters marrying men of a lower degree than themselves: "I wylle not that they haue or take ony plesaunce of them that ben of lower estate or degrez than they be of; that is to wete, that no woman vnwedded shalle not sette her loue vpon no man of lower or lesse degree than she is of. . . These whiche louen suche folke, done ageynste theyre worship and honoure. . . I, theyr modyr, charge and deffende them that they take no playsaunce, ne that in no wyse sette theyr loue to none of lower degree then they be come of. . . Also they whiche putte and sette theyr loue on thre maner of folke, that is to wete, wedded men, prestes, and monkes, and as to seruauantes and folk of noughte, these maner of wymmen whiche take to theyr peramours and loue suche folke, I hold them of none extyme ne valewe, but that they be more gretter harlottes than they that ben dayly at the bordell. For many wymmen of the world done that synne of lechery but only for nede and pouerte, or els by cause they haue ben deceyued of hit by false counceylle of bawdes. But alle gentylle women whiche haue ynough to lyue on, the whiche make theyre peramours or louers suche maner of folke as before is sayd, it is by the grete ease wherin they be, and by the brennyng lecherye of theyr bodyes. For they knowe wel that, after the lawe of theyr maryage, they may not haue for theyr lordes, ne to be theyr husbandes, men of the chirche *ne other of no valewe*. This loue is not for to recouere ony worship, but alle dishonour and shame."—F.
- p. 151. Thorne (Twysden's *X Scriptores*, c. 1786) is the earliest authority for the story told in this ballad. He brings his chronicle down to the end of the fourteenth century, but professes to base it on Sprot, who had written down to 1232, and whose work seems to have perished, though there is a spurious chronicle called Sprott's.

I. Thorne points to Kent as the only county where the old English custom still prevailed. He probably alludes to the law of gavelkind or socage tenure, by which all the children shared equally. This was stipulated for by the citizens of London (*Liber Albus*, ed. Riley, ii. pp. 246, 247, 504), and undoubtedly prevailed in other parts of England besides Kent, but gradually died out before the growing use of primogeniture. Elton says (*Tenures of Kent*, p. 50) that the body of Kentish usages as we now possess them was formally allowed in the 21st year of Edward I., also "The Kentish usage was not a mere partition as it has come to be in our time, but it was curiously mingled with a custom of borough English."

As early as Glanville's time (lib. vii. cap. 3, v. 6) socage lands only went to the daughters, failing sons. But this, I think, was an innovation. See Coote on *A Neglected Fact in English History*, p. 57, and the authorities he cites.

II. Fitz-Stephen says (*Vita S. Thomæ*, p. 230), that by the custom of Kent, a man condemned for contempt of court pays a customary fine of 40s. instead of 100s. as in London. This he ascribes to the burdens arising from its exposed position.

III. There is a legal distich, which I, as a Kentish man, remember, but cannot give a reference for, "The traitor to the bough, and his son to the plough," implying that in cases of felony the lands of the felon did not escheat to the crown.

IV. On the other hand, the claims of the county of Kent to be exempt from making presentments of Englishry was disallowed in 6 Edward II. and 7 Edward III. *Yearbooks of Edward I.*, 30 and 31, ed. Horwood, p. xl. —C. H. Pearson.

p. 151, l. 4; p. 153, l. 35; p. 155, l. 83, 94. The *Consuetudines Cantie* or Customs of Kent, are given in the Record Commission Statutes, i. 223-5.

1. that all the Bodies of Kentishmen be free, as well as the other free Bodies of England.

2. they do not choose the King's Escheator.

3. they may give and sell lands without license asked of their Lords.

4. they may plead by Writ of the King, or Pleint, for the obtaining of their right, as well of their Lords as of other Men.

5. they ought not to come to the common Summonee of the Eire, but only by the Borsholder and four Men of the Borough.

6. if attainted of Felony, they lose their goods only, and their heirs shall take their lands; whereupon it is said in Kentish 'the Father to the Boughe, and the Sonne to the Plough.'

7. a Felon's Wife is dowable out of his lands, and the King shall not have the lands for a year, or wast them.

8. a man's lands are shared between all his sons, the messuage going to the youngest.

9. a dead man's goods shall be parted in 3 parts, 1 to pay his debts, 1 for his children equally, the third for the widow.

10. an infant heir is taken charge of, not by the lord, but by his next of blood to whom the inheritance cannot descend.

11. the heir is married, not by the lord, but by his own friends.

12. the heir comes of age at 15 years.

13. the widow has $\frac{1}{2}$ her husband's land for dower while she is chaste, and the widower $\frac{1}{2}$ his wife's.

&c. &c.—F.

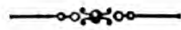
p. 174. *The Nuttbrowne Maid*. "1558-9. John Kynge ys fyned for that he did

- prynt the nutbrowne mayde w^tout lycense, ij: vj^d." *Collier's Registers*, i. 16. See the note there.
- p. 177, l. 1, notes, for *i tshalle* read *it shalle*.
- p. 301, *Cressus*. See the "curious ballad" on "Troylus & Cressyd," from MS. Ashmole, 48, fol. 120, in *The Marriage of Wit & Wisdom*, (Shaksp. Soc.) p. 102.
- p. 374. *Maudline*. This ballad should have been divided into 4-line verses. It is printed also in *Early Ballads*, ed. R. Bell, 1856, p. 217.—F.
- p. 402, l. 17. See Henry's answer, August 12, 5th year of his reign, in Harl. MS. 787, leaf 58.—F.
- p. 466, last line, p. 470, l. 10. See the "Articles of Enquiry for the Monastery of Walsingham," in Harl. MS. 791, leaf 27.—F.
- p. 473. There are several charters or grants by Godiva and Leofricus in *Kemble's Codex Diplomaticus*.—F.
- p. 499, *Queene Dido*. 1564-5. A ballett intituled the Wanderynge prynce. [No doubt the ballad printed by Percy (*Reliques*, iii. 244), under the title of "Queen Dido," and which Ritson, in closer adherence to the old printed copies, calls, "The Wandering Prince of Troy." See *Ancient Songs*, ii. 141, edit. 1829.] *Collier's Extracts*.—F.
- p. 541, The Egerton MS. gives the name of the writer (and not the copier, seemingly), of the *Sege of Rone*, thus :
- Thys processe made Johan page,
Alle in raff^e,¹ and not in ryme,
By cause of space he hadde no tyme;
But whenne thys werre ys at A nende,
And he haue lyffe and space, he wylle hit a-mende,
They that haue hyrde thys redyng,
To hys blysse he tham bryng
That for vs dyde vppon a tree
Say Amen for Charyte, Amen!
Explicit þ^e sege of Rone.—F.

¹ *Raff*=refuse, a confused heap, a jumble. Here it means in lines jumbled together: see *Raffe* in Wedgwood. *Ryme* would mean *regular* verses with properly rimed endings.—Skeat.

Bishop Percy's Folio MS.

Ballads and Romances.



Sir Cauline :¹

“THIS old romantic tale,” says Percy, in his Introduction to the Sir Cauline of the *Reliques*, “was preserved in the Editor’s folio MS., but in so very defective and mutilated a condition (not from any chasm in the MS., but from great omission in the transcript, probably copied from the faulty recitation of some illiterate minstrel), and the whole appeared so far short of the perfection it seemed to deserve, that the Editor was tempted to add several stanzas in the first part, and still more in the second, to connect and complete the story in the manner which appeared to him most interesting and affecting.”

The First Part of the Bishop’s version concludes with the triumphant return of Sir Cauline from his encounter with the Eldridge Knight, and the acceptance of his love by the King’s daughter. It comprises the first 129 lines of the MS. copy ; it consists of 189 lines. The Second Part has only one feature in common with the latter stanzas of the MS. copy, viz., the fight with the Giant. All its other incidents—the stolen interviews of the lovers, their interruption by the King, Sir Cauline’s

¹ A strange romantic old song—very defective & obscure. N.B. This seems to have been originally a Scotch Song: which will account for its being so corrupted.—P.

banishment, his reappearance in disguise, his death, her death—are the Bishop's own production. Altogether, the MS. copy contains 201 lines; that in the *Reliques* 392. These additional stanzas show, indeed, an extensive acquaintance with old balladry, and a considerable talent of imitation. Percy could write such mimicries with a fatal facility, "stans pede in uno." Of his capacity in this respect there is no better instance than his Sir Cauline. For our part we prefer the Folio copy, with all its roughness and imperfections, to the Bishop's revision, with all its cleverness. Ever so few gold-grains are more precious than heaps of tinsel. If one touch of nature makes the whole world kin, one touch of affectation mars and dissolves that universal kinsmanship. Percy's version abounds in affectations. The general sense of unreality that pervades his interpolations and additions reaches its climax in the concluding passage of his Second Part, where Sir Cauline, wounded to his death in his fight with the Soldan, is recognised by his lady.

It is my life, my lord, she sayes,
And shriekte and swound awaye.

Sir Cauline juste lifte up his eyes
When he heard his ladye crye,
O ladye, I am thine owne true love,
For thee I wisht to dye.

Then giving her one partinge looke,
He closed his eyes in deathe,
Ere Christabelle, that ladye milde,
Begane to drawe her breathe.

But when she found her comelye knighte
Indeed was dead and gone,
Shee layde her pale cold cheeke to his,
And thus she made her moane.

O staye, my deare and onlye lord,
For mee thy faithfulle feere;
'Tis meet that I shold followe thee,
Who hast bought my love soe deare.

Then fayntinge in a deadlye swoune,
 And with a deepe-fette sighe,
 That burste her gentle hearte in twayne,
 Fayre Christabelle did dye.

As Mr. Furnivall in his original Proposal for the publication of the Folio said, "With a true instinct Professor Child remarked in his *Ballads* (ed. 1861, vol. iii. p. 172), "It is difficult to believe that this charming romance had so tragic and so sentimental a conclusion."

However, the Bishop understood and served his generation.

The story of the fight with the Eldridge Knight is told in the Scotch ballad of *King Malcolm and Sir Colvin*, given by Buchan in his *Ballads of the North of Scotland* (copied by Professor Child). But there can be little doubt that this is one of that collector's many fabrications.

IESUS : lord mickle of might,¹
 that dyed ffor vs on the roode
 to maintaine vs in all our right,
 4 that lones ² true English blood.

 ffor by ³ a *Knight* I say my song,
 was bold & ffull hardye ;
 Sir Robert Briuse wold fforth to ffight
 8 in-to Ireland ouer the sea ;

 & in *that* land dwells a king
 which ouer all does beare the bell,
 & with him there dwelled a curteous *Knight*,
 12 men call him Sir Cawline.

I'll sing you
a song of

an Irish
knight,

Sir Cawline,

¹ For the first four stanzas Percy has in the *Reliques* these two :

THE FIRST PART.
 In Ireland, ferr over the sea,
 There dwelleth a bonnye kinge ;
 And with him a yong and comlye knighte,
 Men call him syr Cawline.

The kinge had a ladye to his daughter,
 In fashon she hath no peere ;
 And princely wightes that ladye wooed
 To be theyr wedded feere.—F.

² love.—P.

³ of.—P.

who loved a
king's lovely
daughter,

And he hath a Lady to his daughter, [page 369]
of ffashyon shee hath noe peere ;
Knights & lordes they woed her both,
16 trusted to haue beene her peere.¹

but durst not
disclose his
love,

Sir Cawline loues her best of oné,²
but nothing durst hee say
to discreewe³ his councell to noe man,
20 but deerlye loued this mayd.⁴

and had at
last to take
to his bed,

till itt beffell vpon a day,⁵
great dill⁶ to him was dight ;
the maydens loue remoued his mind,
24 to care bed went the Knight ;

and declares
he should
die.

& one while he spread his armes him ffroe,
⁷ & cryed soe pittiouslye
“ ffor the maydens loue *that* I haue most minde,
28 this day may comfort mee,
or else ere noone⁸ I shalbe dead !⁹ ”
thus can Sir Cawline say.

Just before
dinner,
the King
asks for him,

when our parish masse *that* itt¹⁰ was done,
32 & our¹¹ king was bowne to dine,
he sayes, “ where is Sir Cawline
that was wont to serue me with ale & wine ?¹² ”

¹ perhaps *ferē*.—P. peere is equal, mate, match.—F.

² All, or any.—P. loveth her best of all.—*Rel.*

³ *discreewe*, discribe, discover. Chauc. *fortē*, diskevere.—P. He discreewe.—*Rel.*

⁴ he lovde this may.—*Rel.*

⁵ on a daye it so beffell.—*Rel.*

⁶ grief. A.-S. *dēol*, deceit, trouble?—F.

⁷ For the next five lines *Rel.* has three :

One while he spred them nye:
And aye ! but I winne that ladyes love,
For dole now I mun dye.

⁸ Only half the second *n* in the MS.—F.

⁹ This was the usual resource of love-sick knights. Compare *Sir Generides*, p. 237, and *Will Stewart* below.—F.

¹⁰ And whan our parish-masse.—*Rel.*

¹¹ Our.—*Rel.*

¹² That is wont to serve the wyne.—*Rel.*

- but then answered a courteous *Knight*
 36 fast wringing his hands,¹ and is told
 that he's
 very ill.
- "Sir Cawlines sicke, & like to be dead
 without and a good leedginge."²
- "ffetch yee³ downe my daughter deere,
 40 shee is a Leeche ffull fine⁴;
 I, and take you doe⁵ & the baken bread,
 and eene⁶ on⁷ the wine soe red,⁸
 & looke no day[n]tinesse ffor him to deare,
 44 for ffull loth I wold him teene."⁹
- this Ladye is gone to his chamber,¹⁰ She goes to
 her maydens ffollowing Nye, him,
- "O well," shee sayth, "how doth my Lord?" asks how
 he is,
 48 "O sicke!" againe saith hee.¹¹
- "I, but rise vp wightlye, man, for shame!
 neuer lye soe cowardlye here¹²!
 itt¹³ is told in my ffathers hall,
 52 ffor my loue you will dye."¹⁴
- "itt is ffor your Loue, ffayre Ladye,¹⁵ He says he's
 in love wit
 her;
 that all this dill I drye.
 ffor if you wold comfort me with a Kisse,¹⁶ if she'll kiss

¹ fast his hands wringing.—P.

² leechinge; to Leche is to heal, cure. Iye.—P. *Leedginge* is from the Fr. *allegger*, to *asswage*, mitigate, allay, solace. Cotgrave. This stanza is in *Rel.*:

Then aunswerde him a courteous knighte,
 And fast his handes gan wringe:
 Syr Cauline is sicke, and like to dye
 Without a good leechinge.—F.

³ Feteche me.—*Rel.*

⁴ Cp. Loospaine in *Eger & Grime*, vol. i. p. 362-3, p. 393.—F.

⁵ Goe take him doughe.—*Rel.* An odd misreading of Percy's. The & is redundant (as it so often is), and *doe* is

the auxiliary verb.—F.

⁶ ? MS. edne.—F.

⁷ And serve him with.—*Rel.*

⁸ the red wine.—P.

⁹ Lothe I were him to tine.—*Rel.*

¹⁰ Fair Christabelle to his chaumber goes.—*Rel.*

¹¹ thou fayr ladyè.—*Rel.*

¹² here *delend* [as in *Rel.*].—P. ? here soe cowardlye lye.—F.

¹³ For it.—*Rel.*

¹⁴ You dye for loue of mee.—*Rel.*

¹⁵ Fayre ladye, it is for your love.—*Rel.*

¹⁶ Compare *Sir Generides* again, p. 238.

- him he'll get
up. 56 then were I brought ffrom bale to blisse;
noe ¹ longer here ² wold I lye."
- But he can't
be her peer 3 "alas! soe well you know, *Sir knight*,
I cannott bee your peere."
- 60 "ffor some deeds of armes ffaine wold I doe
to be your Bacheeleere.⁴"
- unless he'll
watch all
night by
Eldridge
Hill, 64 "vpon Eldrige hill there growes ⁵ a thorne
vpon the mores brodinge ⁶;
& wold you,⁷ *Sir Knight*, wake there all night
to day of the other ⁸ Morninge ⁹ ?
- and fight the
Eldridge
King. 68 "ffor the Eldrige *King* that is ¹⁰ mickle of Might
will examine you beforne ;
& there was neuer man *that* bare his liffe away
since the day *that* I was borne.¹¹ "
- This, Sir
Cawline
undertakes, 72 "but I will ffor your sake, ffaire Ladye,
walke on the bents [soe] ¹² browne,¹³
& Ile either bring you a readye token
or Ile neuer come to you againe.¹⁴ "

Again, when Sir Generides is expecting death :

The flesh wasted fro the boon,
He was so feble he might not goon,
In him was noon hope of life: (p. 304)
his love, Clarionas, comes to kiss him,
and at once
So glad he was of hir comyng,
Of his euel he felt no-thing ;
He kist and clipt with al his might,
And kept hir in his armes al that night.
(p. 308.)—F.

¹ ? MS. now.—F. ² No lenger.—*Rel.*

³ For the next stanza *Rel.* has :

Syr knighte, my father is a kinge,
I am his onlye heire ;
Alas! and well you knowe, syr knighte,
I never can be youre fere.

O ladye, thou art a kinges daughtèr,
And I am not thy peere,
But let me doe some deedes of armes
To be your bacheleere.

Some deedes of armes if thou wilt doe,
My bacheleere to bee,
(But ever and aye my heart wold rue,
Giff harm shold happe to thee,)

⁴ knight.—P. ⁵ groweth.—*Rel.*
⁶ *brode*, to prick. G.D.—P. ? breadth,
cp. l. 76.—F. ⁷ dare ye.—*Rel.*

⁸ Untill the fayre.—*Rel.*
⁹ id est, till Day of the next *Morning*.
—P.

¹⁰ knighte, so.—*Rel.*

¹¹ And never man bare life awaye,
But he did him scath and scorne.
—*Rel.* ¹² Cp. l. 81.—F.

¹³ That knighte he is a foul paynim,
And large of limb and bone;
And but if heaven may be thy speede
Thy life it is but gone.

Nowe on the Eldridge hilles Ile
walke,
For thy sake, faire ladie.—*Rel.*

¹⁴ never more you see.—*Rel.*

- but this Ladye is gone to her Chamber,¹
her Maydens ffollowing bright ;
76 & Sir Cawlines gone to the mores soe broad,² and goes to
ffor to wake there all night. the moor.
- vnto midnight they³ Moone did rise, At midnight
he walked vp and downe,
80 & a lightsome bugle then⁴ heard he blow a bugle
ouer the bents soe browne. blows ;
saies hee, " and if cryance⁵ come vntill⁶ my hart,
I am ffarr ffrom any good towne⁷ ; "
- 84 & he spyed ene a litle him by,⁸
a ffurious King⁹ & a¹⁰ fell, he sees a
& a¹¹ ladye bright his brydle led, furious king,
that seemlye itt was to see¹² ;
- 88 & soe fast hee called vpon¹³ Sir Cawline, who warns
" Oh man, I redd thee fflye ! him that
ffor if cryance come vntill¹⁴ thy hart, if he's craven
I am a-feard least¹⁵ thou mun dye." he'll die.
- 92 he sayes, "[no] cryance comes to¹⁶ my hart,
nor ifaith I ffeare not thee¹⁷ ;
ffor because¹⁸ thou minged¹⁹ not christ before,
Thee lesse me dreadeth thee." [page 370]

¹ The ladye is gone to her owne chaumbere.—*Rel.*

² Syr Cauline lope from care-bed soone,
And to the Eldridge hills is gone.—*Rel.* Two bad lines for one good one.—*F.*

³ that the.—*Rel.*

⁴ Then a lightsome bugle.—*Rel.*

⁵ MS. cryance. Fear, Old Fr. *criente*, *crainte*.—*F.*

⁶ Quoth hee, If cryance come till.—*Rel.*

⁷ My life it is but gone.—*Rel.* 1st ed. ; printed right in the 2nd, with a note:

" This line is restored from the folio MS." —*F.*

⁸ And soone he spyde on the mores so broad.—*Rel.*

⁹ knight : vide infra.—*P.*

¹⁰ wight and.—*Rel.*

¹¹ A.—*Rel.*

¹² Clad in a fayre kyrtell.—*Rel.*

¹³ on.—*Rel.*

¹⁴ For but if cryance come till.—*Rel.*

¹⁵ I weene but.—*Rel.*

¹⁶ He sayth, 'No' cryance comes till.—*Rel.*

¹⁷ in faith, I wyll not flee.—*Rel.*

¹⁸ For, cause.—*Rel.*

¹⁹ *id est*, mentionedst.—*P.*

- Cawline charges the King.
Their spears break ;
they fight with swords.
- 96 but Sir Cawline he shooke a speare,
the King was bold, and abode¹,
& the timber these 2 Children bore²
soe soone in sunder slode,³
- 100 ffor they tooke &⁴ 2 good swords,
& they Layden on good Loade.⁵
- Cawline cuts off the King's right hand.
- 104 but Sir Cawline with an aukeward⁸ stroke
he brought him ffrom his hand,⁹
I, & fflyng ouer his head soe hye,¹⁰
ffell downe of¹¹ that Lay land :
- His Queen begs him to spare her Lord,
- 108 ¹² & his lady stood a litle thereby,
ffast ringing her hands :
“for they maydens loue that you haue most meed,
smyte you my Lord no more,

¹ The Eldridge knyghte, he pricked his steed ;

Syr Cauline bold abode :

Then either shooke his trustye speare.—*Rel.*

² bare.—*Rel.* ³ yode.—*Rel.*

⁴ “&” is often redundant: compare line 120.—*Dyce.*

⁵ Then tooke they out theyr two good swordes,

And layden on full faste,

Till helme and hawberke, mail and sheelde,

They all were well-nye brast.—*Rel.*

⁶ The Eldridge knyght.—*Rel.*

⁷ And stiffe in stower did stande.—*Rel.*

⁸ a backward.—*Rel.*

⁹ smote off his right hand.—*Rel.*

¹⁰ That soone he with paine and lacke of bloud.—*Rel.*

¹¹ on.—*Rel.*

¹² For the next two stanzas *Rel.* has six :

Then up syr Cauline lift his brande

All over his head so hye :

And here I swear by the holy roode,

Nowe, caytiffe, thou shalt dye.

Then up and came that ladye brighte,

Faste wringing of her hande :

For the maydens love, that most you love,

Withold that deadlye brande.

For the maydens love, that most you love,

Now smyte no more I praye ;

And aye whatever thou wilt, my lord,

He shall thy hests obaye.

Now sweare to mee, thou Eldridge knyghte,

And here on this lay-land,

That thou wilt believe on Christ his laye,

And therto plight thy hand :

And that thou never on Eldridge come

To sporte, gamon, or playe :

And that thou here give up thy armes

Until thy dying daye.

The Eldridge knyghte gave up his armes

With many a sorrowfulle sighe ;

And sware to obey syr Caulines hest,

Till the tyme that he shold dye.

- 112 “ & heest neuer come vpon Eldrige [hill]
 him to sport, gamon, or play,
 & to meete noe man of middle¹ earth,
 & that lines² on christs his lay.³ ”
- 116 but he then vp, and that Eldryge King⁴
 sett him in his saddle againe,⁵
 & that Eldryge King⁶ & his Ladye
 to their castle are they gone.⁷
- 120 ⁸ & hee tooke then vp & that Eldryge sword
 as hard as any flynt,
- and he'll
 never fight
 Christian
 again.
- The King
- and Queen
 ride off.
- Cawline
 takes up
 his sword,

¹ ? MS. *middle*; or *middle*, with the left stroke of the first *d* dotted for *i*. On “middle earth” see note ⁴, p. 92, vol. i. —F.

² leeves, i. e. believes.—P.

³ lay, i. e. law.—P.

⁴ And he then up and the Eldridge knighte.—*Rel.*

⁵ anone.—*Rel.*

⁶ And the Eldridge knighte.—*Rel.*

⁷ gane.—Dyce.

⁸ Henceforth Percy has it all his own way, except in three stanzas. For the next six stanzas he has these thirty-six: Then he tooke up the bloody hand,

That was so large of bone,
 And on it he founde five ringes of gold
 Of knightes that had be slone.

Then he tooke up the Eldridge sworde,
 As hard as any flint;
 And he tooke off those ringes five,
 As bright as fyre and brent.

Home then pricked syr Cauline
 As light as leafe on tree:
 I-wys he neither stint ne blanne,
 Till he his ladye see.

Then downe he knelt upon his knee
 Before that lady gay:
 O ladye, I have bin on the Eldridge hills;
 These tokens I bring away.

Now welcome, welcome, syr Cauline,
 Thrice welcome unto mee,
 For now I perceive thou art a true
 knighte,
 Of valour bolde and free.

O ladye, I am thy own true knighte,
 Thy hests for to obaye:
 And mought I hope to winne thy love!—
 Ne more his tonge colde saye.

The ladye blushed scarlette redde,
 And fette a gentill sighe:
 Alas! syr knight how may this bee,
 For my degree's soe highe?

But sith thou hast hight, thou comely
 youth,
 To be my batchilere,
 Ile promise if thee I may not wedde
 I will have none other fere.

Then shee held forthe her lilly-white
 hand
 Towards that knighte so free:
 He gave to it one gentill kisse,
 His heart was brought from bale to
 blisse,
 The teares sterte from his ee.

But keep my counsayl, syr Cauline,
 Ne let no man it knowe;
 For and ever my father sholde it ken,
 I wot he wolde us sloe.

From that daye forthe that ladye fayre
 Lovde syr Cauline the knighte:
 From that daye forthe he only joyde
 Whan shee was in his sight.

Yea and oftentimes they mette
 Within a fayre arboure,
 Where they in love and sweet daliaunce
 Past manye a pleasaunt houre.

rings and
hand,

& soe he did those ringes 5,
harder then ffyer, and brent.

and gives
them to
his love.

124 first he presented to the *Kings* daughter
they hand, & then they sword.

PART THE SECOND.

EVERYE white will have its blacke,
And everye sweete its sowre :
This founde the ladye Christabelle
In an untimely howre.

For so it befelle as syr Cauline
Was with that ladye faire,
The kinge her father walked forthe
To take the evenyng aire :

And into the arbour as he went
To rest his wearye feet,
He found his daughter and syr Cauline
There sette in daliaunce sweet.

The kinge hee sterted forthe, I-wys,
And an angrye man was hee :
Nowe, traytoure, thou shalt hange or drawe,
And rewe shall thy ladie.

Then forthe syr Cauline he was ledde,
And throwne in dungeon deepe :
And the ladye into a towre so hye,
There left to wayle and weepe.

The queene she was syr Caulines friend,
And to the kinge sayd shee :
I praye you save syr Caulines life,
And let him banisht bee.

Now, dame, that traitor shal be sent
Across the salt sea fome :
But here I will make thee a band,
If ever he come within this land,
A foule deathe is his doome.

All woe-begone was that gentil knight
To parte from his ladye ;
And many a time he sighed sore,
And cast a wistfulle eye :
Faire Christabelle, from thee to parte,
Farre lever had I dye.

Faire Christabelle, that ladye bright,
Was had forthe of the towre ;
But ever shee droopeth in her minde,
As nipt by an ungentle winde
Doth some faire lillye flowre.

And ever shee doth lament and weepe
To tint her lover soe :
Syr Cauline, thou little think'st on mee,
But I will still be true.

Manye a kinge, and manye a duke,
And lords of high degree,
Did sue to that fayre ladye of love ;
But never shee wolde them nee.

When manye a day was past and gone,
Ne comforte she colde finde,
The kyng proclaime'd a touneament,
The * cheere his daughters mind :

And there came lords, and there came
knights,
Fro manye a farre countrye,
To break a spere for theyr ladyes love
Before that faire ladye.

And many a ladye there was sette
In purple and in palle :
But faire Christabelle soe woe-begone
Was the fayrest of them all.

Then manye a knyghte was mickle of
might
Before his ladye gaye ;
But a stranger wight, whom no man
knewe,
He wan the prize eche daye.

His acton it was all of blacke,
His hewberke, and his sheelde,
Ne noe man wist whence he did come,
Ne noe man knewe where he did gone,
Whan they came out the feelde.

And now three days were prestlye past
In feates of chivalrye,
When lo upon the fourth morninge
A sorrowfulle sight they see.

A hugye giaunt stiffe and starke,
All foule of limbe and lere ;
Two goggling eyen like fire farden,
A mouthe from eare to eare.

Before him came a dwarffe full lowe,
That waited on his knee,

* To. 2nd edition.—F.

- “but a serrett ¹ buffett you haue him giuen,
the *King* & the crowne!” shee sayd.
- 128 “I, but 34 ² stripes
comen beside the rood.” ³ But he has
more to do.
- & a Gyant that was both stiffe [&] strong,
he lope now them amonge, A five-
headed giant
leaps in,
- 132 & vpon his squier ⁴ 5 heads he bare,
vnmackley ⁵ made was hee.
- & he dranke then on the *Kings* wine,
& hee put the cup in his slecue ; drinks the
King's wine,
- 136 & all thé trembled & were wan
ffor feare he shold them greeffe. ⁶
- “He tell thee mine Arrand, *King*,” he sayes, and demands
“mine errand what I doe heere ;
- 140 ffor I will bren thy temples hye,
or He haue thy daughter deere ; his
daughter.
in, or else vpon, yond more soe brood
thou shalt ffind mee a ppeare. ⁷”
- 144 the *King* he turned him round about, The King's
in a great
fright,
(*Lord*, in his heart he ⁸ was woe !),
says, “is there noe *Knight* of the ⁹ round table and asks
who'll
fight for
him,
this matter will vndergoe ?
- And at his backe five heads he bare,
All wan and pale of blee.
- Sir, quoth the dwarffe, and louted lowe,
Behold that hend Soldain !
Behold these heads I beare with me !
They are kings which he hath slain.
- The Eldridge knight is his own cousine,
Whom a knight of thine hath shent :
And hee is come to avenge his wrong,
And to thee, all thy knightes among,
Defiance here hath sent.
- But yette he will appease his wrath
Thy daughters love to winne :
And but thou yeelde him that fayre mayd,
Thy halls and towers must brenne.
- Thy head, syr king, must goe with mee ;
Or else thy daughter deere ;
- Or else within these lists soe broad
Thou must finde him a peere.
¹ ? closed fist. Serre, to join closely.
Halliwell. Fr. *serrer*, to close . . force or
presse neere together ; to locke, shut or
put up. Cotgrave. If a king's daughter
might talk slang, “a shutting-up blow”
would just do here.—F.
² Read “four and thirty.”—F.
³ Some very great omission here.—P.
⁴ *swire*, neck. Percy turns the
“squier” into a dwarf, with five dead
kings' heads at his back. But the Bishop
knew what *swire* meant.—F.
⁵ *unmackley*, uneven, unequal, mis-
shapen. *Makly* is even, equal. G. D.
—P. ⁶ greeve.—P.
⁷ MS. appeare.—F. a peere.—P.
⁸ And in his heart.—*Rel.*
⁹ Is there never a knichte of my.—*Rel.*

and have his lands 148 1 " I, & hee shall haue my broad Lands,
& keepe them well his liue ;
and daughter. I, and soe hee shall my daughter deere,
to be his weded wiffe."

1 Percy composes again :

Is there never a knighte amongst yee all
Will fight for my daughter and mee ?
Whoever will fight yon grimme soldan,
Right fair his meede shall bee.

For hee shall have my broad lay-lands,
And of my crowne be heyre ;
And he shall winne faire Christabelle
To be his wedded fere.

But every knighte of his round tablè
Did stand both still and pale ;
For whenever they lookt on the grim
soldan,
It made their hearts to quail.

All woe-begone was that fayre ladyè,
When she sawe no helpe was nye :
She cast her thought on her owne true-
love,
And the teares gusht from her eye.

Up then sterte the stranger knighte,
Sayd, Ladye, be not affrayd :
He fight for thee with this grimme
soldan,
Thoughe he be unmacklye made.

And if thou wilt lend me the Eldridge
sworde,
That lyeth within thy bowre,
I truste in Christe for to slay this fiende
Thoughe he be stiff in stowre.

Goe fetch him downe the Eldridge
sworde,
The kinge he cryde, with speede :
Nowe heaven assist thee, courteous
knighte ;
My daughter is thy meede.

The gyaunt he stepped into the lists,
And sayd, Awaye, awaye :
I sweare, as I am the hend soldan,
Thou lettest me here all daye.

Then forthe the stranger knight he came
In his blacke armour dight :

The ladye sighed a gentle sighe,
" That this were my true knighte !"

And nowe the gyaunt and knighte be
mett
Within the lists soe broad ;
And now with swordes soe sharpe of
steele,
They gan to lay on load.

The soldan strucke the knighte a stroke,
That made him reele asyde ;
Then woe-begone was that fayre ladyè,
And thrice she deeply sighde.

The soldan strucke a second stroke,
That made the bloude to flowe :
All pale and wan was that ladye fayre,
And thrice she wept for woe.

The soldan strucke a third fell stroke,
Which brought the knighte on his
knee :
Sad sorrow pierced that ladyes heart,
And she shriekt loud shreikings three.

The knighte he leapt upon his feete,
All recklesse of the pain :
Quoth hee, But heaven be now my speede,
Or else I shall be slaine.

He grasped his sworde with mayne and
mighte,
And spying a secrette part,
He drave it into the soldan's syde,
And pierced him to the heart.

Then all the people gave a shoute,
Whan they sawe the soldan falle :
The ladye wept, and thanked Christ,
That had reskewed her from thrall.

And nowe the kinge with all his barons
Rose uppe from offe his seate,
And downe he stepped into the listes
That curteous knighte to greete.

But he for payne and lacke of bloude
Was fallen into a swounde,

- 152 & then stood vp Sir Cawline
his owne errand ffor to say :
“ ifaith,¹ I wold to god, Sir,” sayd Sir Cawline,
“ *that* Soldan I will assay. Sir Cawline
agrees to
fight the
Giant.
- 156 “ goe, ffeitch me downe my Eldrige sword,
ffor I woone itt att [a] ffray.”
“ but away, away ! ” sayd the hend Soldan,
“ thou tarryest mee here all day ! ”
- 160 but the hend Soldan & Sir Cawline
thé ffought a summers day :
now has hee slaine *that* hend Soldan,
& brought his 5 heads away. He does so,
and slays
him.
- 164 & the King has betaken him his broade lands
& all his venison.² The King
gives
Cawline
all his lands,
- “ but take you too & your Lands [soe] broad,
& brooke³ them well your liffe,
168 ffor you promised mee your daughter deere
to be my weded wiffe.” but Cawline
asks for his
daughter,
- And there all walteringe in his gore,
Laye lifelesse on the grounde. Ere Christabelle, that ladye milde,
Begane to drawe her breathe.
- Come downe, come downe, my daughter
deare,
Thou art a leech of skille ;
Farre lever had I lose halfe my landes,
Than this good knyghte sholde spille. But when she found her comelye knyghte
Indeed was dead and gone,
Shée layde her pale cold cheeke to his,
And thus she made her moane.
- Downe then steppeth that fayre ladyè,
To helpe him if she maye ;
But when she did his beavere raise,
It is my life, my lord, she sayes,
And shriekte and swound awaye. O staye, my deare and onlye lord,
For mee thy faithfulle feere ;
’Tis meet that I shold followe thee,
Who hast bought my love soe deare.
- Sir Cauline juste lifte up his eyes
When he heard his ladye crye,
O ladye, I am thine owne true love,
For thee I wisht to dye. Then fayntinge in a deadlye swoune,
And with a deepe-fette sighe,
That burste her gentle hearte in twayne,
Fayre Christabelle did dye.
- Then giving her one partinge looke,
He closed his eyes in deathe, ¹ In faith.—P.
² all for his warryson, i. e. reward.
—P.
³ broke, i. e. enjoy.—P.

- and the King
promises her to him at once.
- 172 “now by my ffaith,” then sayes our *King*,
“ffor *that* wee will not striffe ;
ffor thou shalt haue my daughter dere
to be thy weded wiffe.” [page 371]
- Cawline
goes into a garden to pray,
where a steward
- 176 the other morninge *Sir Cawline* rose
by the dawning of the day,
& vntill a garden did he goe
his Mattins ffor to say ;
& *that* bespyed a ffalse steward—
a shames death *that* he might dye!—
- lets a lion out on him
weaponless.
- 180 & he lett a lyon out of a bande,
Sir Cawline ffor to teare ;
& he had noe wepon him vpon,
nor noe wepon did weare.
- He thrusts his cloak into the lion's mouth till its heart bursts.
- 184 but hee tooke then his Mantle of greene,
into the Lyons mouth itt thrust ;
he held the Lyon soe sore to the wall
till the Lyons hart did burst.¹
- A watchman cries, “*Sir Cawline's* slain.”
- 188 & the watchmen cryed vpon the walls
& sayd, “*Sir Cawlines* slaine !
and with a beast is not ffull litle,
a Lyon of Mickle mayne.”
- His love swoons,
- 192 then the *Kings* daughter shee ffell downe,
“for peerlesse is my payne !”
- but *Sir Cawline*
says “I am here,”
- 196 “O peace, my Lady !” sayes *Sir Cawline*,
“I haue bought thy loue ffull deere.
O peace, my Lady !” sayes *Sir Cawline*,
“peace, Lady, ffor I am heere !”

¹ brast.—P.

then he did marry this *Kings* daughter marries her
 with gold & siluer bright,
 200 & 15 sonnes this Ladye beere and they
 to Sir Cawline the Knight.¹ have 15 sons.

ffins.

¹ N.B. I ventured to make great additions to this Fragment; of which I have given notice to the Reader, in my 1st Vol. of Reliques &c.—P. The “notice” consists of Percy’s “it was necessary to supply several stanzas in the first part, & still more in the second, to connect & complete the story”; inverted commas to a *but* and *No*; his * * * at the end; and two notes that he has altered—*slode*, l. 99, to *yode*, and *aukeward*, l. 104, to *backward*.—F.

Between the first and second parts, Percy put in his second edition the following note:

* * * In this conclusion of the FIRST PART, and at the beginning of the SECOND,

the reader will observe a resemblance to the story of SIGISMUNDA AND GUISCARD, as told by Boccace and Dryden: See the latter’s Description of the Lovers meeting in the Cave, and those beautiful lines, which contain a reflection so like this of our poet, “EVERYE WHITE, &c. viz.

“But as extremes are short of ill and good,
 And tides at highest mark regorge their flood;
 So Fate, that could no more improve their joy,
 Took a malicious pleasure to destroy.
 Tancred, who fondly loved, &c.”

Sir Degree :

[In five Parts.—P.]

THERE are extant two complete MS. copies of this romance—one in the Auchinleck MS., one here at last printed from the Folio. Besides these, there are imperfect MS. copies, one in the Public Library of Cambridge (Ff. ii. 38), containing some 602 lines, one in the Douce Collection (MS. Selden, c. 39), containing some 352 lines in all. The romance has been four times printed—by Wynkyn de Worde, by Copland, in Mr. Utterson's Early Popular Poetry, and more recently for the Abbotsford Club.

Of all these copies, the earliest and the most perfect is that treasured in the Auchinleck MS., printed for the Abbotsford Club. Next in merit, so far as it goes, is the Cambridge copy. This opens as follows :

(*From Camb. Univ. MS. Ff. ii. 38, fol. 257 b.*)

Lystenyþ, lordynges gente & fre,
 y wyll yow tell of *sir* degare.
 knyȝtes þat were some tyme in lande,
 Far þey wolde þem-selfe fande
 To seke auenturs nyght & day,
 How þat þey myȝt þer strenkyth assay.
 So dud a knyght *sir* degare,
 I schall yow telle what man was he.
 In bretayne þe lasse þer was a kyng,
 Of grete power in all thyng;
 Styffeste in armour vndur schylde,
 And moost doghtyest to fyȝt in fylde;
 For ther was none verament
 That myȝt in warre nor in *turnament*,
 Nodur in Iustyng for no thyng,
 Hym owte of hys sadull bryng,
 Nor owt of hys sterop bryng hys fote;

[fol. 258] So stronge he was of boone & blode.

There was an unique copy of Wynkyn de Worde's edition sold at Heber's sale. Probably the edition issued by Copland *circ.*

1545, of which a copy is preserved in the British Museum, differed but slightly from that of the earlier printer. From one of these printed editions the Douce fragments would seem to have been transcribed; from one of these the following version, viciously executed, as indeed are generally the Percy folio versions. The correspondence of the three copies will be sufficiently illustrated by comparing the following two extracts together, and with verses 381-92 of the Folio version :

(From Copland's Edition.)

Syr Degore stode in a studye than
 And thought he was a doughtie man
 And I am in my yonge bloud
 And I haue horse and armure good
 And as I trowe a full good steede
 I wyll assaye if I may spede
 And I may beare the kinge downe
 I maye be a man of great renowne
 And if that he me fel can
 There knoweth no body what I am
 Death or lyfe what so betide
 I wyll once against hym ryde
 Thus in the citie hys ynne he takes
 And resteth him and merye makes.

(¹ From Douce's MS. 261, fol. 8.)

Syr Degore stode in study than
 And thought he was a doughtye man
 And I am in my younge bloode
 And I haue horse and armure good
 And as I trowe a full good steede
 I wyll assaye yf that I may spede

¹ Douce's MS. note in MS. 261 :

"This MS. was purchased by some bookseller at the sale of the Fairfax library at Leeds Castle, in 1831.

"The MS. from which the metrical romance of *Robert the Devil* was printed by J. Herbert in 1798 was certainly written by the person who wrote the present MS., and illuminated with the same kind of rude drawings. He was probably a collector of metrical romances like the transcriber of Bishop Percy's

celebrated MS., which was written about the time of Charles II.; and there may be other volumes of the like nature as the present existing in obscure libraries, and even made up by the present transcriber.

"Qy. what became of the MS. of *Robert the Devil*, which was successively in the possession of Mr. Rawlinson, Horace Walpole, Mr. Edwards of Pall Mall, Mr. Egerton, Mr. Allen, Mr. Caulfield, and 'Masterre Samuelle Irelande'?"

The romance is certainly older than the middle of the fourteenth century, for that is the date at which the Auchinleck MS. was written. Warton (who gives a most inaccurate analysis of it, which is transcribed by the editor of the Abbotsford Club edition) conjectures that it may belong to the same century as the *Squire of Low Degree* and *Sir Guy*—that is, according to him, the thirteenth.

For the name, says the Auchinleck MS. :

Degarre nowt elles ne is
But thing that not never whar is
O the thing that negth forlorn al so
For thi the schild he nemmede thous tho.

The romance is, in our opinion, of more than ordinary merit. It possesses the singular charm of brevity and conciseness; does not impair or destroy its power by the endless diffuseness and prolixity which are the besetting disfigurements of that branch of literature to which it belongs. How often in romances does what bids fair to be a mighty river spread out vaguely into a marsh! what should grow into a stately tree, end in a weak wild wanton luxuriance! This so common fault at least is avoided in this romance of Sir Degoré. But there are other than negative merits. There is, indeed, no considerable novelty about the incidents introduced; a jealous father, a clandestine child-delivery, a fight between son and father (here between son and grandfather too), an unconsummated marriage between son and mother—these are persons and situations that were never wearied of by that simple audience for whose ears romances were designed. The romance-writer's business was rather to re-dispose these than to cancel and supersede them. This work of rearrangement is well performed in the present case. The old figures are skilfully re-dressed and introduced; fresh lights are thrown upon their faces, fresh vigour is infused through their limbs.

[The First Part.]

[How Sir Degree's Father ravished a Princess, and begat him ; and how he was brought up by a Hermit.]

I'll tell you a	LORDINGS, & you will hold you still,
	a gentle tale I will you tell,
	all of knights of this countrye
4	the <i>which</i> haue trauelled beyond the sea,
tale of Sir Degree.	as did a <i>knight</i> called Sir Degree,
	one of the best was ffound him before. ¹
An English king,	<i>that</i> ² time in England dwelled a <i>King</i> ,
8	a stout man in manners and all thinge,
	both in Armour and on the sheeld ³
feared in fight,	he was much doubted in battell & in ffeild.
	there was noe man in verament
12	<i>that</i> Iusted with him in turnament
	<i>that</i> out of his stirropps might stirr his ffoote,
	he was soe strong without doubt.
has a beautiful daughter.	the <i>King</i> had no more Children but one,
16	a daughter white as whales bone ⁴ ;
	<i>that</i> mayd hee loued as his liffe ;
	her mother was dead, the Queene his wiffe ;
	in trauell of Chyld shee dyed, alas !
She is wooed by well-born suitors,	20 & when this mayd of age was,
	Kings sonnes her wooed then,
	Emperoures, Dukes, & other men,
	for to haue had her in Marryage
24	for loue of her great heritage.

¹ then found was hee: *sic leg^m metri gratia*, but as Degree is occasionally written Degore, Pt. 2, l. 303 [Pt. 3, l. 483] it may perhaps have been so here.—P. The old edition reprinted by Utterson calls the hero "Sir Degore" throughout.—Skeat (who gives the various readings here).

² what.—P.

³ in Shield.—P.

⁴ when first taken out of the fish it is

very white.—P. Strange that Percy should have supposed, as our earliest writers did, that the ivory of those days was made from the bones of the whale! It was, in fact, made from the teeth of the walrus. The simile in the text is frequently found in much later poets; e.g. To show his teeth as *white as whale's-bone*.

Shakespeare's *Love's Labour's Lost*, v. 2. —Dyce.

- but then they *King* he made answer,
 “ *that neuer man hee shold wedd her*
 with-out hee might with stout Iustinge
 28 the *King* out of his sadle bringe,
 to make him loose his stirropps too.
 many one assayd, & cold not doe ;
 but euery yeere, as right itt wold,
 32 a great ffeast the *King* did hold
 vpon his Queenes ¹ mourning day,
 the which was buryed in an abbey.
 soe vpon a day the *King* wold ryde
 36 vnto an abbey there besyde,
 to a dirges & masses ² both,
 the pore to ffeed, & the naked to cloth.
 his owne daughter shee with him rode,
 40 & in the fforrest shee still abode,
 & sayd, ‘ downe shee must light,
 better her clothes to amend right.’
 a-downe they be light all three
 44 her damsells, & soe did shee.
 a ffull long stond ³ they there abode
 till all they men away rode.
 They gatt vp, & after they wold, [page 372]
 48 but they cold not they right way hold ;
 the wood was roughe & thicke I-wis,
 & they tooke their way all amisse.
 they rode south, they rode west,
 52 vnto the thicke of *that* fforrest,
 & vnto a bane ⁴ thé came att Last.
 then varryed they wonderous ffast,⁵

but none can
win her

by unhorsing
the King in a
joust.

On the
anniversary
of his wife's
death,
the King
rides to an
Abbey near
to hear Mass
and give
alms.

His daughter

and her
maids
dismount in
the forest,

and then

cannot find
their way
out.

They stop at
a glade,

¹ Three strokes for the *u*.—F.

² MS. *masques*; but see l. 124, 125.
—F.

To do *diriges* and *masses* bothe.—Utt.
To do *dyryges* & *masses* bothe.—Ff.
(Cambr. MS. Ff. ii. 38.)

³ space of time.—P.

⁴ perhaps Lane. see Part 5, line 58.
—P.

⁵ And into a lande they came at the
laste,
Then weried they wonder faste.—Utt.
In-to a launde they are comen
And haue ryght well vndernomen.
—Ff.

ffor thé wist amisse they had gone,
 56 & downe thé light euery one.
 the wheather was hott affore none ;
 thé wist not what was best ffor to haue done,
 but layd them downe vpon the greene.
 and all lie on
 the grass,
 60 some of them fell on sleepe, as I weene,
 & thus they fell on sleepe euerye one
 sauing the *Kings* daughter alone,
 & shee went fforth to gather fflowers
 64 & to heare the song of the small ffowles.
 soe long shee did fforth passe
 till *that* shee wist not where itt was.
 loses her
 way,
 then can shee cry wonderous sore,
 68 shee weeped & wrange her hands thore,¹
 & sayes, “alacke *that* I was borne !
 her in ² this fforrest I am fforlorne,
 & wilde beasts will me rende
 72 or ³ any man may mee ffind ! ”
 they way to her damsells shee wold haue came,
 but shee wist not how to come.⁴
 then shee was ware of a Ioyfull sight :
 But then she
 sees a hand-
 some knight,
 76 a-fore her there stood a ffayre *Knight*
that was wellfauored of ffoote & hand ;
 there [was] not such a one in all the Land ;
 & by the rich clothing *that* hee had on,
 80 hee seemed to be a gentleman.⁵
 soe stout a man then was hee,
 who tells her
 that
 he says, “Madam, god yee see !
 be yee dread arright of nought ;
 84 I haue noe armour *with* me brought,
 but I haue loued you this many a yeere,
 & now *that* I haue ffound you here
 he has long
 loved her,
 and she

¹ there.—P.

² MS. herin.—F.

³ before.—P.

⁴ The waye to her damosels she wolde
 haue nome.—Utt.

To hur maydenys sche wolde anone,
 But sche wyste not whych wey to
 goon.—Fr.

⁵ gentlemon.—P.

- you shall bee my Lemman ere I goe,
 88 whether itt turnes to wayle or woe.¹ ”
 but then no more adoe cold shee,
 but wept and cryed, and cold not flee.
 anon he began her to behold,
 92 & he did with her whatsoever hee wold,
 & there hee bereft her of her maydenhead.²
 & right before her the Knight stoode :
 & hee sayes, “ Madam gentle & ffree,
 96 now with child, Madam, I doe thinke you bee,
 & well I wott hee will be a knaue³ ;
 therefore my good sword he shall haue,
 my sword heere vpon my hand,
 100 therewith the Last I did kill a Gyant,
 & I brake the poynt of itt in his head,
 & here in the fforrest I haue him Layd.⁴
 take itt vp now, dame, ffor itt is heere ;
 104 thou speakes not with mee this many a yeere ;
 yett peradventure they time may come
 that I may speake with my owne sonne,
 & by this sword I may him ken.”
 108 hee kist his loue, & went then ;
 the knight passed as hee come.
 all weeping the Ladye the sword vp nume,⁵
 & shee went fforth sore weeping,
 112 & there shee ffound her mayds sleeping.
 shee hid the sword as well as shee might,
 & called them vp anon-right,
 & tooke⁶ their horsse euerye one,
 116 & began to ryde fforth anon.
 then they were ware att the Last,
 many a *Knight* came pricking ffast ;

must now
yield to him.

He then
ravishes her,

tells her
he has
begotten
a boy on her,

and leaves
his sword
with her for
the boy

so that he
may here-
after know
him by it.

He then goes
away.

The Princess
takes his
sword,

returns to
her maids,

and they ride
till they
meet her
father's
knights,

¹ weale or woe.—P.

² maydenhood.—P.

³ A boy, a male child. So in Chauc.
—P.

⁴ ? MS. *Lqyd or Lqgd.*—F. *layd.*—P.

And in the felde I it leued.—Utt.

I brake the poynt in his hedd,
Where-of y wot þat he was dedd.

—Ff.

⁵ nume, nome, took ; Sax. *niman*, to
take.—P.

⁶ They took.—P.

- ffrom they *King* they were sent
 120 to witt *which* way his daughter went.
 they brought them into the right way,
 & rodden ffayre vnto the Abbey.
 there was done service and all thinge,
 124 with many a Masse, with rich offeringe ;
 & when these masses were all done,
 & come to passe the hye noone,
 the *King* to his pallace did ryde,
 128 And much people by his syde, [page 373]
 & after, euery man was glad & blythe.
 this Ladye swooned many a sithe,¹
 & euer her belly waxed more & more ;
 132 shee weeped & wrang her hands full sore.
 soe vpon a day shee can sore weepe,
 & a mayd of hers tooke good heede ²
 & said, “Madam, ffor S: Charytye,
 136 why weepe yee soe sore ? tell itt mee !”
 “mayden, if I shold tell itt before,
 if thou shold mee beraye ³ I were but Lore ;
 ffor euer I haue beene meeke & mild,
 140 & trulye now I am with chyld ;
 & if any man itt vnder-yeede,
 men wold tell in euerye steade ⁴
that mine owne ffather of mee itt wan,
 144 ffor I neuer loued any other man.
 & if my ffather he might know itt,
 such sorrow his hart wold gett
that hee wold neuer merry bee,
 148 ffor all his loue is Layde on mee.”
 “O gentle Lady, greeue itt nought ;
 stilly itt shall bee fforth brought ;
 there shall none know itt certainlye,
 152 truly, Madam, but you and I.”

¹ time.—P.² perhaps, keep.—P.³ bewray.—P.⁴ place.—P.

- the time was come *that* shee was vnbound,
 & deliuered whole and sound.
- a ffayre man Chylde there was borne :
- 156 glad of itt was the Lady fforlorne.
 this mayd serued her att her will,
 & layd the Child in a cradle,
 & wrapped him in clothes anon,
- 160 & was ready till haue gone.
 then was this Child to with mother hold ¹ ;
 shee gaue itt 20^{li} in gold,
 and 10^{li} in siluer alsoe ;
- 164 vnder his head shee can itt doe ;
 & much itt is *that* a Child behoues.²
 with itt shee giues a payre of gloues,
 & bade the child wed no wiffe in Lande
- 168 without those gloues wold on her hand ;
 & then the gloues wold serue no where,
 sauing the mother *that* did him beare.
 a letter with the Child put shee,
- 172 with the gloues alsoe *perdye* :
 then was itt in the Letter writt,
 whosoouer itt found, shold itt witt,—
 ‘ ffor gods loue, if any good man
- 176 This litle Child ffind can,
 gett him to be Christened of the preists hand,
 & helpe him ffor to liue on Land
 with this siluer *that* is heare,
- 180 till the time *that* hee may armoure beare ;
 & helpe him with his owne good,
 ffor hee is come of a gentle blood.’
 & when *that* they had all this downe,³
- 184 the Mayd shee tooke her way right soone :
- The Princess
gives birth
to a boy,
who is put in
a cradle
with 30*l*.
under his
head,
a pair
of gloves,
(the boy is to
marry no
girl unless
they'll
fit her.)
and a letter
asking the
finder
to have the
boy
christened,
and bring
him up till
he can fight.
Then the
maiden
carries the

¹ to its—hold, i. e. held.—P.
 Yet was the childe vnto the mother
 hold.—Utt.

3yt hys modur can hym beholde
 And toke iiij pownde of golde.—Ff.
² is of use to.—P.
³ perhaps done.—P.

boy and
 cradle
 with this Child in the cradle, and all thinge,
 shee stale away in an eueninge,
 & went her way, & wist not where,
 188 through thicke and thinn, & through bryar.¹
 then shee was readylye ware anon
 of an hermitage made in stone,
 to a
 hermit's
 a holy man *that* there was wooninge,²
 192 & thither shee went *without* Leasinge.
 door,
 and leaves
 them there.
 & when shee came to the hermitts dore,
 shee sett the cradle there before,
 & turned againe anon-right,
 196 & came againe the same night.
 Next
 morning
 the hermitt wakened in the morrow,
 & eke his knaue³ alsoe.
 the Hermitt sayd, "Lord, I crye thee mercye !
 200 methinke I heare a younge chyld crye."
 the hermit
 finds the
 boy,
 this holy man his dore vndid,
 & ffound the Child in *that* stead.
 there he lift vp the sheete anon,
 204 & looked on the litle groome⁴ ;
 then held he vp his right hand,⁵
 & thanked Iesus christ in *that* stond,⁶
 & bare the child into the Chappell.
 thanks
 Christ,
 208 ffor ioy of him hee wronge the bell,
 And layd vp the gloues & the treasure, [page 374]
 & christened the child *with* much honor,
 christens the
 child
 & in the worshipp of the holy Trinytye
 Sir Degree
 (t. i. almost
 lost),
 212 he called the childs name Sir Degree ;
 ffor Degree, to vnderstand I-wis,
 a thing *that* almost lost itt is ;
 as a thing *that* was almost lost agoe,⁷
 216 therefore he called his name soe.

¹ briere.—P. Pronounced *brere*: see *Levins*, col. 209, l. 15.—F.

² dwelling.—P.

³ servant-boy.—P.

⁴ puer, famulus. Jun.—P. groome.—Utt. groome.—Ff.

⁵ honde.—P.

⁶ There is a tag at the end like an s.—F.

⁷ gone, past.—P. A *Degarer* would no doubt be formed from a Low-Latin *devagari*, as *degaster* from *devastare*.—F.

- the Hermitt he was a holy man of liffe,
 & he had a sister *which* was a wiffe,
 & sent this child to her full raue ¹
- 220 with much moné by his knaue,
 & bade *that* shee shold take good heede
 the litle child to Nourish & ffeede.
 this litle Chyld Degree,
- 224 vnto the Cytye borne was hee.
 the goodman & the wiffe in ffere
 kept the child as itt their owne were
 till the time 10ⁿ ² winters were come & spent ;
- 228 then to the hermitt they him sent.
 the hermitt longed him to see ;
 then was [he] a ffayre child & a ffree,
 & he taught this child of clarkes Lore
- 232 other 10 winters without more ;
 & when hee was of 20 yeere,
 hee was a man of great power,³
 a staleworth ⁴ man in euerye worke,
- 236 & of his time a well good clarke.⁵
 then he tooke [him] his fflorence & his gloues
that he had kept ffrom [him] in his house,⁶
 & gaue him his owne letter to reade.
- 240 hee looked there-in the same steade ⁷ ;
 “hermitt,” hee sayd, “ffor St. Charytye,
 was this letter made by ⁸ mee ?”

and sends
him to his
sister

to be suckled.

She brings
the boy up

till he is 10
years old,
and then
sends him
back to the
hermit,

who teaches
him till he's
20,

then gives
him his
mother's
money,
gloves, and
letter,

¹ rathe [in pencil] P. C.—P. rathe
(=raue).—Utt. soon.—Ff. *and* grome
for knaue in l. 220.

² ten.—P.

³ powere.—P.

⁴ stout.—P.

⁵ And of his tyme,* a well good clerke.

—Utt.

And also of hys tyme, a gode clerke.

—Ff.

⁶ He toke hym hys tresure and hys

gloffie

That he had token to hys be-hoffe.

—Ff.

Utt. has no *him* in l. 237, but has it in
l. 238.—Skeat.

⁷ He loked therin the same steade.†

—Utt.

And he behelde all that dede.—Ff.

⁸ about, concerning.—F. Same in

Utt. as in Percy. Was *bys* lettur wretyn

for me?—Ff.—Skeat.

* “of hys tyme”=*for* his time, *for* his day.—Skeat.

† “the same steade”=thereupon ; lit. at the same place,=Fr. *sur le champ*.—Skeat.

and tells him
how he
found
him. 244 "I, Sir," hee sayes, "by him *that* mee deeme shall,
thus I you ffound ;" and told him all.
he sett him on his knees ffull blythe,
& thanked the hermitt often sythe ;
Degree
thanks the
hermit, 248 & he gaue the hermitt halfe of the golde ;
& the remnant vp did hee ffoulde.

[The Second Part.]

[How Degree kills a Dragon, and prepares to fight a King.]

and says he'll
search out
his father, 2^d parte. { Then sayes Degree, "I will not blinne ¹
till I haue ffound my ffather or some of my
kinne.¹"
"to seeke thy kinne ¹ thou mayst not endure
without horsse or good armour.²"
then sayd Degree, "by St. Iohn,
horsse nor harnesse Ile haue none,
but a good bitter ³ in my hand,
mine enemyes therewith to withstand,

armed only 256 A full good sapline of an oke ;
& home ⁴ therewith Ist sett a str[o]ke,—
haue hee neuer soe good armour him on,
with a good
oak sapling. 260 or be hee neuer soe tall a man,⁵—
I shall him fell to the ground
with this same batt in *that* stond."
the Child kissed the hermitt thoe,⁶
264 & alsoe tooke his leaue to goe.
fforth went Degree, the sooth to say,
throughout a fforrest halfe a day ;
Degree sets
off through a
forest, he heard noe man, nor saw none,
268 till itt passed the hye noone ;

¹ MS. *me for nne.*—F.² *armoure.*—P.³ A.-S. *bitel*, beetle.—F.⁴ on whom. The *o* of *stroke* in this line is eaten out by ink.—F.⁵ *mon.*—P.⁶ *then.*—P.

- then heard hee great stroakes ffall
that made great noyse withall.
 ffull soone he thought *that* thing to see,
 272 to witt what the stroakes might bee.
 there was an Erle stout & gay
 was come thither *that* same day
 to hunt ffor a deere or a doe,
 276 but his hounds were gone him ffröe.
 & there was a Dragon ffeirce and grim,
 ffull of ffyer & alsoe of venim,
 with a wyde throate, & tushes great,
 280 vpon the Erle can he beate ;
 & as a Lyon were his ffete ;
 his tayle was long & ffull vnmeete ;
 betweene his head & his tayle
 284 22 ffoote without ffayle.
 his belly was like a whole tunn,
 itt shone ffull bright againe the ¹ ssunn.
 His eyen as bright as any glasse, [page 375]
 288 his scales as hard as anye ² brasse ;
 & therto hee was necked like a horsse,
 & bare his head vpp with great fforce ;
 hee was to looke on, as I you tell,
 292 as thoe hee had beene a ffeende of hell ;
 many man hee had shent,³
 & many a horsse hee had rent ;
 & to this Erle hard battell he began,
 296 but hee defended him like a man,
 & boldlye stroke on him with his sword⁴ ;
 but of his stroakes he was not affeard,
 ffor his skin was as hard as anye stone,
 300 where-ffore hee cold him noe harme done.
 & when the Erle degree see,
 he sayd “ helpe, ffor Charytye ! ”

and at noon
 hears a
 noise of
 blows.

He finds a
 grim dragon

24 feet long,

looking like
 a fiend of
 hell,

attacking an
 Earl.

The Earl
 calls on
 Degree to
 help him,

¹ There is a tag to the *e*.—F.

² One stroke too few in the MS.—F.

³ *int. al.* marred, spoiled, &c.—P.

⁴ swerde.—P.

then answered Sir Degore,
 304 "gladye!" he sayes, and god before.¹
 when the dragon of Degree had a sight,
 hee left the Erle, & came to him right.
 and Degree then the Child *that* was soe younge
 308 tooke his staffe *that* was soe stronge,
 & smote the dragon on the crowne
 knocks the dragon down. *that* in the wood hee ffell downe.
 But it recovers, the dragon recouered anon-right,
 312 & hitt the Child with such might
 and cuts Degree down. with his taylor in *that* tyde,
that hee ffell downe vpon his side.
 then degree ² recouered anon-right,
 316 & defended him with much might;
 For which with his staffe *that* was soe longe
 he broke of him ffoote and bone
that itt was wonder ffor to see.
 320 hee was soe taughe ³ hee might not dye,
 Degree smashes the dragon's brains out. yett hee hitt ⁴ him on the crowne soe hye
 The Earl *that* hee made his braines out flye.⁵
 then the Erle was glad & blythe,
 324 & thanked Degree often sithe,⁶
 asks Degree to his palace, & he prayed him hee wold with him ryde
 vnto the pallace there beside;
 knights him, & there he made him a *Knight*,
 328 & made him good cheere *that* night;
 and offers him half his land rents, tresure, & halfe of his Land
 hee wold haue seized ⁷ into his hand,

¹ God before (Utt.; Ff. omits it.—Sk.)
i. e. God going before, God giving his
 aid. Compare, —

"for, *God before*,
 We'll chide this Dauphin at his father's
 door."

Shakespeare's *Henry V.* i. 2.

"Yet, *God before*, tell him we will
 come on."—*Ibid.* iii. 5.

I quote these passages to show that

this expression, which was very common
 in our earliest poetry, continued long in
 use.—Dyce.

² ? MS. dregree.—F.

³ toughe.—P.

⁴ smote.—Utt.

⁵ And on the hed he hym batrid,
 That hys hedd all-to-clatride.—Ff.

⁶ times.—P.

⁷ put into possession. Jun.—P.

- & alsoe his daughter to be his wiffe,
 332 & all his lands after his liffe.
 & then Sir Degree thanked him hartilye,
 and prayed him, "of his curtesye
 to lett his women affore him come,
 336 wiues, mayds, more and some,
 & alsoe *your* daughter eke ;
 & if my gloues be ffor them meete,
 or will vpon of any of their hands,
 340 then wold I be ffaine ¹ to take my ² Lands ;
 & if my gloues will not doe soe,
 I will take my leaue and goe."
 all the women were out brought
 344 *that* thereabout might be sought,
 & all assayd the gloues then,
 but they were fitt for no woman.
 Sir Degree tooke his gloues thoe,
 348 & alsoe tooke his leaue to goe.
 the Erle hee was a *Lord* of gentle blood,
 hee gaue Sir Degree a steede ffull good,
 & therto gaue him good armour ³
 352 *which* was ffaire and sure,
 & alsoe a page his man to bee,
 & a hackney to ryde on trulye.
 then fforth went Sir Degree, the sooth to say,
 356 many a mile vpon a summers day.
 soe vpon a day much people he mett ;
 he houed ⁴ still, & ffayre them grett ;
 he asked the squier what tydinge,
 360 & wence came all those people rydinge.
 the squier answered verament,
 he sayd, "they came ffrom the *parlament*.
 & when they *parlament* was most planere,⁵
 364 the King lett cry both farr & nere

and his
daughter.

Degree asks

to see all his
womankind :

if his gloves
fit any one,

he'll wed
her ;
if not, he'll
go away.

The gloves
fit none of
the women,

so Degree
takes leaue
of them.
The Earl
gives him
a steed,
armour,

and a page
mounted.

They start,

and meet
a crowd

coming from
the Parlia-
ment
of a King
who has

¹ glad.—P.

² your.—P.

MS.—F.

³ P. has added an *e* at the end in the

⁴ halted, stood.—F.

⁵ full.—F.

promised his
lands and
daughter
to any
knight
who'll joust
with him.

No one has
been able to
do it,

for the King
has broken
their necks
or backs,
or speared
or killed
them.

Degree

resolves to
try the King,

meets him,

and says he'll
joust with
him.
The King is
glad.

‘ If any man durst be soe bold
As with the *King* Iust wold,
he shold haue his daughter in marryage,
368 & all his lands & his herytage.’
itt is a land good and ffayre,
& the king thereto hath no heyre.
certaine no man dare grant thereto ;
372 many a man assayd, & might not doe,
for there is no man that rides to him
but hee beates them with stroakes grim ;
of some hee breakes the necke anon ;
376 of some he brakes backe and bone ;
some through the bodye hee glyds ;
& some to the death hee smites.
vnto him may a man doe nothinge,
380 such a grace euer hath our *King*.”
Sir Degree stood in a study then,
& thought hee was a mighty man,
“ & I am in my younge blood ;
384 & I haue horsse & armour goode,
& as I trow I haue a good steede ;
I will assay if I can speede ;
& if I can beare *that King* downe,
388 I shalbe a man of great renowne ;
& if hee mee ffell can,
there knowes no body who I am.”
thus in the Citye his inne he takes ;
392 he rested him, & merry makes.
soe on a day the *King* hee mett,
he kneeled downe, & faire him grett,
& sayd, “ my *Lord*, thou *King* of much might !
396 my *Lord* hath sent mee to thee right
to warne you how itt must bee :
my *Lord* will come & ffight with yee ;
to Iust with thee my *Lord* hath nomm.¹”
400 the *King* sayd, “ hee shalbe welcome,

[page 376]

¹ nomm, i. e. taken ; undertaken ; or taken upon him. — P.

- be hee *Knight* or *Barrowne*,
 Erle, duke, or *Churle* ¹ in towne :
 theres no man Ile ² fforsake ;
 404 who all may winn, all let him take.”
 soe on the *Morrow* the day was sett,
 the *King* aduised much the bett,
 but there was not any liuing man
 408 that *Sir Degree* trusted vpon ;
 but to the church that day went hee
 to heare a *Masse* to the trinitye ;
 & to the ffather hee offered a ffloren,
 412 & to the sonne another ffine ;
 the 3^d to the holy ghost hee offered ;
 the preist in his masse ffor him hee prayed.
 & when the *Masses* were done,
 416 vnto his inne hee went ffull soone,
 where hee did arme him well indeed
 in rich armor good att need.
 his good steed he began to stryde ;
 420 he tooke his speare, & fforth gan ryde.
 his man tooke another spere,
 and after his *Master* did itt beare :
 thus in the ffeild *Sir Degree* abode then,
 424 & the *King* came with many men.

Next
morning

Degree

goes to Mass,

then arms
himself,

mounts,
and rides

into the field,
where the
King meets
him,

¹ a slave, a vassal. See *Chauc.*—P.

² there is . . . I will.—P.

[The Third Part.]

[How Degree throws the King, and marries his own Mother.]

The lookers-
onhave never
seen so fair a
man
as Degree.3^d parte.

432

Many came thither readylye
ffor to see their iusting trulye ;
& all *that* euer in the ffeild were,
they sayd & did sweare
that 'ere *that* time thé neuer see
soe ffayre a man with their eye
as was *that* younge *Knight* Sir Degree ;
but no man wist ffrom wence came ¹ hee.

The King

436

They rode together att the last
vpon their good steeds ffull ffast :
to dashe him downe he had meant,
& in his sheild sett such a dint ²
that his good speare all to-brast ;
but Sir Degree was strong, & sate fast.
then sayd the *King*, " alas, alas !

breaks his
spear on
Degree
without
moving him,
and says

440

this is a wonderffull case.
there was neuer man *that* I might hitt
that might euer my stroake sitt !

he is a man.

444

this is a man ffor the nones ³ !
he is a man of great bones ! "

They charge
again,

and the King

448

they rode together then with great randome,⁴
& he had thaught to haue smitten the child downe,
& he hitt Sir Degree soone anon

nearly
unhorses
Degree,

448

Right vpon the brest bone, [page 377]
that his horsse was reared on hye,
& Sir Degree he was ffallen nye,
& yett Sir Degree his course out yode,

who gets
angry.

452

& waxed angrye in his moode ;
he sayd, " alacke ! I haue mist yett,
and hee hath mee twyse hitt ;

¹ cane MS.—F.² perhaps *dent*, impression, mark.
—P.³ made on purpose for this adventure.
—P.⁴ precipitation, see Jun.—P.

- by god I will aduise better,
 456 I will not long be his debtor !”
 then they rode together with much might,
 & in their shields their speres pight ¹ ;
 & in their sheelds their speres all to-broke ²
 460 vnto their hands with *that* stroke.
 & then the *King* began to speake,
 “ giue me a speare *that* will not breake,
 & he anon shall be smitten downe
 464 If hee were as strong as Sampson.
 & if hee bee the devill of hell,
 I shall him downe ffell ;
 & if his necke will not in too,
 468 his backe shall, ere I doe goe.”
 the *King* tooke a spere stiffe & strong,
 & *Sir Degree* another strong & longe,
 & stoutlye to the *King* hee smitt.
 472 [The ³] *King* ffayled ; *Sir Degree* him hitt,
 he made the *Kings* horsse turne vp his ffete,
 & soe *Sir Degree* him beate.
 then there was much noyse & crye ;
 476 the *King* was sore ashamed welnye,
 & well I wott his daughter was sorrye,
 ffor then shee wist *that* shee must marrye
 vntill a man of a strange countrye
 480 the *which* before shee neuer see,
 & to lead her liue with such a one
that shee neuer wist ffrom whence hee came.⁴
 the *King* sayd then to *Sir Degore*,
 484 “ come hither, my ffayre sonne, me before,
 ffor if thou were as a gentle a man
 as thou art seeming to looke vpon,
 & if thou coldest witt & reason doe
 488 as thou art doughtye man too,

They charge
again,

and shiver
their spears.

The King
calls for a
fresh one :

he'll break

Degree's
neck or
back.

But Degree
upsets him
and his
horse too.

The King's
daughter is
sorry
that she'll
have to
marry a
stranger.

The King
calls Degree,

¹ struck, Gl. Chaucer.—P.

² There is a blotted letter in the MS.

with an *r* over it.—F.

³ The.—P.

⁴ come.—P.

I wold thinke my Lands well besett
 if itt were 5 times bett ¹ ;
 ffor words spoken I must ² needs hold.
 492 afore my Barrons *that* beene soe bold,
 I take thee my daughter by the hand,
 & I cease ³ thee into my Land
 to be my heyre after mee,
 496 in Ioy and blisse ffor to bee.”
 great ordinance then there was wrought,
 & to the church dore they were brought,
⁴ & there were wedd in verament
 500 vnto the holy Sacrament.
 & looke what ffolly hapened there !
that he shold marry his owne mother,⁵
 the *which* had borne him of her syde !
 & hee knew nothing *that* tyde ⁶ ;
 shee knew nothing of his kinne,
 nor yett shee knew nothing of him,
 but both together ordayned to bed,
 508 yet *peraduenture* they might be sibb.⁷
 this did *Sir Degree* the bold,
 hee weded her to haue & hold.
 itt passed on the hye time of noone,
 512 & the day was almost done ;
 to bed were brought hee and shee
 with great myrth and solempnytye.
Sir Degree stood & behold then,
 516 & thought on the hermitt, the holy man,
that hee shold neuer [wed] ffor-thy
 neither wydow nor Ladye

gives him
 his
 daughter,
 and makes
 him heir of
 his lands.

Degree
 marries
 the
 daughter,
 (not trying
 his gloves
 on her),

and she's his
 own
 mother!

But neither
 knows this.

After noon

they are
 put to bed
 solemnly,

and then
 Degree

¹ better, larger.—F.

² There are six strokes for *mu* in the MS.—F.

³ seize, give possession.—P.

⁴ The Cambridge MS. Ff. ii. 38 is incomplete, and ends here with
 And were weddyd to-gedur verament
 vndur holy sacramente ;
 lo! what fortune and balaunce

Be-fallyth many a man þorow chaunce,
 And comyþ forþe in-to vncowþe lede,
 And takyth a wyfe.—Skeat.

⁵ P. has added *e* at the end in the MS.—F.

⁶ Cp. the same incident in *Eglamore*, vol. ii. p. 380, l. 1065.—F.

⁷ kin, relations.—P.

- with-out shee might the gloues doe
 520 lightlye on her hands towe. thinks of
his gloves,
 "alacke!" then sayes Sir Degree,
 "the time *that* euer I borne shold bee!"
 & sayd anon with heauy cheere,
 524 "rather then all my Kingdome heere his careles-
ness.
that is now ceazed into my hands,¹
 That [I were fayre out of this lande."²] [page 378]
 the King these words hard thoe,
 528 & sayes, "my sonne, why sayst thou soe? The King
asks what
the matter
is.
 is there ought against thy will
 either done or sayd, *that* doe thee ill,
 or any man *that* hath misdoone?
 532 tell mee, & itt shall be amended soone."
 "no, Lord," sayes degree then,
 "but for this marryage³ done has beene. Degree says
he can lie
with no
woman
whom his
gloves will
not fit.
 I will not with no woman meddle,
 536 neither wiffe, widdow, nor damsell,
 without shee may these gloues doe
 Lightly vpon her hands tow."
 & when they Lady can *that* heere,
 540 anon shee changed all her cheere, His wife
 for shee knew *that* the gloues longed to her,
 & sayes, "giue me the gloues, fayre Sir."
 shee tooke the gloues in *that* steede, asks for
the gloves,
puts them
on,
 544 & lightly vpon her hands them did.
 then shee fell downe & began to cry;
 says, "Lord god, I aske thee mercy!
 I am the mother *that* did you beare,
 548 & you are mine owne sonne deere!" and tells
Degree
she is his
mother.
 Sir Degree tooke her vp thoe
 full lightly in his armes towe. They rejoyce

¹ Here follow a leaf and three quarters
 in a different handwriting.—F.

² MS. cut away.—F.

That nowe is seased into my hande
 That I were fayre out of this lande!—Utt.

³ The tag to the *g*, which I read *c*
 here, and in lines 555, 567, 568, may
 not be meant for one; but *marryag*
 would look ugly.—F.

then either of other were ffull blythe,¹
 and kiss. 552 & kissed together many a sithe.
 the *King* of them had much marueile,
 & at the noyse without fayle,
 & was abashed of their weepinge.
 556 "daughter! what meanes this thing?"
 Then she tells her father
 "father," shee sayd, "will you itt heere?
 you wend *that* I a mayden were.
 no, truly, ffather, I am none!
 560 for itt is 20 winters a-gone.
 that Degree is her son,
 this is my sonne, god doth know,
 & by these gloues see itt, Lowe!"
 and how he was begotten on her.
 564 shee told him altogether there
 how hee was begotten of her.
 Degree asks
 & then bespake Sir Degree,
 "O sweet mother!" sayd hee,
 her where his father is.
 568 "where is my fathers wooninge,²
 or when heard you of him any tydinge?"
 She can't tell him,
 "sonne,³" shee sayd, "by heauen *Kinge*
 I can tell you of him noe tydinge.
 but when thy father from me went,
 572 a poyntles sword he me Lent,
 & hee charged me to keepe itt then
 till *that* time thow wert a man."
 but she gives him his father's pointless sword. Degree
 576 shee feicth⁴ the sword anon tho,
 & Sir degree itt out drew:
 Long & broad itt was, pardye;
 there was not such a one in *that* country.
 declares
 580 "now truly," sayes Degree then,
 "hee *that* weilded itt was a man!
 but if god of heauen hee may⁵ keepe,
 night nor day I will not sleepe
 till *that* time I may my father see,
 584 in Christendome if *that* hee bee."

¹ bliþe, lætus, Sax. — P.

² dwelling.—P.

³ ? MS. sonnd.—F.

⁴ Here again is the *cth* for *tch* noticed before, vol. i. p. 23, l. 73, &c. &c.—F.

⁵ hee mee.—P.

[The Fourth Part.]

[How Sir Degree sets out in search of his Father, falls in love, and undertakes to fight a Giant.]

	He made [him merry that ilk night,] ¹ [page 379]	
	& on the morrow when itt was day light	
	hee went to the Chirch to heare a masse,	
4 ^d parte	& made him ready for to passe.	Degree makes ready to start,
	the King sayd, " my next kinne, ²	
	I will giue thee <i>Knights</i> with thee to winne. ³ "	
	" Gramercy, <i>Lord</i> ," sayes Degree then,	and will take only
592	" but with me shall goe no other man	
	But my knaue <i>that</i> may take heede	his own man with him.
	of my armour & of my steede."	
	hee leapt on his horsse, the sooth ⁴ to say,	
596	& forthe he rode on his Iourney.	
	many a mile & many a way	
	hee rode forth on his palfrey,	They ride
	& euermor ⁵ hee rode west	westward,
600	vntil hee came to [a] ⁶ forrest.	
	there wild beasts came him by,	
	& Fowles song therto merrely.	
	they rode soe Long <i>that</i> itt grew to night ;	and one night
604	they sun went downe, & fayled light.	
	soone after thé found a castell cleere,—	come to a castle,
	a Lady truly dwelled there,—	
	a fayre Castle of lime & stone,	
608	but other towne there was none.	
	Sir Degree sayd to his knaue <i>that</i> tyde,	where Degree resolves
	" wee will to yonder castle ryde,	
	& all night abyde will wee,	
612	& aske Lodging ffor Charity."	to ask for lodging.

¹ p[rinted] c[opy].—P. MS. pared away.—F. pugnare, superare, lucrari, Bens^o Voc.—P.

² The MS. has one stroke too many.—F.

³ A.S. *winnan*, laborare, contendere,

⁴ Truth.—P.

⁵ ever anon.—P.

⁶ a.—P.

- the bridge itt was undrawen thoe,
 they gates they stood open alsoe.
 into they castle they can speede,
 They ride in, and stable their horses, 616 but first they stabled vp their steede,
 & thé sett vp their hackney.
 enoughe they found of corne & hay.
 they yode¹ about & began to call
 620 both in the court & in the hall ;
 but neither for loue nor awe,
 liuinge man they none sawe ;
 but in the middst of the hall floore
 but can find no one about, only a fire. 624 they found a fayre fyer in *that* hower.
 his man sayes, " leaue Sir,
 I haue wonder who hath made this ffyer ? "
 " but if hee come againe to night,
 628 I will him tarry, as I am true *knight*."
 hee sett him downe vpon the desse,²
 & hee made him well att ease.
 soone after hee was ware of one
 and soon 632 *that* into the dore gan to come :
 3 maydens ffayre & ffree
 3 girls in knickerbockers
 were trussed vp aboue the knee ;
 2 of them bowes did beare,
 come in from hunting, 636 & other towe charged were
 with venison *that* was soe good.
 then Sir Degree vp stoode,
 & blessed them anon-wright.
 but will not speak to him. 640 but they spake not to the *Knight*,
 But into a chamber they be gone,
 & they shut they dore ffull soone.³
 anon then after *that* withall
 Then comes a dwarf four feet high, 644 a dwarffe came into the hall :
 4 foote was they length of him ;
 his visage was both great & grim ;

[page 379, col. 2]

¹ went.—P.² Only one stroke for the *n* in the MS.³ *Dease*, the upper Part of the Hall: —F.
 where the high table stood.—P.

- the hayre *that* on his head was, yellow-
 648 looked as yellowe as any glasse ; haired,
 with milke white Lace & goodly blee,
 ffull stoutly then Looked hee ;
 hee ware a sercote ¹ of greene, green-
 652 with blanchmere ² itt was ffringed, I weene ; coated,
 hee was well cladd & well dight,
 his shoes were crooked as a *Knicht* ; shoe-
 & hee was large of ffoote & hand crooked.
 656 as any man *within* the Land.
 Sir degree looked on him thoe,
 & to him reuerence he did doe ;
 but he to him wold not speake ³ a word,
 660 but made him ready to lay the bord. He too
 he Layd on clothe, & sett on bread, Degree, but
 alsoe wine white and red ; lays the
 torches in the hall ⁴ hee did light, table
 664 & all things to supper he did dight. for supper.
 anon then with great Honor
 there came a *Lady* forth of her bower, Then comes
 & with her shee had mayds ¹⁵ a lady
 668 *that* were some in red, & some in greene. with fifteen
 Sir degree ffollowed anon-right, maids,
 but they spake not to the *Knicht* ;
 they yode ⁵ & washed euery one ; who also
 672 & then to *super* wold shee gone, won't speak
that ffayre Lady *that* was soe bright. to Degree.
 att middest of the messe shee sate downe right,
 & of euery side her maydens ⁵,
 676 ffayre & goodlye [as any were] ⁶ aliue.⁷ The lady
 and
 her maidens
 sit down to
 supper.

¹ Sur-coat.—P.² ? a kind of fur.—F.³ nold speake, *sic leg^m*—P.⁴ The Sloane MS. Boke of Curtasye assigns wax candles to the sitting- and bed-rooms, Candles of Paris (whatever they were) to the hall at supper time.In *chambur* no lyzt *þer* shalle be brent,Bot of wax *þer*-to, yf 3e take tent.In halle at soper schalle caldels (*so*)
brenneof parys, *þer*-in *þat* alle men kenne.*Babees Boke* &c. p. 327, l. 833-6.⁵ went.—P.⁶ & goodlye as any were. p. c.—P.⁷ On the back of page 379, column 2^d,

- [page 380]
- ¹ "By god," then sayes Sir Degree,
 "I haue you blessed, & you not mee ;
 but you seeme dumbe. by St. Iohn
 680 I will make you speake & I can !"
 Sir Degree cold of curtesye ;
 he went & sett him before the Ladye.
 & when hee had taken his seate,
 684 hee tooke his kniffe & cut his meate.²
 ffull litle att [supper] eates hee,
 soe much hee beholds this Mayden free ;
 hee thought shee were the fayrest Ladye
 688 *that* euer before hee did see.
 & when *that* they had supped all,
 the dwarffe brought watter into the hall ;
 thé yode & washed euery one,³
 692 & then to Chamber wold shee gone.
 "now trulye," sayes Degree, "& after I will
 to looke on this Ladye all my fill."
 soe vpon the stayres the way hee nome,⁴
 696 & soone into the Chamber hee come.
 the Lady *that* was ffayre and bright,
 vpon her bed shee sate downe right,
 & harped notes sweete and ffine.
 700 her mayds ffilled a peece⁵ of wine ;
- Degree sits
down too,
- and takes
out his
knife,
but can
hardly eat
anything for
looking at
the beautiful
lady.
- After supper
- the lady goes
to her bed-
room,
and Degree
follows her.
- She plays
the harp,

are written, in a later hand, the follow-
ing lines :—

I promised Silvia to be true,
 nay out of zeale I swore it tooe ;
 & *that* She might beleive me more,
 gave her in writeing what I swore.—
 nor vowes nor oathes can lovers bind ;
 Soe long as pleased, soe long are kinde.—
 it was on a leafe : *the* wind but blew ;
 away both leafe & promise flew.

[a space, and then] I tell *thee* Char-
miorn.—F.

¹ Here the ordinary handwriting of
the MS. begins again.—F.

² Remember that forks were a luxury
not then introduced. Assume that Degree
had washed his hands, and then he'd

have fulfilled the requirements of *Trac-
tus Urbanitatis* :

To þe mete when þou art sette,
 Fayre & honestly thow ete hyt :
 Fyrst loke þat þy handes be clene,
 And þat þy knyf be sharpe & kene,
 And cutte þy breed & alle þy mete
 Ryȝth euen as þou doste hit ete.

Babees Boke &c. p. 14, l. 39–44.

³ See the laying of the *surname*, or towel
for the lord to wash with, described in
Russell, p. 132 of *Babees Boke* &c., and
the washing at p. 323.—F.

⁴ nome, took.—P.

⁵ cup. See "Ffor to serve a Lord" in
Babees Boke, and *Ladye Bessye*.—F.

- & then Sir Degree sett him downe
 ffor to heare the harpe sound ;
 & through the notes of the harp shrill
 704 he layd him downe and slept his ffill. plays Degree
to sleep,
that ffaire Lady that ilke night
 shee bade couer the gentle Knight ;
 & rich clothes on him they cast, and has him
covered with
rich clothes.
 708 & shee went to another bed att Last.
 & soe on the morrow when itt was day,
 the Lady rose, the sooth to say,
 & into the chamber they way can take. In the
morning
 712 shee sayd, “*Sir Knight*, arise and wake !” she wakes
him
 & then shee sayd all in game,
 “you are worthy ffor to haue blame !
 ffor like a beast all night you did sleepe ;
 and reproaches
him for his
rudeness.
 716 & of my mayds you tooke no keepe.”
 & then bespake Sir Degree,
 “mercy, madam, & fforgiue mee !
 Degree begs
her pardon,
 the notes *that* thy harpe itt made,¹
 720 or else the good wine *that* I had.
 but tell me now, my Ladye hend,² and asks
her
 ere I out of this chamber wend,³
 who is Lord in this Lande,
 724 or who holds this castle in his hand,
 & whether you be mayd or wiffe,
 & in what manner you lead *your* liffe,
 & why you [have] soe⁴ manye women
 728 alone *with-out*⁵ any men.” and why she
has no men
there.
She says
 “Sir,” shee sayd, “I wold you tell
 & if you wold amend itt well.
 my ffather was a bold Barron,
 732 & holden *Lord* ouer tower & towne,
 & hee had neuer child but mee,
 & I am heyre heere in this countrie ; that she is
her father s
heiress,

¹ of thy harpe it made, i. e. caused it,
 Sc. my sleepiness.—P.

² *hend*, gentle. Gl. Chau.—P.

³ *wend*, go.—P.

⁴ you [have] so. p. c.—P.

⁵ *withouten*.—P.

- and has had
many
suitors, 736 & there hath woed [me] many a *Knight*
& many a Squier well dight¹ ;
but there then woones there beside
- but a giant
who wants
her 740 a stout Gyant, & hee is ffull of pryde,
& hee hath me desired long and yore² ;
& him to loue I can neuer more ;
- has killed
'em all. 744 & hee hath slaine my men eche one,
all sauing my sorry dwarffe alone."
as shee stood talking, shee fell to the ground
- She swoons, 744 & swooned there in *that* stond.
& then her Damsells about her come
& comfort her, & her vp nome.³
the Ladye wakened, & looked on Sir Degree.
- and on her
recovery,
Degree
declares he'll
help her. 748 " O Leaue Dame ! " then sayes hee,
" be not adread while I am here ;
ffor I will helpe thee to my power.⁴ "
" Sir," shee sayes, " all my Lands
- She promises
him her
lands 752 I doe itt ceaze into *your* hands,
& all my goods I will thee giue,
& alsoe my body while I doe liue,⁵
- and herself
to do what
he will with. 756 & ffor to bee att *your* owne will
earlye, late, lowde, and still, [page 381]
yea and *your* Leman ffor to bee,
to wreake⁶ mee vpon my enemye."
- Degree is
glad 760 then was Sir Degree ffaine⁷ to ffight
to defend this Ladye in her wright,
& ffor to sloe the other Knight
- of the
chance of
winning her. 764 & winne the Ladye *that* was soe bright.
& as thé stood talking in ffeere,⁸
her damsells came with a heauy cheere,
& bade " draw the bridge hastilye ;
- The giant
approaches,
and the
drawbridge
is drawn up. 768 for yonder comes *your* enemye ;
without you itt draw soone, anon
hee will destroye vs euerye one."

¹ deck'd, dressed.—P.² before, formerly.—P.³ nome, took.—P.⁴ P. has added an *e* at the end.—F.⁵ This line is partly pared away.—F.⁶ revenge.—P.⁷ glad.—P.⁸ together.—P.

the birds of
daylight,

thanks
Degree,

kisses him
100 times,

gives him all
her lands
and goods
and herself.

Degree

says he must
first seek
adventures
for a year ;

then he'll
come to her.

He rides
westward

till a knight

in rich
armour
rides up to
him

& shee was glad to see *that* sight
as euer the bird was of daylight.
then Sir Degree came into the hall,
804 & against him came the damsell,
& shee thanked him ffor his good deed,
& into her chamber shee did him lead,
& vnarmed him anon thoe,
808 & kist a 100 times and moe,
& sayd, "Sir, now all my Lands
I doe ceaze into thy hands,
& all my goods I doe thee giue,
812 & my bodye the whilest I liue,
& ffor to bee att *your* owne will
earlye, late, lowd, and still."
he sayd, "Madam, godamercye
816 ffor all the ffavour you haue granted mee !
but I must into ffarr countryee,
more aduentures ffor to see
vntill this 12 monthes be agoe,¹
820 & then I will come you toe."
hee betooke her to the heauen *King*.
the Lady wept att their departinge.
hee leaped on his horsse, the soothe to say,
824 & rode fforth on his Iourney ;
& euermore he rode west
till a Lane he ffound in a fforrest,
& there came to him [pricking a] *Knight*²
828 That well was armed, & on his horsse dight [page 382]
in armour *that* wold well endure,
with ffine gold and rich azure,
& 3 bores heads where therin,
832 the *which* were of gold ffine ;—
itt might well bee his owne, soones ffell,³
ffor once hee woone them in battell ;—

¹ gone, past.—P.² MS. cut away.—F. pricking a Kt.—P. —F.³ *sans faile*, without fail. See l. 841.

- & he sayd, "villaine! what doest thou here
 836 within my fforrest to sloe my deere?"
 Sir Degree answered him with words meeke,
 & sayes, "of thy deere I take noe keepe,
 but I am an aduenturous *Knight*,
 840 & I am goinge to seeke warr & ffight."
 his ffather answered & sayd sans ffell,
 "if thou be come ffor to seeke battell,
 buske ¹ thee shortlye in a stonde,
 844 ffor thy ffellow thou hast ffounde."
 then looke what ffolly happened *that* tyde!
 the sonne againe the ffather did ryde,
 & neither knew of other right;
 848 & thus they began to ffight.
 they smote together soe hard in soothe
that their horssees bacckes brake bothe;
 & then they ffoight on ffoote in fere
 852 with hard strokes vpon helmetts cleere.
 & this his ffather amarueyled was
 of his sword *that* was poyntles,
 & sayd to him anon-right,
 856 "abyde awhile, thou gentle *Knight*!
 where was thou borne, in what Land?"
 "Sir," hee sayd, "in England.
 a *Kings* daughter is my mother;
 860 but I cannott tell who is my ffather.
 "what is thy name?" then sayes hee.
 "Sir, my name is Degree."
 "O Sir Degree, thou art right welcome!
 864 ffor well I know thou art my sonne.
 by *that* sword I know thee heere;
 the poynt is in my poteuere.²"
 hee tooke the poynt & sett itt tooe,³
 868 & they accorded both tooe.⁴

and asks
him why he's
come to kill
his deer.

Degree says
he doesn't
want his
deer,

but to fight.

The knight
tells him
to make
ready,

and they
fight

fiercely
till the
knight
sees that
Degree's
sword is
pointless,

and asks him
where he was
born.

"In
England.

But I know
not my
father."

"Welcome,
my son!

I know you
by your
sword."
He fits the
point on to
it,

¹ prepare.—P.

² A pocket or pouch. See *Boy* &

Mantle, vol. ii. p. 305, l. 21.—F.

³ ? MS. looe.—F. to.—P. ⁴ tho.—P.

and father
and son are
reconciled.

872 soe long they haue spoken together,
both the sonne and the ffather,
that they haue both accorded att one,
the ffather & the sonne alone.

They go
together
to England.

876 then went fforth Sir Degree
with his owne ffather trulye.
vntill they might England see,
they drew thither as they wold bee ;
& when they to the *Kings* palace were come,
they were welcome with all and some.
& there they Ladye spyed them ouer a wall,

Degree's
mother

880 & to them shee began to call,
& shee sayd, " my deere sonne, Sir Degree,
thou hast thy ffather brought with thee !"
" now thankes be to god ! " sayd the *Kinge*,

recognises
his father,

884 " ffor now I know with-out leasinge
who is Degrees ffather indeede."
the Ladye swooned in *that* steade.
then shee & her sonne were parted in twaine,
888 ffor hee & shee were to nye of kinne ;
& then this *Knight* wedded *that* ffayre Ladye
before all the Lords in *that* countrye.
& then went fforth Sir degree,

and they are
married.

Degree

892 & soe did the *King* & all his meanye ;
vnto the castle thé roden in ffere—
with a companye right ffayre—
where dwelled this ¹ Ladye bright

896 *which* before he wan in ffight.
& there Sir Degree marryed *that* gay Ladye
before all the nobles in *that* countrye.
& thus came the *Knight* out of his care.

and so his
troubles
are over.

900 god grant vs all well to ffare !

ffins.

¹ that.—P.

[" *In a May Morning* " and " *The Turke in Linen*," printed in L. & Hum.
Songs, p. 74-79, follow here, and take up p. 383 of the MS.]

Death & Liffe.¹

[page 384]

² THIS poem, which is certainly one of the finest in the Folio Manuscript, is now printed for the first time, and, as it would appear at present, from the only copy of it in existence. From its allegorical nature, it contains no historical allusions to assist us in discovering its date or its author, and the only way left is to examine the internal evidence. From this, however, it is plain that the author wrote the poem in imitation of Langland's *Vision of Piers Plowman*; and a comparison of the two throws considerable light upon its construction and its language. The author seems most indebted to the later *passus* of *Piers Plowman*, and I should infer from the line,

& bade them barre bigglye · Belzebub his gates,³ (l. 390)

and from other indications, that the particular text of *Piers Plowman* which he knew best was the *latest* one. And since the latter part of this latest text was very likely not written much before 1380, we may be tolerably certain at the outset that the date of "Death and Liffe" is, at any rate, later than this.

Again, if we compare "Death and Liffe" with one of the latest pieces of alliterative verse known, viz., the "Scottish ffeilde" (see vol. i. p. 199 of the present work), we see a remarkable similarity

¹ 2 fitts. Two of these short Lines are properly but one.—P. The Anglo-Saxon alliterative poems are usually written as prose with frequent dots, and printed commonly in short lines; the Early English ones in long lines. The lines of the present poem in the Folio MS. are written short to l. 87 of the text. They are here printed long, with an inverted full stop at the break between them, after Mr. Skeat's plan in his *Piers Plowman*, from

Langland's *Vision* of whom this poem is imitated. And as the stop helps the reader by marking the pause in each line, it has been carried on through the lines which are written long in the MS. and without pause-marks.—F.

² This Introduction is by the Rev. W. W. Skeat.—F.

³ See Whitaker's edition of *Piers Plowman*, p. 354. The passage about "barre we þe zates" is not in Wright's edition.

in the style, diction, and rhythm of these two poems. I have little doubt but that the same man was the author of both. There is, in both, the same free use of the words *leeds*, *frekes*, *bearnas*, *segges*, as equivalent to *men*; the same choice of peculiar words, such as *weld* (to rule over), to *keyre to* (to turn towards), to *ding* (to strike), even down to the occurrence in both of the unusual word *nay*, as equivalent to *ne*, i.e. *nor*. Where we find in "Death and Liffe,"

the *red rayling roses* · the *riches* of flowers (l. 24),

we find the corresponding line in "Scottish ffeilde," viz.

rayled full of *red roses* · and *riches* enowe (l. 26).

So too, the line in "Death and Liffe,"

a *bright burnisht blade* · *all bloody beronen* (l. 172),

is explained by

till all his *bright* armour · was *all bloudye beronen* (l. 31 of S. F.).

We may even venture, with confidence, to correct one poem by help of the other. Thus, in S. F. l. 337,

many squires full swiftly · were snapped to the death,

it is certain, no less from the Lyme MS. than from the alliteration, that *squires* and *snapped* should be *swires* and *swapped*. And we find the word *sweeres*, accordingly, in D. & L. l. 54. As another instance, take D. & L. l. 407 :

he cast a *light* on the *Land* · as *beames* on the sunn.

Here *on* is obviously an error for *of*; and it at once occurred to me that *beames* is an error for *leames*, the older form, and the only one that agrees with the alliteration. This conjecture is changed to certainty by observing S. F. l. 309 :

with *leames* full *light* · all the *land* over.

Once more, we find, in D. & L. l. 185,

both enuye & anger · in their yerne weeds.

If we consider *yerne* to mean *eager* (cf. l. 250), we get no particular sense, and destroy the alliteration; but if we take it to mean *iron*, we are right both ways. That this is correct, is rendered probable by a similar expression in S. F. l. 363, viz., “in their *steele* weeds,” which is not dubious at all.

It may be observed, too, that the two poems are very nearly of the same length, and are both similarly divided into two parts. I shall show presently that the author of “Death and Liffe” was familiar with “Piers Plowman,” and it is equally certain that the author of “Scotish ffeilde” was so too. Compare S. F. l. 106,

& profer him a present · all of pure gold,

with the original line as it stands in “Piers Plowman,”

And profrede Pees a present · al of pure golde.

(P. Pl. ed. Wright, p. 70; or ed. Skeat, p. 47.)

Percy himself seems to have been in two minds about this poem. In one place he says, that “for aught that appears, [it] may have been written as early [as], if not before, the time of Langland;”¹ and in another place he says, of the “Scotish ffeilde,” and with reference to “Death and Liffe,” that “from a similitude of style, [it] seems to have been written by the same Author.”² The former opinion is out of the question; the latter is, I think, as good as proved to be correct. Percy further says: “The subject of this piece is a vision, wherein the poet sees a contest for superiority between ‘our lady Dame LIFE,’ and the ‘ugly fiend Dame DEATH;’ who, with their several attributes and concomitants, are personified in a fine vein of allegoric painting.”³ It is, indeed, written with great boldness and vigour, and with no small skill. LIFE is represented as beautiful, loving, cheering and blessing all things with her gracious and happy presence, whilst, on the other hand, and in perfect contrast, DEATH is

¹ Reliques, vol. ii. p. 303 (5th ed.) sent work.

² See vol. i. p. 199, note, of the pre-

³ Reliques, vol. ii. p. 304.

repulsive, terrifying, unsparing, with sorrow and sickness in her train.

The picture of Lady Life as she comes "ever laughing for love," is the happiest piece of description in the Folio. All nature "sways to her as she moves, and circles her with music:"

. . as shee came by the bankes · the boughes eche one
they lowted to that Ladye · & layd forth their branches ;
blossomes & burgens · breathed full sweete,
fflowers ffourished in the frith · where shee fforth steppedd,
& the grass that was gray · greened belive ;
breme birds on the boughes · busilye did singe,
& all the wild in the wood · winlye thé ioyed. (l. 69-75.)

The dispute between the Ladies turns upon the real meaning of the death of Christ. Death boasts of the fall of Adam and of the thousands she has slain, and how she had pierced the heart of our Lord himself. But, at the mention of His hallowed name, Life rises up to reply victoriously, and to reprove unanswerably. She reminds Death of Christ's resurrection, of His triumph over all the powers of hell, of the impotence of her boasting, and of her everlasting defeat and condemnation. The poet has a glimpse of the glories of the general resurrection, and awakes renewed in hope and comforted at heart with the indwelling desire of the blessings of bliss everlasting.

I now proceed, finally, to show to what extent the poet was indebted to his older and greater brother-artist, William Langland, from whom no one need be ashamed to borrow. His obligations are such as detract very little from his originality and genius, but they are instructive to the reader, and therefore it is worth while to point them out. I refer to Wright's edition of "Piers Plowman," citing by the page as being most convenient.

A few similarities of expression may be first noticed.

- (1) till that itt neighed neere noone (l. 137).
Cf. And it neghed neigh the noon (P. Pl. p. 425).
- (2) how didest thou Iust att Ierusalem · with Iesu my lord (l. 368).
Cf. And justen with Jhesus (P. Pl. p. 374); and again,
And who sholde juste in Jerusalem (P. Pl. p. 370).

3. It is said of Lady Life,

& yett beffore thou wast borne · shee bred *in thy hart* (l. 128).

So, of Lady *Anima*, who is also Lady Life,

And *in the herte* is hir hoom · and hir mooste reste. (P. Pl. p. 162.)

4. The expression “care thou noe more” (l. 131) occurs in a different poem altogether, viz. in *Pierce the Ploughmans Crede* (l. 131, ed. Skeat, 1867); but the expression “to ken kindly,” in the former half of the same line, is from P. Pl. p. 20.

5. In l. 119, *praysed* should be *prayed*. Cf.

Thanne I *courbed on my knees* · and cried hire of grace,
And *preide* hire pitously, &c. (P. Pl. p. 19.)

But I pass on to points of greater interest and importance.

Here is the passage which gives the keynote to the whole poem :

DEETH seith he shal fordo · and adoun brynge
Al that lyveth and loketh · in londe and in watre.
LIF seith that he lieth · and leieth his lif to wedde,
That for al that DEETH kan do · withinne thre daies
To walke and fecche fro the fend · Piers fruyt the Plowman,
And legge it ther hym liketh · and Lucifer bynde,
And for-bete and adoun brynge · bale deeth for evere.
O mors, ero mors tua, &c. (P. Pl. p. 371.)

Again,

LIF and DEETH in this derknesse · hir oon fordooth hir oother.
Shall no wight wite witterly · who shal have the maistrie
Er Sondag aboute sonne risyng. (P. Pl. p. 373.)

The idea of beholding all in a *vision* is common enough, as in Chaucer's *House of Fame* and the *Romaunt of the Rose*; but there are points in the present poem which are obviously adopted from Langland, and from no one else. Thus the poet wanders through a frith full of flowers (l. 22):

I seigh floures in the fryth · and hir faire colours. (P. Pl. p. 224.)

He wanders by the river-side, and falls asleep (l. 26–36):

I was wery forwandred · and wente me to reste
Under a brood bank · by a bournes side;
And as I lay and lenede · and loked on the watres,
I slombred into a slepyng · it sweyed so murye. (P. Pl. p. 1.)

Or, as Langland says on another occasion,

Blisse of the briddes · broughte me a-slepe. (P. Pl. p. 155.)

Next, he imagines himself on a great mountain (l. 40):

On a mountaigne that myddel-erthe · highte, as me thoughte. (P. Pl. p. 221.)

Line 49 he adopts from Langland, almost without alteration:

Me bifel a ferly · of fairye, me thoghte. (P. Pl. p. 1.)

He sees in his vision an innumerable host of people (l. 50-56):

A fair feeld ful of folk · fond I ther bitwene
Of alle manere of men · the meene and the riche. (P. Pl. p. 2.)

In particular, he observes a lovely lady (l. 60):

A lovely lady of leere · in lynnyn yclothed,
Cam doun from a castel · and called me faire. (P. Pl. p. 15.)

She is in gorgeous attire, like a second lady described by Langland:

And was war of a womman · worthiliche y-clothed,
Purfiled with pelure · the fyneste upon erthe,
Yecorouned with a coroune · the kyng hath noon bettre, &c. (P. Pl. p. 28.)

The lady, however, is called *Life*, and has in her train Sir Comfort, Sir Hope, Sir Hind, Sir Liffe, Sir Likinge, &c. (l. 100-4.) This is evidently Langland's Lady *Anima*, with her attendants Sir Se-wel, Sir Sey-wel, Sir Here-wel, &c. (P. Pl. p. 160.) After this, however, the poet's mind again reverts to Langland's *Lady Holichirche*, who says of herself:

I underfeng thee first · and the feith taughte. (P. Pl. p. 19.)

Life offers to instruct him, but he is rather afraid of her, just as Langland is of *Holichirche*. But just then, a noise is heard "in a nooke of the *north*;" i.e. in the quarter where Lucifer dwells; cf. *ponam pedem in aquilone*, quoted in P. Pl. p. 22, or, as it stands in Whitaker's edition, at p. 18,

Lord, why wolde he tho · thulke wrechede *Lucifer*
Lepen on a lofte · in the *northe* syde?

The earth trembles at the approach of Death (l. 147):

The wal waggede and cleef · and al the world quaved. (P. Pl. p. 373.)

Death appears, terrible and resistless, described by Langland with astonishing vigour in the lines :

DEETH cam dryvyng after · and al to duste passhed
 Kynges and knyghtes · kaysers and popes.¹
 Lered and lewed · he leet no man stonde
 That he hitte evene · that evere stired after.
 Manye a lovely lady · and lemmans of knyghtes
 Swowned and sweltd · for sorwe of hise dyntes. (P. Pl. p. 431.)

There is next a strife between Death and Life, as in the passages of Langland already quoted, and we find Death boasting of her jousting with Jesus at Jerusalem. After this point in the narrative, the reader will no longer have to look hither and thither for parallel passages, but should read over Passus XVIII. of "Piers Plowman," and he will find there the same account of Christ's descent into hell, or as it is more generally termed, "the harrowing of hell," because our Lord *harried* or ravaged hell, despoiling Satan of his prey. At Christ's descent, a wondrous *leme*² (or *gleam*) shines around :

The while this light and this *leme* · shal Lucifer ablende. (P. Pl. p. 377.)

whilst a loud voice is heard, commanding Lucifer to unbar the gates :

A vois loude in that light · to Lucifer crieth,
 Prynces of this place · unpyneth and unlouketh. (P. Pl. p. 385.)
 And with that breeth helle brak · with Belialles barres. (P. Pl. p. 388.)

and Christ enters in triumph, and binds Lucifer in chains (P. Pl. p. 393). He next delivers "Adam and his issue," returning with them to Paradise :

and tho that oure Lorde lovede · into his light he laughte. (P. Pl. p. 388.)

After this triumph the poet beholds a glimpse of the general resurrection, but the sublimity of the spectacle wakes him :

men rongen to the resurexion · and right with that I wakede. (P. Pl. p. 395.)

I have only to add that the poem known by the title of "The

¹ Two more forcible lines are seldom to be met with.

² I have before shown that *lames* is the true reading in l. 407.

Harrowing of Hell" has been edited by Mr. Collier and by Mr. Halliwell; that another version of it is to be found in "The Parliament of Devils" (see "Hymns to the Virgin and Christ, &c.," ed. Furnivall, E. E. T. Soc. 1867); and that the common source of all these appears to be a curious passage in the Apocryphal Gospel of Nicodemus, for which see Cowper's recently published translation of these Gospels.

[The First Part.]

Christ,	CHRIST, christen king · <i>that</i> on the crosse tholed, ¹ hadd ² paines & passyons · to deffend our soules,
give us grace to serve thee,	giue vs grace on the ground · the ³ greatlye to serve 4 for <i>that</i> royall red blood · <i>that</i> rann ffrom thy side, & take ⁴ away of thy winne ⁵ word · as the world asketh, ⁶ <i>that</i> is richer of ⁷ renowne · rents or others.
for all strength and learning	for boldnesse of body · nor blythenesse of hart, 8 coninge of Clearkes · ne cost vpon earth ; but all wasteth away · & werthes ⁸ to nought. when death driueth att the doore ⁹ · with his darts keene,
must come to nought when we die.	then noe truse ¹⁰ can be taken · noe treasure on earth, 12 but all Lordshipps be lost · & the liffe both.
The good go to blisse,	if thou haue pleased the prince · <i>that</i> paradice weldeth, ¹¹ there is noe bearne ¹² borne · <i>that</i> may thy blisse recon ; but if thou haue wrongffully wrought · & will not amend,
the wrong- doers to woe.	16 thou shalt byterlye bye ¹³ · or else the booke ffayleth.

¹ qu. tholedst, i.e. suffered. Jun.—P.

² qu. haddest.—P.

³ thee.—P.

⁴ i.e. & to take &c. in proportion (or in the same measure) as the World asks other things.—P.

⁵ winne. A.S. *winlic*, jucundus; *winn*, amicus. Lye.—P.

⁶ Cp. *Vis. of P. Pl.*, Prol.: werchyng & wandryng · as the world asketh.—Skeat.

⁷ Qu. or.—P.

⁸ turns or becomes, S. *worþan*, esse, Fieri. Lye. *worth*, to wax, to become. Gloss. to G. D.—P.

⁹ ? MS. doere.—F.

¹⁰ trusse, package.—F.

¹¹ i.e. governeth. Jun.—P.

¹² i.e. child, human creature: man &c. See Gawⁿ. Doug^s. passim.—P.

¹³ *byan*, Sax., habitare, possidere.—P. *abye*, A.-S. *abiegan*. Cp. "Shal abien it bittre · or the book lieth." *P. Pl.* ed. Wright, p. 58.—Skeat.

- therefore begin in god · to greaten our workes,
 & in his ffaythffull sonne · *that* ffreelye him followeth
 in hope of the holy ghost · *that* yeeld shall neuer.
- 20 god *that* is gracyous · & gouerne vs all, May God
bring us into
bliss!
 bringe vs into blisse · *that* brought vs out of ball¹!
 thus ffared I through a ffryth² · were fflowers were
 manye, I walked
through
a wood full
of flowers,
 bright bowes in the banke · breathed ffull sweete,
- 24 the red rayling³ roses · the riches⁴ of fflowers,
 land⁵ broad on their bankes · with their bright Leanes,
 & a riuer *that* was rich · runn ouer the greene with a
river
running
through,
 with still sturring streames · *that* streamed ffull bright.
- 28 over the glittering ground · as I there⁶ glode,⁷
 methought itt Lenghtened my liffe · to looke on the and the
sight
seemed to
lengthen
my life.
I sat down,
 bankes.
 then among the fayre flowers · I settled me to sitt
 vnder a huge hawthorne · *that* hore was of blossomes ;
- 32 I bent my backe to the bole⁸ · & blenched⁹ to the
 streames.
 thus prest I on apace · vnder the greene hawthorne.
 ffor breme¹⁰ of the birds · & breath of the fflowers, and the
birds' song
 & what for waching & wakinge · & wandering about,
- 36 in my seate where I sate · I sayed a sleepe, sent me to
sleep,
 lying Edgelong on the ground · list¹¹ all my seluen,
 deepe dreames and driht¹² · droue mee to hart. and I
dreamed
that I
walked on a
mountain
 methought walking *that* I was · in a wood stronge,
- 40 vpon a great Mountaine · where Mores¹³ were large, [page 385]

¹ bale, sorrow, misery.—P.

² *frith* olim *sylvam* Nota vit. Ita Jul. Burns devenerat. [?MS.] "Wherever you fare, by frith or by fell," i.e. quocunque Iter feceris, sive per sylvam, sive per Campum. Gloss. ad G. D. So Douglas *Æn.* 6. 793, regnata per arva, "rang (reign'd) baith be fryth & fald." And in Prol. to Lib. 13. In frith or feilde.—P.

³ Cp. "The rose *rayleth* hir rode." Morris's *Specimens*, glossed "rayle, to deck, ornament; *rayleth*, puts on (as a garment). A.-S. *hrægel*, a garment; whence night-rail." But see *railinge*, l. 376 below.—F.

⁴ richest.—P.

⁵ ? leaned, or layd, as in l. 63.—F.

⁶ It there, qu.—P.

⁷ i.e. glided. *glade*, Scot. *apud G. Douglas, est*, went, passed, swiftly. Gloss. ad G. Douglas.—P.

⁸ i.e. the body or trunk.—P.

⁹ shrunk, started, leaned towards.—P. Cf. blink.—Skeat.

¹⁰ A. S. *bremman*, fremere: celebrare.—P.

¹¹ ? for *lift*, left, left alone.—Sk.

¹² great, noble, fine, A.-S. *driht*.—Sk.

¹³ *more*, Mons, borealibus Anglis. A.S. *mor*, Mons. L[ye].—P. Moors.—Skeat.

- whence I
saw
- 44
- all the world
in its wealth.
- 48
- And on the
South I saw
a crowd of
knights,
- princes,
dukes,
earls, and
squires.
- 52
- 56
- On the
East I saw
- a lovely
lady
- 60
- that I might see on euery side · 17 miles,
both of woods & wasts · & walled townes,
comelye castles & Cleare · with caruen towers,
parkes and Pallaces · & pastures full many,
all the world full of welth · vuulye ¹ to behold.
I sett me downe softlye · and sayd these words :
“ I will not kere out of Kythe ² · before I know more.”
& I wayted ³ me about · wonders to know,
& I ⁴ flayrlye beffell · soe fayre me bethought
I saw on the south syde · a seemelye sight,
of comelye Knights full keene · & knights ⁵ full
noble,
Princes in the presse · proudlye attyred,
Dukes *that* were doughtye · & many deere Erles,
Sweeres ⁶ & swaynes · *that* swarmed ffull thicke ;
there was neither hill nor holte ⁷ · nor haunt there
beside,
but itt was planted ffull of people · the plaine and the
roughe.
there ouer *that* oste ⁸ · Estward I looked
into a boolish ⁹ banke · the brightest of other,
that shimmered ¹⁰ and shone · as the sheere ¹¹ heauen
through the light of a Ladye · *that* longed ¹² therin.
shee came cheereing ffull comlye · with companye ¹³
noble,
vpon cleare clothes · were all of cleare gold,

¹ *fortè*, *winlye*, i. e. pleasantly, jucunde.
Lyc.—P. ? *viewlye*.—F.

² *Kythe*, knowledge.—P. region, A.-S.
cyð.—Skeat.

³ Old French *gaiter*, to spy about.—
Sk.

⁴ *it*, query.—P. “Me bifel a ferly ·
of fairye me thoghte.” *Vis. of P. Pl.*, Pro-
logue.—Skeat.

⁵ Kings, Qu.—P.

⁶ *fortè* squires.—P. Yes, often used
in *Allit. Poems*, ed. Morris &c.—F.

⁷ *holt*, a wood, a rough Place, &c.
Lyc. *holtis*, Scot., are hills, higher

grounds, or rather Woods & forrests
(*so*). Gloss. to G. D.—P.

⁸ *hoste*.—P.

⁹ Perhaps “tumid, swelling, rounded.”
Thus *bole* in l. 32, from Old English
bolne, to *swell*; see Partenay, s.v. *bolned*.
Cf. “The flax was *bolled*,” Bible.—Sk.

¹⁰ *idem ac* glimmered, Chauc. A.S.
scymrian, to shine, glitter. L.—P.

¹¹ sheer, pure, clear. Johns.—P.

¹² *lodged*, longed. Qu.—P. Abode,
dwelt, A.-Sax. *lengian*: *lodged* is quite
wrong. See l. 136.—Sk.

¹³ Only half the *n* in the MS.—F.

- layd brode vpon the bent¹ · with brawdres² ffull riche,
 64 before *that* ffayre³ on the ffeeld · where shee fforth
 passed.
 shee was brighter of her blee⁴ · then was the bright
 sonn, brighter
 than the
 sun,
 her rudd⁵ redder then the rose · *that* on the rise⁶
 hangeth, redder than
 the rose,
 meekely smiling with her mouth · & merry in her
 lookes,
 68 euer laughing for loue · as shee like wold. laughing
 for love.
 & as shee came by the bankes · the boughes eche one The boughs
 they lowted⁷ to *that* Ladye · & layd forth their branches. bowed to
 her,
 blossomes & burgens⁸ · breathed ffull sweete, the blossoms
 breathed
 sweet,
 72 fflowers flourished in the frith · where shee fforth
 steppedd,
 & the grasse *that* was gray · greened belue ; the grey
 grass turned
 green,
 breme birds on the boughes · busilye did singe,
 & all the wild in the wood · winlye thé ioyed. the wild
 beasts were
 glad,
 76 Kings kneeled on their knees · knowing *that* Ladye, kings
 kneeled to
 her,
 & all the princes in the presse · & the proud dukes, the nobles
 bowed,
 and all
 proffered to
 please her.
 Barrons & bachelours⁹ · all they bowed ffull lowe ; She wel-
 comed them
 all.
 80 shee welcometh them ffull winlye · with words ffull
 hend, [page 386]
 both barnes¹⁰ & birds · beastes & fowles.
 then *that* lowly Ladye¹¹ · on Land where shee standeth,

¹ bent, where rushes grow—the field. Gloss. ad G. Doug? Declivity. In Scotch it signifies a field. See Gloss.—P. layd brode = spread out, i.e. her train lay on the ground. Cf. l. 25.—Sk.

² i.e. embroideries.—P.

³ i.e. Fair thing, Fair Creature, v. l. 450.—P.

⁴ complexion; S. *bleoh*, color.—P.

⁵ *rudd*, complexion. Jun.—P. A.-S. *rudu*, ruddiness.—Sk.

⁶ *rises*, Scot., are bulrushes, flags, ulva. or it may signify shrubs, bushes. Gloss. ad G. D. *rise*, Chaucero est virga, surculus, a shoot, sprig, &c.: e.g. “As

white as is the blossom on the Rise.” Mi. G. 216: “As white as Lillie or Rose on the rise.” R. R. 1015. Jun.—P. Ger. *reis*, a twig.—Skeat.

⁷ A.S. *hlutan*, incurvare &c. Jun.—P.

⁸ *burgen*, burgeon, the same as *bud*. Jun.—P.

⁹ i.e. Knights. Thus in King Richard F's Song (Qu. printed in Hor. Walpole's roy! Authors. St. 6. *il bachaliers qi son legiere sain* doubtless means Knights. See also many other places in this collection.—P. See Gloss. to *Lanc lot*.—Sk.

¹⁰ i.e. children, human creatures.—P.

¹¹ lovely Lady. Vid. Lin. 258.—P.

- She was
clad
in green
- 84 *that* was comelye cladd · in kirtle & Mantle
of goodlyest greene · *that* euer groome¹ ware,
for the kind² of *that* cloth · can noe clarke tell ;
& shee the most gracyous groome · *that* on the ground
longed ;
of her druryes³ to deeme · to dull be my witts,
88 & the price of her [perrie⁴] · can no P[erson]⁵ tell ;
& the colour⁶ of her kirtle · was caruen ffull lowe,
her dress
cut low to
show her
breasts
that her blisfull breastes · bearnes might⁷ behold,
with a naked necke · *that* neighed⁸ her till,
and her
beautiful
neck.
92 *that* gaue light on the Land · as beames of the sunn.
all the Kings christened · with their cleere gold
might not buy *that* ilke broche⁹ · *that* buckeled her
mantle,
& the crowne on her head · was caruen in heauen,
A crown
was on her
head, and a
sceptre in
her hand.
96 with a scepter sett in her hand · of selcoth¹⁰ gemmes :
thus louelye to looke vpon · on Land shee abydeth.
Her suite
were,
merry were the Meanye¹¹ · of men *that* shee had,
blyth bearnes of blee · bright as the sunn :
Comfort,
100 Sir Comfort, *that* Knight · when the court dineth,
Hope,
Sir Hope & Sir Hind · yee¹² sturdye beene both,
Love,
Sir Liffe & Sir Likinge · & Sir Loue alsoe,
Courtesy,
Sir Cunninge¹³ & Sir Curtesye · *that* curteous were of
deeds,
and Honour
104 & Sir Honor ouer all · vnder her seluen.
her steward.
a stout man & a staleworth¹⁴ · her steward I-wisse.

¹ *groome*, puer, famulus, also a *young* man, see Johnson, from Fairfax: "in-treat this groom & silly Maid."—here it is used equivalent to *homo*, m. & f.—P.

² Qu. *kind*: if *knid*, perhaps from *knitt*.—P.

³ *Drurie*, chaucero denotat amicitiam, amorem. Lye. *Scot.* gifts, presents, love-tokens. Gloss. ad G. D.—P.

⁴ In this line a word is missing. It is surely the word *perrie*, precious stones, never missed in describing ladies: see *P. Pl.* ed. Wright, p. 511, note to l. 901.—Skeat.

⁵ Person.—P.

⁶ Qu. Collar, or y^e Part round the neck. See Johnson.—P.

⁷ nnight MS.—F.

⁸ neighed them till. Qu.—P.

⁹ i.e. an ornament, jewel, clasp. Jun.—P.

¹⁰ i.e. rarus. Lye.—P.

¹¹ familia, multitudo. Lye.—P.

¹² *that* or who. Qu.—P.

¹³ One stroke too few in the MS.—F.

¹⁴ i.e. *fortis*, stout, lusty, strong. Lye.—P.

- shee had Ladyes of loue · longed her about :
 Dame mirth, & Dame Meekenes · & Dame Mercy the
 hynd,¹
- 108 dallyance & disport · 2 damsells ffull sweete,
 with all beawtye [&] blisse · bearnes to behold. |
 there was minstrelsy made · in full many a wise,—
 who-soe had craft or cuninge · kindlye to showe,—
 112 both of ² birds & beastes · & bearnes in the leaues ;
 & ffishes of the fflood · ffaine ³ of her were ;
 birds made merrye with their mouth · as they in mind
 cold.
 tho ⁴ I was moued with *that* mirth · *that* maruell mee
 thought ;
- 116 what woman *that* was · that all the world lowted,
 I thought speedlye to spye · speede if I might.
 then I kered ⁵ to a knight · Sir Comfort the good,⁶
 kneeling low on my knees · curteouslye him prayed.
- 120 I willed him of his worshipp · to witt ⁷ me the sooth ⁸
 of yonder *Ladye* of loue · & of her royall meanye.
 hee cherished me cheerlye · by cheeke & by chin,
 & sayd, “certes my sonne · the sooth thou shalt
 knowe.
- 124 this is my Lady dame Liffe · *that* leadeth vs all,
 shee is worthy & wise · the welder of Ioye,
 greatlye gouerneth the ground · & the greene grasse,
 shee hath ffostered & ffed thee · sith thou was ffirst
 borne,
- 128 & yett beffore thou wast borne · shee bred in thy hart.
 thou art welcome, I-wisse · vnto my winn Ladye.
 If thou wilt wonders witt · feare not to ffaine,⁹

Her ladies
were,
Mirth,
Mercy,

and Disport;

and about
her was
song of men,

of birds
and beasts.

I longed to
know who
this lady
was.

I knelt to
Sir Comfort

and asked
him to tell
me.

He said,
“She is
Lady Life,

who has
kept you
from your
birth.

You are
welcome to
her.”

¹ *Hinc*, villicus, A.S. *hinc*, servus, domesticus. Lye. perhaps *hend*.—P. Certainly *hynd*, *hend*, gentle.—Skeat.

² of, delend.—P. of=by, and is required by the verb *made* in l. 110.—Sk.

³ *faine*, hilaris, glad. Lye.—P.

⁴ i.e. then.—P.

⁵ *kere*, A.S. *Cerran*, *cyrran*, vertere.

Lye.—P.

⁶ prayed. Qu.—P. Lines 117–19 are written as four in the MS.—F.

⁷ witt, *scire*, *hic est*, *facere notum*.—P. See *ken*, l. 131.—F.

⁸ sooth, *verus*, *veritas*. Jun.—P.

⁹ *frayne*, *interrogare*. Jun. to ask, desire. Gloss. G. D.—P.

- & I shall kindlye thee ken ¹ · care thou noe more.”
- I thought
I would be
hers for
ever,
132 then I was fearfull enoughe · & ffaythfullye thought
‘ that I shold long with dame liffe · & loue her for euer,
there shall no man vpon mold · my mind from her take
for all the glitteringe gold · vnder the god of heauen.’
- and our
joy lasted
till an hour
after noon.
136 thus in liking this liuinge · thé Longed ² the more
till that itt neighed neere noone · & one hower after
there was rydinge & revell · that ronge in the bankes
all the world was full woe · winne to ³ behold.
- But by two
140 or itt turned from 12 · till 2 of the clocke,
much of this melodye · was maymed & marde :
- a horn was
heard from
the North,
144 In a nooke of the north · there was a noyse hard,
as itt had beene a horne · the highest of others,
with the biggest bere ⁴ · that euer bearne wist ;
& the burlyest ⁵ blast · that euer blowne was,
throughe the rattlinge rout · runge ouer the ffeelds.
the ground gogled ⁶ for greeffe · of that grim dame ;
- blowing a
burly blast,
148 I went nere out of my witt · for wayling care ;
yett I bode on the bent · & boldlye looked,
once againe into the north · mine eye then I cast.
I there saw a sight · was sorrowfull to behold.
- and an
ugly ghost
appeared,
152 one of the vglyest ⁷ ghosts · that on the earth gone.
there was no man of this sight · but hee was affrayd,
soe grislye & great · & grim to behold.
- a woman
with a gold
crown,
156 } & a quintfull ⁸ queene ⁹ · came quakinge before,
with a carued crowne on her head · all of pure gold, [p. 387]
& shee the ffoulest ffreake ¹⁰ · that formed was euer

¹ ken, *scire, perspicere, intelligere*. Jun. here it signifies (transitively) to shew, make known, inform. See *Witt*, ver. 120.—P.

² abode. MS. Longer.—F.

³ winn, Woe to. Qu.—P. The word *woe* is the difficulty: may it be A.-S. *wo*, *woh*, in the original sense of *bent, inclined*? Or rather, it's put for *wo[d]e* = mad. *Winne* is joy, pleasure.—Sk.

⁴ bere, *fremere, frenitus*, roaring, raging noise. Lye.—P.

⁵ burly, great of stature or size, bulky, corpulent. Johns.—P.

⁶ joggled, wagged, shook.—Sk.

⁷ most fright-causing.—F.

⁸ quaintful, *quaint*, neat, exact, nice, having a petty elegance. N.B. *Quaint* is in Spencer quailed, depressed. Johnson.—P.

⁹ Sc. Pride. compare this with Line 183.—P.

¹⁰ freke, *homo*, a human creature. Lye.—P.

- both of hide & hew · & heare¹ alsoe.
 shee was naked as my nayle · both aboue & belowe, and naked.
 160 shee was lapped about · in Linenn breeches.
 a more fearfull face · no freake might behold ; Her face
 for shee was long, & leane · & lodlye² to see ; was fearful
 there was noe man on the mold · soe mightye of Death was
 strenght, in her look.
 164 but a looke of *that* Lady · & his liffe passed.
 his³ eyes farden⁴ as the fyer · *that* in the furnace Her eyes
 burnes ; flamed like
 they were hollow in her head · with full heauey fire.
 browes ;
 her cheekes were leane · with lipps full side,⁵
 168 with a maruelous mouth · full of long tushes,
 & the nebb⁶ of her nose · to her navell hanged, Her nose
 & her lere⁷ like the lead · *that* latelye was beaten. hung down
 shee bare in her right hand · & ⁸ vnrid⁹ weapon, to her
 172 a bright burnisht blade · all bloody beronen,¹⁰ navel.
 & in the left hand · like the legg of a grype,¹¹ In her right
 with the talents *that* were touchinge · & teenfull¹² talons.
 enoughe. in her left
 with *that* shee burnisht vp her brand · & bradd¹³ out a vulture's
 her geere ; talons.
 176 & I for feare of *that* freake · ffell in a swond. I swooned,
 had not Sir Comfort come · & my care stinted, but Sir
 I had beene slaine with *that* sight · of *that* sorrowfull Comfort
 Ladye.

¹ hair.—P.² lodly or ledlye, Isl. *leidur*. Turpis sordidus, Al. *leid*, abominabilis. M^r Lye MS.—P. loathly, Cf. l. 303.—Sk.³ Her.—P.⁴ i. e. fared, passed, went, were.—P.⁵ side, longus, prolixus. Lye.—P.⁶ *nebbe*, rostrum, AS. vultus, item nasus. Jun.—P.⁷ Lere, Lyre, Caro. Lye. *Item*, complexion. Gloss. ad G. D.—P.⁸ an.—F.⁹ *unrid*, perhaps the same as *unrude*in G. Doug^s ; rude, hideous, horrible. Gloss. ad G. D.—P. The root seems to be the A.-S. *rēde* or *hrēde*, cruel, fierce. The prefix may be the A.-S. *an-* or *on-*.—Sk.¹⁰ *Forté* beronen or berunen, vid. p. 367, St. 48 [of MS.].—P. be-run, run over with.—Sk.¹¹ i. e. Griffin.—P.¹² teen, *est injuria, vexatio*. Jun. Sorrow, grief. Johnson.—P.¹³ braid, brade, vet. *experg, faccre, auferre, educ. re.* Lye.—P.

- then he lowted to me low · & learned me well,
 reassured 180 sayd, “be thou not abashed · but abyde there a while ;
 me, here may thou sitt & see · selcothes ¹ ffull manye.
 yonder damsell is death · *that* dresseth her to smyte.
 told me she was Death, with Pride, her suite,
 loe, pryde passeth before · & the price beareth,
 184 many sorrowfull souldiers · following her fast after :
 both enuye & anger · in their yerne ² weeds,
 Envy, Wrath, Mischief, morninge & mone · Sir Mis[c]heefe his ffere,³
 Sorrow, Sorrow & sicknesse · & sikinge in hart ;
 and all who loathed their life. 188 all *that* were lothinge of their liffe · were lent⁴ to her
 court.
 when shee draweth vp her darts · & dresseth her to
 smite,
 there is no groome vnder god · may garr her to stint.
 then I blushed ⁵ to *that* bearne · & balefullye looked :
 She stept on the grass, 192 he ⁶ stepped forth barefooted · on the bents browne,
 the greene grasse in her gate · shee grindeth all to
 powder,⁷
 trees tremble for ffere · & tipen ⁸ to the ground,
 leaues lighten downe lowe · & leauen their might,
 and the trees trembled, the leaves dropt. the fish were still. 196 fowles faylen to flee · when ⁹ thé heard wapen,
 & the ffishes in the fflood · ffaylen to swimme ¹⁰
 ffor dread of dame death · *that* dolefullye threates.
 She hied to the happy crowd. 200 with *that* shee hyeth to the hill · & the heard ffindeth :
 in the roughest of the rout · shee reacheth forth darts.
 there shee fell att the first flappe · 1500
 of comelyes Queenes with crowne · & Kings full noble,
 and slew kings, princes, proud princes in the presse · prestlye ¹¹ shee quellethe ;
 dukes, 204 of dukes *that* were doughtye · shee dang out the
 braynes ;

¹ i. e. rarities, vid. L. 96.—P.

² yerne, *promptus, cupidus*. L.—P.

³ fere, *socius*, vet. ang. L.—P.

⁴ led.—P. Qu. MS. letit, or a *t* crossed through for the first stroke of an *n*.—F. *lent* is short for *lenged*; thus *were lent* = abode, dwelt. See *lent* in Halliwell.—Sk.

⁵ vide Lin. 389.—P.

⁶ she.—P.

⁷ Compare this passage with the beautiful bit about Life, lines 69-75.—F.

⁸ tip, *leviter tangere*. L.—P.

⁹ *wan*. Query.—P.

¹⁰ MS. swimme.—F.

¹¹ prest, paratus, statim. Lye.—P.

- merry maydens on the mold · shee mightilye killethe ; merry
there might no weapon them warrant · nor no walled maids,
towne.
- younge children in their craddle · they dolefullye dyen ; and babies
208 shee spareth ffor no specyaltye · but spilleth the too.
gainest¹ ;
the more woe shee worketh · more mightye shee
seemeth.
- when my Lady dame liffe · looked on her deeds, Life then
& saw how dolefullye · shee dunge² downe her people,
212 shee cast vp a crye · to the hye King of heauen ; cried to
& he hearkneth itt hendlye · in his hye throne, God,
hee called on countenance · & bade his course take, and He sent
“ryde thou to the reschew · of yonder wrought³ Countenance
Ladye. to her rescue.
- 216 hee was bowne⁴ att his bidd · & bradd⁵ on his way. Countenance
that wight,⁶ as the wind · that wappeth⁷ in the skye, rushes down
he ran out of the rainebow⁸ · through the ragged like the
clouds, wind,
& light on the Land · where the Lords [lay] slaine.
- 220 & vnto dolefull death · he dresses him to speake ; and bids
sayth : “thou wrathefull Queene · that euer woe worketh, Death
cease of thy sorrow · thy soueraigine commandeth, cease her
& let thy burnished blade · on the bent rest, slaughter,
224 that my Lady dame liffe · her likinge may haue.” that Life
then death glowed & gran · for gryme⁹ of her talke,¹⁰ might have
Death

¹ *gain*, the reverse of *ungain*, (awkward, clumsy) i.e. clever: handy, ready, dextrous. Johnson.—P.

² *wrought*, Scot. *wraik*, to vex; Sax. *wreccan*, exulare; *wreccan* persequi, ulcisci; *wrecca*, miser, exul. *Wrought* perhaps is the same with the Scotch *wrachit*, i.e. wretched.—P.

⁴ *bown*, *paratus*. L.—P.

⁵ vid. 176 ver.—P.

⁶ *wight*, swift, nimble. Johnson.—P.

⁷ *wappeth*, A.S. *wappian*, Fluctuare, [*wapean*, *wafian*, to waver, Bosworth], perhaps *waxeth*, see *Saxon*, written so in folio 105 “Saxon Harold,” also ver.

248 of this song.—P. See *Waft* in Wedgwood. *Wappe* is used in *Maleore's Arthur* of the *lapping* of the waves in the bit about Arthur's death, and Sir Bedevere.—Sk.

⁸ The *w* is made over a *y* in the MS.—F.

⁹ Query *foregrim*, i.e. very grim: *fore* in composition sometimes strengthens the meaning, e.g. fore done, fore shame, fore slow. See Johnson on these. *gryme* is foulness, dirtiness, impurity.—P. A.-S. *grim*, fury, rage; *grymetan*, to rage.—F.

¹⁰ looked fiercely and grinned for rage at Countenance's talk.—F.

- but shee did as shee dained ¹ · durst shee noe other ;
 earthed her sword. 228 shee pight the poynt of her sword · in the plaine earth,
 & with a looke full layeth ² · shee looked on the hills.
 Life kisses then my Lady dame Liffe · shee looketh full gay,
 Countenance, kyreth ³ to countenance · & him comelye thankes,
 kissed kindlye *that Knight* · then carped ⁴ shee no
 more,
 and then rebukes Death: 232 but vnto dolefull death · shee dresseth her to speake,
 sayth : “ thou woefull wretch · weaknesse of care,
 “ Devil’s daughter, bold birth ⁵ full of bale · bringer of sorrowe,
 dame daughter of the devill · death is thy name ;
 236 but if thy fare be thy ⁶ fairer · the feend haue thy soule.
 couldest thou any cause ffind · thou Kaitiffe wretch,
 [page 388] That neither reason nor wright ⁷ · may raigne with
 thy name ?
 why kill’st thou man, and grass, and trees, 240 why kills thou the body · *that* neuer care rought ⁸ ?
 the grasse nor the greene trees · greued thee neuer,
 but come fforth in their kinds · christyans to helpe,
 with all beawtye & blisse · *that* barne ⁹ might devise.
 but of my meanye thou marreth · marveild I haue
 244 how thou dare doe them to death · eche day soe manye,
 God’s handi-work ? & the handy worke of him · *that* heauen weldeth !
 how keepeth thou his comandements · thou kaytiffe
 retch !
 He blest them, bade them increase and multiply, 248 wheras banely ¹⁰ hee them blessed · & biddeth them
 thriue.
 waxe fforth in the word · & worth ¹¹ vnto manye,

¹ ordained, bade.—Sk. The context wants the meaning—“was told to.”—F.

² laith, loath, A.S. *lað* ; O. E. *laid* ; *invisus*, *molestus*, *odiosus*, *fastidium creans*. Jun.—P.

³ Kereth, ver. 118, *quem vide*.—P. A.S. *cjrran*, to turn.—F.

⁴ to *carp*, to talk. Scottish. Lin. 361, Gloss. to Ramsays Evergreen. Here it seems used for complained. *Carpit*, spoke, talked, complained. Gloss. to G. Doug*.—P.

⁵ Birth, bulk. . . burthen. Gloss. ad

G. Doug.—P.

⁶ the.—Sk.

⁷ right.—P.

⁸ wrought.—Sk.

⁹ MS. *harne*. The alliteration requires *b* ; and *h* is continually miswritten for *b*. It should be *barne* = *bearne* (l. 265).—Sk.

¹⁰ *banely*, perhaps readily, from *bane*, p. 363, St. 28.—P. *Bane*, kind, courteous, friendly. Northern. This is Kennett’s explanation of the word in MS. Lansd. 1033. Halliwell.—F.

¹¹ worth, *esse, fieri*, A.S. *worthan*. Lye.—P.

- & thou lett them of their leake¹ · with thy lidder²
turnes!
- but with wondering³ & with woe · thou waiteth them
full yorne,⁴
- & as a theefe in a rout · thou throngeth them⁵ to death,
252 *that* neither nature, nor I · ffor none of thy deeds
may bring vp our bearnes · their bale thee betyde!
but if thou⁶ blinn⁷ of *that* bine · thou buy must full
deere; Stop, or
you'll suffer
for it!"
- they may wary⁸ the weeke · *that* euer thou wast
fformed."
- 256 then death dolefullye · drew vp her browes,
armed her to answer · & vpright shee standeth,
& sayd : " o, louelye liffe · cease thou such wordes !
thou payneth thee with pratinge · to pray me to cease.
- 260 itt is reason & right · *that* I may rent take
thus to kill of the kind · both *Kings* & dukes,
Loyall Ladds & liuelye · of ilke sort some ;
all shall drye⁹ with the dints · *that* I deale with my
hands. " It is right
that I
should kill
some,
- 264 I wold haue kept the commandement · of the hye *King*
of heauen,
but the bearne itt brake · *that* thou bred vp ffirst
when Adam & Eue¹⁰ · of the earth were shapen,
& were put into Paradiſe · to play with their selues,
268 & were brought into blisse · bidd if thé¹¹ wold.
he warned¹² them nothing in the world · but a wretched
branche
- for the
first man
broke God's
commands
in Paradiſe,

¹ leak, vid. lin. 301.—P. A.-S. *lác*, play, sport.—F.

² *lidder*, slow, sluggish, lazy. Gloss. ad G. D. ; or perhaps as the Sax. *liđer*, i. e. malus, sordidus, servilis.—P. A.-S. *lijðre*, *lijđer*, bad, wicked. Bosworth.—F.

³ Only half of the last *n* is in the MS.—F.

⁴ greedy, vid. L. 185.—P. eagerly. A.-S. *georne*.—F. *waiteth* is used for *waitest*; this agrees with *tholed* for

tholedst in l. 1.—Sk. ⁵ MS. then.—F.

⁶ i. e. unless thou.—P.

⁷ blinn, vet. A. *cessare*, *desinere*, *desistere*. Lye.—P. ? bine.—F.

⁸ *wary*, Chauc. est detestari, execrari, vid. Junius.—P.

⁹ drie, drien, tolerare, pati. Sax. *dreo-3an*. Lye. dre, to suffer, endure. Gloss. ad G. D. dye, qu.—P.

¹⁰ There is a tag at the end like an *r* in the MS.—F.

¹¹ bide if they.—P. ¹² forbade.—Sk.

- of the ffayntyest ffruit · *that* euer in firith grew;
yett his bidding they brake · as the booke recordeth.
- when Eve plucked the apple. 272 when Eue fell to the ffruite · with ffingers white,
& plucked them of the plant · & poysoned them both,
I was ffaine of *that* ffray · my ffawchyon I gryped,
& delt Adam such a dint · *that* hee dolue euer after.
- Then I, Death, gript my sword, and hit Adam and Eve and their offspring. 276 Eue & her ofspring · I hitt them, I hope,
for all the musters ¹ *that* they made · I mett with them
once.
- Leave me, Life! I hate thee and thy servants, and have no pleasure in their mirth. 280 therefore, liffe, thou me leaue · I loue thee but a litle;
I hate thee & thy houshold · & thy hyndes ² all!
mee gladdeth not of their glee · nor of their gay lookes;
att thy dallyance & thy disport · noe daynty ³ I haue;
thy ffayre liffe & thy ffairenesse · ffeareth ⁴ me but litle;
thy blisse is my bale · breuelye ⁵ of others,
- My gladdest game is to hew at thy joys." 284 there is no game vnder heauen · soe gladlye I wishe
as to haue a slapp with my ffawchyon · att thy fayre
state."

[The Second Part.]

- Life rejoins :
- " Thy sword shall never bite me ;
but when men
are joyful with wife and child,
- 2 fitt { Then liffe on the land · Ladylike shee speakes,
sayth : " these words thou hast wasted · wayte ⁶
thou no other ;
shall thy bitter brand neuer · on my body byte.
I am grounded in god · & grow for euermore ;
but to these men of the mold · marvell me thinketh
in whatt hole of thy hart · thou thy wrath keepeth :
- 292 where ioy & gentlenesse · are ioyned ⁷ together
betweene his wight ⁸ & his wiffe · & his winne ⁹ children.

¹ musters. Qu.—P. devices, tricks. —F.

² servants.—F.

³ dainty, &c. I have no scruple, ceremony. See Johnson, Ad Verb. 3^d. sense. —P. dainty, delight.—F.

⁴ *fear* = frighten. So in Shakespeare :

' Warwick was a bug, that *feared* us all.'—S.

⁵ *bremely*, Vid. p. 246, St. 19, vid. p. 388, lin. 360.—P. ? briefly.—F.

⁶ Qu. wate, Scot. i.e. wott.—P.

⁷ The *i* has an accent on it as if for *c*. —F. ⁸ a wight.—P. ⁹ pleasant.—F.

- & when ffaith & ffellowshipp · are ffastened ffor aye,
 loue & charitye · which our lord likethe,
- 296 then thou waleth¹ them with wracke · & wratheffully thou
 beginneth ; destroyest
- vncurteouslye thou cometh · vnknowne of them all,
 & lacheth² away the land · that the Lord holdeth, their lands
 or woryes his wiffe · or walts³ downe his children. or loved
 ones :
- 300 mikle woe thus thou waketh · where mirth was before.
 this is a deed of the devill · death, thou vvest ; a deed of the
 but if thou leaue not thy lake⁴ · & learne thee a better, devil,"
 thou wilt lach⁵ att the last · a lothelich⁶ name."
- 304 "doe away, damsell," quoth death · "I dread thee Death
 nought! answers:
- of my losse⁷ that I losse⁸ · lay thou noe thought ;
 thou prouet mee full prestlye · of many proper thinge ;
 I haue not all kinds soe ill · as thou me vpbraydest ; "I am not so
 308 where I wend on my way · the world will depart, guilty as
 bearnes wold be ouer bold · bales ffor to want, you, Life,
 the 7 sinnes for to serue · & sett them full euer, would make
 & giue no glory vnto god · that sendeth vs all grace. me.
 Prevent
 men from
 sinning,
- 312 if the dint of my dart · deared⁹ them neuer,
 to lett them worke all their will · itt were litle Ioy.
 shold I for their fayrnesse · their ffoolishnes allowe,
 my liffe (giue thou me leaue) · noe Leed¹⁰ vpon earth and subdue
 them all.
- 316 but I shall master his might · mauger his cheekes
 as a Conquerour keene · biggest of other,
 to deale dolefull dints · & doe as my list ;
 for I fayled neuer in fight · but I the ffeild wan Never have
 I failed
 in fight.

¹ to wale, *eligere*, forte hic transitive pro 'to make to wail.'—P. waleth = afflictest. A.-S. *wælan*, to afflict, vex.—Sk.

² lach, lache. To take, catch, snatch. A.-S. *læccan*, comprehendere, rapere. Urry in Chaucer.—P.

³ A.-S. *wæltan*, to roll, tumble.—F.

⁴ lake, ludere. Lye.—P.

⁵ A.-S. *læccan*, *gelæccan*, to take, catch,

seize. (See note 2.)—F.

⁶ i.e. loathsome.—P.

⁷ praise, fame.—F.

⁸ lose.—P.

⁹ Dere, Chaucer est *ludere*, *nocere*. Lye.—P.

¹⁰ Leed, leid, a Person (Scottish). Gloss. to Ramsay's Evergreen. *leid*, a man, from *leod*, Sax. Homo. Gloss. ad G. D. —P.

- 320 sith the ffirst ffreake · *that* formed was euer,
 & will not leaue till the last bee · on the beere layd.
 but sitt sadlye,¹ thy liffe² · &³ soothe thou shalt know.
 If euer any man vpon mold · any mirth had,
 324 *that* leaped away with thee, liffe · & laughed me to
 scorne,
 but I dang them with my dints · vnto the derffe⁴
 earthe.
- I killed
 Adam,
 Methuselah,
 Joseph,
 Abraham,
 Saul,
 Jonathan,
 David,
 Solomon,
 Alexander,
- 328 Iosua & Ioseph · & Iacob the smoothe,
 Abraham & Isace · & Esau the roughe ;
 Samuell,⁵ for all his ffingers · I slew with my hands,
 & Ionathan, his gentle sonne · in Gilboa hills ;
 332 david dyed on the dints · *that* I delt oft,
 soe did salomon his sonne · *that* was sage holden,
 & Alexander alsoe · to whom all the world lowted ;
 in the midst of his mirth · I made him to bow ;
 336 the hye honor *that* he had · helped him but litle ;
 when I swang him on the swire⁶ · to swelt⁷ him
 behoued.
- Arthur,
 Hector,
 Lancelot,
 Gallaway,
 and all the
 knights of
 the Round
 Table.
- 340 Arthur of England · & Hector the keene,⁸
 both Lancelott & leonades · with other leeds manye,
 & Gallaway the good *Knicht* · & Gawaine the hynde,⁸
 & all the rowte I rent · ffrom the round table :
 was none soe hardye nor soe hye · soe holy nor soe
 wicked,
 but I burst them with my brand · & brought them
 assunder.
- I jousted
 with Iesus,
- 344 how shold any wight weene · to winn me on ground ?
 haue not I Iusted gentlye · with Iesu of heauen ?

¹ seriously, composed, still.—P.² Thou Life.—P.³ the.—P.⁴ See pag. 116, St. 39.—P. fierce,
 cruel.—F.⁵ Saul, *lege*.—P.⁶ swire, *swira*, *swir-ban*, collum, cervix.
 —P.⁷ *Swelt*, S. *sweltan*, obire, languescere.
Swelt, to be choaked, suffocated, die.
 Gloss. ad G. D.—P.⁸ hende, as in l. 107.—Sk.

- he was frayd of my ffacc · in ffreshest of time.
 yett I knocked him on the crosse · & carued ¹ throughe
 his hart.” and pierced
 his heart.”
- 348 & with *that* shee cast of her crowne · & kneeled downe At Christ's
 lowe name all
 kneel.
- when shee minned ² the name · of *that* noble prince ;
 soe did liffe vpon land · & her leeds all
 both of heauen and of earth · & of hell ffeends,
 352 all they lowted downe lowe · their *Lord* to honor.
 then liffe kneeled on her knees · with her crowne in Life
 her hand,
 & looketh vp a long while · towards the hye heauen ;
 shee riseth vpp rudlye ³ · & dresseth her to speake,
 356 shee calleth to her companye · & biddeth them ⁴ come then calls
 neere, her company
 to her,
 both *Kings* and *Queenes* · & comelye dukes:
 “ worke wisely by your witts · my words to heare
that I speake ffor your speed · & spare itt noe longer.” ⁵
- 360 then shee turneth to them · & talketh these words, and says :
 shee sayth ⁶ : “ dame death, of thy deeds · now is thy
 doome shapen
 through thy wittles words · *that* thou hast carped,
 which thou makest with thy mouth · & mightylye
 avowes.⁷ witless
 words have
 settled
 thy fate.
- 364 thou hast blowen thy blast · breemlye ⁸ abroad Thou hast
 how hast thou wasted this world · sith wights were boasted
 of thy
 murders of
 men,
 first,
 euer murdered & marde · thou makes thy avant.⁹
 of one point lett vs proue · or ¹⁰ wee *part* in sunder :

¹ *carve, secare, incidere, sculperere.* Jun.
 See also Johnson : Sense 6th—P.

² *minn, ming,* to mention. Vid. Iun.
 Lye.—P. The alliteration and sense
 both show it should be *nemned*. *nem* is
 miswritten *min*.—Sk.

³ *rude,* is stiff, strong. It. forcible,
 vehement, apud G. Douglas.—P. ? for
radlye, A.-Sax. *radlice*, quickly, speedily.
 —F.

⁴ *thenn* MS.—F.

⁵ The next two pages are borrowed
 from P. Pl. Passus xviii.—Sk.

⁶ On these introductory words, see Mr.
 Skeat's Essay on Allit. Metre.—F.

⁷ *avowest*.—P.

⁸ *forté* *breemlye*, *breme*, est *atrox*,
ferox; A.-Sax. *breman*, *fremere*. Lye.
 vid. p. 246, St. 19, 388, l. 283.—P. MS.
breenlye or *breitlye*.—F.

⁹ *boast*.—Sk.

¹⁰ *ere*.—Sk.

- of jousting
with Jesus. 368 how didest thou Iust att Ierusalem · with Iesu my lord,
where thou deemed his deat[h] · in one dayes time ?
there was thou shamed, & shent¹ · & stripped ffor aye !
when thou saw the King come · with the crosse on his
shoulder ;
- But he
conquered
thee. 372 on the top of Caluarye · thou camest him against ;
like a traytour vntrew · treason thou thought ;
thou layd vpon my leege lord · lotheliche hands,
sithen beate him on his body · & buffeted him rightlye,
Thou didst
beat and
buffet him,
and wound
him on the
cross 376 till the railinge² red blood · ran from his s[i]des,
sith rent him on the rood · with ffull red wounds.
to all the woes *that* him wasted · I wott not ffew,
tho deemedst to haue³ beene dead · & dressed for
euer.
- 380 but, death, how didst thou then · with all thy derffe⁴
words,
when thou prickedst att his pappe · with the poynt of
with a spear. a speare,
& touched the tabernackle · of his trew hart
where my bower was bigged⁵ · to abyde for euer ?
- But the
glory of his
Godhead 384 when the glory of his godhead · glented⁶ in thy face,
then was thou feard of this fare · in thy false hart ;
then thou hyed into hell hole · to hyde thee belieue ;
drove thee
into Hell, thy fawchon flew out of thy fist · soe fast thou thee
hyed ;
- 388 thou durst not blushe⁷ once backe · for better or worsse
but drew thee downe ffull · in *that* deepe hell,
& bade them barre bigglye⁸ · BELZEBUB his gates.
where thou
toldest then thé told⁹ them tydands · *that* teened them sore,

¹ shend, shent, confundere dedecorare.
Lye.—P.

² railing, *ralis*, apud G. Doug^r is, springs, gushes forth, runs. *Æn.* xi. 724, *Cruor & Vulsæ labuntur ab æthere plumæ*, which is thus rendered "al the blude ha- boundantly furth *ralis*," and—the "licht downis up to the skyis glydis." *rayled* is used by Chaucer in this Sense.—P.

³ him to have.—P.

⁴ Vid. P. 116 [of MS.]—P.

⁵ big, Scotis est condere, ædificare.
Lye.—P.

⁶ to glent, to glance. Urry. In Chauc^r "Her eyin *glent* aside." Tr. & Cres.—P.

⁷ so we say "at first blush." See Johnson.—P.

⁸ biggly, i. e. mightily.—P.

⁹ thou toldest.—P.

- 392 how *that King* came · to kithen ¹ his strenght,
 & how shee had beaten thee on thy bent · & thy brand
 taken,
 with euerlasting liffe · *that* longed ² him till.
 then the sorrow was ffull sore · att Sathans hart ;
- 396 hee threw ffeends in the ffyer · many ffell thousands ;
 & death, thou dange itt on · whilest thou dree ³ might ;
 for ffalte of thy ffawchyon · thou fought with thy hand.
 bost this neuer of thy red deeds · thou ravished bitche!
- 400 thou may shrinke for shame · when the sooth heares.
 then I leapt to my lord · *that* caught me vpp soone,
 & all wounded as hee was · with weapon in hand
 he fastened foote vpon earth · & ffollowed thee ffast
- 404 till he came to the caue · *that* cursed was holden.
 he abode before Barathron · *that* bearne, while he
 liked,
that was euer merke as midnight · with mour[n]inge
 & sorrowe ;
 he cast a light on the Land · as beames on ⁴ the sunn.
- 408 then cryed *that King* · with a cleere steuen,⁵
 “pull open your ports · you princes within !
 here shall come in the *King* · crowned with ioy,
 which is the hiest burne ⁶ · in battell to smite.”
- 412 there was ffleringe ⁷ of ffeends · throughe the fyer
 gaynest,⁷
 hundreds hurled on heapes · in holes about ;
 the broad gates, all of brasse · brake all in sunder,
 & the *King* with his crosse · came in before.
- 416 he leapt vnto Lucifer · *that* Lord himselfe,
 then he went to the tower · where chaynes were manye,

how Christ's
 everlasting
 Life had
 beaten thee.

Boast not,
 then, beaten
 bitch!

For Christ
 followed
 thee to Hell,

and bade its
 princes open
 its gates
 and receive
 their King.

The gates
 burst
 asunder.

Christ bound
 Lucifer,

¹ Kythe, to appear, Item, to make appear, to show, ab A.S. *cyðan*, narrare, ostendere. *cyðe* notitia, *cyðere* martyr, testis. Gloss. ad G. Doug.—P.

² belonged.—Sk.

³ dree. Qu.—P. *dree* = endure, hold out. A.-Sax. *dreogan*. This is from Goth. *driugan* = serve as a soldier, fight,

the very sense here, viz. to hold out in fighting.—Sk.

⁴ of.—P. Should be *lemes of*. *beame* is a stupid alteration for *leme*, and destroys the chief-letter.—Sk.

⁵ voice, sound. Lye.—P.

⁶ Qu. *barne*.—P.

⁷ ? fleinge. *gaynest* = quickest.—Sk.

- & bound him soe biglye · *that* hee for bale rored.
 death, thou daredst¹ *that* day · & durst not be seene
 420 ffor all the glittering gold · vnder god himseluen.
 [page 390] Then to the tower hee went · where chanes are many ;
 hee tooke Adam & Eue · out of the old world,
 rescued Adam and Eve, Abraham, Daniel, and many more. 424 Abraham & Isacc · & all *that* hee wold,
 david, & danyell · & many deare bearnes
that were put into prison · & pained ffull long.
 He freed me from death, and we went forth together, leaving thee, Death, in the dungeon of devils. 428 he betooke me the treasure · *that* neuer shall haue end,
that neuer danger of death · shold me deere after.
 then wee wenten fforth · winlye² together,
 & Left the dungeon of devills · & thee, death, in the
 midst.
 & now thou prickes ffor pride · praising thy seluen !
 therefore bee not abashed · my barnes soe deere,
 My children, fear not then Death's sword. 432 of her ffauchyon soe ffeirce · nor of her fell words.
 shee hath noe might, nay no meane · no more you to
 greeue,
 nor on *your* comelye corsses · to clapp once her hands.
 I shall looke you ffull liuelye · & lache ffull well,
 I shall lead you up to Heaven. 436 & keere³ yee ffather of this kithe⁴ · aboue the cleare
 skyes.
 Love Mary,
 If yee [loue] well⁵ the Ladye · *that* light in⁶ the mayden,
 & be christened with creame⁷ · & in *your* creede
 beleue,
 haue no doubt⁸ of yonder death · my deare children ;
 and fear not Death ; 440 for yonder [death] is damned · with devills to dwell,
 where is wondering, & woe · & wayling ffor sorrow.
 death was damned *that* day · Daring ffull still.
 shee hath no might, nay no maine⁹ · to meddle with
 yonder ost,
 she cannot meddle with everlasting Life."

¹ deredst.—P. This *daring*, l. 442, is Chaucer's *dare*, said of a hare that *lies and dares*. See Morris, *Specimens*, p. 436, note to Werwolf, l. 15.—Skeat.

² A.-S. *wynlice*, joyously.—F.

³ turn?—Sk.

⁴ A.-S. *cyð*, a region ; *cyððe*, a home, native country.—F.

⁵ ye *serve* well, or *love*. Qu.—P.

⁶ hight is. Qu.—P.

⁷ *chreame*, Gr. *χρισμα*, gallice *chresme*, oleum sacratum quo in Bapt^{mo} utebantur. Lye.—P.

⁸ fear.—Sk.

⁹ maine, S. *mæzn*, robur, vis. Nescio an Might respiciat animi, Main, vim corporis. Lye.—P.

- 444 against euerlasting liffe · *that* Ladye soe true.”
 then my Lady dame liffe · with Lookes soe gay,
that was comelye cladd · with christall¹ and Mantle,
 all the dead on the ground · doughtilye² shee rayseth
 448 fairer by 2 ffold · then they before were.
 with *that* shee hyeth ouer the hills · with hundreds ffull
 manye.³
 I wold haue ffollowed on *that* faire⁴ · but no further I
 might ;
 what with wandering⁵ & with woe · I waked belieue.
 452 thus fared I throw a ffrith · in a ffresh time,
 where I sayd a sleepe · in a slade greene ;
 there dreamed I the dreame · *which* dread all be-
 frightened.
 but hee *that* rent all was⁶ on the rood · riche⁷ itt him-
 seluen,
 456 & bring vs to his blisse · with blessings enowe !
 therto Iesu of Ierusalem · grant vs thy grace,
 & saue there our howse · holy for euer ! Amen !

Then Life
raised the
dead,

and hied
away with
hundreds.

I tried to
follow,

but awoke.

Such was
my dream.

May Christ
fulfil it,
and bring us
to His bliss!

ffins.

¹ kyrtle Query. petticoat. Lat. *Encombomata*. Jun.—P. A word like *plicor* follows in the MS., but is not in Junius.—F.

² dcughty, *strenuus, impavidus, animosus*. Jun.—P.

³ Only half the *n* in the MS.—F.

⁴ fair thing, Scil! —P.

⁵ Only one stroke for the second *n* in the MS.—F.

⁶ *was all rent*. Qu.—P. *all is de trop*. —Sk.

⁷ ? rule, control. A.-S. *ricsian*. Or *riche* = *rithe, rihte*, set right.—Sk.

**Adam : Bell : Clime of the Cloug[he] &
William : off Cloudeslee : ¹**

THE version here given of this well-known ballad differs very slightly from that printed by Copland *circ.* 1550, reprinted (with some alterations from the Folio) in the *Reliques*, and again by Ritson in his *Pieces of Popular Poetry*.

The ballad is no doubt far older than the oldest copy extant. Dunbar (who died *circ.* 1530) makes mention of one of its three famous heroes. A fragment of an edition older than that published by Copland has been recovered by Mr. Payne Collier.

[The First Part.]

[How ' Cloudeslee is tane and damned to death.']

It's merry to
hunt in the
green forest.

MERRYE : itt was in the greene fforrest
amonge the leaues greene,
wheras men hunt East & west
4 with bowes & arrowes keene,

And I'll tell
you of 3
northern
yeomen,

to raise the deere out of their den ;
such sights has oft beene seene,
as by 3 yeomen of the north countrye,
8 by them itt is I meane.

Adam Bell,
Clym of the
Cloughe,
and William
Clowdeslee,

the one of them hight Adam Bell,
another Clymm of the Cloughe,
the 3^d was *william* of Clowdeslee,
12 an archer good enoughe.

¹ In 3 Parts. N.B. This is in print in Old Black Letter. Some corrections may be had from this.—P.

- they were outlawed for venison,
 these yeomen eueryeche one ;
 they swore then ¹ brethren on a day
 16 to English wood for to gone. outlawed for
taking
venison.
- now lithe ² & listen, gentlemen
that of mirth loueth to heare !
 2 of them were single men,
 20 the 3^d had a weded fferer.³
- william was the weded man ;
⁴ much more then was his care.
 hee sayd to his brethren vpon a day,
 24 to Carleile hee wold fare, William is
married,

and says
he'll go to
Carlisle
- there to speake with faire Alice his wiffe
 and his children three. to see his
wife and
children.
 " by my truth," said Adam Bell,
 28 " not by the councell of mee ; Adam
warns him
- " for if wee ⁵ goe to Carlile, Brother,
 & from this wylde wood wende,
 If *that* the Iustice doe you take,
 32 *your* life is att an end." that he'll
be taken.
- " If *that* I come not to Morrow, brother,
 by prime ⁶ to you againe,
 trust you then *that* I am tane
 36 or else *that* I am slaine."
- hee tooke his leaue of his brethren 2,
 & to Carlile hee is gone ;
 there he knocked att his owne windowe
 40 shortlye and anon. William
goes to his
home,
knocks for

¹ them. *Reliques* (collated only now and then).—F.

² lithe, attend, hearken, listen. Lye.—P.

³ fere, companion. Iun.—P.

⁴ One stroke too many in the MS.—F.

⁵ ye.—*Rel.*

⁶ MS. prime.—F.

- his wife, "where be you, ffayre Alice?" he sayd,
 "my wiffe, and children three?
 and tells her lightlye lett in thy owne husband,
 to let him in. 44 William of Clowdeslee."
- She says "alas!" then sayd ffaire Alice,
 and sighed verry sore,
 the place "This place hath beene beset for you [page 391]
 is watched. 48 this halfe a yeere & more."
- "Let me in, and give me food." "now am I heere," said Clowdeslee,
 "I wold that in I were;
 now ffeitch vis¹ meate & drinke enoughe,
 52 & lett vs make good cheere."
- She does so. shee ffeicht him meate & drinke plentye,
 like a true weded wiffe;
 & pleased him with *that* shee had,
 56 whom shee loued as her liffe.
- An old woman kept 7 years by William's charity there lay an old wiffe in the place,
 a litle before² the ffyer,
 which william had found of charytye
 60 more then seauen yeere.
- goes to vp shee rose, & forth shee goes,—
 Euill mote shee speede therfore!—
 for shee had sett³ no ffoote on ground
 64 not 7 yeere before.
- the Justice, shee went into the Iustice hall
 as ffast as shee cold hye:
 and tells him "this night," shee sayd, "is come to towne
 Clowdeslee is at home. 68 William of Clowdeslee."

¹ ? MS. for *vis*, or *vs*, *us*.—F.² besyde.—*Rel.*³ One stroke too many in the MS.—F.

- therof the Iustice was full faine,¹
 soe was the Sherriffe alsoe ;
 “ thou shalt not trauell hither, dame, for nought ;
 72 “ thy meede thou shalt haue ere thou goe.”
- He is glad,
- they gaue to her a right good gowne,—
 of scarlett itt was, as I heard saine,²—
 shee tooke the gift, & home shee went,
 76 & couched her downe againe.
- and gives her
 a scarlet
 gown.
- they raysed the towne of Merry Carlile
 in all they hast they can,
 & came thronging to williams house
 80 as fast as they might gone ;
- Then he
 raises
 the town,
- there they besett the good yeaman
 about on euerye syde.
 william heard great noyse of the ffolkes
 84 *that* thitherward fast hyed.
- and
 surrounds
 William's
 house.
- Alice opened a backe windowe,
 & looked all about :
 shee was ware of the Iustice & Sherr[i]ffe both,
 88 & with them³ a ffull great rout.
- William's
 wife Alice
 sees them,
- “ Allice,⁴ treason ! ” then cryed Allice,
 “ Euer woe may thou bee !
 goe into my chamber, sweet husband,” shee sayd,
 92 “ Sweete William of Clowdeslee.”
- and sends
 William into
 her room.
- he tooke his sword & his buckeler,
 his bow, & his children 3 ;
 he went into the strongest chamber,
 96 where he thought the surest to bee.

¹ glad.—P.² Of scarlate, and of graine.—*Rel.*³ One stroke too many in the MS.—F.⁴ Alas.—*Rel.*

She seizes
a poleaxe.

ffayre Alice, like a louer true,
tooke a Pollaxe in her hand ;
said, "hee shall dye *that* cometh in
100 this dore, while I may stand."

William
shoots the
Justice on
the breast,

Cloudeslye bent a right good bow
that was of a trustye tree ;
he smote the Iustice on the brest
104 *that* his arrowe burst in 3.

but it is
armoured.

" gods curse on his heart," sayd william,
" this day thy cote did on !
if itt had beene no better then mine,
108 itt had beene neere the bone."

The Justice
calls on him
to yield,

" yeelde thee, Cloudeslee," said the Iustice,
" & the bow & arrowes thee froe."
" gods cursse on his hart," sayd faire Alice,
112 " *that* my husband councell[e]th soe !"

and orders
the house
to be fired. ¹

" sett ffire on the house," said the shirriffe,
" sith itt will noe better bee ;
& burne wee there william," he sayth,
116 " his wiffe & his Children 3."

His men fire
it.

thé ffired the house in many a place,
the ffyer ffiledd on hye ¹ :
" alas !" then said ffayre Alice,
120 " I see here wee shall dye."

William lets
his wife and
children out
of a window,

william opened a backe windowe
that was in his chamber hye ;
& there with sheetes he did let downe
124 his wiffe and children 3.

and prays

" haue you here my treasure," said William,
" my wiffe & Children 3 ;

the Justice
to spare
them.

for gods loue doe them noe hareme,
128 but wreake you all on mee !"

¹ And burnt the old woman and her scarlett gowne, I hope.—F.

- William shott soe wonderous well
 Till his arrowes were all agoe, [page 392]
 & ffire soe ffast about him fell
 132 *that* his bow string burnt in towe.
 He shoots on,
- the sparkles brent & fell vpon
 good william of Clowdeslee ;
 but then was hee a wofull man, & sayd
 “ this is a cowards death to me !
 but the fire gains on him,
- “ leever had I,” said william,
 “ with my sword in the rout to runn,
 then here amonge my enemyes wood ¹
 140 soe cruellye to burne.”
 and he resolves to cut his way through his foes.
- he tooke his sword & his buckeler then,
 & amongst them all hee ran :
 where the people thickest were,
 144 he smote downe many a man ;
 He rushes out,
 and kills many,
- there might no man abide his stroakes,
 soe ffeircleye on them hee rann.
 then thé threw windowes & dores att him,
 148 & then thé tooke *that* yeoman.
 but is taken,
- there they bound him hand & ffoote,
 & in a deepe dungeon ² him cast.
 “ now Clowdeslee,” sayd the Iustice,
 152 “ thou shalt be hanged in hast.”
 and cast into a dungeon.
- “ one vow shall I make,” sayd the Shirriffe,
 “ a paire of new gallowes shall I ffor thec make ; ³
 & all the gates of Carlile shalbe shutt ;
 156 there shall noe man come in theratt.
 The Sheriff promises him a pair of new gallowes.

¹ i. e. furious.—P.² One stroke too few for *un* in the MS.
—P.³ A payr of new gallowes, sayd the
sherife,
Now shall I for the make.—*Rel.*

“there shall not helpe yett Clym of the Cloughh,
nor yett Adam Bell,
tho they came with a 100^d men,
160 nor all the devills in hell.”

Next
morning
Carlisle
gates are
shut,

Erlye in the morninge ¹ the Iustice arose ;
to the gates ffast can hee gone,
& commanded to shutt close
164 lightlye euery-eche one.

and the new
gallows set
up.

then went hee to the markett place
as ffast as hee cold hye ;
there he new a paire of gallowes he sett vpp ²
168 hard by the pillorye.

A little boy
(who is
Clowdeslee's
swineherd)
sees them,

a litle boy stood them amonge,
& asked what meant *that* gallow tree.
thé said, “to hang a good yeoman
172 called william of Clowdeslee.”

the litle boy was towne swinarde,
& kept ffaire Alice swine ;
full oft hee had seene william in the wood,
176 & giuen him there to dine.

runs to the
wood,

he went out att a crevis of the wall ;
lightlye to the wood hee runn ;
there mett hee with these wightye yeomen
180 shortlye & anon :

and tells
Clowdeslee's
mates of his
danger.

“alas !” then said the litle boy,
“you tarry here all too longe ;
Clowdeslee is tane, & damned to death,
184 and readye to be hanged.³”

¹ Only half the second *n* in the MS.
—F.

² a new paire of gallowes he set up.

—P. A payre of new gallows there he
set up.—*Rel.*

³ hung.—P.

“ Alas,” then sayd good Adam Bell,
 “ *that euer* wee saw this day !
 he had better haue tarryed *with vs*,
 188 soe oft as wee did him pray.

Adam Bell
 laments
 Clowdeslee's
 fate,

“ hee might haue dwelt in greene fforrest
 vnder the shaddowes¹ greene,
 & kept both him & vs att rest,
 192 out of all trouble and teene.² ”

Adam bent a right good bowe ;
 a great hart soone hee had slaine :
 “ take *that*, child,” hee said, “ to thy dinner,
 196 & bring me mine arrowe againe.”

shoots a hart
 for the boy,

“ now goe wee hence,” said these iollye³ yeomen,
 “ tarry wee no longer here ;
 wee shall him borrow, by gods grace,
 200 tho wee buy itt ffull deere.”

to Carlile went these bold⁴ yeomen,
 all in a mor[n]inge of may.
 here is a ffitt of Clowdeslee ;
 204 another is ffor to say.

and then
 goes with
 Clim to
 Carlisle.

¹ shadowes.—*Rel.* shadowes sheene.—
Printed Copy, in *Rel.*

² i. e. vexation. Jun.—P.

³ wightye.—*Rel.*

⁴ good.—*Rel.*

[The Second Part.]

[How Clowdeslee is rescued by Adam Bell and Clim of the Cloughe.]

They find
Carlisle
gates shut.208
2^d parte.

And when they came [to ¹] merry Carlile
all in a morning tyde, *
they found the gates shutt them vnto
round about on euerye syde.

212

“Alas,” then said good Adam Bell,
“*that* euer wee were made men!
these gates be shutt soe wonderous ffast
that we may not come therin.”

Clim
proposes
“Let’s say
we are the
King’s
messengers.”

216

then spake Clim of the Cloughe :
“with a wile wee will vs in bringe :
Lett vs say wee be messengers
straight come ffrom our Kinge.”

[page 393]

Adam said, “I haue a Letter well [written ² ;]
now lett vs wiselye marke ³ ;
wee will say wee haue the *Kings* seale ;
220 I hold the porter no clarke.”

Adam beats
at the
gates,

224

then Adam Bell beate att the gates
with strokes hard and stronge.
the Porter marueiled who was theratt,
& to the gates hee thronge.

and Clim
says they’re
the King’s
messengers.

228

“who be there,” said the Porter,
“*that* makes all this knocking ⁴ ? ”
“we be 2 messengers,” Quoth Clim of the Cloughe,
“be come right ffrom our Kinge.”

¹ to.—P.
² written.—Rel.

³ werke.—Rel.
⁴ dinne.—Rel.

“wee haue a letter,” said Adam Bell,
 “to the Iustice wee must itt bringe;
 let vs in our message to doe,
 232 *that* wee were againe to the Kinge.”

“here cometh none in,” said the porter,
 “by him *that* dyed on a tree,
 till *that* ffalse theefe be hanged,
 236 called william of Cloudeslee.”

The Porter
 at first
 refuses to
 let them in,

then spake good ¹ Clim of the Clough,
 & swore by Marye ffree,
 “if *that* wee stand long without,
 240 like a theefe hanged thou shalt bee.

“Loe! here wee haue the Kings seale!
 what, Lurden,² art thou woode?”
 the Porter [weend³] itt had beene soe,
 244 & lightlye did off his hoode.

but they
 show him
 the King's
 seal,

“welcome is my Lords seale!” he said;
 “for *that* you shall come in.”
 he opened the gates shortlye:
 248 an euill opening ffor him!

and then he
 lets them
 in.

“Now are wee in,” said Adam Bell,
 “wheroff wee are right ffaine;
 but christ hee knowes assuredlye⁴
 252 how wee shall gett out againe.”

“had wee the Keyes,” sayd Clim of the Cloughe,
 “right well then shold wee speede;
 then might wee come out well enouge
 256 when wee see time & neede.”

To make
 sure of
 getting out,

¹ the good yeman.—*Rel.*

² a heavy stupid fellow. L.—P.

³ thought.—P. went.—*Rel. i.e. weenea,*
 note *ib.*

⁴ knowes, that harrowed hell.—*Rel.*

- they wring
 the Porter's
 neck, and
 take his
 keys away.
- 260 thé called the Porter to counsell,
 & wrang his necke in towe;
 & cast him in a deepe du[n]geon,
 & tooke his keyes him ffree.
- 264 “now am I Porter,” sayd Adam Bell;
 “see, brother, the Keyes haue wee here;
 the worst Porter in merry Carlile
 that came ¹ this 100^d yeere.
- Then they
- 268 “now wee will our bowes bend,
 into the towne will wee goe,
 ffor to deliuer our deere Brother
 that lyeth in care & woe.”
- bend their
 bows,
- and go to
 the market-
 place,
- 272 then they ben[t] their good ewe bowes,
 & looked their strings were round ²:
 the Markett place in merry Carlile
 they besett in *that* stonde.³
- 276 & as they looked them beside,
 a paire of new gallowes there they see,
 & the Iustice with a quest ⁴ of Squiers
 that iudged william hanged to bee.
- where
 Clowdeslee
 is bound,
 and has a
 rope round
 his neck.
- 280 & Clowdeslee lay ready there in ⁵ a Cart,
 ffast bound both ffoote and hand;
 & a strong rope about his necke,
 all readye ffor to hange.

¹ The have had.—*Rel.*

² qu. sound.—P. So Ascham says, “The stringe must be rounde.” *Toxoph.* p. 149, Ed. 1761. A precept not very intelligible now. P.’s note in *Reliques*, i. 142. A string not round would of course spoil the shooting.—F.

³ stound, signum, Momentum, hora, spatium, tempus. Lye.—P.

⁴ *quest*, search; searchers collectively —also an impanel’d Jury. See Johnson.—P.

⁵ MS. therein.—F.

- the Iustice called to him a Ladd :
 Clowdeslee clothes hee shold haue,
 to take the measure of *that* yeoman,
 284 therafter to make his graue.
- “ I haue seene as great Marveill,” said Clowdeslee,
 “ as betweene ¹ this and prime ² ;
 he *that* maketh a graue ffor mee,
 288 himselfe may lye therin.”
- “ thou speakest proudlye,” said the Iustice ;
 “ I will thee hang with my hand.”
 ffull well hard this his brethren towe
 292 there still as they did stand.
- then Clowdeslee cast his eye aside,
 & saw his tow brethren
 att a corner of the Markett place
 296 ready the Iustice to slaine.
- “ I see comfort,” said Clowdeslee,
 “ yett hope I well to ffare ;
 If I might haue my hands att will,
 300 right litle wold I care.”
- then spake good Adam Bell
 to Clim of the Cloughe soe ffree,
 “ brother, see you marke the Iustice well ;
 304 loe, yonder you may him see !”
- “ att the shirriffe shoote I will
 stronglye with an arrow keene ;
 a better shoote in merry Carlile
 308 this 7 yeere was not seene.”

The Justice
sends a lad

to measure
him for his
grave,

and
threatens to
hang
Clowdeslee
himself.

[page 394]

Clowdeslee
says he'd
care little
if he could
get his
hands free.

Adam tells
Clim to

shoot the
Justice,

whille he
shoots the
Sheriff.

¹ Only half the *w* in the MS.—F.

² prime, the first Part of the day.
Dawn, morning. Johnson.—P.

They both
shoot;

they loosed their arrowes both att once;
of no man had they dread;

and Sheriff
and Justice

312 the one hitt the shirr[i]ffe, the other the Iustice,
that both their sides can bleede.

get their
death-
wounds.

all men voyded *that* them stode nye
when the Iustice ffell to the ground,
& the shirriffe nye him by :

316 either had his deathes wound.

They loose
Clowdeslee.

all they citizens ffast gan fflye,
they durst no longer abyde.

320 there lightlye they losed Clowdeslee,
where hee with ropes lay tyde.

He seizes an
axe and
smites men
down.

william start to an officer of the towne,
his axe out of his hand hee wrunge ;
on eche side he smote them downe,

324 hee thought hee tarryed all to longe

william said to his brethren towe,
“ this day lett vs liue and dye ;
If euer you haue need as I haue now,
328 the same shall you ffind by mee.”

Adam and
Clim shoot
on

they shott soe well *that* tyde,
for their stringes were of silke sure,
that thé kept the streetes on euery side ;
332 *that* battell long did endure.

and kill
many,

they fought together like brethren true,
like hardy men and bold ;
many a man to the ground they threw,
336 & made many a hart cold.¹

¹ And many a heart made cold.—P. and *Rel.*

- but when their arrowes were all gone,
men pressed to them ffull ffast ;
they drew their swords then anon,
340 & their bowes ffrom them cast.
- they went lightlye on their way
with swords & buckelers round :
by *that* itt was midd ¹ of the day,
344 thé made many a wound.
- there was many an outhorne ² in Carlile was blowne,
& the bells backward did ringe ;
many a woman said " alas !"
348 & many their hands did ringe.
- the Maior of Carleile fforth come was,
& with him a ffull great route ;
these yeomen dread him ffull sore,
352 for of their liues they stooode in great doubt.
- the Maior came armed a ffull great pace,
with a Pollaxe in his hande ;
many a strong man with him was,
356 there in *that* stowre ³ to stand.
- they maior smote att Cloudeslee with his bill,
his buckeler brast in 2 ;
ffull many a yeaman with great euill,
360 " alas, treason ! " thé cryed ffull woe ⁴ :
" keepe well the gates," ffast they bade,
" *that* these trayters thereout not goe."
- till their
arrows fail.
- Then they
draw their
swords,
- and by noon
kill many
men.
- The horns
are blown,
and bells
rung back-
wards.
- The Mayor
comes down
with a
force
- of strong
men,
- cuts
Clowdeslee's
buckler in
two,
- and orders
the gates
to be kept
fast.

¹ middle, middst.—P.² Out-horne. An outlaw (!). Halliwell's Gloss.—F. Read a *nouthorne*, a neat's horn. *Nowt* cattle. Wright's

Gloss.—Skeat.

³ fight, conflict. Lye.—P.⁴ Alas! they cryed for wo.—*Rel.*

- but all ffor naught was *that* they wrought,
 364 ffor soe fast they were downe Layd,
 till they all 3 *that* soe manffully ffought
 were gotten out att a brayde.¹
- Adam
 throws back
 the keys,
 and tells
 the people
 to appoint a
 new Porter.
 368 “haue here *your* keyes!” said Adam Bell,
 “mine office here I fforsake;
 If you doe by my Councell,
 a new Porter doe you make.”
- he threw their keyes att their heads,
 372 & bad them euill² to thrine,
 & all *that* letteth any good yeoman
 to come & comfort his wiffe.
- The three
 376 thus be the good yeomen gone to the wood:
 as lightye as leaue on lynde³
 they laugh & be merry in their wood⁴;
 there enemyes were ffarr behind.
- go to the
 trysting
 tree,
 find fresh
 bows and
 arrows,
 380 when they came to merry greenwood,
 vnder the trustye tree,
 there they ffound bowes ffull good,
 And arrowes great plentye. [page 395]
- 384 “soe god me help!” sayd Adam Bell
 & Clim of the Cloughe soe ffree,
 “I wold wee were in Merry Carlile
 before *that* ffaire Meanye.”
- and eat and
 drink well.
 388 thé sate downe & made goode cheere,
 & eate & dranke ffull well.
 a 2^d ffit of the wightye yeomen:
 another I will you tell.

¹ Qu. *all abraide*, i. e. abroad. North Country dialect: abroad, *foris, est* a broad, Scot. braid, *latus*, quod a Sax. *brad*, al. *breider*. Jun.—P. “att a brayde” is suddenly.—F.

² No *i* in the MS.—F.

³ Linden Tree. Lye. A Lime Tree. Gloss. to G. Doug.—P.

⁴ A manifest mistake for “mood,” which the other copies have.—Dyce.

[The Third Part.]

[How the three Outlaws are pardoned by the King, and shoot before him.]

392	{	As they sate in English woode	
		vnder the greenwoode tree,	
		they thought they hard a woman weepe,	They hear a woman
		but her they cold not see.	
3 ^d parte.	{		
		sore then sighed ffaire Alice,	lamenting
396		& said, "alas <i>that</i> euer I saw this day !	
		ffor [nowe ¹] is my dere husband slaine ;	that her husband is slain.
		alas, and wellaway !	

400 " Might I haue spoken with his deare brethren,
or with either of them twaine,
to show them what him befell,
my hart were out of paine."

404 Cloudeslee walked a litle aside ;
hee looked vnder the greenewood lynde ;
hee was ware of his wiffe & Children 3
ffull woe in hart and minde.

Cloudeslee
finds that
she is his
wife, with
his three
children.

408 " welcome wiffe," then said william,
" vnder the trustye tree !
I had wend yesterday, by sweet S^t Iohn,
thou sholdest me neuer had see."

He welcomes
them,

412 " now well is me," she said, "*that* yee be here !
my hart is out of woe."
" dame," he said, " be merry & gladd,
& thanke my bretheren towe."

and tells his
wife to
thank his
mates.¹ nowe.—*Rel.*

- “ Don’t talk
of that,”
says Adam: 416 “ herof to speake,” said Adam Bell,
“ I-wis itt is noe boote ;
the meate *that* wee must supp with-all,
itt runeth yett ffast on ffoote.”
- Each of the
three shoots
a fat hart, 420 then went they downe into the Lawnde,¹
these Noblemen all 3 ;
eche of them slew a hart of greece,²
they best *that* they cold see.
- and
Clowdeslee
gives the
best to his
wife. 424 “ haue here the best, Allice my wiffe,”
saith william of Clowdeslee,
“ because yee soe boldlye stood by mee
when I was slaine ffull nye.”
- They sup 428 then they went to supper
with such meate as they hadd,
& thanked god ffor their ffortune :
they were both merry and glad.
- and are
merry.
- 432 & when they had supped well,
certaine, without any lease,
Clowdeslee said, “ wee will to our King,
to gett vs a Charter of peace ;
- Clowdeslee
says “ We’ll
go to the
King for
pardon.” 436 “ Allice shalbe att our soiourninge
att a nunnerye heere besyde ;
my 2 sonnes shall with her goe,
& there they shall abyde.
- 440 “ My Eldest sonne shall goe with mee,
for him I haue noe care,
& hee shall bring you word againe
how *that* wee doe ffare.”

¹ Qu. Lawne.—P. a launde.—*Rel.*
A clear space in a forest.—F.

² Fr. *graisse*, fat.—F.

- thus be these good yeomen to London gone
 444 as ffast as they might hye,
 till they came to the *Kings* palace
 where they wold needs bee. They then
go to
London,
- but when they came to the *Kings* court
 448 & to the pallace gate,
 of no man wold they aske leaue,
 but boldlye went in theratt. walk
straight

into the
- they *proceeded* presentlye into the hall,
 452 of no man they had dread;
 the Porter came after, & did them call,
 & with them gan to chyde. King's hall,
- the vsher said, "yeomen, what wold you haue?
 456 I pray you tell to mee;
 you might make officers shent¹:
 good sirrs, ffrom whence bee yee?"
- "Sir, wee be outlawes of the fforrest,
 460 certes without any Lease;
 & hither wee be come to the *King*,
 to gett vs a Charter of peace." tell the
Usher who
they are,
- & when they came before the *Kinge*,
 464 as itt was the law of the land
 they kneeled downe without lettinge,
 & eche held vpp his hande. kneel to the
King,
- they sayd: "Lord, wee beseeche yee sure
 468 *that* yee will grant vs grace!
 for wee haue slaine your ffatt fallow deere
 in² many a sundrye place." and ask his
pardon for
killing his
deer.

¹ For not keeping them out. See the duties of Prince Edward's Porters, A.D. 1474, in *Household Ordinances*, p. *30. and of Henry VIII.'s Porters, *ibid.* p. 239.

Also *Boke of Curtasye*, l. 361-78, Babees Book &c., p. 310.—F.

² *im* in MS.—F.

The King
asks their
names.

472 "whatt be your names?" then sayd the King;
"anon *that* you tell mee."

They tell
him.

They sayd, "Adam Bell, Clim¹ of the Clough, [page 396]
and william of Cloudeslee."

He swears
he'll hang
them all,

476 "be yee those theeues," then said our Ki[ng],
"that men haue told to me?"
here I make a vow to god,
you shall bee hanged all 3.

and orders
their arrest.

480 "yee shalbe dead without mercye,
as I am King of this land!"
he commanded his officer[s] euery one
ffast on them to lay hand.

484 there they tooke these good yeomen
& arrested them all 3.

"soe may I thriue," said Adam Bell,
"this game liketh not mee.

They pray
him to let
them go
with the
weapons
they
brought.

488 "but, good Lord, wee beseeche you now
that yee will grant vs grace,
in soe much as wee doe to you come,
or else *that* wee may ffrom you passe²

492 "with such weapons as wee haue heere
till wee be out of your place;
& iff wee liue this 100^d yeere,
of you wee will aske noe grace."

The King
refuses:
they shall
be hanged.
The Queen
intercedes
for them,

496 "yee speake proudlye," said the King;
"yee shall be hanged all 3."
"that were great pittye," sayd the Queene,
"if any grace might bee.

¹ MS. Clinn.—F.

² Insomuch as frelè to you we comen,
As frelè fro you to passe.—*Rel.*

500 "my *Lord*, when I came first into this Land
to be your weded wiffe,
[you said] the first boone *that* I wold aske,
you wold grant me belyue.

and asks the
King for the
boon he
promised
her.

504 "& I asked yee neuer none till now ;
therefore, good *Lord*, grant itt mee."
"now aske itt, Madam," said the *King*,
"& granted itt shalbe."

He says it
shall be
granted.

508 "then, good my *Lord*, I you beseeche,
these yeomen grant yee mee."
"Maddam,¹ yee might haue asked a boone
that shold haue beene worth them all 3.

"Then give
me these
yeomen."

512 "you might haue asked towers & townes,
Parkes & fforrests plentye."
"none soe pleasant to my pay,²" shee sayd,
"nor none³ soe leefe⁴ to mee."

516 "Madam, sith itt is your desire,
your askinge granted shalbe ;
but I had leever haue giuen you
good Markett townes three."

"I will,

though I'd
rather have
given you
3 market
townes."

520 the Queene was a glad woman,
& said, "Lord, god a mercye !
I dare vndertake ffor them
that true men they shalbee.

The Queen

524 "but, good *Lord*, speake some merrye word,
that some comfort they might see."
"I grant you grace," then said the *King*,
"washe ffellowes, & to meate goe yee."

then gets the
King to
order her
men food.

¹ MS. Maddan.—F.

² vid. Page 363, St. 23 [of MS. ; in the
2nd Part of *John de Reeve*].—P.

³ none in MS.—F.

⁴ leefe, dear, beloved. Johnsⁿ—P.

- they had not sitten but a while,
 Soon come 528 certaine without Leasinge,¹
 messengers there came 2 messengers out of the North
 with letters to our kinge.
- & when they came before the *King*
 532 thé kneeled downe vpon their knee,
 & said, “*your* officers greete you well
 from of Carlile in the North cuntrye.”
 Carlisle.
- The King
 asks after
 his Justice
 and Sheriff.
 “They’ve
 been slain
 536 “how ffareth my Iustice?” sayd the *King*,
 “and my Sherriffe alsoe?”
 “Sir, they be slaine, without leasinge,
 & many an officer moe.”
- “who hath them slaine?” then said the *King*;
 540 “anon *that* you tell mee.”
 by Adam,
 Clim, and
 Clowdeslee.”
 “Adam Bell, Clim of the Cloughe,
 & william of Clowdeslee.”
- “alas! ffor wrath,²” then sayd our *King*,
 544 “my hart is wonderous sore;
 I had rather then a 1000^{ll}
 I had knowen this before,
- “ffor I haue granted them grace,
 548 & *that* fforthinketh³ mee;
 but had I knowen all this before,
 they had beene hangd all 3.”
- The King
 then reads
 of the 300
 men slain
 by the 3
 outlaws,
 552 the *King* hee opened the letter anon,
 himselfe he read itt thoe,
 & there found how these outlawes had slaine
 300 men and moe :

¹ i. e. Lying. Jun.—P.² rewth.—*Rel.*³ repents.—F.

- 556 “ first the Iustice & the Sheriffe,
& the Maior of Carlile towne,—
of all the Constables and catcpoules,
Aliue were left but one. [page 397]
- 560 “ the Baliffes & the Beadeles both,
& the Sargeaunt of the law,
& 40 fforresters of the ffee,
these outlawes haue thé slawe,¹
- 564 “ & broke his parkes, & slaine his deere,
of all they Coice² the best ;
soe perillous outlawes as they were,
walked not by East nor west.”
- 568 when the King this Letter had read,
in hart he sighed sore,
“ take vp the tables,³ ” then sayd hee,
“ ffor I can eate no more.”
- 572 the King then called his best archers
to the butts with him to goe,
“ to see⁴ these ffellowes shoot,” said hee,
“ that in the north haue wrought this woe.”
- 576 the Kings archers busket⁵ them blythe,
soe did the Queenes alsoe,
soe did these 3 weightye yeomen,
they thought with them to goe.
- 580 there 2^o or 3^o they shott about
for to assay their hand ;
there was no shoote these yeomen shott
that any pricke⁶ might stand.

(the Mayor,
Catchpolls,Beadles,
Serjeant
of Law,
and 40
foresters,)and his deer
killed.

He sighs,

and can eat
no more.But he
calls his
archers
to shoot
againstthe 3
outlaws.¹ slain.—P.² Qu. chose.—P.³ They were laid on trestles.—F.⁴ I wyll se.—*Rel.*⁵ busked; Scot. *buskit*, dress'd, decked(à Fr. *buse*, a busk that weomen (*so*) wear). Gloss. ad G. Doug⁶ see P. 364, St. 36, Pag. 246, St. 26.—P.⁶ ? here the wooden pin in the centre of the target.—F.

- Clowdeslee
says the
584 then spake william of Clowdeslee,
“by him *that* ffor me dyed,
I hold him not a good archer
that shooteth att butts soe wyde.”
- butts are too
wide.
588 “wheratt?” said the Kinge,
“I pray you tell to mee.”
“att such a butt, Sir,” hee said,
“as men vse in my countrye.”
- He hazel
592 william went into the ffeild,
& his 2 brethren with him ;
there they sett vp 2 hassell rodds
400 paces betweene.
- 2 hazel
sticks at 400
paces,
596 “I hold him an archer,” said Clowdeslee,
“*that* yonder wand cleeueth in towe.”
“heere is none such,” said the King,
“for no man can soe doe.”
- shoots, and
splits one
in two.
600 “I shall assay,” sayd Clowdeslee,
“or *that* I fforther goe.”
Clowdeslee with a bearing¹ arrow
claue the wand in towe.
- 604 “thou art the best archer,” said our King,
“fforsooth *that* euer I see.”
“& yett ffor your loue,” said william,
“I will doe more masterye :
- Then he
proposes to
tie his son
to a stake,
608 “I haue a sonne is 7 yeere old,
hee is to me ffull deere ;
I will tye him to a stake—
all shall see him *that* bee here,—

¹ ? meaning of *bearing*. Strutt says, “I rather think the poet meant an arrow shot ‘compass,’ for the pricke or wand was a ‘mark of compass,’ that is, the arrow in its flight formed the segment of

a circle.” *Sports*, p. 65, ed. Hone. As all arrows do that, this can be no explanation of either “mark of compass” (on which see my note on “pricks” in *The Babees Book*, &c.) or “bearing.”—F.

- 612 “ & lay an apple vpon his head,
 & goe sixe score paces him ffroe,
 & I my selfe with a broad arrowe
 shall cleaue the apple in towe.”
- 616 “ now hast thee,” said the Kinge ;
 “ by him *that* dyed on a tree,
 but if thou dost not as thou has sayd,
 hanged shalt thou bee !
- 620 “ & thou touch his head or gowne
 in sight *that* men may see,
 by all the *Saints that* bee in heauen,
 I shall you hang all 3: ! ”
- 624 “ *that* I haue promised,” said william,
 “ *that* I will neuer fforsake : ”
 & there euen before the *King*,
 in the earth he droue a stake,
- 628 & bound thereto his eldest sonne,
 & bade him stand still thereatt,
 & turned the childes fface him ffroe
 because hee should not start.
- 632 an apple vpon his head he sett,
 & then his bow he bent ;
 sixe score paces they were meaten,¹
 & thither Clowdeslee went.
- 636 there he drew out a ffaire broad arrow,—
 his bowe² was great and long,—
 he sett *that* arrowe in his bowe
 that was both stiffe & stronge ;

and split an
apple on his
head at 120
paces.

The King
agrees ;

but if
Clowdeslee
fails, he's to
be hanged,

and Adam
and Clim
too.

Clowdeslee
ties his boy
to a stake,

puts an
apple on his
head,

sets an
arrow in
his bow,

¹ meted, i. e. measured.—P.

² There is a tag at the end like *s*.—F.

- he prayed the people *that* were there
 640 That they wold still stand,¹ [page 398]
 “ffor hee *that* shooteth ffor such a wager
 had need of a steedye hand.”
- much people prayed for Cloudeslee,
 644 *that* his liffe saued might bee ;
 & when hee made him readye to shoote,
 there was many a weepinge eye.
- and cleaves
 the apple in
 two.
 The King
 648 thus Cloudeslye claue the aple in 2,
 as many a man might see :
 “now god fforffbid²” then said the *King*,
 “*that* thou sholdest shoote att mee !
- gives him
 8d. a day,
 and makes
 him his
 bowbearer.
 652 “I gaue³ thee 8 pence a day,
 & my bow shalt thow beare,
 & ouer all the north cuntrye
 I make thee Cheeffe ryder.”
- The Queen
 gives him
 13d. a day,
 656 “& Ile giue thee 13^d a day,” said the *Queene*,
 “by god and by my ffay !
 come ffeich thy payment when thou wilt,
 no man shall say thee nay.
- makes him a
 gentleman.
 660 “william, I make thee a gentleman,
 of Cloathing and of ffée ;
 & thy 2 bretheren, yeomen of my chamber,
 for they are louely⁴ to see. •
- puts his son
 in her wine-
 cellar,
 664 “*your* sonne, ffor hee is tendar of age,
 of my winesellar he shalbe ;
 & when hee comes to mans estate,
 better preferred shall hee bee.

¹ The same injunction is often heard
 at firing-points now.—F.

² Over Gods forbode.—*Rel.*

³ give.—P.

⁴ so semely.—*Rel.*

- “ & william, bring me your wiffe,” said the Queene,
668 “ I long her sore to see ; and promises
shee shall bee my cheefe gentlewoman ¹ to set his
to gouerne my nurserye.” * wife
over her
nursery.
- the yeomen thanked them full curteouslye,
672 & sayd, “ to some Bishopp wee will wend ; The three
of all the sinns *that* wee haue done, go to a
to be assoyled ² att his hand.” Bishop
to be
shriven,
- soe forth be gone these good yeomen
676 as ffast as they can hye, and then
& after came & liued with the *King*, live
& dyed good yeomen all 3. and die well.
- Thus endeth the liffe of these good yeomen,
680 god send them eternall blisse ! God send
& all *that* with a hand-bow shooteth, them and all
that of heauen they may neuer misse ! *ffinis.* bowmen
blisse!

¹ MS. gentlewonnan.—F.

² i.e. absolved, Assoile, absolvere, liberare. Lye.—P.

Dounge : Cloudeslee :

As the Cyclic poets adopted the lesser Homeric heroes as the centres of new epics, as the Romancists in process of time celebrated other members of the Round Table besides its great founder, as the ballad-writers sung of Much and Scarlett as well as of Robin Hood, so here one who appears as a minor character in the great poem of "Adam Bell, Clym of the Clough, and William of Cloudeslee," has a poem devoted to his special honour.

The piece was printed in 1605 by James Roberts, along with his reprint of Copland's edition of the greater poem of which this is a parasite. With this the Folio copy has been collated.

Listen, my Northern lads, to the brave deeds	4	L ISTE : northeren Ladds, to blyther things ¹ then yett were brought to light, performed by our Countrymen in many ² a ffray and flight, of Adam Bell, Clim of the Clough, and william of Clowdeslee, ³ who were in ffavor with the Kinge 8 ffor all their miserye.
of young William Clowdeslee, who loved a bonny lass.	12 16	younge william of the wine-sellar, ⁴ when yeoman hee was made, gan ffollowe then his ffathers stepps, hee loued a bonny mayde. " gods crosse ! " quoth william, " if I misse, & may not of her speede, Ile make 1000 northerne ⁵ hartes ⁶ ffor verry woe to bleede.

¹ List Northerne Laddes to blither things.—R.

² mickle.—R.

³ Cloudisly.—R.

⁴ See the last poem, l. 664, p. 100.—F.

⁵ Only half of the second *n* in the MS.—F.

⁶ a thousand Northen hearts.—R.

- gone is hee ¹ a wooinge now,
 our Ladye will ² him guide ;
 to merry mansfeild, will, ³ I trow,
 20 a time hee will abyde.
- “ Soone dop ⁴ the dore, faire Sislye bright, ⁵
 I come with all the hast ;
 I am come a wooinge to ⁶ thee for loue,
 24 heere am I come att Last.”
- “ I know you not,” quoth Sisely ⁷ tho,
 “ from whence *that* yee be come ⁸ ;
 my loue you may not haue, I trow,
 28 I vow by this faire ⁹ sonne. ¹⁰
- “ ffor why, my loue is fixt so sure
 vpon another wight ;
 I sweare by sweet Ann, Ile neuer
 32 abuse him out of sight !
- “ this night I hope to see my loue
 in all his pryde and glee ;
 If there were thousands, none but him
 36 my hart wold ioye to see.” [page 399]
- “ gods curse vppon [him,] ¹¹ ” younge william sayd,
 “ before me *that* hath sped !
 a ffoule ill on the carryon nurse
 40 *that* first did binde his head !”
- gan william tho for to prepare
 a medicine ffor the chaffe ¹² ;
 “ his liffe,” quoth hee, “ full hard may ffare ;
 44 hees best to keepe alaffe.”

He goes
courting

to Mansfield,

and tells fair
Sisely to
open the
door.

Sisely says

she can't
love him,

as her love
is fixed on
another,

whom she
hopes to see
to-night.

Young
Clowdeslee
curses him,

and resolves
to kill her
lover.

¹ he is.—R.

² well.—R.

³ where.—R.

⁴ dope, i. e. do open.—P.

⁵ Some dop the dore faire Cicelie
bright.—R.

⁶ to omitted.—R. ⁷ Cicelie.—R.

⁸ MS. become.—F. ⁹ bée come.—R.

⁹ *ffaure* with a dot over the *u* in the
MS.—F.

¹⁰ sun.—P.

¹¹ him.—R.

¹² ? for *chuffe*, a term of reproach.
Halliwell. See Lorden, l. 71.—F. medi-
cine for that chaffe.—R.

- He draws
his sword,
- he drew then out his bright browne sword,
which was soe bright and keene ;
a stouter man & hardyer
48 neere handled sword, I weene.
- and by way
of trying it,
- “ browne tempered Sword & worthye¹ blade,
vnto thy *master* showe,
if thou² to tryall thou be put,
52 how thou canst³ byde a blowe.”
- cuts in two
an oak
- 56 inches
round,
- younge William to an oke gan hye
which was in compasse round
well 56⁴ inches nye,
& ffield itt to the ground.
- wishing it
was his rival.
- “ soe mote he ffare,” quoth william tho,
“ that ffor her loue hath Layde
which I haue loued, & neere did know
60 him sutor till *that* mayde.
- He longs
for his
father,
- “ & now, deere ffather stout & stronge,
william of Cloudeslee,
how happy were thy troubled sonne
64 if here I might⁵ thee see,
- Adam,
and Clim,
- as they'd
fight 1000
men.
- “ & thy 2⁶ brethren Adam Bell
& Clim of the Cloughe ;
against a 1000 men & more
68 wee 4 wold bee enoughe.
- He calls on
Sisely's lover
to come on,
- “ growne itt is ffull 4 a clocke,
& night will come beliue ;
Come on, thou Lorden, sisleys⁷ loue !
72 this night I must⁸ thee shriue.

¹ strong, and worthy.—R.² that.—P. now.—R.³ canst thou.—R.⁴ Read “ six and fifty.”—F. six and

fifty.—R.

⁵ mot.—R.⁷ Lurden Cisleis.—R.⁸ must I.—R.⁶ too.—R.

“prepare thee strong, thou fflowle black calfe ¹ !
 what ere thou be, I weene
 Ile giue thy coxcombe sayke ² a girde ³
 76 in mansfeild as was neuer ⁴ seene.”

william a young ffawne had slaine
 in ⁵ sherwood merry fforrest ;
 a ffairer ffawne ffor mans meate ⁶
 80 in sherwood was neuer drest.

and takes
a fawn

hee hyed then till a northeren Lasse ⁷
 not halfe a mile him ffroe, ⁸
 he said, “dop the dore, ⁹ thou good ould nurse,
 84 *that* in to thee I goe ;

to an old
woman

“I ffaint with being in the woods ¹⁰ ;
 loe, heere I haue a kidd
 which I haue slaine ffor thee & mee ¹¹ ;
 88 come, dresse itt then, I bidd ;

to cook for
him.

“ffeitch bread and other lolly ffare,
 whereof thou hast some store ;
 a blyther guest this 100 yeere
 92 came neuer heere before.”

the good old naunt ¹² gan hye apace
 to lett young William in ;
 “a happy nurse,” quoth william then,
 96 “as can be lightlye seene.

The old
dame
lets him in,

¹ fow black Caufe.—R.

² In what district is *sayke* used for *suck*? In Somersetshire, *jitch* is the word. Halliwell, p. xxvii., xxviii. In Lancashire, *sick* (H. xxiii.), but at Bury *sitch* (*ib.*); and in Gloucestershire *zitch* (H. xviii.)

³ a gird.—R.

⁴ Mansfield as neuer was.—R.

⁵ MS. im.—F. ⁶ ymeat.—R.

⁷ Northerne lasse.—R.

⁸ he fro.—R.

⁹ dop dore.—R. ¹⁰ wood.—R.

¹¹ slo for thee and I.—R.

¹² Nant.—R.

and he
promises
her a reward

“wend till *that* house hard by,” quoth hee,
“*thats* made of lime and stone,
where is a Lasse, ffaire Cis,” hey¹ said,²
100 “I loue her as my owne.

if she'll fetch
Sisely to
him.

“If thou canst ffeitch her vnto me
that wee may merry bee,
I make a vowe, in the fforrest
104 of deere thou shalt haue ffee.”

She under-
takes
to bring
Sisely,

“rest then, ffaire Sir,” the woman said,
“I sweare by good S^t: Iohn
I will bring to you *that* same maid
108 ffull quicklye and anon.”

“meane [time],³” quoth William, “Ile be Cooke,
to see the ffawne well drest⁴:”
a stouter Cooke did neuer come
112 within the ffaire fforrest.

and hies off
to her,

thicke⁵ blyth old lasse had witt enoughe⁶
ffor to declare his mind;
soe ffast shee hyed, & neere did stay,
116 but left william behinde,

while
William
cooks the
fawn.

where william like a nimble cooke
is dressing of the ffare,
& ffor this damsell doth hee looke,
120 “I wold *that* shee weer heere!”

[page 490]

¹ [insert] he.—P. The MS. is *Cisher*, for *Cis he*, or, more probably, *Cisley*.—F.

² Cisse hee said.—R.

³ meane time.—P. meane time.—R.

⁴ I drest.—R.

⁵ ? the district of *thicke* for *that*. In Dorsetshire *thik* is used. See Halli-

well's Gloss. p. xvi., and Barnes's Glossary. *Thickee*, this, Devon. and *thicca* cloud, p. xv. Halliwell. *Thick*, the one that, that which, Somersetshire. Thee's know *thick* us da meanne, tha da call 'm wold Boss (*ib.* p. xxvii. col. 1).—F.

⁶ enow.—R.

- "god speed, blyth Cisley ¹!" quoth *that* old Lasse. The old
dame
 "god dild ² yee," quoth Cisley, "again; ;
 how doe yee, naunt Ione ³?" shee said,
 124 "tell me itt, I am ffaine."tells Sisely

 the good old woman ⁴ said "weele shee was,
 & comen an arrand to ⁵ you ;
 for you must to my cottage gone
 128 full quickley,⁶ I tell you true,

 "where wee full merry meane to bee
 all with my elder Ladd."make merry
in her
cottage.
 when Cisley hard of itt, trulye
 132 shee was exceeding gladd.Sisely gladly
agrees to go,

 "gods currese light on me," quoth Cisley tho,
 "if with you *that* ⁷ I doe not hye!
 I neuer ioyed more, fforsoothe,
 136 then in *your* Companye."

 happy the good wiffe thought her selfe
that of her purpose shee had sped,⁸
 & home with Sisley shee is came,⁹
 140 soe lightlye they did tread ¹⁰ ;and into the
cottage they
walk.

 & coming in, here william soone
 had made readye his ffare ;
 the good old wiffe did wonder much
 144 soe soone as shee came there.William has
his venison
ready,

 Cisley to william now is gone,¹¹
 god send her Mickle glee,
 yett was shee in a maze, god wott,
 148 when shee saw itt was hee.and Sisely
with him.

¹ Cisse.—R.² yield it.—F. requite, speed: "Well, God dild you!" says Ophelia. *Hamlet*, act iv. sc. 5.—Dyce.³ done you Nant Ione.—R.⁴ Ione.—R.⁵ till.—R.⁷ *that* omitted.—R.⁸ that her purpose he had of sped.—R.⁹ she doth come.—R.¹⁰ did they read.—R.¹¹ come.—R.⁶ quick.—R.

- But she says
she'd never
have come if
she'd known
he was there.
- 152 “had I beene ware, good Sir,” shee said,
 “of *that* itt had beene you,
I wold haue stayd att home in sooth,
I tell you verry true.”
- William
- 156 “faire Cisley,” said then ¹ *william* Kind,
 “misdeme thee not of mee ;
I sent not ffor thee to *that* ² end
to doe the iniurye.
- prays her to
stop and eat
his kid ;
- 160 “sitt downe *that* wee may talke awhile,
 & eate all of the best,
the ffattest kidd *that* euer was slaine
in merry Sherwood fforrest.³”
- and his
loving words
win her
heart.
Meantime
Sisely's
lover,
- 164 his louinge ⁴ words wan Cisley then
 with him to keepe ⁵ a while ;
but in the meane time Cisleys loue
of her was tho beguile.
- a noble-
minded
man,
- 168 a stout & sturdy man hee was
 of qualite & kind,
& knowen ⁶ through all the north cuntrye
to beare a noble minde.
- 172 “but,” quoth ⁷ *william*, “doe I care ?
 if *that* hee meane to weare,
first lett ⁸ him winne,⁹ else neuer shall
he haue the mayd, I sweare.”
- comes to her
cottage ;
- but she is
fled.
- 176 ffull softlye is her loue[r] ¹⁰ come,
 and knocked att the dore :
but tho ¹¹ he mist Cisleys companye,¹²
wher-att hee stamp and ¹³ swore.

¹ then said.—R.² to the.—R.³ Sir-wood Forrest.—R.⁴ Only half the *n* in the MS.—F.⁵ to keepe with him.—R.⁶ knowne.—R.⁷ But what quoth.—R.⁸ There appears to be some letter between the *e* and *t* in the MS.—F. let.—R.⁹ wime in the MS.—F.¹⁰ louer.—R.¹¹ i. e. then.—P.¹² roome.—R.¹³ Only half the *n* in the MS.—F.

- "a mischeeffe on his heart," *quoth* hee,
 "that hath allured this ¹ mayd
 to bee with him in company!"
 180 he cared not what hee sayd,

 hee was soe ² with anger moued,
 he sware a well great othe,
 "deere shold hee pay if I him knew,
 184 fforsooth & by my trothe!"

 gone hee is to ffind her out,
 not knowing where shee is;
 still wandering in the weary wood
 188 his true loue he doth misse.

 william purchased ³ hath the game
 which hee doth meane to hold,
 "come, resew her and if you can,
 192 and dare to be soe bold!"

 Att lenght when hee had wandred long [Page 401] At last
 about the fforrest side,⁴ the lover
 a Candle light a ffurlong of ⁵
 196 ffull quickley hee espyed.

 then to the house hee hyed him ffast,
 where quicklye hee gan heare
 the voice of his owne true loue ⁶
 200 a makinge bonny cheere.

 then gan he say to Cisley tho,
 "O Cisley, come away!
 I haue beene wandring thee to ffind
 204 since shutting in of day."

He curses
her beguiler,

and swears
he shall pay
for her if
he finds him.

But William
means to
keep her.

At last
the lover

hears
Sisely's
voice.

He calls her
to come to
him.

¹ the.—R.

² yso.—R.

³ purchast.—R.

⁴ wide.—R.

⁵ off.—R.

⁶ owne deere true loue.—R.

William
asks who
dares do this.

“ who calls faire Cisley ¹ ? ” quoth william tho,²
“ what carle dares be soe bold,³
once to aduventure to her to speake
208 who [I] haue in my hold ³ ? ”

The lover
threatens
him.

“ List thee, faire Sir,” quoth Cisleys loue,
“ lett quickelye her ffrom you part :
ffor all your Lordlye words, Ile sweare ⁴
212 Ile haue her, or Ile make you ⁵ smart ! ”

William says
he'll

young William to his bright browne sword
gan quickelye then to take :
“ because thou soe doest challenge me,
216 Ile make thy kingdome quake.

fight for his
love.

“ betake thee to thy weapon stronge,
faire time I giue to thee ;
& ffor my loue as well as thine
220 a combatt ffight will I.”

“ neuer lett sunn,” quoth Cisleys loue,
“ shine more vpon my head,
If I doe fflye, by heauen aboue,
224 wert thou a gyant bredd ! ”

He takes his
sword,

to Bilbo blade got william tho
that was both stiffe and stronge⁶ :

and the fight
begins.
It lasts two
hours,

a stout battell then they ffought,
228 weer neere 2 ⁷ houres longe ;

where many a greiuous wound was giuen ⁸
to eche on either part,
till both the champyons then were droue
almost quite out of hart.

¹ Cisse.—R.

² then.—R.

³ whom I haue now in hold.—R.

⁴ I sweare.—R.

⁵ or make you.—R.

⁶ and buckler stiffe.—R.

⁷ well nie two.—R.

⁸ giue.—R.

- pittyous moane faire Cisley made,
that all the fforrest ronge ;
 the greiuous shrikes made such a noyse,
 236 shee had soe shrill a tounge.
- att last came in the keepers 3
 with bowes and arrowes keene,
 where they lett flye among these 2,
 240 a 100^d 1 as I weene.
- william strong & stout 2 in hart,
 when he had them espyed,
 sett on courage ffor his part,
 244 among the thickest hee hyed.
- the cheefe ranger of the woods
 att ffirst did william smite,
 where att one blow he smote his head
 248 ffrom of his shoulders quite.
- & being in soe ffuryous teene,
 about him then hee Laid,
 he slew immedyatlye the wight
 252 was sutor to the mayde.
- great moane was then 3 made ;
 the like was neuer hard,
 which made the people all around
 256 to crye, they were soe ffeard.
- “ arme, arme ! ” the cuntrye cryed,
 “ for gods loue quicklye hye ! ”
 neuer was sutch a slaughter seene
 260 in all the north countrye.

Sisely
moaningand
shrieking
all the
while.Then three
keepers
come to stop
them,

but William

cuts off the
chief-
ranger's
head,and then
kills Sisely's
lover.The people
make great
moan,and raise the
country.

1 an hundred.—R.

2 stout and strong.—R.

3 ythen.—R.

William kills
the other two
keepers,

william still, tho¹ wounded sore,
continued still his² fight
till he had slaine them all⁴
264 *that* verry winters³ night.

all the contrye then was raysed,
the traitor ffor to take
that ffor the loue of Cisley ffaire
268 had all the slaughter make.

and then
hies
to a cave
with Sisely.

to the woods hyed william tho,—
itt was the best⁴ of all his play,—
where in a caue with Cisley ffaire
272 hee liued many a day.

Procla-
mation is
made to take
William.

proclamation then was sent [page 402]
the cuntrye all arounde,
'the Lord of Mansfeild shold hee bee
276 *that* first the traytor ffounde.'

to⁵ the court these tydings came,
where all men doth⁶ bewayle
the young & lustye William
280 *which* soe had made them quaile.

His father,
Adam, and
Clim,

hyed vp william of Cloudeslee⁷
& lustye Adam Bell,
& ffamous Clim of the Cloughe,
284 *which* 3 did them⁸ excell :

go to the
King,

and ask
mercy for
William's
son.

to the King they hyed them ffast,
ffull quicklye & anon,
"mercy, I pray," quoth old william,
288 "ffor william my sonne!"

¹ Will still though.—R.

² in his.—R.

⁴ twas best.—R.

³ winter.—R.

⁵ Till.—R.

⁶ did.—R.

⁷ Hied vp then William, Cloudesley.

—R.

⁸ then did.—R.

- “no mercye, traitors!” quoth the *King*,
 “you shall be hanged all 4! ¹
 vnder my nose this plott yee haue ² laid,
 292 to bring to passe before.”
- “Insooth,” bespake then Adam Bell,
 “ill signe your grace hath seene
 of any such commotyon
 296 since with you wee haue beene.
- “If then wee can no mercye haue,
 but leese both liffe and goods,
 of your good grace wee take our leaue,
 300 & hye vs to the woods.”
- “arme, arme,” then quoth the *King*,
 “my merry men euer-eche one, ³
 ffull ffast againe these rebells nowe ⁴
 304 [that] ⁵ vnto the woods are gone!”
- “O, woe is vs! what shall wee doe,
 or which way shall wee worke,
 to hunt them fforth out of the woods,
 308 soe traiterously there *that* lurke?”
- “list you,” quoth a counsellor graue,
 a wise man he seemed,
 “thé craued the *King* his pardon ffree
 312 vnto them to haue deemed.”
- “gods fforbott ⁶!” quoth the *King*,
 “I neuer itt will doe!
 for they shall hang, eche mothers sonne,
 316 I tell you verry true! ⁷”

The King
says he'll
hang all four
of them.

Adam then
says

they'll take
to the woods.

The King
orders his
men to arm
and pursue
the rebells.

The men
don't like the
job.

A counsellor
advises that
the rebells be
pardoned.

The King
swears
he'll hang
them,

¹ hang'd shall yee be all foure.—R.

² haue you.—R.

³ euery chone.—R.

⁴ now.—R.

⁵ *that* omitted.—R.

⁶ forebode, *Præceptum*. Chauc. *Goddes*

forebode to breke, *dei præceptum violare*.
Lye.—P. See vol. i. p. 18, note ¹. “prick
him godsforbod.” Heywood's *Epi-*
grammes, 236.—F. forbod.—R.

⁷ faire sir I tell you true.—R.

and sends
50,000 men
after them,

50000 men were charged
after them ffor to take ;
some of them sett in sundrye townes,
320 in companyes ¹ did waite ;

some of
whom go to
the woods.

to the woods gan some to goe,
in hope to ffind them out ;
& them perforce they thaught to take,
324 if *that* they might ffind them out.

to they woods still they ² came,
dispatched still they were,
which made ffull many a trembling hart ³
328 & many a man in ffeare.

But Adam
and Clim go
on killing
the King's
deer.

still the outlawes Adam Bell
& Clim of the Cloughe
made Iolly cheere with venison,
332 stronge drinke & wine enoughe.

Then the
King
says,
" they are
fine fellows.

" Crist mee blesse ! " then said our *King*,
" such men were neuer knowne ;
they are they ⁴ stoutest harted men
336 *that* manhood euer shone ⁵ !

Make out
their
pardon,

" come, my secretary good,
& cause ⁶ to be declared
a generall pardon to them all,
340 *which* neuer shalbe discared.

and give
them good
store
if they'll
come and
live with
me."

" liuings plenty they shall haue ⁷
of gold & eke of ffee,
If they did ⁸ as they did before,
344 come liue in court with mee."

¹ compamyes in the MS.—F.

² still as they.—R.

³ heart.—R.

⁴ the.—R.

⁵ showne.—R.

⁶ MS. caused.—F. cause.—P.

⁷ Liuing plenty shall they haue.—R.

⁸ they will do.—P. they will.—R.

- soddenlye went fforth the newes
 declared by trumpetts sound,
 wherof these 3 were well advised
 348 in caue as they were in ground. The three
hear of this,
- “but list you, Sirs,” quoth william younge,
 “I dare not trust the King; [page 403] but young
William
doubts the
King,
 itt is some feitch is in his head,
 352 wherby to bring vs in.
- “nay, stay wee heere, or ffirst lett mee
 a messenger bee sent
 vnto the Court, where I may know
 356 his maiestyes entent.” and asks
that he may
go to
court and
see him.
- this pleased Adam Bell, Adam
agrees,
 “soe wee may liue in peace,
 wee are att his most hye commande,
 360 & neuer will we cease ;
- “but if *that* still wee shall be vrged,
 & called by traitors ¹ name,
 & threated hanging for euery thing,
 364 his hignesse is too blame.
- “neare ² had his grace subjects more true ³
 & sturdyer then wee,
 which are att his hignesse will,
 368 god send him well to bee !” saying that
the King
never had
better
subjects
than
themselves.
- soe to the court is young william gone
 to parley with the Kinge,
 where ⁴ all men to the Kings presence
 372 did striue for to him bringe.⁵ Young
William
goes to the
King,

¹ traitrous.—R.² ne'er.—P.³ more subjects true.—R.⁴ Which.—R.⁵ him for to bring.—R.

- when hee before the *King* was come,
 he kneeled downe ffull lowe ;
 he showed quicklye to the *Kinge*
 376 what duty they did owe.
- and soon
 wins him
 over.
- in such delightfull order blythe,
 the *King* was quicklye woon ¹
 to comfort them in their request,
 380 as hee before had done.
- The *King*
 asks him
 to stay the
 night at
 court,
- “ ffeitch bread & drinke,” then said his grace,
 “ & meate all of the best ;
 & stay all night heere att the court,
 384 & soundlye take thy rest.”
- and gives
 him his seal
 in token of
 pardon.
- “ gramercy ² to your grace,” said will :
 “ for pardon granted, I see.”
 “ for signe thereof, heere take my seale,
 388 & for more certaintye.”
- “ gods cursse vpon me,” said william,
 “ for my *part* if I meane
 Euer againe to stirr vp striffe !
 392 itt neuer shalbe seene.”
- The *Lords*
 and *Ladies*
 welcome
 him,
- the *Nobles* all to *William* came,
 he were soe stout & trim,
 & all the *Ladyes* for verry ioy
 396 did come to welcome him.
- and tell him
 to bring
 Sisely to
 court.
- “ ffaire *Cisley* now I haue to wiffe,
 in ffeild I haue her woone. ³ ”
 “ bring her, for gods loue,” said thé ⁴ all,
 400 “ welcome shee shall bee soone. ⁵ ”

wonne.—R.

² Gramercies.—R.³ wonne.—R.⁴ they.—R.⁵ full welcome shall she be.—R.

- forth againe went *william* backe,
 to woode *that* hee did hye,
 & to his ffather there hee shewed
 404 the King his *pardon* ffree.
- "health to his grace," said Adam Bell,
 "I begg itt on my knee."
 the like said Clim of the Cloughe
 408 & *william* of Cloudeslee.
- to the court they all prepare
 as ffast as ¹ they can hye,
 where gracyouslye they were receiued
 412 with mirth and merry glee.
- Cisley ffaire is gone ² alone
 vpon a gelding ffayre ;
 a *properer* ³ damsell neuer came
 416 in any courtlye ayre.
- "welcome, Cisley !" sayd the Queene,
 "& Lady I thee make,
 to waite vpon my owne *person*
 420 in all my cheefe estate.⁴"
- soe quicklye was the ⁵ matter done
 which was soe hardlye doubted,
 that all contentions after that
 424 from court were quicklye rooted.⁶
- fauorable was the kinge,
 for good ⁷ they did him ffind ;
 They neuer after ffought againe ⁸ [page 404]
 428 to vex his royall minde.

He goes
back,
and shows
his father
the King's
pardon.

Then all of
them
come to
court,

with Sisely
on a good
gelding.

The Queen
welcomes
her and
makes her a
Lady in
Waiting.

And so all
the trouble
is happily
settled,

¹ euen as fast as.—R.

² wend.—R.

³ proper.—R.

⁴ chiefest state.—R.

⁵ this.—R.

⁶ rowted.—R.

⁷ so good.—R.

⁸ The neuer after sought againe.—R.

- and our
heroes
never after
troubled the
King. 432
- long time¹ they liued in court
soe neere vnto the Kinge,
that neuer after attempted² was
offred ffor any thinge.
- May God
prevent men
rebellling 436
- god aboue, giue all men grace,
in quiett ffor to liue,
& not rebelliouslye abroad
their princes ffor to greeue!
- in hope of
getting
pardon,
440
- let not the hope of pardon moue
a subiect to attempt
his soueraignes anger, or his loue,
ffrom him for to exempt;
- and make
all serue God
and the
King. 444
- but *that* all men may readye bee
with all their maine and might
to serue the lord, & loue the Kinge,
in honor day and night.

ffinis.

¹ MS. tine.—F. Long time they.—R. ² ? read "attempt there was."—Skeat.
was attempt.—R.

[This is headed throughout, *The second part, of Adam Bell*. The first part has no such heading; but has this title, *Adam Bell, Clim of the Clough, and William Cloudesle*. Lond. 1605. 9 leaves. Register A, C 2. Part II., 7 leaves. Register A 2, B 4.

There are two copies in Bodley. 4^o C. 39, Art. Seld.; Malone, 299.—G. Parker.]

["*Come Wanton Wenches*," printed in *Lo. & Hum. Songs*,
p. 80-1, follows here in the MS. p. 404.]

In olde : times paste : ¹

WHAT can one say on the moral of this song, better than "read Mr. Tennyson's *Golden Year*"? "The Old Time sure was best" is a cry that has been dinned into Englishmen's ears for many a century; and though lately the loud-voiced satisfaction of the comfortable classes and their orators was inclined to substitute for the old cry "The present time sure is best," yet now that a certainty of greater consideration in legislation for the poor and weak, the ignorant and needy, is at hand, now that the trustees of power are to be more quickly answerable to the subjects of their trust for the fulfilment of it, many would willingly in their cowardly qualms cry for old times of corruption again. When will men have faith and its cheer, and work onwards for England's future, instead of moaning and raving, and trying to drag their country back?

Still, the present poem is no *Niagara and After*, but a kind of Young-England regret for the chivalry, the merry outlaw greenwood life, the songs and dances, bows and hunts of an earlier time, the pillars of pleasure seen without the intervening spaces of sadness at the end of the arcade of English life—to use Mr. Herbert Spencer's figure—while the spaces near are painfully plain. Merry England is to the writer—a hunting man, witness lines 38 to 41—merry no longer; and the cause of the decay of all the olden pleasures is that put forward by so many of our early writers, Pride, and, in the writer's time, miserliness in other things to maintain it. With *Conscience* (ii. 189, l. 126,) he could say, "you must banish pride, and then all England were blest."

¹ An Old Song in Praise of Archery.—P. and the good old times.—F.

This is a change from Robert of Brunne's time in 1303, when Envy—which I suppose to include social grumbling and discontent, then more than justifiable—was the Englishman's special sin :

And Englys men namely
 Are þurghe kynde of herte hy.
 A forbyseyn ys tolde þys,
 Seyde on Frenshe men and on Englys ;
Frenche men synne yn lechery,
And Englys men yn envye.

Handlyng Synne, p. 131, l. 4154-5.

Let us hope that the writer of the present piece had no more ground for his complaint than the authors of similar ones have now. The "fine old English Gentle-man" has never ceased from the land, though his gentle-ness has been shown in forms varying with the ages as they have passed on.

Of the poem itself we know no other copy.—F.

In merry old days lived		I N : old times past when merry men did merry makers ¹ make, ² no man did greater matters then	[page 405]
Lancelot du Lake, Robin Hood,	4	then Lancelott of Dulake. good Robin hood ³ was liui[n]ge then, which now is quite fforgott,	
Mayd Marryan,	8	& soe was ffaire Mayd Marryan, a pretty wench, god wott.	
William of Clowdeslee,		william of Clowdeslee did dwell amongst the buckes & does,	
Clim of the Clough, and Adam Bell.	12	Clim of the Cloughe & Adam Bell killed venison with their bowes.	
The jolly bowmen hunted,		throughe the wood these Iollye bowmen went, both ouer hill & dale, & dale & dale, vp & downe, vpp & downe,	
	16	through many a parke & pale : # : # :	

¹ ? MS. *makers* may be altered to *in* the MS.—F.
² *matters*.—F. ³ There is a tag to the *d*.—F.
² The first two lines are written as one

- The Maydens on the holydayes
 did countrey carrolls singe,
 & some did passe the time away
 20 with dancinge ffor the ringe.
 yea 20 groates was mony then
 wold make men make good cheere,
 & 20 nobles gentlemen
 24 might liue on all the yeere.
 William of Cloudeslee did dwell, &c.
- Then were there playes att whitsontyde,¹
 & sommer games about ;
 then ffreind with ffreind wold goe & ryde
 28 to driue the sommer out ;
 & after merry sommer time,
 then winter time came in ;
 then were as merry matters done
 32 when Christmas did begin.²
 William, &c.
- Then did they chant itt merrilye
 with hunting in the wood,
 wherin they hound[s] mad such a crye
 36 as did the hearers good ;
 the hunters with their hunting hornes
 did cause the woods to ringe :
 to see them pricke amongst the thornes,
 40 itt weere pastime ffor a kinge.
 William, &c.
- Sir Lancelott dulake, a-dew !
 thou was a worthy Knight ;
 & eke maid Marryan sure & trew,
 44 good Robin Hoods delight.
- the maidens
sang carols
- and danced,
20 groats
would make
a feast,
- and summer
games were
played.
- Winter was
merry
at Christmas
too.
- Then was it
merry too in
woods
with cry of
hounds
- and hunters'
hornes.
- But now !
farewell
Lancelot
and Marian,

¹ See Strutt and Brand on the Whitson-ales &c. Strutt quotes *Sir Bevis*:
 In somer at Whitsontyde,

When knightes most on horsebacke
 ride, &c.—F.
² MS. begim.—F.

Clowdeslee, william of Clowdeslee, ffarewell,
 with thy companyons old,
 Clim and Clim of the Clough, & Adam Bell,
 Adam. 48 three bowemen braue & bold !¹
 The world for now the world is altered quite,
 changed. as itt had neuer beene ;
 Pleasure for plesure now is turned to spite ;
 turned to 52 the like was neuer seene.
 spite.

Men are More sparinge for a pennye nowe
 misers ; then then was for a pound ;
 the rich rich men, alas, they know not how
 don't hunt, 56 to keepe ne hawke nor hound.
 all merriments are quite fforgott,
 men don't & bowes are laid aside ;
 shoot. all is to litle now, god wott,
 60 to maintaine wordlye pryde.
 Sure, the where I began, there will I end,
 old time the old time sure was best ;
 was best. vnless *that* misers quicklye mend,
 64 old mirth may take his rest.
 May God pray wee then good bowmen may rise,
 send us as hath beene here to-ffore,
 good bow- to-ffore, to-ffore,
 men again ! 68 to maintaine, to Maintaine,
 & make our mirth the more,
 the more, the more. ffinis.

¹ Should "William, &c.," be repeated here, and the next four lines belong to the next stanza? Or are four lines wanting after l. 52, and the last two

stanzas in reality one of sixteen lines, counting the repeats *to-ffore*, the *more* with the lines preceding them?—Skeat.

Darkesome Cell :¹

[page 406]

THIS song was printed by Percy in his *Reliques*, ii. 343, with Bishop Corbet's "O Noble Ffestus," from the Folio, p. 447, and four other mad songs to make up half a dozen "selected out of a much larger quantity." Percy says: "It is worth attention that the English have more songs and ballads on the subject of madness than any of their neighbours. Whether it is that we are more liable to this calamity than other nations, or whether our native gloominess hath peculiarly recommended subjects of this cast to our writers, the fact is incontestible, as any one may be satisfied, who will compare the printed collections of French, Italian Songs, &c. with those in our language." Mr. Payne Collier considers that the madness was shammed, and that the cause of it was the desire of the idle and dissolute beggars—who swarmed over the country on the dissolution of the monasteries—to excite their hearers' pity and get alms. They were called *Bedlam Beggars*, and are mentioned by Edgar in "King Lear":

The country gives me proof and precedent
Of *Bedlam beggars*, who, with roaring voices,
Stick in their numb'd and mortify'd bare arms
Pins, wooden pricks, nails, sprigs of rosemary;
And, with this horrible object, from low farms,
Poor pelting villages, sheep-cotes, and mills,
Sometime with lunatic bans, sometime with prayer,
Inforce their charity.

In Dekker's *Bellman of London*, 1616, all the different species of beggars are enumerated. Amongst the rest are mentioned *Tom of Bedlam's* band of mad caps, otherwise called Poor Tom's flock of wild geese . . . and those wild geese, or hair brains, are called Abraham men. An Abraham man is afterwards described in this manner: "Of all

¹ That common old song of Mad-tom. Collated with a copy in a 12^o collection of songs printed by Boreman, 1735.—P.

the mad rascals (that are of this wing), the *Abraham man* is the most fantastick. The fellow (quoth this old Lady of the Lake unto me), that sate half naked (at table to-day) from the girdle upward, is the best *Abraham man* that ever came to my house, and the notablist villain: he swears he hath been in Bedlam, and will talk frantickly of purpose: you see pins stuck in sundry places of his naked flesh, especially in his arms, which pain he gladly puts himself to (being indeed no torment at all, his skin is either so dead with some foul disease, or so hardened with weather, only to make you believe he is out of his wits): he calls himself by the name of *Poor Tom*, and coming near anybody, cries out, *Poor Tom is a cold*. . . . (Mr. Payne Collier's note to Dodsley's *Collection of Old Plays*, ii. 4, quoted in Chappell's *Popular Music*, i. 334-5.)

Mr. Chappell prints the tune of the song, which is to be played majestically, but cannot settle who is the author of it: certainly not Purcell or Henry Lawes; possibly Lawes's master, John Cooper, called "Cuperario" after his visit to Italy. Mr. Chappell continues:

- There is an equal uncertainty about the authorship of the words. In Walton's *Angler*, 1653, Piscator says, "I'll promise you I'll sing a song that was lately made at my request by Mr. William Basse, one that made the choice songs of *The Hunter in his career*, and *Tom of Bedlam*, and many others of note." There are, however, so many *Toms of Bedlam*, that it is impossible to determine from this passage to which of them Isaak Walton refers.—F.

From hell
mad Tom
comes back
to the world.

FFORTH: ffrom my sadd & darksome¹ cell,
ffrom² the deepe abisse of hell,
madd Tom is come into³ the world againe
4 to see if hee can ease⁴ his distempered braine.

He hears
the Furies
howl;

ffear & dispayre pursue⁵ my soule!
harke how the angry ffuryes howle!
Pluto laughes, proserpine⁶ is gladd
8 to see poore naked Tom of Bedlam madd.

¹ dark and dismal.—P.

² Or from.—P.

³ to view.—P.

⁴ cure.—P.

⁵ Fears and cares oppress &c.—P.

There is a flourish like an s to the e of
pursue.—F.

⁶ & Proserpine.—P.

- through woods¹ I wander night and day
to seeke² my stragling sences ;
In an angrye mood I ffound out time³
12 with his Pentarchye⁴ of tenses.
- when mee he spyes, away hee fflyes ;
time⁵ will stay ffor no man ;
In vaine with cryes hee rends⁶ the skyes,
16 pittie⁷ is not common.
- Cold & comfortlesse I lye.⁸
helpe,⁹ oh helpe ! or else I dye.
- harke ! I heere Appolloes teeme,
20 the Carman 'gins to whistle ;
Chast Dyana bends her browe,¹⁰
¹¹ the bore begins to bristle.
- Come, vulcan, with tooles & with takells,¹²
24 & knocke of my troublesome shakells !
bid Charles make ready his waine
to ffeitch my ffiue sences¹³ againe.
- Last night I heard the dogstar barke,
28 Mars mett venus in the darke ;
Limping vulcan heates¹⁴ an Iron barr,
& ffuryouslye runs¹⁵ att the god of warr.
- Mars with his weapons¹⁶ layd about,
32 but vulcans temples had¹⁷ they gout,
ffor his broad hornes did hang soe in¹⁸ his light
that hee cold not see to aime arright.¹⁹

he wanders
about,
seeking his
sences.

He lies
comfortless.

Vulcan
knocks off
his
shackles !

He hears the
dogstar
bark ;

he sees
Vulcan and
Mars fight,

¹ the world.—P.

² find.—P.

³ I met old Time.—P.

⁴ pentateuch.—P.

⁵ For time.—P.

⁶ I rend, qu.—P. I rent.—*Rel.*

⁷ For pity.—P.

⁸ I be.—P.

⁹ Help, help &c.—P.

¹⁰ bowe.—P.

¹¹ And.—P.

¹² tackle, qu.—P.

¹³ Cp. "Bless thy five wits." *King Lear*,
iii. 4.—Dyce. To bring me my senses &c.
—P.

¹⁴ heat.—P. het.—*Rel.*

¹⁵ made.—P. ¹⁶ weapon.—P.

¹⁷ limping V: had got.—P.

¹⁸ his broad horns did so hang in.—P.

¹⁹ aim his blows aright.—P.

- Mercurye, the nimble post of heauen,
 36 stayd to see this quarrell.¹
 and Bacchus
 burst with gorreld-bellyed Bacchus, gyant-like
 bestryds a strong beere barrell :
- to me he dranke, [I did him thanke,
 40 but I cold gett noe Cyder ;
 drinking beer. hee dranke] ² whole butts till hee burst his gutts ;
 but mine were neere the wyder.
- Poor Tom is
 very dry. Give him
 drink. 44 poore naked Tom is verry ³ drye ;
 a litle drinke, ffor charitye !
- He hears
 Actæon's
 hounds. hearke ! I heare Acteons hounds.⁴
 the huntsmen woopp and hallowe ;
 Ringwood, Royster,⁵ Bowman, Iowler,
 48 all the chase doe ffollowe.
- The man in
 the moon the man in the moone drinkes Clarrett,
 eates pouthered ⁶ beeffe, turnipp & Carrett ;
 wants a cup
 of sack. ⁷ a cup of old Maligo ⁸ sacke
 52 will ffire the bush att his backe.
- ffinis.

¹ Stood still . . . the q! — P.

² The words included in these brackets are omitted in the printed copies.—P.

³ Pore tom is very.—P.

⁴ horne.—*Rel.*

⁵ Rockwood, Jowler, Bowman.—P.

⁶ salted. See *Babees Book Index*.—F.

⁷ but.—P.

⁸ of malaga.—P.

Marke more foole :

MORE here is probably a corruption of *Morio* (a word connected with the Greek *μωρός*), "homo," says Facciolati, "qui naturali stoliditate et stultitiâ risum excitat." "Quidam," says Augustine in his 26th epistle, "tantæ sunt fatuitatis ut non multum a pecoribus differant; quos moriones vulgo vocant." With regard to its use here of the cap-and-belled fool of the sixteenth century, compare the following epigram of Martial (viii. 13):

Morio dictus erat ; viginti millibus emi ;
Redde mihi nummos, Gargiliane ; sapit.

which may be roughly rendered :

I bought Tom Fool for twenty thousand pence.
Return my money, dealer ; he has sense.

The court of the Tudors, or the first Stuarts, in whose time probably the following piece was written, was seldom without its Fool. From Will Somers to Archie Armstrong the succession is continuous. Who was the individual whose acuteness is here celebrated, we cannot precisely state.

We have not seen any other copy of the piece.

TO : passe the time there as ¹ I went,
a history there I chanced ² to reede ;
when as Salamon raigned *King*,
4 he did many a worthie dede,

When
Solomon
was King

¹ whereas.—P.

² MS. changed.—F.

it was
felony not
to restore to
the owner
goods found.

& many statutes hee caused to be made ;
& this was one ¹ amongst the rest plaine, ²
“ itt was ffelomy to any one *that* found ought was
lost,
8 & wold not restore itt to the owner againe.”

A merchant

lost his
purse with
100*l.* in it,

and offered
20*l.* for its
restoration.

12 Soe then there was a rich Merchant,
as he rode to a marktett towne,
itt was his chance to lose his pursse ;
he said there was in itt a 100^{li}.
a proclamation he caused to be made,
“ whosoever cold find the same againe,
shold giue itt him againe without all doubt;
16 & hee shold have ffor 20^{li} his paine.”

A poor man

finds the
purse,

but doesn't
understand
the gold.

20 Soe then there was a silly poore man [page 407]
had 2 sheepes pells vpon his backe to sell,
& going to the Marktett towne
hee ffound the pursse, & liked itt well ;
hee tooke itt vp into his hand,
& needs see what was in it hee wold ;
but the same he cold not vnderstand ;
24 ffor why, there was nothing in it but gold.

The mer-
chant
accuses him
of finding
the purse.

He says he
has it, and
will restore
it for the 20*l.*

28 The rich man hee pursued him soone, ³
“ thou horeson villaine,” quoth he then,
“ I thinke itt is thou *that* has found my pursse,
& wilt thou not giue itt me againe ? ”
“ good Sir,” sayd hee, “ I ffound such a pursse ;
the truth ffull soone itt shall be knowne ;
you shall haue itt againe, its neuer the worse,
32 but pay me my safteye ⁴ *that* is mine owne.”

¹ MS. ome.—F.

² among them plain.—P.

³ eftsoon.—P.

⁴ I don't find this word elsewhere in
the same sense.—F.

- “Let me see whats in the pursse,” said the Merchant; The merchant says
 “ffound thou a 100^{li} and no more ?
 thou horeson villaine ! thou hast paid thy-selfe ;
 36 for in my pursse was ffull sixe score. he had 120l. in his purse,
 itt's best my pursse to me thou restore,
 or before the *King* thou shalt be brought.” and he'll take the poor man before the King.
 “I warrant,” quoth hee, “when I come the *King*
 before,
 40 heele not reward me againe with nought.”
- Then they Ledd him towards the Kinge,
 & as they led him on the way,
 & there mett him a gallant *Knight*, On their road to the King,
 44 & with him was his Ladye gay. a knight and his lady meet them.
 with tugging & lugging this pore man,
 his lether skins ¹ began to cracke ; The poor man's sheep-skins crack,
 the gelding was wanton they Ladye rode on,
 48 & threw her downe beside his backe. the lady's gelding throws her
- Then to the earth shee gott a thawacke ;
 no hurt in the world the pore man did meane ;
 to the ground hee cast the Ladye there ; on to a stub, and puts out one of her eyes.
 52 on a stubb shee dang out one of her eyen. The knight wants to punish the poor man.
 the *Knight* wold needs vpon ² him haue beene.
 “nay,” sayd the Merchant, “I pray you, *Sir*,
 stay ;
 I haue a actyon against him alreadye ;
 56 he shalbe ³ brought to the *King*, & hangd this
 day.”
- Then they Ledd him towards the *King*,
 but the poreman liked not their Leading well ; He is afraid,
 & coming neere to the sea side,
 60 he thought to be drowned or saue him selfe. and to save

¹ skins.—P.² Cp. our “I'll be down upon you.”
—F.³ There is a *b* followed by a letter
blotted out, after *be*.—F.

himself
leaps into
the sea,
that is, on
two fisher-
men,
and breaks
one's neck.

& as hee lope into the sea,
no harme to no man he did wott,
but there hee light vpon 2 ffisher-men ;
64 with the leape he broke one of their neckes in a
boate.

The other
wants to be
down on the
poor man
for this.

The other wold needs vpon him haue beene.
"nay," said the Merchant, "I pray thee now stay ;
we haue 2 actyons against him alreadye ;
68 hee shalbe carryed to the *King* & hangd this day."

They go
before the
King.

then they Led him bound before the *King*,
where he sate in a gallerye gay.

The mer-
chant says

"my Leege," said the Marchant, "wee haue brought
such a villane

72 as came not before you this many a day.

he lost a
purse
of 120*l*.

"ffor itt was my chance to loose my pursse,
& in itt there was ffull sixe score¹ ;

and the
poor man
won't give
it up except
for 20*l*.
The knight
says the man

76 & now the villaine will not giue itt me againe
except *that* hee had 20^l more."

"I kut² I have a worsse mache then *that*," sayd the
Knight,

"for I know not what the villaine did meane ;
he caused my gelding to cast my Ladye ;

made his
lady lose one
of her eyes.

80 on a stubb shee hath dang out one of her eyen."

And the
fisher
says the

"But I have the worst match of all," sayd the ffisher,
"ffor I may sighe & say god wott :

hee lope att mee & my brother vpon the seas ;

man broke
his brother's
neck.

84 with the leape he hath broken my brothers neck
in a bote."

the *King* hee turned him round about,
being well aduised of euery thinge :

Quoth he, "neuer since I can remember,

88 came 3 such matters since I was *Kinge*.³"

¹ pounds six score.—P.

² ? MS. hut. *Cut*, say. Hall.—F.

³ before a king.—P.

- Then Marke More, ffoole, beinge by,
 “how now, Brother Solomon?” then quoth hee,
 “giue you will not giue iudgment of these 3 matters,
 92 I pray you returne them ¹ ore to mee.”
 “with all my hart,” quoth Salomon to him,
 “take you the iudgment of them as yett;
 ffor neuer came matters me before,
 96 *that* ffainer of I wold be quitt.”
- “Well,” quoth Marke, “wee haue these 3 men [page 408]
 heere,
 & euery one hath put vp a bill;
 but, pore man, come hither to me,
 100 lets heare what tale thou canst tell for thy selfe.”
 “why, my Lord,” quoth hee, “as touching this
 Merchant,
 as he rode to a markt towne
 itt was his chance to loose his pursse;
 104 he said there was in itt a 100^{li} .
- “A proclamatyon he caused to be made,
 ‘whosoever cold find the same againe plaine,
 shold giue itt him againe without all doubt,
 108 & hee shold haue 20^{li} ffor his paine.’
 & itt was my chance to ffind *that* pursse,
 & gladlye to him I wold itt restore;
 but now hee wold reward mee with nothinge,
 112 but Challengeth² in his pursse 20^{li} more.”
- “Hast thou any wittnesse of *that*?” said my Lord
 Marke;
 “I pray thee, fellow, tell me round.”
 “yes, my Lord, heres his owne man
 116 *that* carryed the Message ffrom towne to towne.”

Marke, the
fool, asks
Solomon to
let him
judge these
causes.

Solomon
agrees
gladly.

So Marke
calls on the
poor man
for his
answers.

He says
“The mer-
chant

lost his 100^{li}
pursse,

and offered

20^{li} reward
for it.
I found it,
offer it him,

and he asks
me for 20^{li}.

His own
man is
witness!”

¹ you turn them.—P.

² The *heth* in the MS. appears crossed out.—F.

The merchant's man
says that's
true.

the man was called before them all,
& said itt was a 100^{li} plaine,
& *that* his master wold giue 20^{li}
120 to any wold giue him his pursse againe.

"I had fforgotten 20^{li}," said the Merchant,
"giue me leaue ffor my selfe to say."

"Then,"
said Marke,

"nay," said Marke, "thou Chalengeth¹ more then
thine owne ;

"the poor
man shall
keep this
purse,

124 therefore with the pore fellowe the pursse shall
stay.

& this shall bee my iudgment straight :

and you
shall follow
him till you
find
another."

128 thou shalt ffollow eche day by the heeles playne
till thou haue ffound such another pursse with him,
& then keepe itt thy selfe, & neere giue itt him
againe."

"Marry, ouer gods fforbott," said the Merchant,
"that euer soe badd shold be my share !

how shold I ffind a 100^{li} of him

"I'd sooner
give him 20^{li}.
than do
that," says
the mer-
chant.
"Pay the
money then,
and go."

132 that hath not a 100 pence to loose² ?
rather Ile giue him 20^{li} more,
& with *that* hee hath, lett him stay."³

"Marry, render vs downe the money," said Marke,

136 "soe may thou chance goe quietlye away."

"As to the
knight,"
says the
poor man,

"ffellow ! how hinderedst thou the Knight ?
thou must make him amends here, I meane ;
itts against Law & right ;

140 his Ladye, shee hath lost one of her eyen."

"he and the
merchant
made
my skins
rattle,

"why, my Lord, as they ledd me towards the King,
for ffeare lest I shold loose my trattle,⁴
these lether skins you see mee bringe,

144 with tugging and lugging began to rattle."

¹ Fr. *chalanger*, to claime, challenge, —P.
make title vnto. Cotgrave.—F.

² spare.—P.

³ And what he hath let with him stay.

⁴ For *trattle*, Halliwell gives to prattle
or talk idly: for *trattlis*, the dung of
sheep, hares, &c.—F.

- 1* "The gelding was wanton the Lady rode vpon,—
no hurt in the world, my Lord, I did meane,—
to the ground he cast *that* Ladye there,
148 & on a stub shee dang out one of her eyen."
"fellow," quoth Marke, "hast² thy wiffe 2 eyes?
I pray thee," quoth hee, "tell me then."
"yes, my Lord, a good honest pore woman,
152 *that* for her liuinge takes great paine."

"Why then, this shalbe my iudgment straight,
tho thou *perhapps* may thinke itt strange:
thy wiffe with 2 eyes, his Ladye hath but one,
156 as thou hast drest her, with him thoust change."
"marry ouer gods fforbott," then sayd the Knight,
"that euer soe badd shold be my shame;
I had rather giue him a 100¹;
160 then to be trobled with his dunish³ dame."

"Marry! tender vs downe the mony," said Marke, "soe may thou be gone within a while."
but the ffisher ffor feare he shold have beene called,
164 he ran away a quarter of a mile.
"I pray you call him againe," quoth Marke,
"giffe hee bee within sight;
for neuer came matter me before,
168 but euerye man shold haue his right."

They called the ffisher backe againe:
"how now, fellow? why didst not stay?"
"my Lord," quoth hee, "I haue a great way home,
172 & ffaine I wold be gone my way."

frightened
the lady's
horse,
and he threw
her on a
stub."

"Has your
wife two
eyes?"

"Yes."

"Then the
knight
shall change
wives."

"I'd sooner
give him
100l." says
the knight.

"Pay down
your money
and go."

The fisher-
man is
alarmed,
and runs off,

but is called
back,

and makes
excuses

¹ (*Marginal note by the writer of the MS*). This verse shold come in att this * mark aboue [which is where it

now is—F.]

² hath.—P.

³ ? *dunny*, deaf, stupid. Halliwell.—F.

- “ but, ffellow, how hinderedst thou this ffisher ?
I pray thee,” *quoth* Marke, “ to vs tell.”
- “ As to the fisherman,” says the poor man, “ to save myself, I leapt into the sea,
- 176 I thought either to be drowned or saue my selfe.
- “ And as I lope into the sea,—
no harme to no mann I did wott,—
there I light vpon this ffishers brother ;
- 180 with a leape I broke his necke in a boate.”
- “ ffisher,” *quoth* Marke, “ knowest thou where the boate stood ?
- thoust sett her againe in the selfe same steade,
& thoust leape att him as he did att thy brother,
- 184 & soe thou may quitt thy brothers deede.¹”
- “ Marry, gods fforbott,” then sayd the ffisher [page 409]
“ *that* euer soe badd shold be my lucke !
If I leape att him as he did att my brother,
- 188 Ist either be drowned or breake my necke ;
rather Ile giue him 20^{li} :
& I wold, my Lord, I had neere come hither.”
- “ Marry, tender vs downe the money,” said Marke,
- 192 “ & you shalbe packinge all 3 together.”
- The pore man he was well content,
& verry well pleased of euerye thinge ;
he sayd he wold neere take great care
- 196 how oft hee came before the Kinge.
these other 3 cold neuer agree,
but euery one ffell out *with* other,
& sayd they wold neere come more to the *King*
- 200 while hee was in companye with marke his
brother.
- “ And break my neck, or be drowned,” says the fisherman :
“ I’d rather give him 20^{li}.”
- “ Pay down the money, and go then.”
- The poor man takes all the money, and says he doesn’t care how often he’s brought before the King. The other three say they’ll never come again while Marke’s there.

¹ dead.—P. death.—F.

Thomas : of : Potts.¹

THOUGH men in early days made the ballads as well as the laws of the nation, they were more just to women in the one than the other. Against the Marquis lifting Grisilde from her father's cottage to his own throne, they set the Lady's love for her Squyer of Lowe Degree, and against King Cophetua, Lord Arundel's fair heiress with her Thomas Potts. If "Lady Clara Vere de Vere" had been written centuries ago, we may be sure that some male predecessor of Elizabeth Barrett Browning would have answered it with "A Poet's Wooing," suited to the time. Indeed, we may go further, and say, that as minstrels sang more for knights, who held the purse, than ladies fair, the stooping of a high-born heiress to a fighting lord of lowly birth was a more frequent topic in old ballads and romances than the taking by a noble of a lowborn bride. Serving-man might be squire, squire be knight, and knight an earl: to any and all, the highest lady in the land was a possible prize, were a strong right hand and a stout heart the possession of him who dared to try for her. And in the present ballad the writer has boldly faced the bathos, if any there were, in name as well as in fact, for he has married Lord Arundel's daughter to Thomas Potts.

In the middle of the sixteenth century Hewe Rodes counsels his Wayting-Servant:

For your *promocyon* resort to such as ye may take *avauntage*,
 Among *gentylnen* for rewardes, to *gentylwomen* for marriage.
 Se your eye be indyfferent, amonge women that be fayre,
 And tell them storyes of loue, and so to you they wyll repayre;
 Suche *pastymes* somtyme doth many men *auaunce*
 In way of *maryage*, and your good name it wyl *enhaunce*:

and no doubt in earlier days good-looking young serving-men

¹ Shewing how he won Lord Arundel's Daughter from Lord Phoenix, being only a serving Man. In Pepys' Merrim^{ts},

Vol. i. p. 189, 12^o intituled *The Lover's Quarrel* or *Cupid's Triumph*.—P.

had an eye to their mistresses' hands and fortunes, besides being honestly, desperately in love with them. We have seen, in *The Lord of Learne* (i. 190-8), how the young shepherd-boy was taken by the Duke of France's daughter into her service, and how she fell in love with him, and married him; we know how in *William of Palerne* (or *William and the Werwolf*) the Emperor's daughter Melior loves, and must love, her *gens et tres biax* young serving-man, though he is only a cowherd's foundling, and though she tries to school her heart, saying:

what? fy! schold i a fundeling · for his fairenesse tak?
 nay, my wille wol nouȝt a-sent · to my wicked hert.
 wel kud kinges & kaysers · krauen me i-now;
 I nel leie mi loue so low · now at þis time;
 desparaged were i disgisili · ȝif i dede in þis wise;
 I wol breke out fram þat baret · & blame my hert.

and with the immense advantage that continual access to a young mistress's presence gave a man when kettle and other drums had not been invented to bring suitors, and tournaments and feasts came rarely, we may well believe that Thomas Pottses did sometimes secure their ladies, notwithstanding "the great gulf fixed between churl and noble" on which Mr. Hales has remarked in *Glasgerion*, vol. i. p. 248. We can hardly suppose the subject a popular one among highborn dames; and without the fact's actual happening, I doubt whether it would have been chosen for a ballad theme. Grant that it did occasionally happen, and then the balladist would not refuse to sing the constancy of a love that glorified all on whom it shone—as well a Thomas Potts as a banished Earl. Anything less like a hero coming to fight for his love it would be difficult to conceive than the canny Potts as he rode from his Scotch home on his old dock-tailed white horse. This is how he chose his charger, when offered his master's best:

<p>theres an old horsse,—for him you doe not care,— this day wold sett my Lady ffree, <i>that</i> is a white, with a cutt tayle, ffull 16 yeeres of age is hee. . . O <i>Master</i>, those [<i>better young</i>] horsstes beene wild and wicked, & litle they can skill of the old traine;</p>	<p>giffe I be out of my saddle cast, they beene soe wild theyle neuer be tane againe. lett me haue age sober & wise; itt is a <i>part</i> of wisdom, you know itt plaine; if I be out of my sadle cast, heele either stand still or turne againe.</p>
---	--

Still, though Potts is unhorsed and wounded, and has to rely on his white steed's wisdom, Potts has pluck, and gives Lord Phenix so much of fighting that he wants no more. And his Lordship, being convinced that Lady Rozamond prefers Potts to him, generously promises her that she shall have her Potts, and if her father will not endow them, he will :

Ile send ffor thy father, the *Lord* of Arrundale,
& marryed together I will you see.
giffe hee will [not] maintaine you well,
both gold and Land you shall haue from me.

Need we say that the Lady, his true-love, turns Thomas a Pott's name into "The Lord of Arrundale," and exhorts all her maids

& Ladyes of England, faire & ffree,
looke you neuer change your old loue for no new,
nor neuer change for no pouerty.—F.

<p>ALL : you Lords of Scotland faire, & ladyes alsoe bright of blee ; there is a ladye amongst them all, 4 of her report you shall heare of me.</p>	<p>Lords and Ladies of Scotland, I'll tell you of a fair Lady,</p>
<p>of her bewtye shee is soe bright, & of her colour soe bright of blee ; shee is daughter to the Lord Arrndell, 8 his heyre apparrant ffor to bee.</p>	<p>Lord Arundel's heir.</p>
<p>"Ile see <i>that</i> bryde," Lord Phenix sayes, " <i>that</i> is a Ladye of hye degree, & iff I like her countenance well, 12 the heyre of all my Land sheest bee."</p>	<p>Lord Phenix</p>
<p>to <i>that</i> Ladye ffayre Lord Phenix came, & to <i>that</i> Like-some dame said hee, "now god thee saue, my Ladye ffaire ! 16 the heyre of all my Land thost bee."</p>	<p>offers to marry her.</p>
<p>"Leaue of your suite," the Ladye sayd, "you are a Lord of honor ffree, you may gett Ladyes enowe att home, 20 & I haue a loue in mine owne countrye.</p>	<p>She tells him that she has a lover,</p>

- a serving-
man,
24
Thomas a
Pott.
“ I haue a loue true of mine ¹ owne,
a seruinge man of a small degree ;
he is the ffirst loue *that* euer I had,
& the last *that* hee shalbee :
Thomas a Pott, itt is his name.”
- Lord Phenix
says he
has 40*l.* to
Thomas's 3*l.*
28
“ giue Thomas a Pott then be his name,
I wott I ken him soe readilye ;
I can spend 40^{li} by weeke,
& hee cannott spend pounds 3.”
- The Lady
says she'll
32
“ god giue you good of your gold,” said the Ladye,
“ and alsoe, Sir, of your ffee !
hee was the ffirst loue *that* euer I had,
& the Last, Sir, shall hee bee.”
- stick to
Thomas.
Lord Phenix
with *that* Lord Phenix was sore amoued ;
vnto her ffather then went hee ;
36
tells her
father,
hee told her ffather how itt was proued,
how *that* his daughters mind was sett.
- and he says
she shan't
have his
land
unless she
marries
Lord
Phenix.
40
“ thou art my daughter,” the Erle of Arrndell said,
“ the heyre of all my Land to bee ;
thoust be bryde to the Lord Phenix,
daughter, giue thoule be heyre to mee.”
- So she is
forced to be
his bride.
44
for lacke of her loue this Ladye must Lose,
her foolish wooing lay all aside ;
the day is appoynted,² & ffreinds are agreede,
shee is fforcte to be the Lord Phenix bryde.
- But she
means
to beguile
him.
48
with *that* the Lady began to muse—
a greeued woman, god wott, was shee—
how shee might Lord Phenix beguile,
& scape vnmarried ffrom him *that* day.

¹ MS. nine.—F.² There is a mark like an undotted *i* in the MS. before the *y*.—F.

- shee called to her her litle ffoote page ;
to lacke her boy, soe tenderlye
52 sayes, “ come thou hither, thou litle ffoote page,
for indeed I dare trust none but thee.
- “ to Strawberry castle, boy, thou must goe,
to Thomas Pott there as hee can bee,
56 & giue him here this Letter ffaire,
& on guilford greene bidd him meete me.
- “ looke thou marke his contenance well,
& his colour tell to mee ;
60 & hye thee ffast, and come againe,
& 40 shillings I will giue thee.
- “ for if he blush in his fface,
then in his hart heese ¹ sorry bee.
64 Then lett my ffather say what hee will, [page 410]
for false to Potts Ile neuer bee.
- “ & giue hee smile then with his mouth,
then in his heart heele merry be ;
68 then may hee gett him a loue where-euer he can,
for small of his companye my part shalbe.”
- then one while *that* the boy hee went,
another while, god wott, rann hee ;
72 & when hee came to strawberry castle,
there Thomas Potts hee see ;
- then he gaue him this letter ffaire.
& when he began then for to reade,
76 they ² boy had told him by word of mouth
‘ his loue must be the Lord Phenix bryde.’

She tells her
page, Jack,

to take a
letter to
Thomas,

and if he
blushes,
then he'll
be sorry,

and she'll be
true to him ;

if he smiles,

then she'll
give him up.

The boy

goes to
Thomas,

gives him
the letter,

and tells
him his
loue must
marry Lord
Phenix.

¹ heese, i. e. he will be, or must be.—P.

² the.—P.

- Thomas
blushes,
weeps,
cannot read
the letter,
- 80 with *that*, Thomas a Pott began to blushe ;
the teares trickeled in his eye :
“ indeed this letter I cannot ¹ reede,
nor neuer a word to see or spye ;
- but bids the
boy tell his
Lady
- 84 “ I pray thee, boy, to me thoule be trew,
& heers 5 marke I will giue thee ;
& all these words thou must pursue,
& tell thy Lady this ffrom mee :
- that Lord
Phenix
- shall not
marry her ;
- 88 “ tell her by ffaith & troth shee is mine owne,
by some *part* of promise, & soe itt^s be found,
Lord Phenix shall neuer marry her by night nor day
without he can winn her with his hand.
- he'll lose his
life to stop
it.
- 92 “ on Gilford greene I will her meete,
& bidd *that* Ladye ffor mee pray ;
for there Ile Loose my liffe soe sweete
or else the wedding I will stay.”
- The boy goes
back.
- then backe againe the boy he went
as ffast againe as he cold hye.
- The Lady
meets him,
- 96 the Ladye mett him 5 mile on the way :
“ why hast thou stayd soe long ? ” saies shee.
- “ boy,” said the Ladye, “ thou art but younge ;
to please my mind thoule mocke and scorne ;
100 I will not beleene thee on word of mouth
vnlesse on this booke thou wilt be sworne.”
- and he tells
her
- how Thomas
cried.
- 104 “ marry, by this booke,” the boy can say,
“ as Christ himselfe be true to mee,
Thomas Pott cold not his letter reade
for teares trickling in his eye.”

¹ MS. camot.—F.

- “if this be true,” the Lady sayd,
 “thou Bonny boy, thou tells to mee,
 108 40! I did thee promise,
 but heeres 10^l! Ile giue itt thee.
- The Lady

gives him
10^l.,
- “all my maids,” the Lady sayd,
 “*that* this day doe waite on mee,
 112 wee will ffall downe vpon our knees,
 for *Thomas* Pott now pray will wee.
- says she and
her maids

will pray for
Thomas,
- “if his ffortune be now ffor to winn,¹
 wee will pray to christ in Trinytye ;
 116 Ile make him the fflower of all his kinn,
 ffor they ² *Lord* of Arrundale he shalbe.”
- and she'll
make him
Lord
Arundel.
- now lett vs leaue talking of this Lady faire,
 in her prayer good where shee can bee ;
 120 & Ile tell you hou *Thomas* Pott
 for ayd to his *Lord* & *master* came hee.
- Thomas
goes to his
Lord,
- & when hee came *Lord* Iockye before,
 he kneeled him low downe on his knee ;
 124 saies, “thou art welcome *Thomas* Pott!
 thou art allwayes full of thy curtesye.
- Jockye,
- “has thou slaine any of thy ffellowes,
 or hast thou wrought me some villanye ? ”
 128 “*Sir*, none of my ffellowes I haue slaine,
 nor I haue wrought you noe villanye ;
- “but I haue a loue in Scotland ffaire,
 I doubt I must lose her through pouertye ;³
 132 if you will not belecue me by word of mouth,
 behold the letter shee writt vnto mee.”
- and tells him
that he is
like to
lose his love
through his
poverty.

¹ MS. wim.—F.² the.—P.³ The next stanza but one is written

in the MS. between lines 131, 132, but marked by a bracket, and by Percy, to go in its proper place.—F.

- Lord Jockye
says
- when *Lord Jockye* looked the letter vpon,
the tender words in itt cold bee :
- 136 “*Thomas Pott*, take thou no care,
thoust neuer loose her throughe pouertye.
- “You shan’t
lose her :
- you shall
have
gold and
silver,
- 140 “thou shalt have 40ⁿ a weeke,
in gold & siluer thou shalt rowe,¹
& Harbye towne I will thee allowe
as longe as thou dost meane to woove ;
- 40 men,
and 40 horse,
- 144 “thou shalt haue 40^{or} of thy ffellowes ffaire,
& 40 horsse to goe with thee,
& 40 speares of the best I haue,
& I my-selfe in thy companye.²”
- and I’ll go
with you.”
- Thomas
declines the
offer.
- 148 “I thanke you, *Master*,” sayd *Thomas Pott*,
“neither man nor boy shall goe with mee ;
I wold not ffor a 1000ⁿ [page 411]
take one man in my companye.”
- Lord Jockye
advises him
- 152 “why then, god be with thee, *Thomas Pott* !
thou art well knowen & proued for a man ;
Looke thou shedd no guiltlesse bloode,
nor neuer confound no gentlman ;
- to fix a place
to fight his
rival,
- 156 “but looke thou take with him some truce,
apoint a place of lybertye ;
lett him provide as well as hee cann,
& as well provided thou shalt bee.”
- and he’ll
provide for
him.
- Thomas goes
to
- 160 & when *Thomas Pott* came to *Gilford greene*,
& walked there a litle beside,
then was hee ware of the *Lord Phenix*,
& with him *Ladye Rozamund* his bryde.
- Lord Phenix
and Lady
Rosamond,

¹ row, i.e. roll. See Gloss. ad G. Douglas. So Page 21-20. Thretty lang twelf monthis rowing over, i.e. rolling over.—P.

² Only half the *n* in the MS.—F.

- away by the bryde rode *Thomas* of Pott,
 but noe word to her *that* he did say ;
 164 but when he came *Lord Phenix* before,
 he gaue him the right time of the day. and gives
Lord Phenix
the time
o' day.
- “ O thou art welcome, *Thomas* a Potts !
 thou serving man, welcome to mee !
 168 how ffares they *Lord & Master* att home,
 & all the *Ladyes* in thy cuntrye ? ” Lord Phenix
asks

how
Thomas's
master is.
- “ *Sir*, my *Lord & my Master* is in verry good health ; “ *Very well*.
 I wott I ken itt soe readylye.
 172 I pray you, will you ryde to one outsyde,¹
 a word or towe to talke with mee.” But let me
have a word
with you.
- “ you are a Nobleman,” sayd *Thomas* a Potts,
 “ yee are a borne *Lord* in *Scotland* ffree ;
 176 you may gett *Ladyes* enowe att home ;
 you shall neuer take my loue ffrom mee ! ” You are a
Lord,
and can get
ladies at
home.
You shan't
have my
love.
- “ away, away, thou *Thomas* a Potts !
 thou seruing man, stand thou a-side !
 180 I wott theres not a serving man this day,
 I know, can hinder mee of my bryde.”
- “ If I be but a seruing man,” sayd *Thomas*,
 “ & you are a *Lord* of honor ffree,
 184 a speare or 2 Ile with you runn,
 before Ile loose her thus cowardlye.” I'll fight you
for her.”
- “ on *Gilford greene*,” *Lord Phenix* saies, “ Ile thee
 meete ;
 neither man nor boy shall come hither with mee.” Lord Phenix
accepts the
fight ;
- 188 “ & as I am a man,” said *Thomas* a Pott,
 “ Ile haue as ffew in my companye.”

¹ i. e. on one side : the expression is still used in *Northamptonshire*.—P.

- and the
wedding is
put off.
Rosamond
is glad,
- 192 with *that* the wedding-day was stayd,
the bryde went vnmarryed home againe ;
then to her maydens ffast shee loughe,
& in her hart shee was full ffaine.
- and says
she'll
- 196 " but all my mayds," they Ladye sayd,
" *that* this day doe waite on mee,
wee will ffall downe againe vpon our knees,
for Thomas a Potts now pray will wee.
- pray for
Thomas,
- and if he
wins,
- 200 " if his ffortune be ffor to winn,—
weele pray to Christ in Trynitye,—
He make him the fflower of all his kinn,
for the *Lord* of Arrundale he shalbe."
- will make
him Lord
Arundel.

[The Second Part.]

- Thomas goes
home again,
- 204 { now let vs leaue talking of this Lady fayre,
in her prayers good where shee can bee ;
He tell you the troth how Thomas a Potts
for aide to his Lord againe came ¹ hee.
- 2^d parte {
- and falls
sick.
- 208 { & when he came to strawberry castle,
to try ffor his Ladye he had but one weeke ;
alacke, ffor sorrow hee cannott fforbeare,
for 4 dayes then he ffell sicke.
- Lord Jockye
asks whether
- with *that* his Lord & Master to him came,
sayes, " I pray thee, Thomas, tell mee without all
doubt,
- he has got his
love.
- 212 whether hast thou gotten the bonny Ladye,
or thou man ² gange the Ladye withoute."

¹ MS. cane.—F.² maun, i. e. must.—P.

- “ marry, *master*, yett *that* matter is vntryde ;
 within 2 dayes tryed itt must bee.
- 216 he is a *Lord*, & I am but a seruing man :
 I doubt I must loose her through pouertye.”
- “ why, *Thomas* a *Pott*, take thou no care ;
 thoust neuer loose her through pouertye ;
- 220 “ thou shalt haue halfe my Land a yeere,
 & *that* will raise thee many a pound ;
 before thou shalt loose thy bonny ladye,
 thou shalt drop angells with him to the ground.¹
- 224 “ & thou shalt haue 40 of thy ffellowes ffaire,
 & 40 horssees to goe with thee,
 & 40 speres of the best I haue,
 & I my-selfe in thy companye.”
- 228 “ I thanke you, *Master*,” sayd *Thomas* a *Potts*,
 “ but of one thinge, *Sir*, I wold be ffaine ;
 If I shold loose my bonny² Ladye,
 how shall I increase your goods againe ? ”
- 232 “ why, if thou winn thy Lady ffaire,
 thou maye well fforth for to pay mee ;
 if thou loose thy Lady, thou hast losse enoughe ;
 not one penny I will aske thee.”
- 236 “ *Master*, you haue 30 horssees in one hold, [page 412]
 you keepe them ranke and royallye ;
 theres an old horsse,—for him you doe not care,—
 this day wold sett my Lady ffree,
- 240 “ *that* is a white, with a cutt tayle,
 ffull 16 yeeres of age is hee ;
 giffe you wold lend me *that* old horsse,
 then I shold gett her easilye.”

“ That'll be
 settled in
 two days,

and I shall
 lose her from
 poverty.”

“ No,
Thomas,

I'll lend you
 half
 my land,

and 40 men
 and horssees,

and go with
 you myself,

and never
 ask for a
 return if you
 lose.”

“ If you'll
 lend me your
 old docked
 horse, that's
 all I want.”

¹ Cp. *Bessie off Bednall*, vol. ii. p. 284, l. 104-24.—F.

² MS. *bomy*.—F.

- " Don't be foolish,
 Thomas ;
 have a better horse."
- 244 " thou takes a foolish *part*," the Lord Iockye sayd,
 " & a foolish *part* thou takes on thee ;
 thou shalt haue a better the[n] euer he was,
that 40^{li} cost more nor hee."
- " None of your wild animals for me ; I want
- 248 " O *Master*, those horssees beene wild and wicked,
 & litle they can skill of the old traine ;
 giffe I be out of my saddle cast,
 they beene soe wild theyle neuer be tane againe.
- a sober one,
 that if I'm thrown will stand still."
- 252 " lett me haue age sober & wise ;
 itt is a *part* of wisdome, you know itt plaine ;
 if I be out of my sadle cast,
 heele either stand still or turne againe."
- " Take the old horse then, and 100 men."
- 256 " thou shalt haue *that* horsse with all my hart,
 & my cote plate of siluer ffree,
 & a 100^d men att thy backe
 for to fight if neede shalbee."
- " No," says Thomas,
 " neither man nor boy,
- 260 " I thanke you, *Master*," said Thomas a Potts,
 " neither man nor boy shall goe with mee.
 as you are a Lord off honor borne,
 let none of my ffellowes know this of mee ;
- keep 'em all back."
- 264 " ffor if they wott of my goinge,
 I wott behind me they will not bee ;
 without you keepe them vnder a locke,
 vppon *that* greene I shall them see."
- At Gilford Green
 Thomas finds Lord Phenix and men,
- 268 & when *Thomas* came to Gilford greene
 & walked there some houres 3 ;
 then was he ware of the Lord Phenix,
 and 4 men in his companye.
- 272 " you haue broken your vow," sayd *Thomas* a Pott,
 " your vowe *that* you made vnto mee ;
 you said you wold come your selfe alone,
 & you haue brought more then 2 or 3."

- 276 "these are my waiting men," Lord Phenix sayd,
 "that euery day doe waite on mee ;
 giffe any of these shold att vs stirr,
 my speare shold runn throwe his bodye." but they are
only his
waiting
men,
- 280 "He runn noe race," said Thomas Potts,
 "till that this othe heere made may bee :
 'if the one of vs be slaine,
 the other fforgiuen that hee may bee.' "
- 284 "He make a vow," Lord Phenix sayes,
 "my men shall beare wittnesse with thee,
 giffe thou slay mee att this time,
 neuer the worsse beloued in Scotland thou shalt
 bee." and he vows

they shall
not hurt
Thomas.
- 288 then they turned their horssees round about,
 to run ¹ the race more egarlye. Theycharge,
 Lord Phenix he was stiffe & stout,
 he has runn Thomas quite thorow the thye, and Lord
Phenix
runs Thomas
- 292 & beere Thomas out of his saddle ffaire ;
 vpon the ground there did hee lye. through the
thigh, and
grounds
him.
 he saies, "for my liffe I doe not care,
 but ffor the loue of my Ladye.
- 296 "but shall I lose my Ladye ffaire ? Thomas says
 I thought shee shold haue beene my wiffe ;
 I pray thee, Lord Phenix, ryde not away,
 for with thee I will loose my Liffe." he'llfight on.
- 300 then ² Thomas a Potts was a seruing man,
 he was alsoe a Phisityan good ;
 he clapt his hand vpon his wound ; He
staunches
his wound,
 with some kind of words he stauncht the blood.³

¹ MS. rum.—F.² Though.—P.³ The notes to *Brand's Popular Antiquities*, ii. 167, ed. 1841, give (from the Athenian Oracle, i. 158) this charm to stop bleeding at the nose and all other hæmorrhages:

In the blood of Adam, Sin was taken,
 In the blood of Christ it was all to-
 shaken,
 And by the same blood I do thee charge,
 That the blood of [Thomas Potts] run no
 longer at large.—F.

- charges Lord
Phenix,

runs him
through the
arm,

unhorsed
him,

and says
"fight on,
or give up
my Lady."
- Lord Phenix
says he can't
fight,
- and he'll give
up the Lady.
- [page 413]
Then
Thomas
- staunches
Lord
Phenix's
wound,
and offers
him another
chance:
- to let
Rosamond
stand
between
them and
take which
she likes.
- 304 then into his saddle againe hee leepe,
the blood in his body began to warme ;
he mist *Lord Phenix* bodye there,
but he run him quite throw the brawne of the arme,
- 308 & he bore him quite out of his saddle ffaire,
vpon the ground there did he lye ;
he said, " I pray thee, *Lord Phenix*, rise & ffight,
or else yeeld this Ladye sweete to mee."
- 312 "to ffight with thee," quoth Phenix, " I cannott stand ;
nor ffor to ffight, I cannott, sure ;
thou hast run me through the brawne of the arme ;
noe longer of thy spere I cannott endure.
- 316 " thoust haue *that* Ladye with all my hart,
sith itt was like neuer better to proue ;
nor neuer a noble man this day
that will seeke to take a pore mans loue."
- 320 " Why then, be of good cheere," saies *Thomas Pott*,
" indeed, your bucher Ile neuer bee,
for Ile come & stanche *your* bloode,
giff any thankes youle giue to mee."
- 324 as he was stanching¹ the Phenix blood,
these words *Thomas a Pott* cann to him proue,²
" Ile neuer take a Ladye of you thus,
but here Ile giue you another choice :
- 328 " heere is a lane of 2 miles longe ;
att either end sett wee will bee ;
the Ladye shall sitt vs betweene,
& soe will wee sett this Ladye ffree."

¹ MS. stanching.—F.² or praic.—F.

- 332 "if thoule doe soe," *Lord Phenix* sayes,
 "Thomas a Pott, as thou dost tell mee ;
 whether I gett her or goe without her,
 heeres 40^l Ile giue itt thee." Lord Phenix
 accepts this
 and gives
 Thomas 40^l.
- 336 & when the Ladye there can stand,
 a womans mind that day to proue ;
 "now, by my ffaith," said this Ladye ffaire,
 "this day Thomas a Pott shall haue his owne loue." Rosamond
 chooses
 Thomas,
- 340 toward Thomas a Pott the Lady shee went,
 to leape behind him hastilye ;
 "nay, abyde a while," sayd *Lord Phenix*,
 "ffor better yett proued thou shalt bee : and is going
 to him,
- 344 "thou shalt stay heere with all thy maids,—
 in number with thee thou hast but 3,—
 Thomas a Pott & Ile goe beyond yonder wall,
 there the one of vs shall dye." when Lord
 Phenix tells
 her to stop,
- 348 & when they came beyond the wall,
 the one wold not the other nye ;
Lord Phenix he had giuen his word
 with Thomas a Pott neuer to ffight. while
 Thomas
 and he fight
 to the death.
- 352 "giue me a Choice," *Lord Phenix* sayes,
 "Thomas a Pott, I doe pray thee ;
 lett mee goe to yonder Ladye ffaire
 to see whether shee be true to thee." He asks
 Thomas
 to let him
 prove her.
- 356 & when hee came that Ladye too,
 vnto that likesome dame sayd hee,
 "now god thee saue, thou Ladye ffaire,
 the heyre of all my Land thoust bee ! He goes to
 her, tells her
- 360 "ffor this Thomas a Potts I haue slaine,
 he hath more then deadlye wounds 2 or 3 ;
 thou art mine owne Ladye," he sayd,
 "& marryed together wee will bee." he has killed
 Thomas,
 and she is
 now his.

- Rosamond
says she'll
- 364 the Ladye said, "if *Thomas* a Potts this day thou
haue slaine,
thou hast slaine a better man than euer was thee ;
& Ile sell all the state of my Lande,
but thoust be hanged on a gallow tree."
- have him
hanged,
- and then
swoons,
- 368 with *that* they Lady shee fell in a soone,
a greeued woman, I wott, was shee :
Lord Phenix hee was readye there,
tooke her in his armes most hastilye ;
- Lord Phenix
- undeceives
her, says
Thomas is
alive,
- 372 " O *Lord*, sweete,¹ & stand on thy ffeete !
this day *Thomas* a Pott aline can bee ;
Ile send ffor thy father, the *Lord* of Arrundale,
& marryed together I will you see.
- and shall
marry her.
- 376 giffe hee will you ² maintaine you well,
both gold and Land you shall haue from me."
- Lord
Arundel
consents too.
- " Ile see *that* wedding," my *Lord* of Arrundale said,
" of my daughters loue *that* is soe faire ;
- 380 & sith itt will no better be,
of all my Land *Thomas* a Pott shall be my heyre."
- So Maids
and Ladies
all, don't
change an
old love
for a new
or a rich one.
- 384 " now all my maids," the Ladye said,
" & Ladyes of England, faire & ffree,
looke you neuer change *your* old loue for no new,
nor neuer change for no pouertye ;
- " ffor I had a louer true of mine owne,³
a seruing man of a small degree ;
- Thomas a
Pott shall
be Lord
Arundel.
- 388 ffrom *Thomas* a Pott Ile turne his name,
& the *Lord* of Arrundale hee shall bee."
- ffinis.

¹ O Lady sweete.—Dyce.² *for* not.—F.³ MS. owme.—F.

William the Conquerour.¹

THE copy of this ballad in *Strange Histories*, 1607, and Chappell's *Popular Music*, i. 94, is entitled "The valiant courage and policy of the Kentishmen with long tails whereby they kept their ancient laws and customs which William the Conquerour sought to take from them—to the tune of *Rogero*." "It was written by Deloney the ballading silk-weaver," who died in or before 1600. Evans, who prints this ballad from another copy (*The Garland of Delight*) extracts the following account of the event which gave rise to it, from *The Lives of the three Norman Kings of England*, by Sir John Heyward, 4to, 1613, p. 97: "Further, by the counsel of Stigand, Archbishop of Canterbury, and of Eglesine, Abbot of St. Augustine's (who at that time were the chief governors of Kent), as the King was riding towards Dover, at Swanscombe, two miles from Gravesend, the Kentishmen came towards him armed, and bearing boughs in their hands as if it had been a moving wood: they enclosed him upon the sudden, and with a firm countenance, but words well tempered with modesty and respect, they demanded of him the use of their ancient liberties and laws: that in other matters they would yield obedience unto him: that without this they desired not to live. The king was content to strike sail to the storm, and to give them a vain satisfaction for the present; knowing right well that the general customs and laws of the residue of the realm would in short

¹ This seems modern by its elegance. The story of the Kentish-Men's preserving their liberties, 1066 Anno. Collected with a Copy in Pepys's Collection of Penny Merrim^{ts}, Vol. 3. p. 39. B. L. In y^e *Strange Histories or Garland of Delight*. To the Tune of Rogero.—P. *Strange Histories* is a different book from

The Garland of Delight. Evans prints this ballad from the latter, but the former is a better authority. As Percy says '*Strange Histories or Garland*,' both here and in his first note to the next poem, I think he may have seen some copy made up of the two Garlands.—W. C.

time overflow these particular places. So pledges being given on both sides, they conducted him to Rochester, and yielded up the county of Kent and the castle of Dover into his power." (Chappell, *Pop. Mus.* i. 94.)

When William conquered England,
 he was crowned by the Archbishop of York;
 punished his opponents,
 and subdued London,
 but Kent withstood him.
 He went to Dover to destroy the castle,
 but the Archbishop of Canterbury,
 the Abbot of St. Austin's,

WHEN william duke of normandy [page 414]
 with glittering ¹ speare & sheild
 had entered into ² ffaire England,
 4 & told ³ his ffoes in ffeild,
 vpon christmas day, in soleme ⁴ sort,
 then was hee crowned heere
 by Albert, Archbishopp of yorke,
 8 & many a noble peere.
 which being done, he changed quite
 the customes of England,⁵
 & punished ⁶ such as daylye sought
 12 his statutes to withstand.
 & many cytyes hee subdued,
 ffaire London with the rest,
 but ⁷ then Kent did still withstand his power,⁸
 16 & did his lawes detest.
 to douer then he tooke the ⁹ way,
 the castle downe for ¹⁰ to flinge
 which Aueragus had ¹¹ builded there,
 20 the noble Brittain ¹² Kinge.
 but when ¹³ the braue Archbishopp bold
 of Canterbury knew,
 the Abbott of S^t. Austines eke,
 24 with all their gallant crew,

¹ glistering.—P.

² There's a *w* seemingly before the *f*.
 —F.

⁴ solemn.—P.

³ foil'd.—P.
⁵ of this Land.—P.

⁶ punisht.—P.

⁸ force.—P.

¹⁰ Del.—P.

¹² British.—P.

⁷ del.—P.

⁹ his.—P.

¹¹ del.—P.

¹³ which when.—P.

- thé¹ sett themselues in order² bright,
 these mischeefes to preuent,
 with all the yeomen braue & bold
 28 *that* were in ffruitfull Kent. and the
Kentish
yeomen
- att Canterbury they did³ meete
 vpon one certaine day,
⁴ with sword, with sheild, with bill, with bow,
 32 to stopp⁵ the conquerours way. met at
Canterbury,
- “⁶ let vs not liue like bondmen pore
 to ffrenchmen in their pryde,
 but lett vs⁷ keepe our ancye[n]t lybertyes,
 36 what chance soeuer tyde⁸ ! and resolved
- “ & rather lett vs⁹ dye in bloody ffeild,
 with manly courage prest,
 then to endure the seruile yoke
 40 *which* wee thus much¹⁰ detest ! ” not to
submit.
- thus did the Kentish Commons crye
 vnto their leaders still,
 & then they marched¹¹ in warlike sort,
 44 & stood att swansco¹² hill. They
marched to
Swanscomb
Hill,
- & vnder a wood¹³ they hidd themselues,
 vnder they shadow greene,
 wherby¹⁴ to gett them vantage good
 48 of all their ffoes vnseene.¹⁵ hid in a
wood,

¹ they.—P.² armour.—P.³ did they.—P.⁴ sword & spear . . . & bow.—P.⁵ And Stopt.—P.⁶ yeild like.—P.⁷ del.—P.⁸ so e'er betyde.—P.⁹ del.—P.¹⁰ so much.—P.¹¹ And so marcht forth.—P.¹² Swanscomb.—P.¹³ There in the woods.—P.¹⁴ Therby.—P.¹⁵ And for y^e conq^rs coming there
They privily laid wait,
And therby suddenly appal'd
his lofty high conceit.—P.

- and on
William's
approach
marched out,
each carry-
ing a bough. 52 & when ¹ thé spyed his approche
in place where they did stand,
they marched fforth to hemm him in ;
eche man tooke ² a bow in his hande.
- William sees
a wood
moving
towards
him, 56 ³ before, behind, & on eche syde
as hee did cast his eyes,⁴
he espyed these woods ⁵ in sober pace
approach to him ffull nye.
- and quakes
for fear. 60 The shape of men he cold not see,
the bowes did hyde them soe ;
& how ⁶ his hart did quake for feare
to see a fforrest goe !
- The Kentish
men hem
him in,
draw their
swords,
throw down
their boughs, 64 but when the Kentish men had thus
enclosed the Conquerour round,
then suddenly they drew their swords,
& threw their bouges to ground ;
- sound a
charge,
and deploy. 68 their banners they displayed ⁷ in sight,
their trumpetts sounded ⁸ a charge,
the rattling drummes strike vp alarme,⁹
their troopes stretch fforth to the Large,¹⁰
- William is
aghast, 72 ¹¹ wheratt this dreadfull Conquerour
theratt was sore agazed,¹²
& most in perill when he thought ¹³
all perills had beene past.

¹ For when as they did.—P.² del. *tooke*.—P.³ Percy marks to come in here:
So *that* up to *the conquerors* sight
Amazed as he stood
They seem'd to be a walking grove
Or else a moving wood.—F.⁴ eye.—P.⁵ spyed the wood with.—P.⁶ now with fear did quake.—P.⁷ display.—P.⁸ sounde.—P.⁹ Their . . . alarms.—P.¹⁰ out at large.—P.¹¹ The conq^r with all his train
Were hereat sore aghast.—P.¹² aghast or agast.—P.¹³ they thought.—P.

- ¹ therefore vnto the Kentishmen
 an Embassadoure he sent,
 to know they ² cause they tooke in hand
 76 these warres, to what entent.¹ and sends
 to ask what
 the Kentish
 men want.
- to whom they made this short reply,
 “ffor liberty wee le fight,³
 And to enioy *King* Edwards the Confessors ⁴ Lawes
 80 which wee doe hold arright.⁵” [page 415]
 Edward's
 laws.”
- “why ⁶ then,” said the dreadfull Conquerour,
 “you shall haue what you will ;
 your libertyes, your ancyent customes,⁷
 84 soe *that* you wilbe still ; William
 agrees to
- “ & eche thing else *which* you will craue
 with reason att my hands,
 soe *that* you will acknowledge me
 88 cheefe *King* of ffaire England.” give them
 all they ask,
- the Kentishmen therevpon agreed,⁸
 & layd all ⁹ their armes asyde ;
 & by this meanes *King* Edwards lawes
 92 doe still in kent ¹⁰ abyde. and the
 Kentish men
 lay down
 their arms.
- & in no place in England else
 such customes ¹¹ doe remaine,
 as they by their manlike ¹² policye
 96 did of duke william gaine. Thus Kent
 alone keeps
 its old
 customs.

ffinis.

¹⁻¹ Unto the Kentishmen he sent
 The cause to understand
 For what intent & for what cause
 They took this war in hand.—P.
² the.—P. ³ we fight.—P.
⁴ del.—P.
⁵ our right.—P.
⁶ del. *why*.—P.

⁷ Your ancient customs & your laws.
 —P. See note at the end of the volume.
 —F.
⁸ agreed thereon.—P.
⁹ delend *all*.—P.
¹⁰ In Kent doe still.—P.
¹¹ those Customs.—P.
¹² Which they by manly.—P.

The : Downyng of Henery the : i : his Children : ¹

“THIS,” says Percy, “as well as the foregoing, is an excellent ballad.” To us it seems the song of a very pedestrian Muse. The subject is excellent. It is preserved also in *Strange Histories*.

When
Henry I. had
subdued the
French,

WHEN : as royall King ² henery the ffirst
had ffoyled his ffoes in ffrance,
& spent the pl[e]asant springe
4 his honors ³ to aduance.

he came
back to
England,

then into England he returned ⁴
with ffame & victorye,
what t[i]me the subiects of this Land
8 receiued him ioyfullye.

but left his
children in
France,—

but att his home returne,
his children left hee still
in ffrance, ffor to soiourne
12 to purchase learned skill.

Duke
William,
Lord
Richard,

Duke william with his brother dere,
Lord Richard was his name,
who was the Erle of Chester then,
16 w[ho] ⁵ thirsted after ffame ;

¹ A.D. 1120. To the tune of *The Ladies Daughter*. This, as well as the foregoing, is an excellent ballad. Collated with a copy in *Strange Histories or The Garland of Delight*, 12^{mo}, Canto 3^d, B. L., in Pepys Collection of Penny Mer-

rim^o, vol. 3. p. 14.—P.

² After our roy! king.—P.

³ honour.—P.

⁴ Into fair England he return'd.—P.

⁵ and thirsted.—P.

the *Kings* faire daughter eke,
 the Lady Marry bright,
 with diuers noble peeres,
 20 & many a hardy Knight ;

Lady
 Mary,—
 with peers
 and knights.

all these he left ¹ together there,
 in pleasure ² and delight,
 when *that* our King to England came
 24 after the bloodye fight.

but when faire flora had
 drawen fforth her treasure drye,
 then winter sadd and cold ³
 28 with hoarye head drew niee.⁴

When
 summer was
 over,
 and winter
 came on,

then these princes all with one assent ⁵
 prepared all things meete
 to passe the seas into ⁶ faire England,
 32 whose sight to them was sweete.

the princes

“ to England lett vs hye,”
 this euerye one did say,
 “ ffor Christamas draweth nye ;
 36 no longer lett vs stay,

wanted to

spend
 Christmas in
 England,

but let vs ⁷ spend the Merry Christamas time ⁸
 in game and pleasant sort,⁹
 where Lady pleasure doth attend
 40 with many a princely sport.”

and enjoy
 themselves.

¹ were left.—P.

² pleasures.—P.

³ cold and sad.—P.

⁴ nigh.—P.

⁵ Those princes all. . . cons[ent].—P.

⁶ for.—P.

⁷ [*let vs*] del.—P.

⁸ MS. time.—F.

⁹ within our Father's court.—P.

- They set sail, to seas ¹ these princes went,
 full ffraught ² with mirth & ioy ;
 but all their merriment ³
 44 returned to greet ⁴ anoye.
- but the
 sailors got
 drunk,
 for the saylors & the shipmen, ⁵
 throughe ffoule excesse of wine,
 they were soe amazed *that* ⁶ on the sea
 48 they showed themselues like swine.
- no one could
 steer,
 the sterne ⁷ no man cold guide,
 the *Master* sleeping Lay,
 the saylors all besyde
 52 went reeling euerye way,
- and the ship
 went at
 random.
 soe *that* the shipp att randome rode
 vpon the ffominge ffloode,
 wherby in perill of their liues
 The princes 56 these princes ⁸ alway stoode,
 which caused distilling ⁹ teares
 from their faire eyes to ffall,
 their harts were filled with ffeare, ¹⁰
 60 No Ioy ¹¹ they had att all, [page 416]
- weep
 and fear,
 thé wished themselues vpon the land
 1000 times and more ;
 then att they last ¹² they come in sight
 but at last
 see England 64 of Englands pleasant shore.

¹ To sea.—P.

That y telle an evel lype,
 Mon that doth him into shyne
 Whil the weder is wod ;
 For, be he come to the depe.
 He may wrynge hard ant wepe,
 Ant be of drery mod.

'Ofte rap reweth ;'
 Quoth Hendyng.

Reliquiæ Antiquæ, i. 115.—F.² Fulfill'd.—P.³ this their merrim^t —P.⁴ did turn, to dear.—P.⁵ The sailors . . . Shipmen all.—P.⁶ were so disguis'd *that*.—P.⁷ A.-S. *steór-ern*, the steering-place,
the stern.—F.⁸ The princes.—P.⁹ which made distilling.—P.¹⁰ fears.—P.¹¹ no helpe.—P.¹² And at the last.—P.

- then euery one began
to turne these siges ¹ to smiles, and smile.
their coulours ² pale and wan
68 a cheerfull looke Exiles.
- the princelye Lords most louinglye
their Ladyes doe embrace ; Lords
embrace
their ladies,
³ "In england," quoth they "wee shalbe
72 within a litle space." ³
- "take comforts to *your selues*," and all take
thus euerye one did say, comfort.
"& be no more dismayd ;
76 behold the Land att Last ! " ⁴
- ⁵ but as they did thus cheerfullye
their comfort to attaine, But at that
moment
then suddainlye vpon a rocke
80 the shipp itt burst in twayne. ⁵ the ship
strikes, and
breaks in
two.
- with *that* a greiuous srike ⁶
among them there was made,
& euery one did seeke
84 on something to be stayd. Every one
seeks a
support,
- but all in vaine ! such helpe thé lacke. ⁷
the shipp soe soone did sinke
that in the seas ⁸ they were constrained
88 to take their latest drinke. but all are
whelmed,

¹ their sighes. - P.² colour. - P.³⁻³ For now in England shall we be
Quoth they in little space. - P.⁴ then they said
Behold the Land at last
Then be &c.

The worst is gone & past. - P.

⁵⁻⁵ While they did this joyful hope
With comfort entertaine
The goodly ship upon a rock
In sunder burst in twaine. - P.⁶ shriek. - P.⁷ they sought. - P.⁸ sea. - P.

- there might you see the Lords
and Ladyes ffor to lye
amidst the salt sea ffome,
92 with many a greiuous crye
- notwith-
standing
their efforts,
still laboured for their liues ¹ defence
with streched armes abroad,
& lifting vpp their Lilly hands
96 for helpe with one accordd.
- except Duke
Richard,
who gets
into the
cockboat ;
100 but as good ffortune wold,
the sweete young duke did gett
into the Cockebotte then,
where safelye he did sitt.
- but he turns
to rescue his
sister,
104 but when he heard his si[s]ter ² crye,
the *Kings* faire daughter deere,
he turned his boate to take her in
whose death did draw soe neere ;
- but while he turned his boate
to take his sister in,³
the rest such shifft did make
108 in seas as they did swimn,
- others crowd
into the
boat,
and all are
drowned.
112 for to ⁴ the boate a number gott,
soe many att the Last,⁵
that the boate & all *that* was ⁶ therin
was drowned & ouer cast.
- of Lords & gentlemen,
& ladyes ffaire of fface,
not one escaped then ;
116 this was ⁷ a heauinesse !

¹ labouring . . . life's.—P.]² sister.—P.³ he strove to take
His sweet young sister in.—P.⁴ That to.—P.⁵ as at the last.—P.⁶ The boat . . . were.—P.⁷ Which was.—P.

	60 ^{tye} and ten ¹ were drowned in all,	70 perish.
	not one escaped death	
	but one pore bucher, who had swoome	One, a
120	himselfe quite out of breath.	butcher,
		alone
		escapes.
	which was ² most heauy newes	The King is
	vnto our comlye Kinge ;	sad at the
	all mirth hee did refuse, ³	news,
		and refuses
124	this word when he did ⁴ bringe,	all mirth.
	where by ⁵ this meanes no child wee ⁶ had	No child
	his Kingdome to succede.	succeeds him
	⁷ his sisters sonne was crowned <i>Kinge</i> ,	but his
		nephew.
128	as wee may plainly reede. ⁷	
	ffinis.	

¹ Thre Score & ten.—P.

² This was.—P.

³ Who did all mirth refuse.—P.

⁴ they did.—P.

⁵ For.—P.

⁶ he.—P.

⁷⁻⁷ Whereby his sister's Son was king,
As you shall plainly read.—P.

Murdering of Edward the fourth his sonnes.¹

THIS ballad differs very slightly from that published in the 1659 edition of *The Crown Garland of Golden Roses* (reprinted by the Percy Society, ed. Mr. Chappell), and reprinted from that work in Evans' *Old Ballads*, iii. 38. The piece is there intituled "An excellent song made of the successors of King Edward the Fourth, to the tune of O man in desperation." It contains three stanzas more than the present version, one after v. 8, one after v. 28, one after v. 126. Else the differences are merely verbal.

The ballad is evidently the production of a professional hand. It tells its story in a business-like manner, with no great excitement either of the imagination or the feelings. Pegasus here appears as a sort of cab-horse. His driver awaited on his "stand" any call that might be made for him. Poor Pegasus, well broken to harness, jogged steadily away in the required direction, when the call came,—to the Tower, it might be, or to Bosworth Field, or to Swanscombe. His pace seldom varied. His caracolling and flying days were past and gone. He did his work in a sober plodding style, not without an occasional thought of the "feed" that might reward his efforts.

There is another ballad on this same subject—and of no greater merit—in the 1612 edition of the *Crown Garland*, also reprinted by Evans.

"The greater proportion of the ballads are historical," says Mr. Chappell in his Preface to the Percy Society reprint of

¹ This is but of moderate excellence, tho' written so late as James the 1st's Time. See Stan^o 31, 32. There is a

Song on this Subject, but very different from this, in the printed Collection, 12^{mo}, Vol. ii. p. 100.—P.

the 1612 edition, "and from early times down to the end of the seventeenth century the common people knew history chiefly from ballads. Aubrey mentions that his nurse could repeat the History of England from the Conquest down to the time of Charles I. in ballads." Could any nurses of the present day perform such a feat?

<p>WHEN: as the <i>King</i> of England dyed, Edward the fourth by name, he left 2 sonnes of tender yeeres 4 for to succeed the same.</p>	<p>When Edward IV. died he left two young sons.</p>
<p>then <i>Richard</i>, duke of Glouster, desiring <i>Kingly</i> sway, desired¹ by treason how to make 8 his brothers sonnes away.</p>	<p>Glo'ster and Buckingham plot to kill them,</p>
<p>betwixt them they Layd downe their plott,² & straight together went to Stony Stratford, where they mett 12 the <i>King</i> incontinent.</p>	<p>[page 417] and meet the young King at Stony Stratford.</p>
<p>the sweete young <i>King</i> did entertaine his vnckle Louinglye,³ not thinkinge of their⁴ vile intent, 16 nor of their⁵ trecherye.</p>	
<p>& then the duke of Buck[i]ngham, to sett abroach this thinge, he began a quarrell for the noncte 20 with them <i>that</i> kept the Kinge.</p>	<p>Buckingham</p>

¹ contrived.—P.

² Then he & Buckingham did plot.—

P.

³ Lines 13, 14 are written before l. 11

in the MS., but are marked at the side with a bracket.—F.

⁴ his.—P.

⁵ his.—P.

- arrests Lord Gray, & then they did arrest Lord Gray,
the Brother to the Queene ;
- Lord Rivers, her other brother, the Lord RIVERS,
24 in durance as they had beene.
- and Sir T. Vaughan, Sir Thomas Vaughan then Likewise ¹
did there and then ² arrest ;
- the King's friends, soe was the King of all his freinds
28 suddenly dispossesst.
- and has them put to death. in breeffe, these Noblemen were sent
to Pontfracte Castle soone,
32 where thé, [in] ³ short time afterwards,
to death was eche man doone.
- Glo'ster and Buckingham take the King to London, then forth they brought they King alone,
towards London with great speed,
vsing their perswasions full ffalselye ⁴
36 not to Mislike *that* deede.
- and lodge him in the Bishop's Palace. & when to London *that* they came,
ffor him they had prepared
the Bishopp's pallace ffor the nonct,
40 but safiye vnder guard.
- Glo'ster names himself Protector, & then duke Richard takes vpon him
the keeping of the King,
naming himselfe Lord protectore,
44 his wished ends to bringe ;
- and the Cardinal desiring ⁵ how then ⁶ in his mind
to gett the other brothers too,
the *which* the Cardinall vndertooke
48 ffull Cuningly to doo.

¹ in like wise.—P.² They then and there.—P.³ in.—P.⁴ their false persuasions.—P.⁵ Devizing.—P.

contriving, then how.—P.

& then the Cardinall in great hast
 vnto the Queene doth come ;
 vsing his *perswasions* full ffalselye,
 52 then he gott her other sonne.

persuades
 the Queen to
 give up her
 other son.

then they both in ffull great hast
 vnto the tower were sent,
 where they liued but short space,
 56 ffor death did them *prevent*.

Glo'ster puts
 them both in
 the Tower,

then Duke *RICHARD*, hauing ffound this meanes
 to worke these 2 princes death,
 procured one of *JAMES TIRRELI'S* hired men ¹
 60 ffull soone to stopp their breath :

and hires
 two men,

James Dighton & Miles fforrest both,
 these 2 vile wicked men,²
 these 2 were made the instruments
 64 to worke this murder then.

Dighton and
 Forrest,

these princes being asleepe in bedd,
 lyinge arme in arme,
 not thinking of their vile entents
 68 nor thinking any harme,

who, when
 the princes
 are asleep in
 bed,

these villaines, in the ffetherbedd
 did wrapp them up in hast,
 & with the clothes soe smothered them
 72 till liffe and breath was past.

smother
 them
 with the
 feather-bed.

& then they both were buryed,
 where no man yett doth know.
 but marke how god, in his iudgment iust,
 76 did his right reuengment showe !

But God
 takes
 vengeance
 for this.

¹ one S^r James.—P.

² these vile and wicked men.—P.

- for betwixt those DUKES within short space
such a discord there was bredd,
as Buckingham to please the *King*
was fforcet to loose his head.
- Buckingham
is beheaded. 80
- & then *Richard* in his Kinglye seate
no ease nor rest cold ffind,
the murthering of his nephews did
so sore molest his minde.
- Richard 84
- he neuer cold haue quiett sleepe,
his liffe itt stood in ffear,
his hand was on his dagger straight,
that no man might come him neere.
- never sleeps,
is always in
fear of his
life, 88 [page 418]
- but att the Last Erle Richmond came
with such a puissant band,
that this ffalse King [he] was inforced
in his defence to stande.
- and at last
Richmond 92
- then meeting him att Bosworth ffelld,¹
they fought with harts full faine;
yett ffor shedding of these princes blood,
god caused King *Richard* to be slaine.
- fightes him
at Bosworth, 96
- and he is
slain,
and set
naked and
mangled on
a horse.
- & being dead, vpon a horsse
all naked he was borne,
his fflesh [all²] cutt & mangled,
his haire all rent and torne.
- 100
- & then Erle Richmond worthelye,
ffor this his deede of ffame,
of England hee was crowned *King*,
Henery the 7th by name,
- Richmond is
crowned
Henry VII., 104
- of whom most royall lines did springe,
that ffamous King of might,
Henery the 8th, our³ noble deeds
our chronicles doe well recyte.
- is succeeded
by Henry
VIII., 108

¹ See *Bosworth Feilde* below.—F.² all cut.—P.³ whose.—P.

when *that* hee dyed, hee left his Land & crowne
to Edward his sweete sonne,
whose gracyous raigne all England may rue
112 his time soe soone is come. he by
Edward VI.,

& then his Sister Marye came,
next princesse of this Land;
but in her time blind ignorance
116 against gods truth did stand, he by Mary

which caused many a mans blood,
to be shedd in ruefull case;
then god did England once regard,¹
120 & turned all these stormes to grace. (who killed
the
martyrs),

ffor then the other sister came,
Elizabeth our Late Queene,
& shee released her peoples harts
124 ffrom greeffe & eirrou[r]s² cleane. she by
Elizabeth,
our late
Queen,

& then the³ mightye Iames did come,
of king HENERys royall race;
whose happy dayes our Lord preserue,
128 grant him Long time & space! and she by
James I.,
whom God
preserve!

ffinis.

¹ England once more God did regard.
—P.

² errours.—P.
³ MS. the [blotted] the.—F.

The : Fall : of : Prince[s:]¹

THE transitoriness of the glory of this life was a thing that our early writers were much impressed with, a theme on which they often wrote.

a! man hab munde
þat of þis lif þer commiþ ende :
of erþe and axen² is ure kunde,
and in-to duste we schulliþ wende :

was the burden of many a sermon and song. As one of the former preaches (*Phil. Soc. Trans.* 1858, Pt. ii. p. 2) to its non-washing hearers of former days, why should men be proud or expect to live?

Man! of þi schuldres and of þi side
þou miȝte hunti luse and flee!
of such a park i ne hold no pride;
þe dere nis nauȝte þat þou miȝte sle.

What is the "gentil man" but a sack stuffed full of dirt and dung that stinketh loathly and is black? When once the soul is out of his body, a viler carrion is there none. And,

þeiȝ man be rich of lond and lede,
and holdiþ festis ofte and lome,
hit nis no doute he sal be dede,
to ȝelde reeking at þe dome.

Worldly weal comes and goes, is but deceit, dirt, guile, and vanity; man's life is but a shadow; now he is, and now he is not. Death spares none. Beware then of "helle pine."

Why, asks another,³

Whi is þis worlde biloued þat fals is & veyn?

Its power passes away like a brittle pot that is fresh and gay. It

¹ N.B. This song should seem to have been wrote soon after the Death of Henry 8. Vid. St. ult.—P.

² ashes.—F.

³ *Hymns to the Virgin and Christ*, E. E. T. Soc., p. 86, 1867.—F.

is full of sin, false in its business, false in its pleasures : unstable as water, it cannot excel :

It is rapir to bileeue the waginge wijnde
þan þe changeable world þat makip men so blinde.

Solomon, Sampson, Absalom, Duke Jonatas, Cæsar, the Rich Man of the Gospels, Tullius, Aristotle :

Where ben þese worpi þat were heere to-forn ?
Boþe kingis & bischopis ? her power is al lorn.

Lydgate translated his *Falles of Princes* from Boccaccio to point the same moral, and few Early English religious poems can be found without it, "þat worldli blis is but a þing of vanite." (*Hymns to Virgin*, p. 81, l. 85-6.) The writer of the present poem preaches a like sermon, that life is short and none can resist Death's mace. If all the heroes of the world could not do so, how can we? They have died, and we must all follow them as fast as we may. But the name of his last hero sounds odd to our ears, though it justifies the impression that Mr. Froude says the king made on his contemporaries: he was evidently to them the "Solomon in all his glory" of his age :

if wisdom or manhood by any meanes cold
haue saued a mans liffe to endure for ever,
then King Henery the 8th soe noble and soe bold,
out of this wyde world he wold haue passed neuer.

Though the climax is to us an anti-climax, it is useful as a sign of the times.

THE : hye god most gracyous, his¹ goodnesse alone, God, after
thou hast² made vpon the earth, beast, bird and tree, creating
Angells in heauen, & ministers to thy throne, beasts, birds,
4 the sun & the moone, the Element & skye. angels,
att Last thou made [man] of³ noblest degree, sun, and
after thine owne likenesse, such was thy grace. moon,
Lawde wee him therffore, for happy wee bee ; made man.
8 But heere wee beene sure to liue but a space.

¹ whose.—P.

² Hath.—P.

³ madest man of.—P.

- But where
are Adam
and Eve?
12
- Where is Adam our first progenitor,
of¹ bewtye & of cuning, & ² neuer had no peere?
& Eue his companyon, *that* most oryent ffigure?
he *King*, & shee *Queene*, ouer all this world in fferre;
yet through their great ffalls soone changed we all our
cheer[e,]
that all their posterytye shold ffollow their trace;
death hath them deuoured, this matter is clere;
16 but ³ heere wee beene sure to liue but a space.
- Dead. And
we can live
but a space.
- Where are
David,
Samson,
Hercules,
and Duke
Joshua?
Their glory's
gone,
and we don't
live here
long.
20
- Where is *King* David the doughtye, *that* Golyas ouer-
came?
or duke Iosua the gentle, of him what shold I tell?
or Samson *that* ruled the Lyon like a lambe?
or Hercules *that* quelled the porter of hell?
where is duke Iosua *that* euer bare the bell?
their pompe & their glory is nowe very basse.⁴
lett this be a mirrouer alwayes in our sight,
24 *that* heere we beene sure to liue but a space.
- Where are
Alexander,
Nebuchad-
nezzar,
Augustus,
Hannibal?
[page 419]
All dead, and
we must
follow them.
Where are
Hector,
Rowland,
and Oliver?
28
- Where is Alexander the mightye, *that* conquered this
world wide,
& gouerne att ⁵ one day as himselfe did luste?
or Nabuchondozer, *that* prince proud of price ⁶?
or Augustus, with his power to them was full Iust ⁷?
where is Haniball the hardy, threw all in the duste,
and brought all roome ⁸ into a sorry stay?
All these be dead and gone, and after them wee must,⁹
32 and wee must all ffollow as fast as wee may.
- Where is Hector of Troy, *that* one of the 9 worthies was?
& worthy sure he was soe for to bee;
or Rowland & Oliuer, as itt came to passe,¹⁰
36 in number they were doughtye men all 3,

¹ for.—P.² that.—P.⁴ base.⁵ govern'd it.—P.⁶ full of pride.—P.² that.—P.⁷ that was with his power full (right)
just.—P.⁸ Rome.—P.⁹ go after them we must.—P.¹⁰ MS. paste.—F.

- but yett with death they cold not agree
 in this world to haue no Longer space.
 death, all their glory from them he did ring,¹
 40 & wee must all follow them in a short space. Dead, as we
shall soon
be.
- Where is Godfrey of Bullen, *that* Troian soe stout?
 or Mithyrates, where is hee?
 or Iulyus Machabeus *that* went not about?
 44 or Guy of warwicke, as doughtye as hee?
 where is Huon² of Burdeaux, where is hee?
 these cold not refuse death with his mace³;
 therfor marke my sayings all you *that*⁴ heere bee,
 48 for heere wee beene sure to liue but a space. Where are
Godfrey,
Mithridates,

Guy of
Warwick,
Huon of
Bordeaux?

Dead, and we
can't live
here long.
- Where is Iason the doughtye *that* woone the fleece of
 gold,
 or Acctollen⁵ *that* was called the scorge of god,
 or Phebus, the wisest man vpon the mould?
 52 or Acchilles *that* was called the Troians rodd?
 where is King Herod the herlott, was⁶ worsse then
 madd,⁷
 for with his owne Kinsmen himselfe he did deface?
 Loe! heere you may see, ffor all this noble⁸ blood,
 56 *that* here we beene sure to liue but a space. Where are
Jason,

Attila,
Phebus,
Achilles,
and King
Herod?

We can live
here but a
space.
- where is the Emperour *that* the bold clarke was
 called⁹? Where are
 the Sarasins doe remember him, & shall doe for
 euer¹⁰;
 or Iulyus Cæsar, with¹¹ head balde,
 60 *that* brought Roome & the Romans to a sorry stay? Julius
Cæsar,

¹ wring did he.—P.² Sir Huon.—P.³ ? MS. mate, *altered to mace*.—F.⁴ MS. *that* you.—F.⁵ Antiochus.—P.⁶ who was.—P.⁷ wood.—P.⁸ hye.—P.⁹ Was it Charlemagne (l. 77)? He encouraged learning.—T. Wright.¹⁰ aye.—P.¹¹ with his.—P.

- and Nero ? where is Nero the cruell, *that* ruled soe many a day ?
 these cold not refuse death with his mace ;
 Dead, therefore marke my saying, all you *that* heere bee,¹
 as we soon shall be. 64 for wee beene sure to liue but a space.
- Where are Pyrrhus,
 Dulcina,
 Sir Volen,
 Troylus, 68 or Troylus of Troy *that* loued well to springe ?
 Tamburlain ? where is Tamberlaine *that* ouercame the Turke [in
 fight],⁴
that all the world did bring in dread & in doubt of
 his deuilish face ?
 Remember that we must die. lett this be a mirrour allwayes in our sight,
 72 *that* heere wee beene sure to liue but a space.
- Where are Arthur,
 Tristram,
 Gawaine,
 Lancelot, 76 or Sir Lancelott dulake, a *Knight* of Chiualrye ?
 Charlemagne ? where is *King* Charlemaine⁶ of ffrance, from them
 wold⁷ neuer flee ?
 yett these cold not refuse death with his mace.
 Dead too, and we cannot live long. 80 *that* here [we⁸] beene sure to liue but a litle⁹ space.

¹ hear may.—P. See Dr. Robson's note below on *leane*, l. 72 of *Sir John Butler*.—F.

² Pyrrhus.—P. I can't find Dulcina and Volen.—F.

³ ? Robert of Sicily :

Yn Cysylle was a nobulle kyng,
 Fayre and stronge, and some dele zynge . .
 The kyng was calde kyng Roberd,
 Never man in hys tyme wyste hym aferde.
Halliwell's Nugæ Poeticæ, p. 49.

According to Froissart (translated) he
 "was a great astronomyre, and full of

great science"; and in 1529 a play,
 "Kynge Robart of Cicylye," was per-
 formed at the High Cross at Chester. *ib.*
 p. 71.—F.

⁴ in fight.—P.

⁵ The latter half of each of lines 73-7
 is written in the MS. as the first half of
 the line succeeding it.—F.

⁶ Only two strokes and the dot of the
i in the MS. for *in*.—F.

⁷ Who would.—P. MS. is right.
 Compare l. 85 in the next stanza.—F.

⁸ wee.—P.

⁹ short.—P.

- Where is *King Richard*, was called Cwer de Lyon ?
 or *Saladine* the good Sarazen, where is hee ?
 or *Edward* the 3^d *that* wan Gasconie & Gaines ¹ ?
 84 or *King Henery* the 5th, a prince of Chiualrye ?
 where is duke Charles of Burgundye, from them did
 neuer flee ?
 yett these cold not refuse death *with* his mace ;
 wherfor marke my saying, all you that here bee,
 88 *that* here wee beene sure to liue but a space.
- ffor if wisdome or manhood by any meanes cold
 haue saued a mans liffe to endure for euer,
 then *King Henery* the 8th soe noble and soe bold,
 92 out of this wyde world he wold haue ² passed neuer.
 but death, where he comes, all things doth disseuer ;
 where-euer he aproches, he will take place.
 good *Lord* ! bring vs to thy blisse, there to remaine
 for euer ;
 96 ffor heere we be sure to liue but a space.
- ffinis.

Where are
 Cour-de-
 Lion,
 Saladin,
 Edward III.,
 Henry V.,

Duke
 Charles ?

All dead.
 Take heed,
 then,
 we shall soon
 die too.

If manhood

could have
 saved a man,
 Henry VIII.
 would not
 have died.

But death
 takes all.

God, bring us
 to thy bliss !
 Here we can
 live not
 long.

¹ Guisnes. Gasconie *may be* Gascoine.—F.

² One stroke only for *u* in the MS.—F.

The nutt browne mayd¹

THIS is but a torn and tattered copy of one of the most exquisite pieces of late Mediæval poetry.

The oldest copy extant is that inserted by Arnold in his *Chronicle*, the first edition of which appeared at Antwerp in 1502. The poem was even then, we may infer, considered old and precious for its antiquity.

See General Introduction to Vol. II. Part I. and Introduction to *A Jigge*; also Hazlitt's *Early Popular Poetry*, ii. 271.

1

Men complain that,	2	RIGHT & noe wronge, these men amonge, [page 420]
		as [on] women doe Complaine,
		affirming this, what a thing itt is
	4	of a labour spent in vaine
		[To love them well; for never a dele ^a
		They love a man agayne;]
do what they will to win a woman's love,		for lett a man doe what he can
	8	their ffavor to obtaine,

¹ Prior's Poems, Vol. I. p. 160. This is a very imperfect and mutilated Copy. That printed by Prior is very correct. There are 40 or 50 lines left out of this

Copy, and several of them transpos'd. —P. The copy below is from Richard Hill's MS., ab. 1500–30 A.D.—F.

THE NUTBROWN MAYDE.

[From the Balliol MS. 354, marked Arch. P. 1. 6.]

<p style="text-align: center;">1</p> <p>² Be it right, or wronge, Thes [leaf 210b] men a-monge on wymen do complayn; affermyng this, how <i>that</i> it is a labowre spent in vayn to love them welle; for neuer a dele^a they love a man a-gayn:</p>	<p>for late a man do what he can, ther favowre to attayn, yet, yf a newe to them pursue, ther ferste trew lover than labowreth for nowght; for from her thowght he is a banysshed man.</p>
--	--

& if a new to them persue,
 the first true louer then
 he labours for nought,—fur from his thought,—
 12 for he is a banished man.

when a new
 lover comes
 the old one
 is turned off.

2

¹ And I say not nay,—but as you said,
 itt is both written and sayd,—
 but womens ffaith, who soe sayth,
 16 [is] right vtterly decayde ;
 yett neuertheles, right good wittnesse
 in this cause may be Layd :
 that they ² Loue true, & doe continue,
 20 reccords the nutt-browne ³ maide :
 ffor when her loue came her to proue,
 he come to make his moane ; ^a
^b he sayd, “ alas ! thus stands the case,
 24 I am a banished maun.

But though
 some say
 that

women's
 faith is
 decayed,

yet the
 Nut-brown
 Maid's love
 continued
 true.

Her lover
 came to
 prove her ;

said : “ I am
 a banished
 man.

2

¹ I say not nay, but that alle day
 it is both wreten & said
 that woman's feyth, Is, as who seyth,
 alle vtterly decayde ;
 But neuerthelesse, Right good wittnes
 In this case myght be layde,
 that they love trew, & conteneue,
 Recorde *the* Nutbrown mayde,
 which, whan her love cam her to *prove*,
 to her to make his mone, ^a
 wolde not departe ; for in her hart
 she loved but hym alone.

I am the knyght ; I com by nyght,
 as secrete as I can ;
^b saying, “ alas ! thus stonddith *the* caas,
 I am a banysshed man.”

4

PUELLA.*

³
 Than betwen us let us discvsse
 what was alle *the* maner
 Betwen them two : we wille also
 telle alle the payn in fere
 that she was in. Now I begyn,
 so *that* ye me answer ;
 wherfor, alle ye that present be,
 I pray you, geve an ere.

And I *your* wille for to fulfille
 In this wille not Refuse ;
 trustyng to shew, In wordis fewe
that men have an ylle use
 (To *ther* own shame) wymen to blame,
 and caverselesse them accuse :
 therfor to you I answer now,
 alle wymen to excuse,—
 Myn own hart dere, *with* you what
 chere ?
 I pray you, telle me a-non ;
 ffor, in my mynd, of alle mankynd
 I love but you alon.

² MS. they that.—F.

³ MS. browme.—F.

* Puella and Squire are at the right sides of the MS.—F.

3

I've done a deed for which I must die,
or flee
like an outlaw
to the woods. I'm a banished man."

1 " ffor itt standeth soe *that* a dedde is doe
wherby great harme may growe ;
my destynye is ffor to dye
28 a shamefull death, I trowe,
or else ffor to fflie ; the one must bee.
none other reed I know
but to withdraw my-selfe Like an outlawe,
32 & betake me to my bowe.
& therefore, adew, my owne hart trew,
they best way *that* I can
is *that* I to the greenwood goe,
36 my selfe a banished man."

4

The Maid laments the shortness of her bliss.
But she'll not part from her love.

2 " Alas ! " shee said, " what is all this worlds blisse ?
itt changeth as doth the Moone.
the summers day in the Lusty may
40 is darke before the noone.
I heare you say ffarwell. nay ! nay !
wee will not depart soe soone.
but why say you soe, or whither will you goe ?
44 alas ! what haue you done ?

5

SQUIRE.

1 It stonddith so ; a dede is * doo
wherof gret harme shalle grow :
My destynye ys for to dye
A shamfulle deth, I trow ;
Or ellis to flee : the on mvste be.
Non other way I know,
But to withdraw as an owtlawe [leaf 211]
And take me to my bow.
wherfor, a-dewe, Myn own hart trew !
Non other rede I can :
ffor I mvste to The gren-wode go,
alon, a banysshed man.

6

PUELLA.

2 O lorde ! what is this worldis blis,
that changith as *the* mone ?
the somers day In lusty may
Is darke beffore the none.
I here you say, ffarewelle : nay, nay !
we departe not so sone.
why say ye so ? *whether* wille ye go ?
alas ! what haue ye done ?
alle my welfare To sorow & care
shuld chaunge, yf ye were gon ;
ffor, in my mynde, of alle mankynd
I love but you alon.

* MS. it.—F.

for all my welfare into sorrow & care
 wold come if *that* you were gone ;
 for in my mind, of all mankind
 48 I loue but you alone."

She loves but
 him alone.

5

" I can but beleue this wold you greeue,
 & somewhatt you soe straine ;^a

Her lover
 tells her

7

SQUIRE.

" I can beleve, i tshalle you greve,
 and *sum*what you dystreyne ;^a
 but, afterward, *your* paynes harde
 within a day or twayn
 shalle sone aslake ; & ye shalle take
 Conforte to you a-gayn.
 why shuld you owght? for, to take
 thought,
 your labowre were in vayn.
 and thus I doo; *and* pray you to,
 as hartely as I can ;
 ffor I mvste to *the* gren-wode go,
 alon, a banysshed man.

yet wold I to The grenwode go,
 alon, a banysshed man.

10

PUELLA. [leaf 211b]

Though it be songe of olde & yonge,
 that I shuld be to blame,
 Thers be *the* charge, That speke so large
 In hurtyng of my name :
 ffor I wille *prove*, That feythfulle love
 hit is deuyoyed of shame ;
 In *your* distresse and hevynesse,
 To parte *with* you, the same :
 to shewe alle tho that do not so,
 trew lovers ar they non ;
 ffor, in my mynd, of alle mankynd
 I love but you alon.

8

PUELLA.

Now, sith *that* ye haue shewed to me
 the secrete of *your* mynde,
 I shalle be playn to you a-gayn,
 lyke as ye shalle me fynde.
 sith it is so, *that* ye wille go,
 I wille not bide behynde,
 shalle it neuer be said, *the* nutbrown
 mayd
 was to here love vnkynde.
 make you Redy, for so am I,
 alle-though it were anon ;
 ffor, in [my] mynd, of alle mankynd
 I loue but you a-lon.

11

SQUIRE.

I counsaile you, Remembre how,
 hit is no maydyns lawe,
 No-thing to dowte, but to renne owt
 to wode with an owlawe.
 ffor ye mvste *ther*, In *your* hond bere
 a bowe Redy to drawe,
 &, as a theff, thus mvst ye leve,
 Ever In drede & awe ;
 wherby to you Gret harm myght grow :
 yet hade I lever than,
 that I [had] to The grenwod go,
 alon, a banysshed man.

9

SQUIRE.

Yet I you Rede to take good hede
 what *men* wille thynke & say :
 of yong, of olde, hit shalle be told,
 that ye be gon a-way,
your wanten wille for to fulfille,
 in grenwode you to play ;
 and *that* ye myght for *your* delite
 No lengar make delay.
 rather *than* ye shuld thus for me
 be called a mysse woman,

12

PUELLA.

I say not nay, but as ye say,
 yt is no maydyns lore ;
 but love may make Me to for-sake,
 as I haue sayd beffore,
 to cum on fote, To hunte & shote
 to get us mete in store ;
 ffor so that I *your* company
 may haue, I aske no more :

of the hard-
ships she'd
have to
undergo
with him,

52 ^a the thorny wayes, the deepe valleys,
the haile, ffrost, snow, & raine ;
ffor dry & weete, ffor cold & heate,
wee must Lye on the plaine ;
no other house [be] vs aboue,
56 but a bush or ^a brake twaine.
my hart sweet, this ill dyett,
I know itt will make thee to looke wan ;
therefore will I to the greenwoode goe,
60 my selfe, a banished man."

and says
he'll go alone
to the
greenwood.

6

She answers
that as she's
shared his
joy, she'll
share his
woe.

¹ Shee says, "with you I haue been *partener*,
with you in Ioy and blisse ;
I will take alsoe *part* of your woe,
64 endure, as reason itt is ;

ffrom which to parte, it makyth my harte
as colde as any ston ;
for, in my mynde, of alle mankynd
I love but you alone.

for, in my mynd, of alle mankynd
I love but you alon.

15

[SQUIRE.]

13
SQUIRE.
ffor an owlawe This is the lawe,
that men hym take and bynde,
withowt pite, hangid to be,
& waver *with* the wynde.
yf I had nede, (as God for-bede !)
what socowrs cowld ye fynde ?
fforsoth, I trow, ye and your bowe
ffor fere wold draw behynde.
and no *mervayle* : ffor littille avayle
were in your cownsell than :
wherfor I wille to *the* grenwod go,
alon, a banysshed man.

Yet take good hede ; for euer I drede
that ye cowld not susteyn
^a the thorny wayes, the depe valeyes,
the snowe, *the* froste, the Rayn,
the colde, the hete : for drye & wete
we mvste logge on *the* playn ;
&, vs above, none other Roffe
but a brake, bushe, or twayn :
which some shuld greve you, I beleve ;
& ye wold gladly than
that I had to the grenwode goo,
a-lon, a banysshed man.

16

PUELLA.

14
PUELLA.
Right welle know ye, *that* wymen be
but feble for to fight ;
No womanhede it is in-dede
to be bolde as a knyght :
yet, in suche fere yf *that* ye were
with ennemyes day or nyght,
I wold *withstond*, with bow in honde,
To helpe you *with* my myght, [leaf 212]
and you to save ; as wymen have
from deth [men] many one :

¹ Sith I haue here ben *partynere*
with you yoye & blisse,
I mvste also parte of your woo
Endure, as Reason is :
yet am I sure of on pleasure ;
&, shortly, it is this :
that, wher ye be, me semeth, *parde*,
I cowld not fare a-mysse.
withowt more speche I you besече
that we were shortly gon ;
for, in my mynd, of alle mankynd
I love but you alon.

but I shold be sure of one pleasure,
that is shortlye this,
wheresoeuer you be, *that* I you see,
68 I cold not ffare amisse.
from home to depart will make my hart
as cold as any stone ;
ffor in my mind, of all mankind
72 I loue but you alone.”

At any rate
she shall
see him,

and she loves
him alone.

7

¹ “But you must consider, sweet hart, when you
come thither
and haue List to dine,
there is no meate *that* wee can gett,
76 neither ale, beere, nor wine,
nor sheetes cleane to lye betweene,
made neither of threed nor twinn, [page 421]
Nor noe other house but leaues & brouse,
80 to couer *your* head and mine.²
my hart sweet, this ill dyett,
I know will make thee to Looke wan ;
therefore will I to the greenwood goe
84 my selfe, a banished man.”

“But think,

weshall have
no meat,

no sheets.

It'll make
you wan.
I'll go to the
woods by
myself.”

8

³ “But among wild deere,” shee said, “such an
archer
as men say *that* you bee,

“Oh, you'll
shoot deer
for us ;

17

[SQUIRE.]

¹ Iff ye go thyder, ye mvst consider,
whan ye have luste to dyne,
ther shalle no mete be for to gete,
Nether bere, ale, ne wyne ;
ne shetes clen, to lay betwen,
Made of threde and twyne ;
non other hows, but levis & bowes,
to Cover *your* hede & myne ;
loo, myn hart swete, this ille dyett
shuld make you pale and wan ;

wherfor I wille to the grenwod go,
a-lon, a banysshed man.

² nine in MS.—F.

18

[PUELLA.]

³ Amonge *the* wilde dere, suche an archere,
as men say *that* ye be,
may not faylle of good vytaylle,
wher is so gret plente :
& water clere of *the* Rivero
shalle be fulle swete to me ;

you shold not ffaile ffor good vittaile
 88 where is such great plentye ;
 I'll drink
 water the water cleere within the riuer
 shold be full sweete to me ;
 I cold endure well, I am sure,^a
 92 in health as you may see ;
 and provide
 a bed, & a bedd or 2, before I goe,
 I will provide anon ;
 for I love
 but you
 alone." ffor in my minde,¹ aboue all mankind
 96 I loue but you alone."

9

" Ah, but
 there's worse
 to do. ² " Nay Loue, thore you must doe more :
 If you will goe with mee,
 you must shorten your haire aboue your eare,
 100 & your kirtle³ aboue your knee,
 ffor to withstand, with bow in hand,
 your enemyes, if neede bee ;
 and start
 with me
 before
 daylight, ffor this same night, before it be day-light,
 104 to the woods *that* I will flee ;
 & if you will all this ffulfill,
 doe itt as shortlye as you can,
 or else I must to the greenwood goe
 for I'm a
 banished
 man." 108 my selfe, a banished man."

with which in hele* I shalle Right welle^a
 Endure, as ye shalle see ;
 and, or we go, a bedde or two
 I can provide anon ;
 ffor, in my mynde, of alle mankynd
 I love but you alone.

¹ ninde in MS.—F.

19

SQUIRE. [leaf 212b]

² Loo yet, beffore, ye mvst do more,
 yf ye wille goo with me :
 as, cute your here vp by your ere,
 your kyrtyll by your knee ;

with bow in honde, for to withstonde
 your enymyes, yf nede be :
 & this same nyght, beffore day-light,
 to wode-warde wille I flee.
 yff *that* ye wille alle this fulfille,
 do it as shortly as ye can ;
 Els wille I to the grenwode go,
 alone, a banysshed man.

³ Kyrtille is not upper petticoat, but our
 modern gown, a waist and petticoat. A
 kyrtille and mantle completed a woman's
 dress. *Crit. Rev.* Jan. 1795, p. 49.—
 F.

* Health.—F.

10

- 1 "Euen now," shee saies, "He doe more ffor you
then belongs to woman-hood² ;
He shorten my haire, a bow to beare,
112 to shoote in time of neede.
my owne deare mother ! aboue all other
of you I haue much dread ;
but yett, adew ! I must insue ;
116 ^a such ffortune does me lead.
therefore make you ready now
as ffast as euer you can ; ^b
ffor in my mind, of all mankind
120 I loue but you alone."

"I'll go
with you at
once.

Dear mother,
adieu !

My love,
make ready !

I loue but
you alone."

11

- 3 "Noe, not soe, you shall not goe !
ffor He tell you now as why :
your habitt⁴ itt is to be light,
124 my loue, I will espye ;
for likewise as you say to me,
Likewise you shall ffind,^c
itt is told of old, 'soone hott, soone cold,
128 and soe is a woman ;'
therefore will I to the greenwood goe
my selfe, a banished man."

"No, you
shall not go.

Women
change soon.

I'll go to the
woods
alone."

20

PUELLA.

¹ I shalle as now do more for you
than longith to womanhede ;
to shorte myn here, a bowe to bere,
to shote in tyme of nede.
O my swete moder, beffore alle oder
for you I have moste drede :
but now, adewe ! I mvst ensue,
^a wher fortune doth me lede.
alle this make ye : Now lat vs flee ;
the day commeth fast vpon ; ^b
ffor, in my mynd, of alle mankynde
I loue but you a-lon.
² *heed* wanted, to rhyme with *neede*.
—Dyce.

21

SQUIRE.

³ Nay, nay, not so ; ye shalle not go,
& I shalle telle you whye,
your appetite is to be light
of love, I welle espye :
for, like as ye haue said to me,
In likewise hardely ^c
ye wolde answere who-so-euer it were,
In way of Companye.
It is said of olde, Son whot, some colde ;
& so is a woman.
ffor I mvste to *the grenwode* goo,
alone, a banysshed man.
⁴ appetite.—P.

12

- “ You shall
have no
cause to say
that of me. 132 “ Giff you take heed, you doe not need
soe ffarr to speake by mee ;
ffor I haue prayed, & long I haue sayd,
before I loued pardye ;
& [though] *that* you [know] of anceytrye ^a
136 a Barrons daughter I bee,
& you haue proued how [I] haue loued ^b
a squier ² of a Low degree,
& shall doe, whatsoever doth befall,
140 to die *with* him anon ;
& in my mind, of all mankind
I loue but you alone.”
I loue but you alone.”

13

- “ What! I,
an outlaw,
mate with a
baron's
daughter !
God forbid !
144 ³ “ A Barrons child to be beguiled !
that were a cursed deede.
& to become ffellow with an outlaw !
alimightye god fforbidd !
itt were better the pore Squier
148 himselfe to the fforrest yeede,
then you shold say another day,
‘ by my accursed deede
you were betraid.’ therefore, good maide,
152 the best way *that* I can,
is, lett me vnto the fforrest goe
my selfe, a banished man.”
Let me go
alone.”

22

PUELLA.

¹ yf ye take hede, it is no nede
such wordis to say to me ;
ffor ofte ye prayd, and long assayed,
Or I you loved, *pardè* :
& though that I of avncetrye ^a
a barons dowghter be,
yet haue ye *proved* how I ye loved, ^b
a squyre of lowe degre ;
and ever shall, what-so befalle ;
to dye therefor a-non ;
ffor, in my mynd, of alle mankynd
I love but you a-lon.

² The MS. has four strokes for *ui*.—F.

23

[SQUIRE.]

³ A barons child to be begiled !
It were a cursed dede !
To be felowe with an owtlawe !
almyghty god forbede !
yet better were, *the* pore squyer
alon to foreste yeede,
than ye shuld say an-*other* day,
that, by my cursèd Rede,
ye were betrayde : Wherefor, good mayd,
the best Rede *that* I can, [leaf 213]
ys, *that* I to the grenwod go,
alon, a banysshed man.

14

“ Let this out-fall, I neuer shall
 156 of *that* thing you vpbraid ;
 but if you goe & leaue me soe,
 then I am quite betraid.

“ Whatever
 happens,
 I'll never
 upbraid you,
 except you
 leaue me.

Remember how *that* itt is,^a

[page 422]

160 you are not as you said :
 you are vnkind to leaue behind
 your loue, the nutt-browne maid.
 trust me, trulye I must dye

I am your
 love, and
 must die if
 you go.

164 as soone as you are gone ;
 for in my mind, of all mankind
 I loue but you alone.”

I love but
 you alone.”

15

² “ Why, but if you went, you wold repent ;

168 for in the fforrest now
 I haue *provid*ed me of a maid
 whom I loue better then you ;
 & ffairer then euer you were,

“ But you'd
 repent if you
 did come ;

for I've got
 there a
 prettier
 maid, whom
 I love better
 than you:

172 I dare this well auowe.
 betw[i]xt you both I shold be wroth ^b
 with eche other, as I trowe ;
 itt is my ease to line [in] peace ;

176 soe will I if I cann ;
 ffor I will to the greenwood goe
 my selfe, a banished man.”

I'll go to the
 woods
 alone.”

24

[PUELLA.]

What-*ever* befall*e*, I neuer shalle
 of this thing you owt-brayde ;
 But yf ye go, & leue me so,
 than haue ye me betrayde.
 Remembre you welle, how *that* ye dele ;^a
 for, yf ye be as ye said,
 ye were vnkynd, to leue me behynd,
 your love, *the* Nutbrown mayde.
 Truste [me] truly, *that* I shalle dye
 sone after ye be gon ;
 ffor, *in* my mynd, of all mankynd
 I loue but you alon.

25

SQUIRE.

² If that you went, ye shuld Repent ;
 for in *the* foreste nowe
 I have purveyde me of a mayde,
 whom I love more than you ;
 an-*other* more fayre, than euer ye were,
 I dare it welle avowe ;
 and of you both, Eche wille be wroth ^b
 with other, as I trowe.
 It were myn eas to leue in peas ;
 so wille I, yf I can ;
 wherfor I wille to *the* grenwod goo,
 alon, a banysshed man.

16

" Never
 mind,
 though you
 have a
 paramour,
 I still am
 yours.
 I'll be soft
 and kind to
 her,
 and be your
 second love,
 when you
 want one.
 I love you
 alone."

1 " Why, tho in the wood I vnderstood
 180 *that* you had a paramoure,
 yett all *that* right nought remoues my thought,
 for still I will be yours.
 shee shold me ffind both soft & kind,
 184 & curteous euery houre ;
 gladd *your* will for to ffulfill ;^a
 comand me to my power.
 & if you haue a 100 more,
 188 of them I wold be one ;
 for in my mind, of all mankind
 I loue but you alone."

17

" Dear, true
 love!
 Be glad,
 believe not
 what I haue
 said!
 I am Lord
 Westmore-
 land's son,
 and not

2 " My owne deere loue ! I see and prou e
 192 *that* you be kind and true !
 in maid & wiffe, in all my liffe
 the best *that* euer I knew !
 Be merry & glad, be no more sa[d],
 196 the case is altered now ;
^b be not dismaid [at] what I haue said
 to you since I begann.
 thus you haue woone the Erle of westmoreland sone,^c
 200 & not a banished man."

26

[MAYD.]

1 Though in *the* wode I vnderstode
 ye had a paramowre,
 alle this may nowght remeue my thought,
 but *that* I wille be your:
 & she shalle me fynd softe and kynd,
 & Curteys euery owre ;
 Glad to fulfille alle *that* she wille,^a
 Comaund me to my powere :
 ffor had ye, loo ! an hundreth mo,
 yet wolde I be that on ;
 ffor, *in* my mynd, of alle mankynd
 I love but you a-lon.

27

[SQUYRE.]

2 Myn own dere love ! I se *thee* proue
that ye be kynde & trewe ;
 of mayde & wyf, In alle my lyff,
 the best that euer I knew.
 Be mery and glade ; be no more sade ;
 The case is chaunged newe ;
 for it were Rewth, *that* for *your* trewth,^b
that ye shuld haue cawse to Rewe.
 be not dysmayde, what-so-euer I said
 to you, whan I be-gan ;
 I wille not to *the* grenwode go ;^c
 I am no banysshed man.

18

- 1 "These tydings to me are gladder," shee saies,
 "then tho I were a Queene,
 If I were sure itt wold endure ;
 204 but itt is often seene
 men will break *promise* [tho] thé speake
 words vpon the plaine.
 you shape some wyle, me to beguile,
 208 & steale ffrom me, I weene ;
 then were the case worsse then euer itt was,
 & I were woe-begon ;
 for in my mind, of all mankinde
 212 I loue but you alone."

a banished
man."
"I'm gladder
than if I
were Queen.

But are not
you beguil-
ing me ?

If you leave
me
I am lost ;

for I love
but you
alone."

19

- 2 "You shall not neede soe ffar to dreed,
 ffor I will not disparishe ³
 [you, (God defend !) sith you descend
 216 of so gret a linage ;]
 for westmoreland, as I vnderstand,
 itt is my owne heritage ;
 I will thee bring in with a ringe ;
 220 in way of Marryage
 I will you take, and Ladye make,
 as shortlye as euer I cann.

"No, truly,

Westmore-
land is mine.

I'll wed you

as soon as I
cann.

28

MAYD.

[leaf 213b]

1 Thes tydingis be more gladder to me,
 than to be made a quene,
 yf I were sure they shuld endure :
 but it is often seen,
 when men wille breke promyse, they
 speke
 the wordis on the splene.*
 ye shape som wyle me to begile,
 & stele from me, I wene :
 than were the caas wors than it was,
 & I more woo-be-gon :
 ffor, In my mynd, of alle mankynd
 I love but you alon.

29

SQUIRE.

2 Ye shalle not nede further to drede ;
 I wille not disparage †
 you, (god defende !) Sith ye descende
 of so gret a lynage.
 Now vnderstond ; to Westmorelond,
 which is myn herytage,
 I wille you bryng ; & with a rynge
 by way of maryage *
 I wille you take, & lady make,
 as shortly as I can :
 Than haue ye wonne an erles sonne,
 & not a banysshed man.

* On a sudden.—R. Bell.

† disparage. Arnolde.—F.

I'm not a
banished
man."

thus haue you woone the Erle of westmorelands
sonne,¹

224 and not a banished man."

20

So you see
women are
true.
Let not men
reprove
them.

² Heere you may see *that* women bee
of loue meeke, kind, and stable.

228 lett neuer men reprove them then,
nor call them varyable,^a

but rather pray to god *that* they
to men may be comfortable,
that haue proued such as they loued,
232 iff they be charitable.

Men want
their love;

but men wold *that* women shold
be kind to them eche one,

but I shall
love God
alone.

236 yett I had rather, god to obay,
& serue but him alone.³

ffinis.

¹ sonne in MS.—F.

30

[AUTHOR.]

² Here may ye see, *that* women be
In love, meke, kynd, & stable;
latt never man Repreve them than,
yf they be Charytable,^a
but Rather pray god *that* we may
to them be comfortable;
God sumtyme provith, such as he lovith,
yf they be * charytable.

for sith men wold *that* women shuld
be meke to them echone;
moche more awght they to god obey,
and serue but hym alon.

Explicit, quod Richard Hille.

here endith *the* nutbrown mayd.

This last stanza is not in Prior's
Edition.—P.

³ From the concluding Words of this
last stanza it should seem *that* the Author
was a woman.—P.

* MS. be be,—F.

The : rose of Englande : ¹

[page 423]

Thomas. Come hither, fiddler ;
 What ballads are you seen in best ? Be short, Sir.
Fiddler. Under your mastership's correction, I can sing
 "The Duke of Norfolk," or "The merry ballad
 Of Diverus and Lazarus," "*The Rose of England*,"
 "In Crete when Dedimus first began,"
 "Jonas his Crying-out against Coventry."
Thom. Excellent !
 Rare matters all !
Fid. "Maudlin the Merchant's Daughter,"
 "The Devil and ye Dainty Dames."
Thom. Rare still !
Fid. "The landing of the Spaniards at Bow,
 With the bloody battle of Mile End."
Thom. All excellent !

Monsieur Thomas, act iii. sc. 3.

THIS is one of the many pieces that compose the Bosworth Field and Stanley cycle. It relates in an allegorical manner how the Earl of Richmond returned to claim his right, and how he claimed it. There is some little confusion in this as in most other allegories ; for indeed, to speak the language of parables coherently and with consistence is a matter of no ordinary difficulty. Nor is the allegorical treatment always maintained ; the Rose suddenly becomes Earl Richmond. The piece is characterised by a certain vigour and earnestness. The writer gives himself up to his subject ; he feels that that is great and grand. No doubt he was some Lancashire or Cheshire man, a vehement admirer of the Stanleys. Percy says that the song was written in "Henry 8th's lifetime." From the last stanzas it would

¹ An allegorical Song on the Landing & Victory of King Henry 7th, with the brave Conduct of the Bailiff of Shrews-

bury, written in Henry 8th's lifetime.
 N.B. This song is quoted in Beaum.'
 Mons. Tho' p. 397.—P.

seem to have been written earlier—we should suspect before the execution of Sir William Stanley in 1495. But the present copy is, we may be sure, much modernised.

Vv. 57–90.—This incident is told, with additions, in “Dr. Taylor’s MS.” quoted *apud* Phillips’ *History and Antiquity of Shrewsbury*.

Thys yeare [runs the MS.] in the monthe of August 1485, Henry Earle of Rychemoonde came out of Bryttane towards England wyth a small companye & landyd at Mylford Haven in Wales nygh Pembroke the 7th daye of August, having help Inoughe in England & so marchyng forward being stayed at no place untill he came to the towne of Shrosberie, where the gates were shutt egaist by him, & the pullys let downe : so the Earle’s messengers came to the gate to say the Welsh gate, commandyng them to open the gates to theyre right Kynge, and Maister Mytton made answeere being head bayley, & a stoute royste gentilman sayinge that he knew no kynge, but only Kynge Richard, whose lyffetenants he & hys fellows were ; & before he should enter there, he should goe ouer hys belly : meaninge thereby that he would be slayne to the grounde, and so to roon over hym before he entird, and that he protestyd vehementlye uppon the Othe he had tacken.

So the sayd Erle returnyd wyth hys companye backe agayne to a vylledge callyd Forton, 3 Myles and a halfe from Shrosberie, where he lay that night, & in the mornynge followynge there came Embassadors to speake with the Baylyff, requesting to passe quyetlye, and that the Erle theyre master dyd not meane to hurt the towne nor none therein, but to go to trye hys right, & that he promysed further that he would save his othe & hym & hys fellows harmless ; uppon thys they entered, and the sayd Mytton laye alonge the grounde, & hys belly upwardes, & soe the sayd Erl stepped over him & saved hys othe ; and so passing forthe & marching forward he came to Bosworth, whar the Battel was fought betwyxt hym & Kynge Richard, in which Kynge Richard was slayne.

The difficulty in which the poor mayor found himself placed was of course of no rare occurrence in a period when the occupancy of the throne was perpetually disturbed. It was of so common occurrence, that a statute was passed in the eleventh

year of Henry the Seventh's reign declaring that "subjects are bounden to serve their prince and sovereign lord *for the time being* in his wars for the defence of him and his land against every rebellion, power and might reared against him," and proceeding to enact that no person for the same "true service of allegiance" shall be "convict or attaint of high treason nor of other offences for that cause." The answer which the distressed official here makes is pretty much the same with that made by Herod under somewhat similar circumstances—made by him to Octavius after the fall of Antony, whose firm friend the Idumæan prince had been. (See *Jos. Ant.* xv. vi. 6; *Bell. Jud.* I. xx. 1.)

Vv. 107, 108.—Compare in Theocritus' account of the combat between Amycus and Pollux (ed. Ahrens):

ἔνθα πολὺς σφισι μύθος ἐπειρομένοισιν ἐτύχθη,
 δππότερος κατὰ νῶτα λάβοι φάος ἡελίοιο ·
 ἰδρίη μέγα δ' ἄνδρα παρήλυθες, ᾧ Πολύδευκες,
 βάλλετο δ' ἀκτίεσσιν ἔπαν Ἀμύκοιο πρόσωπον.

<p> THROUGHOUT: a garden greene & gay, a seemly sight itt was to see how fflowers did flourish fresh and gay, 4 & birds doe sing Melodiouslye </p>	<p>In a gay garden, grew gay flowers.</p>
<p> in the midst of a garden there sprange ¹ a tree which tree was of a mickle price, & there vppon sprang the rose soe redd, 8 the goodlyest <i>that</i> euer sprange on rise.² </p>	<p>and in the midst was a rose so red, (Edward V.)</p>
<p> this rose was faire, ffresh to behold, springing with many a royall Lance; a crowned King, with a crowne of gold 12 ouer England, IreLand, and of ffrance. </p>	<p>the King of England, Ireland, and France.</p>

¹ this garden sprang.—P.

² bough.—F.

- A Boar
(Richard
III.)
came in and
trampled
it down,
- 16 then came in a beast men call a bore,¹
& he rooted this garden vpp and downe,²
by the seede of the rose he sett noe store,
but afterwards itt wore the crowne.
- and buried
its branches.
- 20 hee tooke the branches of this rose away,³
and all in sunder did them teare ;
& he buryed them vnder a clodd of clay,
swore they shold neuer⁴ bloome nor beare.
- But an Eagle
(Lord
Derby)
- bore the
branch
to its nest at
Latham.
- 24 then came in an Egle gleaming gay,
of all ffaire birds well worth the best ;
he took the branche of the rose away,
& bore itt to Latham⁵ to his nest.
- but now is this rose out of England exiled,
this certaine truth I will not Laine⁶ ;
but if itt please you to sitt a while,
- 28 Ile tell you how the rose came in againe.
- And the Rose
(Henry
VII.)
came in
again at
Milford,
- 32 att Milford hauen he entered in⁷ ;
to claime his right, was his delight ;
he brought the blew bore in with him,
to encounter with the bore soe white.⁸

¹ Cf. the stanza quoted in Mrs. Markham :

"The Cat, the Rat, and Lovell the dog
Ruled all England under the Hog."
This poem, written by Wm. Col-
lingborne, is quoted in Larwood's His-
tory of Signboards, p. 116, where it says
Richard III.'s cognisance was a *boar*,
passant, *argent*. Blue Boar = Earl of
Oxford. See *Hist. Signb.*, p. 116.—
Skeat. The Earls of Oxford and Pem-
broke were two of the chief commanders
in Henry VII.'s army. The deeds of the
latter (Jasper Tudor, Earl of Pembroke,
afterwards Duke of Bedford), and of the
famous Sir Wm. Brandon, the Standard

Bearer, do not appear to be commemo-
rated in this poem.—G. E. Adams.

² And there he rooted up and down.
—P.

³ clean away.—P.

⁴ and . . . ne'er.—P.

⁵ See "Bosworth ffeilde," l. 347.—F.

⁶ conceal.—P.

⁷ See "Scotish ffeilde," l. 8, vol. i.
p. 212 ; "Bosworth ffeilde," l. 50, below ;
"Ladye Bessiye," below, l. 809.—F.

⁸ The blue boar was borne by the
Earl of Oxford, who is named in line 71.
Richard III.'s cognisance was a boar
passant, *argent*.—Skeat.

- the[n] ¹ a messenger the rose did send
to the Egles nest, & bidd him hye ;
- 36 " to my ffather ² the old Egle I doe [me] comend, ³
his aide and helpe I craue ⁴ speedylye."
- saies, " I desire my father att my ⁵ cominge
of men and ⁶ mony att my need,
& alsoe my mother of her deer blessing,
40 then better then I hope to speede."
- & when the messenger came before ⁷ thold Egle,
he kneeled him downe vpon his knee,
saith, " well greeteth you my Lord the rose,
44 he hath sent you greetings here by me.
- " safe ffrom the seas Christ hath him ⁸ sent,
now he is entered England within."
" let vs thanke god," the old Egle did say,
48 " he shall be the fflower of all his kine !
- " wend away, messenger, with might and maine ;
itts hard to know who a man may trust ;—
I hope the rose shall flourish againe,
52 & haue all things att his owne lust."
- then Sir Rice ap Thomas drawes wales with him :
a worthy sight itt was to see,
how the welchmen rose wholly with him,
56 & shogged ⁹ him to Shrewsburye.
- and sent to
ask
- the old
Eagle to
help him
- with men
and money.
- The Rose's
messenger
tells the old
Eagle.
- He thanks
God,
- and wishes
the Rose God
speed.
- The Welsh-
men carry
the Rose
to
Shrewsbury,

¹ tho, or then.—P.² send me the loue of the Lord Stanley!

he married my mother, a Lady bright.

Bosworth feilde, l. 59–60, below.—F.³ we commend.—P.⁴ his aid I must craue.—P.⁵ I desire of my Father at my.—P.⁶ Both men &.—P.⁷ there.—P.⁸ Apparently altered from "mim" in MS.—F.⁹ moved. See vol. i. p. 218, note ⁵.—F.

where
Master
Mitton is
bailliff.

Att *that* time was baylye in¹ Shrewsburye
one *Master* Mitton² in the towne.
the gates were strong, & he mad them ffast,
60 & the portcullis he lett downe ;

Mitton
declares no
one shall
enter,

& throug a garrett of the walls,
ouer severne these words said hee,
“att these gates no man enter shall.”
64 but he kept him out a night & a day.³

but on
getting
orders
from Sir
William
Stanley,

these words Mitton did⁴ Erle Richmond tell ;
I am sure the Chronicles of this will not Lye ;
but when *lettres* came⁵ from Sir *William* Stanley of
the holt castle,
68 then the gates were opened *presentlye*.

lets in the
Red Rose,

then entred this towne the noble Lord
the Erle Richmond, the⁶ rose soe redd,
the Erle of Oxford *with* a sword
72 wold haue smitt of the bailiffes head.

who stops
Lord Oxford
killing him.

“ but hold *your* hand,” saies Erle Richmond,
“ ffor his loue *that* dyed vpon a tree !
ffor if wee begin to head⁷ so soone, [page 424]
76 in England wee shall beare no degreee.”

Richmond
asks Mitton
why he
opposed
him ?

“ what offence haue I made thee,” sayd Erle
Richmonde,
“ *that* thou Kept me out of my towne ? ”

“ Because
Richard is
my king.”

80 “ I know no King,” sayd Mitton then,
“ but *Richard* now *that* weares the crowne.”

¹ of.—P.

² Maister Mitton.—P.

³ be kept out by night or day.—P.
The man misses the whole point of the
story: the Mayor said, I have sworn that
no one shall enter this town except *over*
my body: on which Henry proposed that

he should lie down and let him step over
him; which he did.—Skeat.

⁴ he did.—P.

⁵ *cane* in MS.—F.

⁶ that.—P.

⁷ A.-S. *heafðian*, to behead.—F.

- “ why, what wilt thou say,” said Erle Richmonde,
 “ when I haue put *King* Richard downe ?”
 “ why, then Ile be as true to you, my Lord,
 84 after the time *that* I am sworne.”
- “ But when
 I put
 Richard
 downe ?”
 “ Why then
 I’ll be true
 to you.”
- “ were itt not great pittie,” sayd ¹ Erle Richmond,
 “ *that* such a man as this shold dye ?”
 such Loyall service by him done,
 88 the cronickles of this will not Lye.²
- “ thou shalt not be harmed in any case.”
 he pardone[d] him presentlye.
 they stayd not past a night & a day,³
 92 but towards newport ⁴ did they hye.
- So Mitton
 is pardoned.
- but ⁵ [at] Attherston these Lords did meete ;
 a worthy sight itt was to see,
 how Erle Richmond tooke his hatt in his hand,
 96 & said, “ Cheshire & Lancashire, welcome to me.”
- Cheshire and
 Lancashire
 back
 the Rose,
- but now is a bird ⁶ of the Egle taken⁷ ;
 ffrom the white bore he cannot flee.
 therefore the old Egle ⁸ makes great moane,
 100 & prayes to god most certainly :
- but the
 young Eagle
 is taken,
 and the old
 one prays
 God
- “ O stedfast god, verament,” he did say—
 “ 3 persons in one god in Trinytye !
 saue my sonne, the young Egle, this day
 104 ffrom all ffalse craft & trecherye !”
- to save his
 son.

¹ the, or Richmond said.—P.² will not belye.—P.³ In the wyle cop, Shrewsbury, is an old house, lately a tinman’s shop (and, perhaps, it is so still) where either *Henry VII.* or *Richard III.* is said to have lodged not long before the battle of Bosworth.—Skeat.⁴ Newport in Shropshire.—P.⁵ Qu. At, or perhaps about.—P.⁶ Lord Strange, the eldest son of Lord Stanley.—G. E. A.⁷ tane.—P.⁸ Lord Stanley, afterwards made Earl of Derby.—G. E. A.

- The blue
Boar (Lord
Oxford)
leads the
van ;
- 108 then the blew bore ¹ the vanward had :
he was both warry and wise of witt ;
the right hand of them he tooke,
the sunn & wind of them to gett.
- the Eagle,
- 112 then the Egle ffollowed fast vpon his pray ;
with ² sore dints he did them smyte.
the Talbot, ³ he bitt wonderous sore,
Unicorn, 112 soe well the vnicorne ⁴ did him quite.
- Hart's head,
- 116 & then came in the harts head ⁵ ;
a worthy sight itt was to see,
white-and-
red-jackets,
fight, 116 they Iacketts *that* were of white & redd,
how they Laid about them lustilye.
- and win the
day.
The white
Boar
(Richard
III.) is slain.
- 120 but now is the ffeirce ffeeld foughten & ended,
& the white bore there Lyeth slaine ;
& the young Egle is preserued,
& come to ⁶ his nest againe.
- The garden
flourishes.
- 124 but now this garden flourishes ffreshly & gay,
with ffragrant ffowers comely of hew ;
& gardners itt doth maintaine ;
I hope they will proue Iust & true.
- Our King is
the Rose.
- 128 our *King*, he is the rose soe redd,
that now does ffourish ffresh and gay.
God love
him!
- 128 Confound his ffoes, *Lord*, wee beseeche,
& loue his grace both night & day ! ffinis.

¹ The badge of John, Earl of Oxford.
—G. E. Adams.

² And with.—P.

³ The Talbot was the badge of the family of Talbot, Earls of Shrewsbury. The person referred to is doubtless *Sir Gilbert Talbot* of Grafton (uncle of the 4th Earl, then a minor), who commanded the right wing of Henry's army.—G.E.A.

⁴ The unicorn's head was the crest of Sir John Savage of Rock Savage, co. Chester, one of Henry's principal commanders at Bosworth.—G. E. A.

⁵ Probably alluding to those in the arms of Sir Wm. Stanley (the brother to Lord Stanley), who had the rearguard.—G. E. A.

⁶ unto.—P.

The pore man & the Kinge :

THIS is a Kent version of the ballad which Martin Parker issued as a Northumberland one in 1640, with the title "*The King and a poore Northerne Man*. Shewing how a poore Northumberland man, a tenant to the King, being wronged by a Lawyer (his neighbour), went to the King himself to make knowne his grievances. Full of simple mirth and merry plaine jests." The Percy Society reprinted this in 1841, Mr. Collier editing; and Mr. Hazlitt reprinted it in 1866 in his *Early Popular Poetry*, vol. iv. p. 290. The Folio ballad differs from Parker's, not only in place, but in some of the incidents, and much in the wording. Its existence (coupled with that of the *King & Northern Man*, printed by W. O[nley] noticed by Mr. Collier,) confirms the suggestion of that editor, which Mr. Hazlitt states thus: "The strict claim of Martin Parker to the original authorship of this production may be open to question. Perhaps he merely modernized what he found already in print, but too antique to please the delicate palates of the customers for such articles in his day, and upon the strength of this attached his initials, which, as will be seen, occur at the conclusion of the tract." The second edition of it was in 1673, black letter, eleven leaves; and there is a copy of it in the British Museum. (Hazlitt.)

Lawyers have always been reckoned poor men's foes. And the reason is not far to seek. As a gamekeeper said to a solicitor I know, who had grumbled at the dogs out shooting, and then got regularly hooked up by some brambles, "We call them 'ere *lawyers* down here, we do. When they once gets hold of 'ee, they don't let 'ee go without takin' a bit out of 'ee." The

profession has not the credit of working at law for nothing, whatever it may do at Early English, &c. &c. Langland says in his *Vision* (p. 5, l. 849, Vernon Text, ed. Skeat):

þer houep an Hundret · in Houues of selk,
 Seriauns hit semeþ · to seruen atte Barre;
 Pleden for pons · and poundes þe lawe,
 Not for loue of vr lord · vn-loseþ heore lippes ones.
 þow mihtest beter meten þe Myst · on Maluerne hulles,
 þen geten a Mom of heore Mouþ · til moneye weore schewed.

The rebels under Wat Tyler “killed such judges and lawyers as fell into their hands” (*Macfarlane*, iv. 183); and the Scotch proverbs—“Law licks up a’,” “Nae plea is the best plea,” “Law’s costly; tak a pint and gree,” &c. (*Hislop*, p. 308)—bear witness to the general modern feeling on the subject.

The punishment of a rapacious lawyer has always been a popular theme, and the present ballad tells how a poor man who dwelled in Kent paid out the lawyer who tried to fleece him. He went to his king—the popular remedy for men alone, as ballads and stories show; the popular remedy for crowds, as Wat Tyler’s rebellion shows—and begged to be let off the forfeiture of his lease that his felling five of his landlord’s, the king’s, ash trees to build his house with had worked, and of which forfeiture the lawyer wanted to take advantage. Needless to say that the king forgives his Kentish man,—a worthy descendant of those who stood up against William the Conqueror for their rights,—and, to punish the lawyer in a way that all may understand, bids the poor man,

untill hee haue paid thee a 100!!
 thoust tye him to a tree that hee cannott start.

This the poor man threatens to do; but the lawyer pays down his money, and the ballad concludes:

God send all Lawyers thus well served!
 then may pore ffarmers liue in rest.

The poem also gives rise to another set of scenes like those we

have seen in the *Kinge and Miller* and *John de Reeve*, on the countryman's coming to court. To those who "coude their curtesye," and were full of the flunkeyish respect of persons that characterises courtiers, it must have been a joke to see a proud porter rapped on the crown by the country clown, a nobleman offered fourpence for an introduction to the king, and the dread incarnation of majesty himself told that he was a very poor-looking fellow for a sovereign, and his grand feast only—

. twatling dishes soe small :
zounds! a blacke pudding is better then all!
(vol. i. p. 156.)

On the general subject Mr. Hales's Introduction to the *King and Miller*, vol. i. pp. 147-8, should be consulted.—F.

<p>ITT : was a pore man, he dwelled in Kent, he payd our King 5^d of rent ;</p>	<p>A poor man holds land of the King.</p>
<p>& there is a lawyer dwelt him by, 4 a ffault in his [lease,¹] god wott ! he hath ffound, " & all was for ffalling of 5 ashe trees to build me a house of my owne good ground.</p>	<p>A lawyer says he has forfetted his lease by cutting five ash trees.</p>
<p>" I bidd him lett me & my ground alone ² ; 8 to cease his selfe, if he was willinge, & pike no vantages out of his ³ lease ; & hee seemed a good ffellow, I wold giue him 40^s 4 "</p>	<p>He offers the lawyer 40s. to keep quiet.</p>
<p>[" 40^s nor 40^{li} 12 wold not agree this lawer and mee, without I wold giue him of my farme ground, & stand to his good curtesye.⁵]</p>	<p>The lawyer demands some of his land.</p>

¹ lease.—P. See line 9.—F.

² MS. *alome*. *him* is *hem* with the *e* dotted.—F.

³ my.—F.

⁴ Read 40 shillings.—Skeat.

⁵ These are lines 147-50 below.—F.

He then offers 5 marks;

16 “ he ¹ said, “ nay, by his fay, *that* hee wold not doe,
ffor wiffe and children wold make madd warke,
but & he wold lett him and his ground alone,
he seemed a good ffellow, he wold giue him 5 marke.”²

but the lawyer refuses that too.
So the poor man resolves to go to the King.

20 “ he said, “ nay by his ffay, *that* wold he not doe,
ffor 5 good ash trees *that* he fell.”
“ then Ile doe as neighbors haue put me in head,
Ile make a submission to the *King* my-selfe.”

by [that] he had gone a dayes iourney,
24 one of his neighbors he did spye,
“ Neibor ! how ffar haue I to our King ? [page 425]
I am going towards him as ffast as I can hye.”

“ alas ! to-day,” said his neighbour,
28 ittts ffor you I make all this mone.
you may talke of *that* time enoughe
by *that* tenn daies Iourney you haue gone.”

He gets to London,
oversleeps himself,

32 but when he came to London street,
for an host house he did call.
he Lay soe longe othe tother morninge a-sleepe,
that the court was remoued to winsor hall.

and is told he must go on to Windsor;

36 “ arrise, my guest, you haue great neede ;
you haue Lyen too long euen by a great while ;
the court is Remoued to winsor this morning ;
hee is ffurther to seeke by 20 mile.

“ alacke to-day ! ” quoth the poore man,
40 “ I thinke your *King* att me gott witt ;
had he knowen of my cominge,
I thinke he wold haue tarried yett.”

¹ The poor man speaks of himself in the third person ; or else *he* and *hee* are miscopied for the *I* of line 154.—F.

² MS. narke.—F.

- “ he floled not for you,” then said his host,
 44 “ but hye you to windsor as fast as you may ;
 & all your costs & your charges,
 haue you no doubt but the *King* will pay.”
- he hath gotten a gray russett gowne on his backe,
 48 & a hood well buckeled vnder his chin,
 & a longe staffe vpon his necke,
 & he is to windsor to our Kinge.
- soe when hee came to windsor hall,
 52 the gates were shutt as he there stood ;
 he knocket and poled with a great Long staffe :
 the porter had thought hee had beene woode.
- he knocket againe with might & maine,
 56 sais, “ hey hoe ! is our *King* within ? ”
 with *that* he proffered a great reward,
 a single penny, to lett him come in.
- “ I thanke you, Sir,” quoth the porter then,
 60 “ the reward is soe great I cannott say nay ;
 there is a noble-man standing by,
 first Ile goe heare what hee will say.”
- the nobleman then came to the gates,
 64 & asked him what his busines might bee :
 “ nay, soft,” quoth the ffellow, “ I tell thee not yett,
 before I doe the *King* himselte see ;
- itt was told me ere I came ffrom home,
 68 *that* gentlemens hounds eaten arrands by the way,
 & pore curr doggs may eate mine ¹ ;
 therefore I meane my owne arrands ² to say.”
 “ but & thou come in,” saies the Porter then,
 72 “ thy bumble staffe behind wee must stay.”

the King
will pay his
expenses.

So he goes to
Windsor
Hall,

knocks at
the gates,

and offers
the porter a
penny to let
him in.

The porter

fetches a
nobleman,

who asks
the man
what his
business is.

“ I'll tell the
King myself.

Messengers
often
swallow
their
errands.”

“ Leave your
staff, then.”

¹ MS. nine.—F.

² MS. arrand, with a tag to the *d.*—F.

"No, I
shan't;

the court
bankrupts
may rob
me."

"beshrow the, Lyar," then said the pore man,
"then may thou terme me a foole, or a worsse ;
I know not what bankrouts bee about our *King*,
76 for lacke of mony wold take my purse."

"hold him backe," then said the noble-man,
"& more of his speech wee will haue soone ;
Ile see how hee can answer the matter
80 as soone as the match att bowles is done."

The poor
man is led
to a noble-
man,

the porter tooke the pore man by the hand,
& ledd him before the noble-man :
he kneeled downe vpon his knees,
84 & these words to him sayd then :

whom he
first take
for the King,

"& you be *Sir King*," then said the pore man,
"you are the goodlyest ffellow *that* euer I see ;
you haue soe many I[i]ngles Iangles about yee,
88 I neuer see man weare but yee."

and then
offers 4*d.* to
bring him to
the King.

"I am not the *King*," the Nobleman said,
"although I weare now a proud cote."
"& you be not *King*, & youle bring me to him,
92 ffor your reward Ile giue you a groat."

The noble-
man says
he'll ask the
King ;

"I thanke you, *Sir*," saith the Noble-man,
"your reward is soe great, I cannott say nay ;
Ile first goe know our *Kings* pleasure ;
96 till I come againe, be sure *that* you stay."

does so ;

"here is such a staring," said the pore man,
"I thinke the *King* is better heere then in our
countrye ;
I cold haue gone to ffarmost nooke in the house,
100 Neither Ladd nor man to haue troubled mee." [page 426]

the noble-man went before our Kinge,
soe well hee knew his curtesye,
"there is one of the rankest clownes att your gates
104 *that* euer Englishman did see.

“ he calles them knaues *your* hignes keepe,
 with-all hee calls them somewhatt worsse,
 he dare not come in without a longe staffe,
 108 hees ffeard lest some bankrout shold pike his pursse.”

“ lett him come in,” then said our King,
 “ lett him come in, and his staffe too ;
 weelee see how he can answer euery matter
 112 now the match att bowles is done.¹”

and the
 King
 answers “ let
 him come
 in.”

the Noble-man tooke the pore man by the hand,
 & led him through chambers and galleryes hye :
 “ what does our *King* with soe many empty houses,
 116 & garres them not filled with corne and hay ? ”

The poor
 man

& as they went through one alley,
 the nobleman soone the *King* did spye ;
 “ yond is the *King*,” the noble-man sayd,
 120 “ looke thee, good ffellow, yond hee goes by ! ”

asks why
 the King
 doesn't
 fill his
 empty
 rooms with
 corn and
 hay,

“ belike hee is some vnthriff,” said the pore man,
 “ & he hath made some of his clothes away.”
 “ now hold thy tounge,” said the Nobleman,
 124 “ & take good heed what thou dost say.”

and on being
 shown
 the King,
 won't
 believe it is
 he,

the weather itt was exceeding hott,
 & our *King* hath Laid some of his clothes away ;

& when the noble-man came before our *King*,
 128 soe well hee knew his curtesie,
 the pore man ffollowed after him,
 gaue a nodd with his head, & a becke with his
 knee :

“ & if you be the king,” then said the pore man,
 152 “ as I can hardly thinke you bee,
 this goodly ffellow *that* brought me hither,
 seemes liker to be a *King* then yee.”

and tells
 him the
 nobleman
 looks more
 like a king
 than he
 does.

¹ doo.—Dyce.

- But the King says he is king, 136 " I am the *King*, & the *King* indeede ;
lett me thy matter vnderstand."
- and the poor man tells him how the lawyer,
140 " & there is a Lawyer dwells me by,
a ffault in my lease, god wott, hee hath found,
& all is for ffelling of 5 ashe trees
to build me a house in my owne good ground.
- because he has cut down 5 ash trees,
144 " I bade him lett me & my ground alone,
& cease himselfe, if *that* hee was willing,
& pike no vantage out of my Lease ;
he seemed a good ffellow, I wold giue him 40^s:"
- wants to make him forfeit his lease,
148 " 40^s nor 40^{li}
wold not agree this lawer and mee,¹
without I wold giue him of my farme ground,
& stand to his good curtesye.
- unless he'll give up some of his land,
152 " I said, ' nay, by fay, *that* wold I not doe ;
ffor wiffe & children wold make madd warke ;
& hee wold lett me & my ground alone,
he seemed a good ffellow, I wold giue him 5 marke.' "
- " Have you your lease ? " says the King.
156 " but hast thou thy Lease eene thee vppon,
or canst thou shew to mee thy deede ? "
he pulled itt fforth of his bosome,
& saies, " heere my Leege, if you cann reeade."
- " Here it is if you can read it."
160 " what if I cannott ? " then sayes our *King*,
" good ffellow, to mee what hast thou to say ? "
" My boy of 13 can."
" I haue a boy att home, but 13 yeere old,
will reede itt as ffale gast as young by the way."

¹ Lines 147 and 148 are written as one in the MS.—F.

- "I can neuer gett these knotts Loose," then said our
King ;
- 164 hee gaue itt a gentleman stood him hard by.
" *thats* a proud horsse," then said the pore man,
" *that* will not carry his owne prouentye ;
- " & yee paid me 5^s rent as I doe yee,
168 I wold not be to proud to loose a knott ;
but giuet me againe, & Ile loose itt for ye,
soe *that* in my rent youle bate mee a groate."
- an¹ old man tooke this Lease in his hande,
172 & the Kings maiesty stooode soe,
" Ile warrant thee, pore man, & thy ground,
if² thou had ffallen 5 ashes more.³ "
- " Alas to-day ! " then said the pore man,
176 " now hold *your* tonge,⁴ & trouble not mee ;
hee *that* troubles me this day with this matter,
Cares neither for *your* warrantts, you, nor mee."
- " Ile make thee attachment, ffoole," hee sayes, [page 427]
180 " *that* all *that* sees itt shall take thy part.
vntill hee haue paid thee a 100^{li}
thoust tye him to a tree *that* hee cannott start."
- " I thanke you, Sir," said the poreman then :
184 " about this Matter, sith you haue beene willinge,
& seemed to doe the best you cann,
with all my heart Ile giue you a shillinge."
- " a plauge on thy knaues hart ! " then said our King,
188 " this mony on my skin ⁵ Lyes soe cold."
he fflang itt into the Kings Bossome,
because in his hand he wold itt not hold.

" I can't
read it,"
says the
King.

" More
shame to
you," says
the poor
man ;

" I'll read it
for you if
you'll let me
off 4d. rent!"

The King
tells him
he'll war-
rant him his
ground.

" Warrant!
the lawyer
don't care
for you or
your war-
rants."

" Well
then," says
the King,
" tie the
lawyer up to
a tree till he
pays you
100l."

" Thank
you, that'll
do,

and I'll give
you 1s."

which he
throws into
the King's
bosom.

¹ the.—F.

² i. e. even if.—Skeat.

³ moe.—Dyce.

⁴ Another letter blotched with *e* follows
in the MS.—F.

⁵ MS. skim.—F.

The King
gives him
100*l*.

the *King* called his tresurer,
192 saies " count me downe a 100^{li}—
since he hath spent mony by the way,—
to bring him home to his owne good ground."

when the 100^{li} was counted,
196 to receiue itt the pore man was willing :
" if I had thought you had had soe much siluer &
gold,
you shold not haue had my good shilling."

When the
poor man
comes
home,
the lawyer
asks him
where he
has been.

the Lawyer came to welcome him
200 when hee came home vppon a sunday :
" where haue you beene, Neihbor ? " hee sayes,
" methinkes you haue beene long away."

" To the
King,

" I haue beene att the *King*," the poore man said.
204 " & what the deuill didest thou doe there ?
cold not our neighbors haue agreede vs,
but thou must goe soe ffarr ffrom heere ? "

who's told
me to tie you
up till you
pay me
100*l*."

" there cold no neighbors haue agreed thee & me,
208 nor halfe soe well haue pleased my hart ;
vntill thou haue payd mee a 100^{li},
Ile tye thee to a tree, thou cannott start."

The lawyer
pays the
money.

when the 100^{li} was counted,
212 to receiue itt the poreman was most willing ;
& for the paines in the Law hee had taken,
hee wold not giue him againe one shilling."

May God
serve all
lawyers so,

and let us
live in
peace

god send all Lawyers thus well serued !
216 then ¹ may pore ffarmers liue in rest.²
god blesse & saue our noble Kinge,
& send vs all to liue in peace ! ffinis.

¹ MS. them.—F.

² ease.—Dyce.

Sir : John Butler :

IN a "Booke of Survey of the Baronye of Warinton in the countie of Lancaster, Parcell of the possessions of the Right Honorable Robert Erle of Leicester, baron of Denbigh," as taken on the 19th of April in the twenty-ninth year of "our Soverein Queen Ladye Elizabeth" (1587) we find the following description of Bewsey Hall :

The Mannerhowse of Bewsey is situate on the west side of the Town and Lordship of Warrington, and is a mile distant from Warrington Town, and is the South East side of Bewsey Park. The house is environed with a fair mote, over which is a strong draw-bridge. The house is large, but the one half of it being of very old building, is gone to decay, that is to say, the Hall, the Old Buttery, the Pantry, Cellars, Kitchen, Dayhouse and Brewhouse, which can not be sufficiently repaired again without the charge of 100*l*. The other half is of new building and not decayed, being one great chamber, four other chambers or buildings, a kitchen, a buttery, and also three chambers and a parlour of the old building are in good repair. There is also an old chapel, but much decayed. The seat of the manorhouse with the garden and all the rest of the grounds within the mote containeth 3 roods 20 perches. . . .

The park is three measured miles about ; almost the one half of it is full of little tall oaks, but not underwood. It is indifferent well paled about. There is in it little above six score deer of all sorts ; the soil of the park is very barren.

The park and demesne lands together contained 304 acres large measure = 644 statute.

The family of Botyller, Boteler, and many other variations of spelling, becoming Butler in the reign of Henry VII., was seated at Warrington in the time of Henry III. A William Butler was then in ward to Earl Ferrars, and sometime about 1240

bought the manor of Burtonwood from Robert de Ferrariis.¹ Here he built Bewsey Hall, and thereafter took the style of Butler of Bewsey instead of Butler of Warrington.

It is not intended to go into the family history of the Butlers. As lords of various manors held *in capite*, they had to lead their retainers in the Welsh and Scotch wars; and Froissart has a characteristic narrative of the rescue of John Butler of Bewsey by Sir Walter Manny in the French campaign in 1342.² This seems to have been the prosperous time of the family. A priory of Hermit Friars of St. Augustin in Warrington was probably founded by them towards the close of the thirteenth century. The chancel of the parish church dates about 1360. Sir John Butler rebuilt Warrington Bridge, which had been washed away by floods, 1364. He seems also to have founded the Butler Chantry in the church.³ His grandson, another Sir John, died about 1432, leaving a son a year old, and a widow Isabella, whose petition to Parliament may be seen in the Rotuli Parliamentorum.⁴

Seven years after her husband's death she was forcibly carried away from Bewsey Hall by one William Poole, gent. of Liverpool, "in her kirtle and smok" to Birkenhead—another petition says the wild parts of Wales—and there compelled to enter into a forced marriage. What the end of it was we are not told, but her son John grew up and married, first Anne Savile, and secondly Margaret Stanley, sister of the first Lord Stanley, and widow of Sir Thomas Troutbeck. Here we come into much entanglement. Some accounts make Lady Margaret the wife of Troutbeck after her marriage with Lord Grey. Sir John Butler had two sons—William by Anne Savile, and Thomas by Margaret Stanley. William died about the time of his coming of age, and Thomas finally succeeded as heir in the year 1482. Sir John died in 1462, and he seems to have been the hero of the ballad, of the

¹ Gent. Mag. Dec. 1863, p. 755.

² Froissart, vol. ii. p. 9, cap. 86.

³ Lancashire Chantries. (*Cheth. Soc.*), p. 67.

⁴ Rot. Parl. iv. 497-8.

traditions of the neighbourhood, and of the narrative of Dods-worth.

The Old Church, as it is always called by the inhabitants, the High Church of Warrington as named in the ancient charters, seems even then to have lost the name of the saint to whom it was dedicated—St. Elphin—in Domesday Book. It has been rebuilt within the last few years, and consisted then (1860) of a nave, north and south transepts (private chapels), chancel and central tower. The chancel and tower arches were good decorated work of about 1360. The north transept was the chapel connected with Bewsey Hall, and had the name of the owners—the Athertons. In the sixteenth century it was the Butler Chapel or Chantry. It contained in the centre a magnificent altar tomb, apparently of the time of Edward IV., which still exists.¹ The LORD and LADY are recumbent, life-size, he in armour, and the sides of the tomb are ornamented with statuettes in relief of various saints, but there is no inscription, nor any appearance of there ever having been one. In an arch in the north wall of the chapel was a monument, in black marble, of a recumbent female; and to the east of this, in the position usually ascribed to the founder, was a cinquefoiled arch which held a stone coffin, the contents of which had disappeared before the chapel was pulled down. This chapel, except the cinquefoiled arch, was of late perpendicular work, and most likely built by the widow of Sir Thomas Butler 1520–30. The name of the Butlers had vanished from their resting place, but the memory of the lord and lady and their unfortunate end was handed down from generation to generation in connection with this monument, no doubt receiving additions or suffering mutilation according to circumstances.

The tale, as generally told, was that certain of the lord's enemies bribed his steward, and that the faithless servant placed

¹ The whole of the chapel has been preserved: the only part of the old pile pulled down, but the tombs have been left is the chancel.

a light at a window over the hall door, to give notice to the assassins, who crossed the mote and found the door open. They made their way to the lord's chamber, and were met and opposed by a negro servant, who fell in defence of his master, whose murder soon followed. The heir, a baby, was carried by the nurse in her apron, covered with chips, out of the house, under the pretence that she was going to light a fire. Two large dark patches on the oaken floors, one in a narrow passage leading to the lord's room, the other within the room, near the door, were left as evidence to all following time, and it was said that every room on that floor, the second, was more or less stained with blood.

A new servant had always to get accustomed to the visits of an apparition, a rattling of chains along the narrow lobby, and three raps at the bedroom door at midnight, till use made the thing pass as a matter of course. The traitor steward was promised great exaltation, and they hanged him on an oak as they came away through the park. A tree pointed out as the *infelix arbor* was cut down some forty years ago.¹

Such was the tale sixty years ago. It had, perhaps, been modified by being introduced as an episode in a poem published with Dodsworth's account in 1796, the first effort of the author of the interminable epic *Alfred*—Mr. John Fitchett. Pennant, who travelled after the middle of last century, heard that both the lord and lady were slain; and a century before that, Roger Dodsworth had taken the pains to put in writing what he had heard, and his narrative is still in the Bodleian Library.

Dodsworth's account is as follows:—When King Henry VII. came to Latham, the Earl of Derby sent to Sir John Butler, who was his brother-in-law, to desire him to wear his cloth for a

¹ This tree was certainly not so old as the time of Elizabeth. As an attendant spirit (on the domain however, more than its lords) was a white rabbit, which

made its appearance when trouble or change was impending; it is said to have been seen within the present century.

time—a request which the Lady Butler answered with great disdain. This gave rise to great malice on the part of the Earl, which was increased by various other matters, till, with the assistance of Sir Piers Legh and William Savage, they corrupted his servants and murdered him in his bed. His lady, who was in London, dreamed that night that Bewsey Hall swam with blood. She indicted twenty men for the murder; but after marrying Lord Grey, he made her suit void. Upon which she left him and came back into Lancashire, and said, ‘If my lord will not help me, that I may have my will of mine enemies, yet my body shall be buried by him,’ and caused a tomb of alabaster to be made, where she lyeth upon the right hand of her husband Sir John Butler. The faithful servant was the chamberlain named Holcroft, and the traitor was his brother; the porter at the hall, whom the assassins hanged in the park.

Dodsworth’s tale, no doubt, represents the tradition as it existed in the middle of the seventeenth century, but it is altogether at variance with facts. During the whole of the reign of Henry VII. the lord of Bewsey was Sir Thomas Butler, who succeeded (as already stated) to the estate in 1482, and died in 1522. He certainly went quietly to his rest, after providing amply for the foundation of a grammar school in Warrington. His father, Sir John, according to the *Inquisitio Post Mortem* still extant in the Bodleian Library, died in 1463, leaving besides Thomas, who succeeded, a brother William, ten or twelve years older. They were wards to the king, and the younger one is said to have been of the Stanley blood; in fact, there are documents still in existence showing the interest Lord Stanley and his son Lord Strange took in the latter just before the battle of Bosworth Field.¹ But not a tittle of evidence has turned up to show that there was any murder at all. The record of the outrage on the previous Lady Butler is given in the *ROTULI PARLIAMENTORUM*,

¹ *Gent. Mag.* Sept. 1863.

but every thing connected with the murder of the last Sir John seems to have vanished like Macbeth's witches. There had certainly been bad blood between the Leghs and Butlers for some generations, which continued for two or three generations after; and this Sir Piers Legh of the tale is said to have been compelled to build a church at Dishley, near Lyme, to expiate the guilt he had incurred in the bloodshed. His monumental brass, where he is represented as wearing a priest's robes over his armour, is still to be seen in Winwick Church; and as he died in 1527, aged 65, he could only have been an infant at the date of Butler's death. It seems out of the question to connect Lord Stanley, Butler's brother-in-law, with it; and nothing is known about William Savage. As to the blood-marks, that portion of Bewsey Hall is not older than the sixteenth century, and was most likely the part described in the "Surveye" as having been then newly built, so that we meet only with phantom evidence, which we can neither grasp nor realise.

Whether the Lord Grey was of Codnor, of Groby, or de Ferrariis is uncertain; and it is doubtful whether Lady Margaret Butler was the widow of Troutbeck when she married Sir John, or whether, as another account states, she married Troutbeck for her third husband.

We believe no other copy of this ballad is known. It is in a fragmentary state, and no doubt a good deal of it is wanting; the language too has been modernised; but the peculiar account of Lady Butler's absence from home, and "her good brother John," clearly the first Stanley of Alderley, would lead to the supposition that it was written soon after the murder, by one who was acquainted with the family, and before Lord Stanley was made Earl of Derby. The introduction of Ellen Butler as Sir John's daughter, may have been a mistake, or put, *euphoniæ gratia*, for the real name Alice, who would have been fourteen or fifteen at the time. Sir John is represented as nephew to Stanley, which must have been incorrect; it may, however, be from the

ballad-maker's confusion of ideas, as Lady Butler afterwards calls Stanley her brother.

The end of the Butlers was sad enough, but we have no space for it here. Descendants in the female line are still in existence, and a keen genealogist might trace them to our own time; but their place knows them no more, the very name is forgotten, and when the fine altar tomb was opened some years ago, a very few mouldering bones and the fragment of a heavy two-handed sword were all that it contained.

The knight was dust,
His good sword rust,
His soul is with the saints we trust. (J. ROBSON.)

<p>BUT word is come to warrington, & Busye hall is laid about ; Sir Iohn Butler and his merry men 4 stand in ffull great doubt.</p>	<p>Busye Hall is sur- rounded, and Sir J. Butler in danger.</p>
<p>when they came to Busye hall itt was the merke ¹ midnight, and all the bridges were vp drawn, 8 and neuer a candle Light.</p>	<p>At midnight his takers come ;</p>
<p>there they made them one good boate, all of one good Bull skinn ; William Sauage was one of the ffirst 12 that euer came itt within.</p>	<p>on a bull- skin boat</p>
<p>hee sayled ore his merrymen by 2 and 2 together, & said itt was as good a bote 16 as ere was made of lether.</p>	<p>cross over the moat.</p>

¹ merke, dark ; MS. may be *merle*.--F.

Ellen Butler
rouses her
father.

“ waken you, waken you, deare ffather !
god waken you *within* !

His uncle
Stanley is
there.

for heere is *your* vnckle standlye
20 come *your* hall *within*.”

No money
will save
him.

“ if *that* be true, Ellen Butler,
these tydings you tell mee,
a 100^{li} in good redd gold
24 this night will not borrow mee.”

Ellen comes
down to the
hall.

then ¹ came downe Ellen Butler
& into her ffathers hall,
& then came downe Ellen Butler,
28 & shee was laced in pall.

“ Where is
your
father? ”

“ where is thy ffather, Ellen Butler ?
haue done, and tell itt mee.”

“ Gone to
London,
I swear.”

32 “ my ffather is now to London ridden,
as Christ shall haue *part* of mee.”

“ No, he is
not ;

“ Now nay, Now nay, Ellen Butler,
ffor soe itt must not bee ;

[page 428]

we must
have him.”

36 ffor ere I goe fforth of this hall,
your ffather I must see.”

They search,

thé sought *that* hall then vp and downe ²
theras Iohn Butler Lay ² ;
thé sought *that* hall then vp and downe
40 theras Iohn Butler Lay ;

find him,

ffaire him ffall, litle Holcrofft !
soe Merrilye he kept the dore,
till *that* his head ffrom his shoulders
44 came tumbling downe the floore.

¹ MS. them.—F.

² These two lines only of the four are

in the MS., but they are marked with a
bracket and *bis*.—F.

“yeeld thee, yeelde thee, Iohn Butler!
yeelde thee now to mee!”

and summon
him to yield.

48 “I will yeelde me to my vnckle Stanlye,
& neere to ffalse Peeter Lee.”

“a preist, a preist,” saies Ellen Butler,
“to housle and to shriue!

“A priest to
shrive my
father,” says
Ellen.

a preist, a preist,” sais Ellen Butler,
52 “while *that* my father is a man aliue!”

then bespake him *william* Sauage,—
a shames death may hee dye!—

sayes, “he shall haue no other preist
56 but my bright sword and mee.”

“No priest
but my
sword,” says
Savage.

the Lady Butler is to London rydden,
shee had better haue beene att home,
shee might haue beggd her owne marryed *Lord*
60 att her good Brother Iohn.

Lady Butler
is in
London.

& as shee lay in leeu London,
& as shee lay in her bedd,
shee dreamed her owne marryed *Lord*
64 was swiminge in blood soe red.

She dreams
that her
lord swims
in blood,

shee called vp her merry men all
long ere itt was day,
saies, “wee must ryde to Busye hall
68 with all speed *that* wee may.”

calls up her
men

and rides
homeward.

shee mett with 3 Kendall men
were ryding by the way:

She meets
Kendal men,

“tydings, tydings, Kendall men,
72 I pray you tell itt mee!”

and a-ks
tidings.

- “ heauy tydings, deare Madam !
 ffrom you wee will not Leane,¹
 the worthyest *Knigh*t in merry England,
 76 Iohn Butler, Lord ! hee is slaine ! ”
- “ ffarewell, ffarwell, Iohn Butler !
 ffor thee I must neuer see.
 ffarewell, ffarwell, Busiye hall !
 80 for thee I will neuer come nye.”
- She turns
 back to
 London,
 84 Now Ladye Butler is to London againe,
 in all the speed might bee ;
 & when shee came before her prince,
 shee kneeled low downe on her knee :
- and prays
 the King
 88 “ a boone, a boone, my Leege ! ” shee sayes,
 “ ffor gods loue grant itt mee ! ”
 “ what is thy boone, Lady Butler² ?
 or what wold thou haue of mee² ? ”
- to kill her
 lord's three
 slayers.
 92 “ what is thy boone, Lady Butler ?
 or what wold thou haue of mee ?
 “ *that* ffalse Peeres of Lee, & my brother Stanley,
 & william Sauage, and all, may dye.”
- “ What ! 3
 for 1 ?
 96 “ come you hither, Lady Butler,
 come you ower this stone ;
 wold you haue 3 men ffor to dye,
 all ffor the losse off one ?
- No. Do you
 marry Lord
 Gray.”
 100 “ come you hither, Lady Butler,
 with all the speed you may ;
 if thou wilt come to London, *Lady* Butler,
 thou shalt goe home Lady Gray.”
- ffinis.

¹ O. N. *leina*, to conceal.—F. *Leane* is a Cheshire pronunciation for *layne*, conceal. This provincialism occurs in the previous stanza, where *way* rhymes to *mee*, and elsewhere in the ballad (l. 83–8).

How far south it extends I don't know, but about Frodsham it is very peculiar.—Dr. Robson.

² These two lines are bracketed, and marked *bis* in the MS.—F.

Will : Stewart & John.

WE know of no other copy of this capital ballad.

The scene is in North Britain. The subject is the winning of the Earl of Mar's daughter by William Stuart of Adlatts Park (wherever that may be)—the winning, but not the wooing. The wooing is done by his brother John. It requires much tact and dexterity, and in this respect, though not in age, John has the advantage—

William he is the elder brother,
But John he is the wiser man.

William generally takes to his bed—

—into care-bed leaps he (see vv. 9, 188)

when his passion runs high, or any scheme for crowning it with its object's possession fails. John sets forth to "propose" and "arrange" in his behalf. This giving of wit and importance to the younger brother is perhaps a Norse element. Such a compensation for the disadvantages of juniority, so to speak, is very commonly made in the Norse tales, (see e.g. Dasent's *Popular Tales from the Norse*).

The incidental pictures and allusions to manners and customs are highly interesting; as to the kiss of courtesy (v. 139), to football matches (v. 105), to the beating of daughters (v. 171), to the Dole day (v. 262), the Beggar's dress and equipment (v. 241 *et seq.*, vv. 312, 313).

Football matches had not unfrequently, as here, a second object—not often, perhaps, so pacific a one as here. "The war-like convocations [of the borderers]," says Scott, "were frequently disguised under pretence of meetings for the purpose of sport.

The game of football in particular, which was anciently and still continues to be a favourite border sport, was the means of collecting together large bodies of moss-troopers previous to any military exploit. When Sir Robert Carey was warden of the East Marches, the knowledge that there was a great match at football at Kelso, to be frequented by the principal Scotch riders, was sufficient to excite his vigilance and his apprehension. Previous also to the murder of Sir John Carmichael, it appeared at the trial of the perpetrators that they had assisted at a grand football meeting where the crime was concerted."

Alas! my
love won't
love me!

ADLATTS: parke is wyde and broad,
& grasse growes greene in our countrye;
eche man can gett the loue of his Ladye,
4 but alas, I can gett none of mine!

I sing of
Will Stewart
and John.

itts by 2 men I sing my song,
their names is *william* Stewart and Iohn:
william he is the Elder brother,
8 but Iohn hee is the wiser man.¹

Will takes
to his bed
for love of
the Earl of
[page 429]
Mar's
daughter.

but *william* he is in carebed Layd,
& for the loue of a faire Ladye;
If he haue not the loue of the Erle of Mars daughter,
12 in ffaith ffor loue *that* he must dye.

John asks
him what he
mourns for;

then Iohn was sorry ffor his brother,
to see him lye and languish soe:
"what doe you mourne for, brother?" he saies,
16 "I pray you tell to me *your* woe.

gold

"doe [you²] mourne for gold, brother?" he saies,
"or doe you mourne ffor ffee?
or doe you mourne for a like-some Ladye
20 you neuer saw her with *your* eye?"

¹ mon.—F.² you.—P.

- "I doe not mourne for gold," he saies,
 "nor I doe not mourne for any ffee ;
 but I doe mourne for a likesome Ladye,
 24 I neere blinke on her with mine eye."
- "but when haruest is gotten, my deere brother,—
 all this is true *that* I tell thee,—
 gentlemen, they loue hunting well,
 28 & giue wight men their cloth & ffee ;
- "then Ile goe a wooing ffor thy sake
 in all the speed *that* I can gone,
 & for to see this Likesome Ladye,
 32 & hope to send thee good tydings home."
- Iohn Stewart is gone a wooing for his brother
 soe ffarr into ffaire Scotland,
 & left his brother in mikle ffeare
 36 vntill he heard the good tydand.¹
- & when he came to the Erle of Mars his house,
 soe well he could his curtesye,
 & when he came before the Erle,
 40 he kneeled Low downe vpon his knee.
- "O rise vp, rise vp, Iohn Stewart !
 rise vp, now, I doe bidd thee ;
 how doth thy ffather, Iohn Stewart,
 44 & all the Lords in his countrye ?"
- "& itt please you, my *Lord*, my ffather is dead,
 my brother & I cannott agree,
 my brother & I am ffallen att discord,
 48 & I am come to craue a service of thee."

"A beautiful lady."

"Well, after harvest,

when allowances are given out,

I'll go wooing for you, Will,

and hope to send you good news."

So John goes

to the Earl of Mar,

kneels down to him,

and says,
 "My father's dead; my brother and I can't agree; take me into your service."

¹ i. e. tidings.—P.

- " O Welcome, welcome, Iohn Stewart !
 a welcome man thou art to me !
 Ile make thee chamberlaine to my daughter,
 52 & ffor to tend of *that* Ladye soe ffree.
- " & if thou wilt haue a better office,
 aske, and thou shall haue itt of mee ;
 & where I giue other men a penny of wage,
 56 inffaith, Iohn, thou shalt haue 3."
- & then bespake him Iohn Stewart,
 & these were the words said hee,
 " there is no office in *your* Court
 60 this day *that* better pleaseth mee."
- the ffryday is gone, the sunday is come,—
 all this is true *that* I doe say,—
 & to the church that they be gone,
 64 Iohn Stewart & the Lady gay ;
- & as they did come home againe,
 I-wis itt was a meeten mile,
 Iohn Stewart & the Lady gay,
 68 they thought itt but a [little¹] while.
- " I am a messenger, Ladye," he saies,
 " I am a messenger to thee."
 " O speake ffor thy selfe, Iohn Stewart," shee saies,
 72 " a welcome man *that* thou shalt bee ! "
- " Nay, by my ffaith," saies Iohn Stewart,
 " *which* euer, alas, *that* may not bee !
 he hath a higher degree in honour,
 76 allas, Ladye, then euer I !

¹ little.—P.

- " he is a *Lord* now borne by birth,
 & an Erle affter his ffather doth dye ;
 his haire is yellow, his eyes beene gray ;
 80 all this is true *that* I tell yee.
- " he is ffine in the middle, & small in the wast,
 & pleasant in a womans eye ;
 & more nor this, he dyes for your Loue,
 84 Therefore, Lady, show some pittye." [page 430]
- " If this be soe," then saies the Lady,
 " If this be true *that* thou tells mee,
 by my ffaith then, Iohn Stewart,
 88 I can loue him hartilye.
- " bidd him meete me att S^t Patr[i]ckes Church
 on sunday after S^t Andrews day ;
 the fflower of Scotland will be there,
 92 & then begins our summers play.
- " & bidd him bring with him a 100 gunners,
 & rawnke ¹ ryders lett them bee,
 & lett them bee of the rankest ryders
 96 *that* be to be ffound in *that* countrye.²
- " they ³ best & worst, & all in Like,
 bidd him cloth them in one Liuerye ;
 & ffor his men, greene is the best,
 100 & greene now lett their liueryes bee ;

that his
brother, an
Earl,

yellow-
haired,
grey-eyed,

small-
waisted,

is dying for
her love.

She say

she can love
him,

and he is to
meet her

at their
Summer
Games,

with 100
gunners,

clad all in
green,

¹ See Page 432 [of the MS.], 6th Line from *the* bottom, [page 227, l. 298 of this volume] where it is *ranke* ryders. *Renk* is used by Gaw^d Douglas for a Race, a Course, and in the plural *renkis*, Whence to *rink* up & down ; *discurrere*, *circumire*, from Belg. *rencken*, *flectere*. Thus Pag. 137, l. 15: The futemennis *renkis*, is, The Races of the footmen. Pag. 138. 18, 32. The *renkis* end, The

end of the Course. So Pag. 193. 52, Solisque vias is render'd The Sonnys *renke*, Æ. 6. 796. So Æn. 7. 802, querit iter, sekis his *renk*. N.B. *rank* rider is still used in Leicestershire, & signifies a keen eager rider, one that doth not spare horse-flesh.—P.

² The *t* seems to be made over an *rl*, part of which is left.—F.

³ the.—P.

- himself in
scarlet,
- 104 “ & clothe himselfe in scarlett redd,
 that is soe seemlye ffor to see ;
ffor scarlett is a ffaire Coulour,
 & pleasant allwayes in a womans eye.
- and then
win
most of the
16 games.
- 108 “ he must play sixteene games att ball
 against the men of this countrye,
 & if he winn the greater *part*
 then I shall [Love]¹ him more tenderlye.”
- John writes
all this to
his brother
Will.
- Will leaps
out of bed,
- 112 what the Lady said, Iohn Stewart writt,
 & to Argyle Castle sent it hee ;
 & ² [when] Willie steward saw the letter,
 fforth of care-bed then Lope hee.
- musters his
- 223 men,
- 116 hee mustered together his merry men all,
 hee mustered them soe louelilye,
 hee thought hee had had scarson halfe a 100⁴
 then had hee 11 score and three.
- chooses the
100 best,
- clothes them
in green,
- 120 he chose fforth a 100 of the best
 that were to be ffound in *that* countrye,
 he cladd them all in one Coulour,
 & greene I-wis their liueryes bee.
- himself in
scarlet,
- 124 he cladd himselfe in scarlett redd,
 that is soe seemelye ffor to see ;—
ffor scarlett is a ffaire coulor,
 & seemlye in a womans eye ;—
- and goes to
St. Patrick's
Church.
- 128 & then towards Patricke Church he went
 with all his men in braue array,
 to gett a sight, if he might,
 & speake with his Lady gay.

¹ *Love* is written in the MS. by a later
hand between *then* and *I*.—F.

² When.—P.

- when they came to Patrickes church,
 shee kneeled downe by her mother trulye :
 "O Mother, if itt please you to giue me leaue,
 132 the stewarts horsse ffaine wold I see."
 "He giue you leaue, my deere daughter,
 & I and my maide will goe with yee :"
 the Lady had rather haue gone her selfe,
 136 then haue had her mothers companye.
- when they came before Willie Steward,
 soe well hee cold his curtesye,
 "I wold kisse your daughter, Ladye," he said,
 140 "& if your will *that* soe itt bee."
- the Ladyes mother was content
 to doe a straunger *that* curtesye ;
 & when willie had gotten a kisse,
 144 I-wis shee might haue teemed him 3.¹
- 16 games were plaid *that* day there,—
 this is the truth as I doe say,—
 willie stewart & his merry men,
 148 thé carryed 12 of them away.
- & when they games *that* they were done,
 & all they ffolkes away were gone
 but the Erle of Marrs & William Stewart,
 152 & the Erle wold needs haue William home.
- & when they came vnto the Erles howse,
 they walked to a garden greene ;
 ffor to conferr of their bussines,
 156 into the garden they be gone.²

His Lady
 asks
 her mother
 to let her go
 and see
 the Stewarts.

When they
 see Will,
 he asks for a
 kiss from the
 daughter.

She agrees,

and Will
 takes it.

He plays 16
 games,

and wins 12
 of them.

The Earl of
 Mar asks
 him home.

¹ deemed it 3.—P. given him 3 :
teem, to pour out ; to unload a cart ; to
 cause, contrive. Halliwell. A.-S. *teám*,
 issue, offspring, anything following in a

row or team : *teámian*, to produce, pro-
 pagate. Bosworth.—F.

² I weene [added by]—P.

- [page 431]
Will asks
him for his
daughter.
"God
forbid,"
says the
Earl ;
- 160 " I loue *your* daughter," saies *william* stewart,
" but I cannott tell whether she loueth mee."
" Marry, god defend," saies the Erle of March,
" *that* euer soe *that* itt shold bee !
- " I'd sooner
hang you
- 164 " I had rather a gallowes there was made,
& hange thee ffor my daughters sake ;
I had rather a ffyer were made att a stake,
& burne thee ffor my daughters sake !
- or burn
you.
- 168 " to chamber, to chamber, gay Ladye," he saies,
" in the deuills name now I bidd thee !
& thou gett thee not to the Chamber soone
Ile beate thee before the stewarts eye."
- Go to your
room, girl,
in the
devil's name,
- or I'll beat
you."
- 172 & then bespake *william* stewart,
these were the words said hee,
" if thou beate thy daughter for my sake,
thoust beate a 100^d men and mee.¹ "
- Will says
he'd better
not,
- and Iohn
rebukes him
for his
discourtesy.
- 176 then bespake Iohn stewart,—
Lord! an angry man was hee,—
" O Churle, if thou wouldest not haue macht with
my brother,
thou might ² haue answerd him curteouslye."
- The Earl
threatens
John with
- 180 " O hold thy peace, Iohn Stewart,
& chamber thy words now, I bidd thee ;
if thou chamber not thy words soone,
thoust loose a good service; soe shalt thou doe me."
- loss of
service.
- " Hang your
service,"
says John ;
- 184 " Marry! hang them *that* cares," saies Iohn Stewart,
" either ffor thy service or ffor thee !
services can I haue enoughe,
but brethren wee must euer bee."
- " I hold to
my bruther."

¹ MS. nec.—F.² Two strokes for the *i* in the MS. —F.

- william* Stewart & his brother Iohn,
 to Argyle Castle gon they bee ;
 & when willye came to Argyle Castle,
 188 into carebedd then lope hee.
- The brothers
 go back to
 Argyle
 Castle,
 and Will
 takes to his
 bed again.
- A Parlaiment att Edenborrow was made,
 the *King* & his Nobles all mett there ;
 thé sent ffor *william* stewart & Iohn,
 192 to come amongst ¹ the other peeres.
- A parlia-
 ment
 is held at
 Edin-
 burgh.
 Will and
 John go,
- their clothing was of scarlett redd,
 that was soe seemelye ffor to see ;
 blacke hatts, white ffeathers plewed ² with gold,
 196 & sett all on their heads trulye.
- their stockings were of twisted silke,
 with garters ffringed about with gold,
 their shoes were of the Cordevine,³
 200 & all was comelye to behold.
- their clothing was of scarlett redd,
 that was soe seemelye ffor to see ;
 blacke hatts, white ffeathers plewed ² with gold,
 196 & sett all on their heads trulye.
- their stockings were of twisted silke,
 with garters ffringed about with gold,
 their shoes were of the Cordevine,³
 200 & all was comelye to behold.
- & when they came to Edenborrowe,
 they called ffor Iohn Stewart & Willie :
 I answer in A ⁴ *Lords* roome," saies will Stewart,
 204 "but an Erle I hope to bee."
- Will is
 called, and
 answers as
 a Lord.
- "come downe, come downe," saies the *Lord* of Mars,
 "I knew not what was thy degree."
 "O churle, if I might not haue macht with thy
 daughter,
 208 itt had not beene long of my degree.
- The Earl of
 Mar says he
 didn't know
 his rank
 before.

¹ The MS. has four strokes for the *m*.—F.

² Perhaps pleited, pleted, i. e. plaited or plated.—P. Fr. *plier*, to plait, plie, bend, turne, wrie. Cotgrave.—F.

³ Cordevine, i. e. Cordwane, Spanish, or Cordovan Leather, from Cordova, in Spain. Johns.—P.

⁴ MS. L.—F.

Will answers
that he's the
King's
nephew, and
fit to match
with the
Earl's
daughter.

“my ffather, hee is the *King* his brother,
& then the *King* is vnckle to me ;
O Churle, if I might not haue macht with thy
daughter,
212 itt had not beene long of my degree.”

The King
says he'll

“O hold your peace,” then sayd the *King*,
“Cozen william, I doe bidd thee ;
infaith, Cozen *william*, he loues you the worsse
216 because you are a-kinn to mee.

make Will
an Earl,

John a Lord,

“Ile make thee an Erle with a siluer wande,
& adde more honors still to thee ;
thy brother Ihon shall be a Lord
220 of the best att home in his countrye.

and their
brother
Christopher
a Knight.

“thy brother Kester¹ shalbe a *Knight*,
lands & liuings I will him giue,
& still hee shall liue in Court with mee,
224 & Ile maintaine him whilest he doth liue.”

& when the *parlaiment* was done,
& all the ffolkes away were gone,
willye stewart & Iohn his brother,
228 to Argyle Castle they be gone.

Will and
John go
home,

and Will
falls love-
sick again.

but when they came to Argyle Castle
That was soe ffarr in *that* Countrye,² [page 432]
he thought soe much then of his loue,
232 *that* into carebedd then lope hee.

John
promises to
go wooing
once more
for him,

John Stewart did see his brother soe ill :
Lord ! in his heart *that* hee was woe ;
“I will goe wooing for thy sake
236 againe yonder gay Ladye to.

¹ cp. *Kester Norton*, vol. ii. p. 212,
l. 61.—F.

² Perhaps *West Country*, but it is
North Country below.—P.

“ Ile cloth my selfe in strange array,
 in a beggars habbitt I will goe,
that when I come before the Erle of March
 240 my clothing strange he shall not knowe.”

clad as a
 beggar,

John hee gott on a clouted cloake,
 soe meete ¹ & low then by his knee,
 with 4 garters vpon one Legg,
 244 2 aboue, & towe below trulye.

with four
 garters on
 one leg.

“ but if thou be a beggar, brother,
 thou art a beggar *that* is vnknowne ;
 ffor thou art one of the stoutest beggars
 248 *that* euer I saw since I was borne.

Will

“ heere, geeue ² the Lady this gay gold ringe,
 a token to her *that* well is knowne ;
 & if shee but aduise itt well,
 252 sheele know some time itt was her owne.”

gives him|
 a gold ring
 to show to
 his lady love.

“ stay, by my ffaith, I goe not yett,”
 Iohn *stewart* he can repleye ;
 “ Ile haue my bottle ffull of beere,
 256 the best *that* is in thy buttrye ;

John fills his
 bottle with
 beer, :

“ Ile haue my sachell filld full of meate,
 I am sure, brother, will doe noe harme ;
 ffor, before I come to the Erle of Marrs his house,
 260 my Lipps, I am sure, they wilbe warme.”

his satchel
 with meat,

& when he came to the Erle of Marrs house,
 by chance itt was of the dole day ;
 but Iohn cold ffind no place to stand
 264 vntill he came to the Ladye gaye.

and goes to
 the Earl of
 Mar's on
 Distribution
 Day.
 John gets
 near the
 lady,

¹ A.-S. ‘micle and *mæte*,’ great and small: Guthlac, l. 24, ed. Grein. Skeat’s Gloss. to Piers Plowman’s Crede.—F.
² here give.—P.

- but many a beggar he threw downe,
and made them all with weeping say,
"he is the devill, hee is no beggar,
268 *that is come fforth of some strange countrye!*"
- and after the
doles are
given,
& now the dole *that* itt is delte,
& all the beggars be gon away
sauing Iohn Stewart, *that* seemed a beggar,
272 & the Ladye *that* was soe gay.
- tells her
who he is.
"Lady," sais Iohn, "I am no beggar,
as by my clothes you may thinke *that* I bee ;
I am your servant, Iohn stewart,
276 & I am sent a messenger to thee."
- She asks
"but if thou be Iohn stewart,
as I doe thinke *that* thou bee,
avayle¹ thy capp, avayle thy hoode,
280 & I will stand & speake to thee.
- how Will is.
"how doth thy brother, Iohn stewart,
& all the Lords in his countrye ? "
"Ill, through
you."
284 "O ffye vpon thee, wicked woman !
my brother he doth the worsse ffor thee."
- She weeps,
lays the
blame on her
father,
288 with *that* the teares stood in her eyes ;
O lord ! shee wept soe tenderlye ;
sais, "ligg the blame vnto my ffather ;
I pray you, Iohn stewart, Lay itt not to mee !
- and says
she'll meet
Will at
Martings-
dale in three
days.
292 "comend me to my owne true loue
that lues soe farr in the North countrye,
& bidd him meete me att Martingsdale
ffullye w[i]thin these dayes 3.

¹ pull down, from Fr. *à val*.—F.

- "hang them," sais the Lady gay,
 "that letts their¹ ffather witting bee!
 He proue a Ladye full of loue,
 296 & be there by the sunn be a quarter highe.
- " & bidd him bring with him a 100^d gunners,²
 & ranke riders lett them bee,
 lett them be of the rankest ryders³
 300 *that* be to be ffound in *that* Countrye.
- " the best & worse, & all in like,
 bidd him clothe them in one liuerye;
 & for his men, greene is the best,
 304 And greene now lett their Lyueryes bee; [page 433]
- " & cloth himselfe in scarlett Redd,
that is soe seemelye for to see;
 for scarlett is a ffaire Coulor,
 308 & pleasant in a womans eye."
- what they Lady sayd, Iohn steward writt,
 to Argyle Castle sent itt hee;
 his bagg & his dish, & showing horne,
 312 vnto 3 beggars he gaue them all 3.
- & when willie stewart saw the Letter,
 fforth of carebed then Lope hee;
 he thought himselfe as lustye & sound
 316 as any man in *that* countrye.
- he mustered together his merrymen all,
 he mustered them soe louinglye;
 he thought he had had scarce halfe a 100^a,
 320 then had hee 11 score and three.

" Let him
bring 100
gunners
with him,

clad all in
green,

while he's in
scarlet."

John sends
this message
to Will.

Will jumps
out of bed,

musters his
223 men,

¹ my.—F.

² *m* in place of *nn* in the MS.—F.

³ Two or three letters appear one over

the other for the *s* of this word in the MS.—F.

- chooses the
100 best,
- and posts to
Martings-
dale.
- There his
love
meets him,
- kisses him
and John,
- marries him,
goes home
with him,
- and is soon
great with
child.
John goes
to the Earl
of Mar.
- The Earl
hopes Will
has married
his
daughter.
- No, he
hasn't, says
John,
and he'll send
her home to
you.
- 324 he chose fforth a 100^d of the best
that were to be found in *that* companye,
& presentlye they tooke their horsse,
& to martingsdale posted hee.
- 328 & when he came to Martingsdale,
he found his loue staying there trulye,
for shee was a Lady true of loue,
& was there by sunn was a qwarter highe.
- 332 shee kisst *william* stewart & his brother Iohn,
soe did shee *part* of his merry men :
“if the Churle, thy ffather, hee were here,
he shold not haue thee backe againe.”
- 336 they sent ffor preist, they sent ffor Clarke,
& they were marryed there with speede ;
William tooke the Lady home ¹ with him,
& they liued together long time indeed.
- 340 & in 12 monthe soe they wrought,
the Lady shee was great with childe ;
thé sent Iohn stewart to the Erle off Marre
to come & chr[i]sten the barne soe milde.
- 344 “And if this be soe,” sayes the Erle of Marre,
“Iohn stewart, as thou tells mee ;
I hope in god you haue marryed my daughter,
& put her bodye to honestye.”
- 348 “Nay, by my ffaith,” then saies Iohn stewart,
“ffor euer alas *that* shall not bee ;
ffor now wee haue put her body to shame,
thoust haue her againe hame to thee.”

¹ *n* instead of *m* in the MS.—F.

“I had rather make thee Erle of Marre,
 & marry my daughter vnto thee ;
 for by my ffaith,” sais the Erle of Marr,
 352 “her marryage is marrd in our countrye.”

“I’d rather
 you marry
 her then,
 and I’ll
 make you
 Earl of
 Mar.”

“if this be soe,” then sais Iohn stewart,
 “a marryage soone *that* thou shalt see ;
 ffor my brother william, my ffathers heyre,
 356 shall marry thy daughter before thine eye.”

“No, Will
 ’ll marry
 her.”

they sent ffor preist, thé sent ffor Clarke,
 & marryed there they were *with* speed ;
 & william stewart is Erle of Marr,
 360 & his ffather-in-Law dwells *with* him indeed. *ffinis.*

So Will does,
 and is Earl
 of Mar.

Now the Springe is come

THIS ballad is in the Roxburghe Collection, vol. i. p. 200, entitled "A Lover's desire for his best beloved; or, Come away, come away, and do not stay. To an excellent new Court tune." Having been printed by the assigns of Thomas Symcocke, the Roxburghe copy of the ballad must be of the reign of James I., says Mr. Chappell, who prints the tune of it on pages 464-5 of his *Popular Music*, vol. ii. "The rhythm of the first part of the tune is peculiar, from its alternate phrases of two and three bars, but still not unsatisfactory to the ear." The date assigned to the ballad by Mr. Chappell, he confirms by the fact that *Christmas's Lamentation*—a piece like in character to our *In olde times paste*—is to be sung to the tune of *Now the Springe is come*, and was itself written during the latter part of the reign of Elizabeth, or that of James I., as the yellow starch then in vogue is mentioned in it.

It needs almost an effort now to realise how great the change must have been from the winter of Early and Middle England—with their ill-built and chimneyless houses, their scarcity of fuel and seldom-changed food, their wretched roads,—to the glad light green of spring, its sun, its song of birds, and all its heavenly brightness. The impression which the spring made on Chaucer is seen often in his works, and was, I believe, a deeper one than the season has made on any subsequent poet. But still to all poets and men the time has been, and is, one of joy; to all lovers one specially of love. Nature's current then sets that way: why should not her loveliest work go with it? "Fairest faire, then turn to thy love!" sings our song-writer. Who of us does not hope that she did?—F.

- NOW the spring is come, turne to thy loue, to thy loue, Dearest,
now spring's
come, turn
to thy love!
to thy loue, to thy loue, without delay!
where the fflowery spring, & birds doe singe
- 4 their sweete tunes : ¶ : ¶ : doe not stay!
where I shall fill thy lapp with fflowery,
& couer thee with shady bowery.
Come away, Come away, Come away!
- 8 Come away, & doe not stay!
- Shall I languish still for¹ thy loue, [page 434] Let me not
languish.
still ffor thy loue : ¶ : ¶ : without releffe?
shall my ffaith soe well aproued
- 12 now dispayre : ¶ : ¶ : with my greeffe?
where shall vertue then be ffound
but where bewtye doth abound? Come away! &c.
- fflora heere hath made a bedd ffor my loue, Here is a bed
for thee
- 16 ffor my loue : ¶ : ¶ : of roses redd.
Phebus beames to stay are bent, of roses
ffor to yeeld : ¶ : ¶ : my loue content,
& the pleasant Eglantine and
eglantine.
- 20 m[i]xt² with a 1000 fflowery fine. Come away! &c.
- Hearke! the Nightingale³ doth singe The nightin-
gale sings for
thee.
ffor my loue : &c : the woods doe ringe.
Pan, to please my loue, allwayes
- 24 pipethe there : &c : his roundelayes.
& the pleasant rushe brookes,
& euery fflower, for my loue lookes. Come away! &c.
- Bewtyes *Queen* with all her traine Venus waits
for thee,
- 28 ⁴ doth attend : &c : my loue vpon the plaine ;

¹ Shall I still languish for.—P.² mixt.—P.³ Mightingale in the MS.—F.⁴ attends.—P.

trippinge Satyres dancinge moue
 the Muses
 play for thee; delight : &c : my bewtyous loue
 the muses nine, with musicke sweete
 32 doe all attend, my loue to meete. Come away! &c.

then turn to
 thy love! ffairest ffaire! then turne to thy loue,
 to thy loue : &c : *that* looues thee best!
 lett sweete pittye moue! grant loue for loue
 36 like the doue : &c : let our loue for euer rest!
 crowne my desires with a 1000^d ioyes!
 Come away! thy loue reuiues, thy hate destroyes. Come away! &c.
 fin[is].

Bosworth feilde.¹

THIS is one of many pieces celebrating that great event which gave the land rest from its generation-long succession wars. The following version of the song was produced, as the last line shows, in the reign of James I. But the original composition may well belong to an earlier period. There is a certain air of greater antiquity about many passages of it. Alliterative verses abound, as vv. 47, 48, 55, 147, 148, 175, 176, 199, 211, 212, 214, 218, &c. &c.

The passage relating the narrow escape from execution of Lord Strange occurs also in *Lady Bessy*. Perhaps the earliest account of that peril is given by the continuer of the *Croyland Chronicle* in the following words:—

Denique crescentibus indies rumoribus quod Regis rebelles adventum suum in *Angliam* maturant & accelerant; Rex autem dubius in quo portu applicare intendunt, id enim per nullos exploratores sibi certitudinaliter afferri potuit; se transfert versus Aquilonem, parum ante festum *Pentecostes*: relicto domino de *Lovell* Camerario suo prope *Suthamptoniam*, ut classem suam ibi diligenter instruat, ut omnes portus illarum partium fida observet custodia, ut ipsos hostes si inibi applicare curarent, coadunatis viribus omnium circum incolentium, debellare non prætermitteret.

Perditis illic sub hac non necessaria

politia victualibus & pecuniis * * * . . . quo Rex tot expensas faceretur, unde non falleret æquivocationem vocabuli portus illius, qui à multis pro eorum descensu describebatur. Aiunt aliqui esse portum in partibus *Suthamptoniæ* appellatum *Milfordiam*, sicut est in *Wallia*. Et quia nonnulli quasi essent prophético spiritu præditi, prædixerunt homines istos in portu de *Milford* appulsuros, consueveruntque prophetiæ hujusmodi non in famosiori sed in alio sæpissime ejusdem nominis loco suum sortiri effectum: Præterea visus est Rex tot propugnacula in illa Australi parte Regni hoc tempore constituisse. Sed

¹ written in *the Time of James Ist*, see last line. Either the Author of this & of the Song in Page 464 [of the MS. *Ladye Bessye*, p. 321 below] is *the same*, or one of them has copied almost ver-

batim from *the other*. See Page 441 & seq^{tes}. There is a song of latter date on this Subject in *the printed Collection* 12^{mo} Vol. 3^d p. 47, N. 6.—P.

frustra. Illi enim primo die *Augusti* in nominatissimo illo portu *Milford* juxta *Pembrochiam* prospero statu, nulla inventa resistentia, applicuerunt.

Gavisus est Rex, audito eorum adventu, seu saltem gaudere dissimulavit, scribens ubique, jam sibi diem venisse desideratum, quo de tam exili comitiva facile triumphaturus, subjectos a modo indubitatae pacis beneficiis recomfortet. Interea mandata terribilia multiplicibus literis ad omnes Regni comitatus dirigit, ne ulli hominum, eorum saltem quotquot ad aliquas in Regno hereditates nati sunt, bellum futurum detractent, cum ea interminatione, quod quicumque post obtentam victoriam inveniretur in aliqua parte Regni, ei in campo praesentialiter non abstintisse, nihil aliud speraturum, quam bona omnia, possessiones, & vitam amittere.

Parum ante istorum hominum appulsum, *Thomas* de *Stanley*, senescallus hospitii Regis, accepta licentia, ut in patriam suam *Lancastriæ*, domum & familiam suam, unde diu aberat visurus, transiret, non aliter ullam ibi moram trahere permittebatur, nisi filium suum primogenitum, *Georgium* dominum *Lestrangle*, *Notinghamiam* ad Regem loco suo transmitteret; quod & fecit. Deinde hominibus istis, ut praefertur, apud *Milfordiam Walliæ* appulsis, facientibusque iter suum per aspera & indirecta partium Borealium illius Provinciae; ubi *Willielmus Stanley* frater ejusdem Domini Senescalli, utpote Camerarius de *Northwales*, singulariter praesidebat: misit Rex ad dictum dominum de *Stanley*, ut omni postposita mora, sese Regis conspectui apud *Notinghamiam* praesentaret. Timuit enim Rex id quod accidit, ne mater dicti Comitis *Richmundiæ*, quam dictus dominus de *Stanley* habuit in uxorem, maritum ad partes filii tuendas induceret. Ille autem mirabili pestem sudatoriam qua laborabat allegans, venire non potuit. Filius autem ejus qui clanculum a Rege discessum paraverat, discoopertus ab insidiis capitur, conjurationem suam & patris sui *Willielmi Stanley* supradicti, simul & *Johannis Savage* Militum, ad partes Comitis *Richmundiæ* defensandas, aperit, misericordiam postulat, promittitque patrem suum cum omni potentia in Regis auxilium quam citissime adventurum. Et super hoc, periculum in quo

erat, simul cum desiderio hujusmodi praestandi auxilii, literis suis patri denunciavit.

Interim dictis duobus aliis Militibus pro proditoribus Regis apud *Coventriam* & alibi publice denunciatis, festinantibusque inimicis, ac dirigentibus vias suas die ac nocte recte in faciem Regis: opus erat omnem exercitum, licet nondum integre congregatum, a *Notinghamia* dimittere, venireque ad *Leicestriam*. Ibique compertus est numerus hominum pugnantium ex parte Regis major quam antea visus est unquam in *Anglia* pro una parte. Die autem Dominico ante festum *Bartholomei* Apostoli, Rex maxima pompa diadema portans in capite, cum Duce *Norfolchiæ Johanne de Howard*, ac *Henrico Percy* Comite *Northumbriæ*, ceterisque magnificis Dominis, Militibus, & armigeris, populariumque multitudine infinita, opidum *Leicestrense* egressus, satis per intercursores edoctus, ubi hostes sequenti nocte de verisimili manere volebant, ad octo miliaria ab eo opido distantia, juxta *Abbatiam de Mirivall*, castra metatus est.

Majores autem exercitus adversantis hi erant: imprimis *Henricus* Comes de *Richmond*, quem illi suum Regem *Henricum* septimum appellabant; *Johannes Vere* Comes *Oxoniae*, *Johannes Wellys* dominus de *Wellys*, avunculus Regis *Henrici* septimi, *Thomas* dominus de *Stanley* & *Willielmus* frater ejus, *Edwardus Widevyll* frater *Elizabeth* Reginae, valentissimus miles, *Johannes Cheyne*, *Johannes Savage*, *Robertus Willoughby*, *Willielmus Berkeley*, *Jacobus Blunt*, *Thomas Arundell*, *Richardus Egecombe*, *Edwardus Ponyngs*, *Richardus Gilford*, & alii plures, tam ante hanc turbationem, quam in isto ingressu belli, militari ordine insigniti. De Ecclesiasticis vero affuerant consilarii, qui simile exilium perpessi sunt, venerabilis Pater *Petrus* Episcopus *Exoniensis*, flos militiae patriae suae, Magister *Robertus Moreton* Clericus Rotulorum Cancellariae, *Crystoferus Urswyk*, & *Johannes Fox*, quorum alter Eleemosynarii alter Secretarii officium postea consecutus est, cum aliis multis.

Mane die *Lunæ*, illucescente aurora, cum non essent Capellani de parte Regis *Richardi* parati ad celebrandum, neque jentaculum ullum paratum, quod Regis tabescentem animum refocillaret; illeque,

ut asseritur, ea nocte terrenda somnia quasi multitudine dæmonum circumlatus esset, viderat, sicut de mane testatus est; faciem uti semper attenuatam, tunc magis discoloratam & mortiferam præ se tulit, affirmans quod hujus hodierni belli exitus, utrisvis parti victoria concessa fuerit, Regnum *Angliæ* penitus distruct: & expressit mentem suam eam fore, ut si ille victor evadit, omnes fautores adversæ partis confundat: idque ipsum idem prædicebat, adversarium suum super benevolos suæ partis executurum, si victoria illi succedat. Denique ingre[di]entibus moderato passu Principe & militibus partis adversæ super exercitum Regis; mandavit ille ut prædictus dominus *Lestrange* illico decapitaretur. Illi autem quibus hoc officium datum est, videntes ancipitem rem nimis, majorisque ponderis quam unius hominis exterminium in manibus esse, differentes crudele Regis mandatum exequi dimiserunt hominem suo arbitrio, & ad interiora belli reversi sunt.

Inita igitur acerrima pugna inter ambas partes, Comes *Richmundiæ* cum militibus suis directe super Regem *Richardum* processit: Comes autem *Oxonie*, major post eum in tota ipsa societate, valentissimus miles, in eam alam ubi Dux *Norfolchiæ* constitutus erat, magno tam *Gallie* quam *Anglicorum* comitatu stipatus tetendit. In eo vero loco ubi Comes *Northumbriæ* cum satis decenti ingentique militia stabat, nihil adversi neque datis neque susceptis belli ictibus cernebatur. Ad postremum, gloriosa dicto [sic] Comiti *Richmundiæ*, jam soli Regi victoria, una cum pretiosissima Corona quam Rex *Richardus* ante gestavit in capite, cœlitus data est. Nam inter pugnandum, & non in fuga, dictus Rex *Richardus* multis letalibus vulneribus ictus, quasi Princeps animosus & audentissimus in campo occubuit. Deinde præfato Duce *Norfolchiæ*, *Richardo* Rat-

cliff Milite, *Roberto Brakenbury* Milite, Constabulario *Turris Londoniarum Johannem* [sic] *Kendall* Secretario, *Roberto Percy* Milite, Controrotulatore hospitii Regii, ac *Waltero Devereux* Domino de *Ferreis*, & multis, maxime Borealibus, in quibus Rex *Richardus* adeo confitebat, [sic] ante ulla consertas manus fugam ineuntibus: nullæ partes dignæ sive habiles remanserunt, in quas gloriosus victor *Henricus* septimus alicujus pugnæ experientiam denuo renovaret. Pace igitur ex hoc bello universo Regno concessa, inventa [sic] inter alios mortuos corpore dicto *Richardi* Regis, . . . Multasque alias contumelias illatas, ipsoque non satis humaniter propter funem in collum adjectum usque ad *Leicestriam* deportato; novus Rex Corona tam insigniter conquesta decoratus *Leicestriam* vadit. Dumque hæc ita se haberent, multi nobiles atque alii in captivitatem redacti sunt. Atque in primis *Henricus* Comes *Northumbriæ*, *Thomas de Howard* Comes *Surrei*, primo genitus dicti defuncti Ducis *Norfolchiæ*: captus est etiam *Willielmus Catesby*, qui inter omnes consiliarios defuncti jam Regis præminebat; ejus caput apud *Leicestriam* pro ultima remuneratione tam excellentis officii sui abscisum est. Duo autem valecti partium occiduarum Regni, pater & filius sub *Brecher* vocabulo appellati, qui post finitum prælium ad victorum manus devenerant, laqueo suspensi sunt. Et cum neque auditum, neque lectioni aut memoriæ commendatum est, aliquos alios post recessum à bello, similibus supplicis deputatos; sed Principem hunc novum in omnes suam clementiam impartisse; cœpit laudari ab omnibus, tanquam Angelus de cœlo missus, per quem Deus dignaretur visitare plebem suam, & liberare eam de malis quibus hactenus afflicta est supra modum.—*Historiæ Croylandensis Continuatio*; Gale, *Rerum Anglicarum Scriptores*, tom. i. p. 572-575.

<p>GOD : that shope both sea and Land, & ffor all creatures dyed ont tree, saue & keepe the realme of England 4 to liue in peace & tranquillitye !</p>	<p>May Christ keep England in peace!</p>
---	--

- St. George, to vs a sheild thou bee !
 ffor we haue cause to pray, both old & younge,
 with a stedfast hart ffull devatlye,
 8 & say, " welcome HENERY, right-wise ¹ King! "
- welcome right-wise King, & Ioy royall,
 he *that* is grounded with grace !
 welcome the ffortune *that* hath befall,
 12 *which* hath beene seene in many a place !
- who wend ² *that* England as itt was,
 soe suddenlye changed shold haue beene ?
 therefore lett vs thanke god of his grace,
 16 & say " welcome Henery, right-wise King! "
- how had wee need to remember, & to our minds
 call
 how England is transported miraculouslye
 to see the great Mischeefe *that* hath befall
 20 sith the Martyrdome of the holy King HENERY !
- how many lords haue beene deemed to dye,
 young innocents *that* neuer did sinn !
 therefore lett vs thanke god hartilye,
 24 & say " welcome HENERY, right-wise King! "
- some time a King raigned in this land,
that was Edward of hye ffelicytye;
 he was dowed & dread, as I vnderstand,
 28 through all the nations in Christentye ;
- he serued Iesus ffull heartilye :
 these examples may be taken by him
which hath preuailed him ³ with royaltye
 32 to weare the crowne & be our King.

¹ rightwise, i. e. righteous.—P. A.-S.
rihtwis.—F.

² wen'd, ween'd.—P.

³ ? *him* superfluous, see l. 39.—F.

- for with tounge I haue heard it told,
 when HENERY was in a ffar cuntrye, Henry VII.
that 3 times he was bought & sold
 36 through the might of gold & fee.
- he serued Iesus ffull hartlye : [page 435] did so too.
 this example may be said by him
which preuailed right royallye
 40 to weare the crowne and be our *King*.
- they banished him ouer the ffood, He was
 ouer the ffood & streames gray ; banished
 yett his right in England was good,
 44 as herafter know you may.
- there was hee banished ouer the ffloode,
 & into a strange Land they can him ¹ bring ;
that time Raigned Richard with royaltie, when
 48 he ware the crowne & was our *Kinge*. Richard III.
 was king.
- that* was well seene att streames stray ;
 att Milford hauen, when he did appeare
 with all his Lords in royall array, But he
 52 he said to them *that* with him weare : landed
 at Milford
 Haven,
- “into England I am entred heare, and claimed
 my heritage is this Land within ; his heritage,
 they shall me boldlye bring & beare,
 56 & loose my liffe, but Ile be *King*. to be king.
- “Iesus *that* dyed on good ffryday, He prayed
 & Marry mild *thats* ffull of might, for the
 send me the loue of the *Lord* Stanley ! help of
 60 he marryed my mother, a Lady bright ; ² Lord Stanley

¹ MS. hin.—F.² Lord Stanley (afterwards Earl of Derby) had married as his second wife

the Countess of Richmond, mother of Henry VII. She was his wife as early as 1473, if not earlier.—G. E. Adams.

“*that* is long sith I saw her with sight;
 I trust in Iesu wee shall meete with winne,¹
 & I shall maintaine her honor right
 64 ouer all England when I am Kinge.

and his
 brother Sir
 William,

“had I the Loue of *that* Lord in rich array
that hath proued his manhood soe well att
 need,
 & his brother Sir William, the good Stanley;—
 68 a better *Knight* neuer vmstrode² steede!

that noble
 knight.

“*that* hath beene seene in mickle dreed:
 much was the worshipp *that* happened him;
 a more nobler *Knight* att neede
 72 came neuer to maintaine Kinge.”

But we'll
 talk of
 Richard III.

now leaue wee HENERY, this prince royall,
 & talke of Richard in his dignitee,
 of the great misfortune did him befall:
 76 the causer of his owne death was hee.

Wicked
 counsellors
 ruined him.

wicked councell drew Richard neere,
 of them *that* had the prince³ in their guiding⁴;
 ffor wicked councell doth mickle deere,⁵
 80 *that* bringeth downe both Emperour & King.

He con-
 demned
 to death
 Lord
 Stanley
 who won
 Berwick for
 him

the Lord Stanley bothe sterne & stout,—
 he might be called fflower of fflowers,—man⁶
 dye.
that was well seene without doubt
 84 att Barwicke walls with towers hye;

¹ A.-S. *win*, pleasure.—F.

² bestrode.—P. *vm-*, *um-*, means
 ‘round.’—F.

³ Only half the *n* in the MS.—F.

⁴ Four strokes for *ui* in the MS.—F.

⁵ A.-S. *dar*, *daru*, destruction, injury.
 —F.

⁶ *maun*, i. e. *must*.—P.

- when all the Lords of England let itt bee,
that castle wightlye can hee wiinn.
 was there euer Lord in England, ffare or nere,¹
 88 *that* did such iorney ² to his Kinge ?
- then Richard bade a messenger to ffare
 soe ffare ³ into the west countrye
 to comfort his knights, squiers lesse & more,
 92 & to set good rule amongst his comintye.
- then wicked counsell drew Rich[ard] neere :
 these were they ⁴ words they said to him,
 “wee thinke yee worke vnwittilye
 96 in England, & ⁵ yee will continue *King*.
- “ffor why, the Lord Stanley is lent ⁶ in this Land,
 the Lord Strange, & the Chamberlaine ⁷; these 3
 they may show vpon a day a band
 100 such as may noe Lorde in Christentye.
- “lett some of them vnder *your* bondage bee,
 if any worshipp you thinke to wiinn;
 or else short while continue shall yee
 104 In England to be our Kinge.”
- then they made out messengers with maine & might
 soe ffarr into the west countrye;
 to the Lord Stanley *that* noble Knight
 108 they kneeled downe vpon their knee

when no
other Lord
could.

His bad
counsellors

told him
Lord Stanley
and others
were too
strong,

he must put
them down.

So
messengers
are sent

to Lord
Stanley

¹ far or nere, or perhaps neie.—P.
² A day's work.—Dyce. Cp. Fr.
Bonne journée fait qui de fol se delivre.
 Pro. he does an excellent *day's work*
 that rids himselfe of a foole. Cotgrave.
 —F.

³ far.—P.

⁴ the.—P.

⁵ an, if.—F.

⁶ lend, to dwell, remain, tarry.—
 Halliwell.—F.

⁷ John de Vere, Earl of Oxford, Lord
 Chamberlain.—G. E. A.

- and bid him & said, "*Richard that* raignes with royaltie,
Emperour of England this day within,
hee longeth you sore, my Lord, to see ;
- come to the King. 112 you must come & speake with our Kinge."
- He sets off, then they Lord busked¹ him vpon a day
To ryde to *King Richard* with royaltie, [page 436]
- but falls sick at Manchester, 116 & hee ffell sicke att Manchester by the way :
as the will of god is, all things must bee.
- and sends on Lord Strange
to know Richard's will. 120 the *Lord* strange then called [he] him nee ;
these were the words hee said to him :
" In goodlye hast now ryde must yee
to witt the will of Richard, our Kinge."
- Lord Strange
kneels to Richard, 124 then this *Lord* bowned² him ffull right
to ryde to *King Richard* hastilye.
when hee came before his souerraigine in sight,
he kneeled downe vpon his knee.
- who welcomes him with kind words 128 " welcome *Lord* strange, & kinsman nye !"
these were the words he said to him :
" was ther eeuere any Baron in England of ancetrye³
shold be soe welcome to his Kinge ? "
- but froward, heart, 132 alas *that* euer he cold soe say,
soe ffroward a hart as hee had vnder !
that was well seene after vpon a day ;
itt cast him & his crowne assunder,
- 136 & brought his body into bale & blunder,
these wicked words he cold begin ;
thus ffalshood endeth in shame & wonder,
whether itt be with Emperour or King.

¹ busked, i. e. dressed.—P.² bowned, i. e. prepared.—P.³ ancestry.—P.

- of itt heere is no more to say,
 but shortlye to ward comanded was hee.
 new messengers were made without delay
 140 soe ffarr into the west countrye
- and casts
 him into
 prison.
 Other
 messengers
 come to
- to the *Lord* stanley soe wise & wittye :
 these were the words thé sayd to him,
 “you must raise those *that* vnder you bee,
 144 & all the power *that* you may bringe ;
- Lord
 Stanley,
 and say,
 “ Raise all
 your men ;
 for
- “yonder cometh Richmond over the ffood
 with many allyants ¹ out of ffarr countrye,
 bold men of bone and blood ;
 148 the crowne of England chalengeth hee.
- Richmond is
 coming
- “you must raise those *that* vnder you bee,
 & all the power *that* yee may bringe,
 or else the *Lord* strange you must neuer see,
 152 *which* is in danger of our *King*.”
- or you'll
 never see
 Lord
 Strange
 again.”
- In a studye this *Lord* can stand,
 & said, “deere Iesus ! how may this bee?
 I draw wittenes to him *that* shope² both sea &
 land,
 156 *that* I neuer delt with noe trecherye.
- Lord Stanley
 says,
- “Richard is a man *that* hath no mercy ;
 hee wold mee & mine into bondage bringe ;
 therfore cleane against him will I bee,
 160 of all England though hee bee King.”
- “Richard has
 no mercy.
- I am
 against
 him.”
- then another messenger he did appeare
 to william Stanley, *that* noble *Knight*,
 & saith, “ *Richard that* weareth the crowne soe
 cleare,
 164 & in his Empire raigneth right,
- Richard's
 messenger
 asks Sir
 William
 Stanley

¹ i. e. allyants, aliens.—P.² i. e. shaped.—P.

- to help the King. "willeth you to bring your power to helpe him to ffight ;
ffor all his trust itt is you in."
then answered *that* gentle *Knight*,
- "What!
when he
keeps 168 " I haue great marueill of your *King* ;
- my nephew
in hold. "he keepeth the[r]e my nephew, my brothers heyre;—
a truer knight is not in christentye;—
that, Richard shall repent ffull sore,¹
- He shall
repent it
sore! 172 ffor any thing *that* I can see.
- Let him arm "bidd him array him with royaltye
& all the power *that* hee may bringe ;
and fight,
and flee or die. 176 ffor hee shall either ffight, or fflee,
or loose his liffe, if hee bee Kinge.
- By Mary and
Christ " I make mine avow to Marye, *that* may,
& to her sonne *that* dyed on tree,
I'll make
him
a meal! 180 I will make him such a breakefast vpon a day
as neuer made *Knight* any *King* in Cristentye !
- Tell him "tell thou *King* Richard these words ffrom mee :
ffor all the power *that* he may bringe,
to fight and
flee or die!" 184 in the ffieild he shall either ffight, or fflee,
or loose his liffe or hee be Kinge."
- The
messenger
tells Richard then this messenger fforth hee went
to carry to *King* Richard with royaltye,
how all the
country
rebel at Lord 188 & saith, " in yonder countrye I haue beene sent,
soe greeued men are not in Christentye
- Strange's
imprison-
ment. "ffor lone of the *Lord* strange *that* in bale doth bee."
these were the words hee sayd to him :
- He must
fight, or flee,
or die. 192 "you must either ffight or fflee,
or loose your liffe, if you bee Kinge."

¹ *sair* (i. e. sore).—Dyce.

- att *that* King Richard smiled small,
 & sware, "by Iesu ffull of might,
 when they are assembled with their powers all,
 196 I wold I had the great turke against me to ffight,
- "or Prester Iohn in his armor bright,
 the Sowdan of Surrey¹ with them to bringe!
 yett with manhood & with might
 200 in England I shold continue *King*.
- "I sweare by Iesu *that* dyed on a tree,
 & by his mother *that* mayden blythe,
 ffrom the towne of Lancaster to Shrewsburye,
 204 *Knight* nor squier Ile leaue none alie.
- "I shall kindle their cares riffe,
 & giue their Lands to my *Knights* keene;
 many a man shall repent the while
 208 *that* euer they rose against their King.
- "ffrom the holy-head to S' dauids Land,
 where now be towers & castles hye,
 I shall make *parkes* & plaine ffeilds to stand,
 212 ffrythes ffaire, & fforrests ffree.
- "Ladyes, 'well-away!' shall crye;
 widdowes shall weepe, & their hands wringe;
 many a man shall repent *that* day
 216 *that* euer they rose against their Kinge."
- then he made out messengers with maine & might
 throughout England ffarr & neere,²
 to Duke, Erle, Barron, & Knight,
 220 & to euery man in his degree.

Richard
 swears that,
 whoever
 opposes,
 [page 437]

he'll still
 be king,

he'll leave no
 Lancashire
 squire alive.

and will lay
 waste Wales,

make
 widows
 weep,
 and rebels
 rue.

He sends
 all over
 England
 for his
 nobles,

¹ Syria.—Robson.

² nec.—P.

- and they
 come to
 serve their
 King :
 224 you neuer heard tell of such a companye
 att sowte, seege,¹ nor noe gatheringe :
 part of their names heere shall yee
 that came that day to serue their King.
- the Duke of
 Norfolk,
 the Earls of
 Kent,
 Shrewsbury,
 228 thither came the duke of Norffolke vpon a day,
 & the Erle of Surrey *that* was his heyre ;
 the Erle of Kent was not away,
 the Erle of Shrewsbury breme² as beare.
 Lincoln,
 North-
 umberland,
 Westmore-
 land :
 232 the Erle of Lincolne³ wold not spare,
 the Erle of Northumberland ready bowne,
 the Erle of westmoreland great othes sware,
 all they said *Richard* shold Keepe his crowne.
- Lords
 Zouch,
 Maltravers,
 Arundel,
 Wells,
 236 theres was my *Lord Zouch*, sad att assay⁴ ;
 my *Lord Mattrevis*,⁵ a noble *Knight* ;
 young Arrundell dight him vpon a day,
 the *Lord wells*, both wise and wight ;
- Grey of
 Codnor,
 Bowes,
 Audley,
 240 the *Lord Gray Cotner*⁶ in his armour bright,
 the *Lord Bowes* made him bowne,
 the *Lord Audley* was ffeirce to flight,
 & all said *Richard* shold keepe his crowne.
- Berkeley,
 Ferrers of
 Chartley,
 Ferrers of
 Groby,
 244 there was my *Lord Bartley*, sterne on a steede,
 the *Lord fferryes* of chartlye, the *Lord fferryes* of
 Strobe,
 the *Lord Bartley* noble att neede,
 chamberlaine of England *that* day was hee.
- Fitzhugh,
 Scrope of
 Upsal,
 Scrope of
 Bolton,
 Dacres,
 248 the *Lord ffittz Hugh*, & his cozen nye,
 the *Lord Scrope* of vpsall, the *Lord scroope* of
 Bolton ;
 the *Lord Dacres* raised all the North cuntrye ;
 & all said *Richard* shold keepe his crowne.

¹ assault, siege.—F.² MS. brenne.—F.³ MS. Lincolme.—F.⁴ stedfast in trial.—F.⁵ Maltrevers.—P.⁶ i. e. Lord Grey of Codnor.—P.

- There was many nobles mustered to ffight :
 the Lord Audley & the Lord Lumley,
 the Lord Gray-stocke ¹ in his armour bright,
 252 he brought with him a noble companye,
- he sware by Iesus *that* dyed on a tree,
 ' *that* his enemyes shold be beaten downe ;
 he was not [in] England, ffarr nor neere,
 256 *that* shold lett ² Richard to weare his crowne.'
- there was Sir Iohn Spencer, a noble *Knight*,
 Sir Raph hare-bottle ³ in rich array,
 Sir william ward, alwayes *that* was wight,
 260 Sir Archeobald, the good Rydley ;
- Sir Nicholas Moberly was not away,
 nor yett Sir Robert of Clotten,
 alsoe Sir Oliuer, the hend horsley ;
 264 all said Richard shold keepe his crowne.
- there was Sir Henery Percy,⁴ sterne on steede,
 Sir Roger Bowmer in his companye,
 Sir Richard Manners, noble att neede,
 268 Soe was Sir Henery the hend Hatteley ; [page 438]
- Sir Robert Conway in companye,
 Sir Raphe Smyth & Sir Roger Akerston,
 & Sir William, his cozen nye ;
 272 & all sayd Richard shold keepe his crowne.
- There was a noble *Knight*, Sir Iohn the Gray,
 & Sir Thomas of Mountgomerye ;
 Sir Rodger Sanfort was not away ;
 276 ffrom London came Sir Robert Brakenburye ;

Lumley,
 Greystocke ;

Sirs J.
 Spencer,

W. Ward,

N. Moberly,
 R. Clutton,
 O. Horsley,

H. Percy,

R. Manners,

R. Conway,

W. Aker-
 ston,

Jn. Gray,

R. Sanfort,

¹ Ralph, Lord Greystock, who died in 1487, without male issue, when the barony became united with that of Dacre.—G. E. Adams.

² hinder.—Robson.

³ Harbottle.—P.

⁴ Sir Henry Percy.—P.

- H. Bowdrye, *Sir Henery Bowdrye was not away,*
 nor yett Sir Richard the good Chorlton ;
- R. Robbye, *Sir Raphe Robbye made him yare ;*
 280 *all said Richard wold keepe his crowne.*
- M. Con- *there was Sir Marmaduke Constable, a noble Knight,*
 stable, *of King Richards counsell hee was nye ;*
- W. Conyers, *Sir william Conyous,¹ allwayes that was wight,*
 284 *Sir Robert Thribald with his meanye ;*
- M. Wardley, *soe was Sir Martine of the wardley,*
 & Sir Richard the good Hortton,
- R. Rosse, *& Sir Richard Rosse sware smartlye*
 288 *that King Richard shold keepe his crowne.*
- R. Sturley, *There was Sir Robert, the sterne Sturley ;*
 Sir Iohn of Melton, thither Came hee,
- G. Clyfton, *Sir Garuis Clyfton ² in rich array,*
 292 *Sir Henery Perpoint in his degree,*
- T. North, *Sir Thomas North with royaltie,*
 & alsoe Sir Iohn of Babington,
- H. Stafford, *Sir Humphrey Stafford sware certainelye*
 296 *that King Richard shold keepe his crowne.*
- R. Ryder, *there was Sir Robert Ryder, a man of might,*
 Sir Robert Vtridge in his dignitye ;
- J. Hunting- *Sir Iohn Huntington was ffeirce to ffight,*
 ton. 300 *soe was Sir Iohn willmarley.*
- R. Swayley, *Sir Robert Swayley with royalltye,*
 & alsoe Sir Bryan of stableton,³
- W. Staple- *& Sir william his cozen nye,*
 ton. 304 *& all said Richard shold keepe his crowne.*

¹ Conyers.—P.² Sir Gervase Clyfton.—P.³ Sir Bryan Stapleton.—P.

- There was *Sir Richard Ratcliffe*, a noble *Knight*,
of *King Richards* counsell was hee ;
Sir William his brother was ffeirce to ffight,
308 & *Sir Thomas*, they were brethren 3. R. Ratcliffe,
W. Ratcliffe,
- & *Sir Richard* the Mallinere,
& *Sir Iohn* the good Hortton,
& *Sir Thomas* the good Mallynere,
312 & all said Rich[ard] shold keepe his crowne. R. Mal-
linere,
T. Mally-
nere,
- There was *Sir Raphe Dacres* out of the North,
& *Sir Christopher* the Moresbye ¹ ;
Sir William Musgreave was stiffe to stand,
316 soe was *Sir Alexander ffawne* in his dignitye. R. Dacres,
W. Mus-
grave,
- Sir George Murkenffield* behind wold not bee,
nor yett *Sir Thomas* the doughtye Broughton ;
Sir Christopher Owen made him readye,
320 & all sayd Rich[ard] shold weare his crowne. G. Murken-
field,
C. Owen,
- there was *Sir william Tempest* out of the vale,
& *Sir Richard* his cozen nye ;
Sir Raph Ashton, hee made not ffaile,
324 *Sir Thomas Maclefeild* ² in Companye. W. Tempest,
R. Ashton,
- Sir Richard ward* behind wold not bee,
nor yett *Sir Robert* of Middleton ;
Sir Iohn Coleburne sware certainelye
328 *that King Richard* shold keepe his crowne. R. Ward,
J. Cole-
burne,
- there was *Sir Iohn Neuill* ³ of bloud soe hye,
Sir Iohn Hurlstean ⁴ in rich arraye,
Sir Rodger Herne behind wold not bee,
332 *Sir Iames Harrington*, sad att assay, J. Neville,
R. Herne,
J. Harring-
ton,

¹ perhaps Thoresby.—P. Perhaps
not.—Adams.

² *Sir Thomas Macklesfield*.—P.

³ Neville.—P.

⁴ ? MS. Hurfslean.—F.

- R. Harrington.
All swear
Richard
shall reign.
- 336 Sir Robert his brother was not away,
nor yett Sir Thomas of Pilkinton ;
& all these, great othes sware they
that King Richard shold keepe his crowne.
- 2 shires
alone
fight for
Henry.
- 340 had wee not need to Iesu to pray,
that made the world, the day & night,
to keepe vs out of bale and woe ?
2 shires against all England to fight,
- 344 & maintaine HENERY *that* came ffor his right,
& in the realme of England was ready bowne !
ffreinds, & yee will hearken me right, [page 429]
I shall tell you how Henery gott his crowne.
- Lord
Stanley
- leaves
Latham
Castle
- 348 the Lord Stanley sterne and stout,
that euer hath beene wise and wittye,
ffrom Latham Castle withouten doubt
vppon a munday bowned hee
- with Knights & squiers in companye.
they had their banners in the sunn glitteringe ;
they were as ffeirce as ffawcon to fflye,
- 352 to maintaine HENERY *that* was their King.
- and marches
towards
Newcastle.
- 356 then this Lord bowned him vpon a day
with noble men in companye ;
towards Newcastle vnder Line he tooke the way,
& told his men both gold and ffee.
- Sir Wm.
Stanley
- marches to
Nantwich,
- 360 Sir william Stanley wise and wight,
ffrom the castle of Holt with holts hye
to the Nantwich hee rydeth straight,
& tooke his men wages of gold and ffee.
- with the
flower of
Cheshire ;
- 364 all the north wales ffor the most partye,
the fflower of Cheshire, with him hee did bringe ;
better men were not [in] christentye
that euer came to maintaine their King.

- Erly vpon Twesday att Morne
 Sir william Stanley, *that Noble Knight*,
 remoued ffrom Nantwiche to the towne of stone,—
 368 by then was Henery come to stafford straight,—
- he Longed sore to see him in sight,
 & straight to stafford towne is gone,¹
 & kneeled downe anon-right,
 372 & by the hand he hath him tane :
- hee said, “ I am ffull glad of thee ; ”
 & these were the words he said to him :
 “ through the helpe of my Lord thy ffather,² & thee,
 376 I trust in England to continue Kinge.”
- then he hent *that noble prince* by the hand,
 & said, “ welcome my souerraigne King HENERY !
 chalenge thy Herytage & thy Land,
 380 *that thine owne is, & thine shall bee.*
- “ be Eger to ffight, & lothe to fflee !
 let manhood be bredd thy brest within !
 & remember another day who doth ffor thee,
 384 of all England when thou art Kinge.”
- after, there was noe more to say,
 but leaue of the prince he hath taken,³
 & came againe by light of the day
 388 to the litle prettye towne of stone.
- Early vpon Saturday att morne,
 to Lichffield they remoue, both old & younge.⁴
 att woosley bridge them beforene,
 392 there had they a sight of our Kinge.

thence to
Stone,

from whence
he goes to
meet Henry,

who is full
glad of him.

He exhorts
Henry
to claim his
crown,

he eager to
fight,

and, when
he wins,
to remember
his friends.

Then Sir
William

returnes
to Stone.

On Saturday

he marches
to Lichfield

¹ *gane* (i. e. gone).—Dyce.

² This should be “*brother*”: Thomas,
Lord Stanley, the father of Sir William,

and the then (1485) Lord Stanley, having
died in 1458.—Adams.

³ tane.—P.

⁴ *yinge*.—Dyce.

- & to Lichefeild they ridden right,
 with answerable army came royallye :
 to nomber the companye *that* was with the *Knight*,
 396 itt was a goodlye sight to see.
- guns in Lichefeild they cracken on hye
 to cheere the countye both more & min,
 & glad was all the Chiualrye
 400 *that* was on heneryes parte, our Kinge.
- and rides through the town.
 Then he hears
 throughout Lichefeild rydeth the Knight,
 on the other side there tarryed hee ;
 a messenger came to him straight,
 404 & kneeled downe vpon his knee,
- that Lord Stanley
 is about to fight Richard.
 & saith, "the *Lord Stanley* is his enemy nye,
that are but a litle way ffrom him ;
 they will ffight within these houres 3
 408 with *Richard that* is Englands Kinge."
 "that wold I not," the Knight can say,
 "ffor all the gold in Christentye !"
 towards Tamworth he tooke the way,
 412 & came to Hattersey, & neighed nye
- He passes on to Hattersey
 and joins Lord Stanley.
 where the *Lord Stanley* in a dale cold bee,
 with trumpetts & tabours tempered with him :
 itt was a comelye sight to see
 416 as euer was to maintaine Kinge. [page 440]
- On Sunday they set their battle in array,
 All *that* night there tarryed they,
 & vpon the sunday gods service did see.
 toward the ffeild they did them array ;
 420 the vawward the *Lord Stanley* tooke hee,
 Sir William Stanley the rerward wold bee,
 & his sonne Sir Edward with a winge.
 thé did remaine in their array
 424 to waite the coming of *Richard King*.
- waiting Richard's attack.

- then they Looked to a florrest syde,
 they hard trumpetts & tabours tempered on hye :
 they thought *King Richard* had comen there,
 428 & itt was the Noble prince, *King HENERYE*. But Henry
first comes,
- ouer a riuer then rydeth hee ;
 he brake the ray, & rode to him :
 itt was a comelye sight to see (comely it
was to see
the meeting)
 432 the meeting of our *Lord & Kinge*.—
- then in their host there did ffall affray
 a litle time before the night ;—
 you neuer saw men soe soone in their array
 436 with fell weapons ffeirce ffor to flight.—
- vpon a keene courser *that* was wight,
 other *Lords* with him hee cold bringe ;
 thus in array came ryding straight,
 440 *HENERY* of England, our noble Kinge. on a swift
courser,

our noble
king.
- he lowted low & tooke his hatt in his hand,
 & thanked the states ¹ and cominaltye :
 “ to quitt ² you all I vnderstand ;
 444 I trust in Iesu *that* day to see.” He thanked
the lords
and com-
mons,
and said he
hoped to re-
quite them.
- many a cry in the host *that* night did bee ;
 & anon the Larke began to singe ;
 truth of the battell heere shall yee,
 448 *that* euer was betweene *King* and *King*. Next
morning,
- King HENERY* desired the vaward right
 of the *Lord stanley that* was both wise & wittye ;
 & hee hath granted him in sight, he asked to
lead the
van.
 452 & saith “ but small is *your* companye.”

¹ nobles.—F.² quite, i.e. requite.—P.

Lord
Stanley gave
it him,
with 4 good
knights,

4 of the Noble *Knights* then called hee ;
their names to you then shall I minge ;
he bade array them with their chivalrye,
456 & goe to the vaward with our Kinge :

Tunstall,

Sir Robert Tunsall, a Noble Knight,
& come of royall anceytrees ;

Savage,

Sir Iohn Savage, wise & wight,

Pershall,

460 Sir Hugh Persall ; there was 3 :

Humphrey
Stanley.

Sir Humphrey Stanley the 4th did bee,
that proued noble in euerye thinge ;
they did assay them with their chivalrye,
464 & went to the vaward with our kinge.

Lord
Stanley
has two
battalions.

the Lord stanley both sterne and stout,
2 battells *that* day had hee
of hardye men, withouten doubt
468 better were not in christentye.

Sir Wm.
Stanley
has the
rearguard.

Sir william, wise and worthye,
was hindmost att the outsettinge ;
men said *that* day *that* dyd him see,
472 hee came betime³ vnto our King.

He sees
Richard's
host :

five miles
of men,

then he remoued vnto a mountaine full hye,
& looked into a dale ffull dread ;
5 miles compasse, no ground they see,
476 ffor armed men & trapped steeds.

in four
battalions,

theyr armor glittered as any gleeed² ;
in 4 strong battells they cold fforth bring ;
they seemed noble men att need
480 as euer came to maintaine [a] King.

¹ MS. betine.—F.

² burning coal.—Dyce.

- the duke of Norfolke ¹ avanted ² his banner ³ bright, Norfolk in
the van.
 soe did the younge Erle of Shrewsburye,
 to the sun & wind right speedylye dight,
 484 soe did Oxford, *that* Erle, in companye.
- to tell the array itt were hard ffor me,
 & they Noble power *that* they did bring.
 And of the ordinance ⁴ heere shall yee, [page 441] Their
artillery
was,
 488 *that* had *that* day Richard our Kinge.
- they had 7 scores Sarpentine ⁵ without dout, 140 ser-
pentine,
that were locked & Chained vppon a row,
 as many bombards ⁶ *that* were stout; 140
bombards,
 492 like blasts of thunder they did blow.
- 10000 Morespikes ⁷ with-all, 10,000
morris-pikes
and harque-
busiers.
 & harquebusyers, throwlye can thé thringe ⁸
 to make many a noble man to ffall
 496 *that* was on HENERYS part, our kinge.
- ⁹ King Richard looked on the mountaines hye, Richard sees
Lord
Stanley's
banner,
 & sayd, "I see the banner of the Lord Stanley."
 he said, "fleitch hither the Lord Strange to mee,
 500 ffor doubtlesse hee shall dye this day;
- "I make mine avow to Marye, *that* may, and swears
that all the gold this Land within
 shall not saue his liffe this day, Lord
Strange
shall die.
 504 in England iff I be Kinge!"

¹ *Norfolk* was on the side of Richard. *Shrewsbury*, a minor, probably with his uncle Sir Gilbert Talbot, was on the side of Henry. *Oxford* was a chief commander of Henry's side.—Adams.

² availed, or perhaps avanced.—P. advanced, raised.—Dyce.

³ MS. *bamer*.—F.

⁴ Fr. *Artillerie*, f., Artillerie, Ordnance. Cotgrave.—F.

⁵ a kind of cannon. Halliwell. Fr.

Serpentine, the Artillerie called a *Serpentine* or *Basiliskoe*. Cotgrave.—F.

⁶ See Florio, ed. 1611, pp. 100, 112, 127. Halliwell. Fr. *Bombarde*. A *Bumbard*, or *murthering peece*. Cotgrave.—F.

⁷ a large pike. Halliwell.—F.

⁸ A.-S. *þringan* = to rush.—F.

⁹ Vide Pag. 478. St. 236, & sequent* [The 6th Part of *Ladye Bessyde*, below.] —P.

- Strange is brought out;
 he calls
 Christ to witness that he never was a traitor.
 He sends a message to his gentlemen
 and yeomen,
 a ring to his Lady,
 and hopes that they all may meet in heaven.
 If Henry loses,
 his son is to be taken abroad;
- then they brought the *Lord* Strange into his sight;
 he said, "ffor thy death make thee readye."
 then answered *that* noble *Knight*,
 508 & said, "I crye god & the world mercye !
- " & Iesus, I draw wittnesse to thee
that all the world ffrom woe did winn,
 since the time *that* I borne did bee,
 512 was I neuer traitor to my Kinge."
- a gentleman then called hee,—
 men said Latham was his name,—
 516 " & euer thou come into my countrye,
 greete well my gentlemen eche one;
- " my yeomen Large of blood and bone,
 sometimes we had mirth att our meetinge;
 they had a *Master*, & now they haue none,
 520 ffor heere I must be martyred *with* the Kinge."
- there he tooke a ring of his ffigar right,
 & to *that* squier raught itt hee,
 & said, " beare this to my Lady bright,
 524 for shee may thinke itt longe or shee may ¹ see;
- " yett att doomes day meete shall wee,—
 I trust in Iesu *that* all this world shall winn—
 In the celestyall heauen vpon hye
 528 in presence of a Noble *King*.
- " & the ffeild be lost vpon our *partye*,—
 as I trust in god itt shall not bee,—
 take my eldest sonne *that* is my heyre,
 532 & fflee into some ffarr countrye.

¹ me.—F.

- “yett the child a man may bee,—
 hee is comen of a *Lords* kinn,—
 another day to reuenge mee
 536 of Richard of England, if he be *King*.”
- then to King Richard there came a *Knight*,
 saith, “I hold noe time about this to be.
 see yee not the vawards begining to ffight?
 540 when yee haue the ffather, the vnckle, all 3,
- “looke what death you will haue them to dye;
 att *your* will you may them deeme.”
 through these ffortunate words eskaped hee
 544 out of the danger of Richard the Kinge.
- then the *partyes* countred¹ together egerlye.
 when the vawards began to fight,
King Henery ffought soe manffullye,
 548 soe did Oxford, *that* Erle soe wight;
- Sir Iohn Saunage, *that* hardy *Knight*,
 deathes dints he delt *that* day
 with many a white hood in fight,
 552 *that* sad men were att assay.
- Sir Gilbert Talbott was not away,
 but stoutly stirred him in *that* ffight;
 with noble men att assay
 556 he caused his enemyes lowe to light.
- Sir Hugh Persall, with sheild & speare
 ffull doughtylye *that* day did hee;
 he bare him doughtye in this warr,
 560 as a man of great degree.

and when
he's a man,

he is to
revenge him
on Richard.

Richard
hears

that the vans
are fighting,

waits to
take
the Stanleys;

and Strange
escapes
death.

Henry fights
manfully,

and so do
Savage,

Talbot,

and Pearsall.

¹ i. e. encountered.—P.

- Richard has
40,003 men.
- 564 *King Richard* did in his army stand,
he was n[u]mbred to 40000 and 3
of hardy men of hart and hand,
that vnder his banner there did bee.
- Sir William Stanley
Stanley
- attacks him.
- 568 Sir William Stanley wise & worthe [page 442]
remembred the brea[k]ffast ¹ he hett to him;
downe att a backe then cometh hee,
& shortly sett vpon the Kinge.
- Arrows fly,
guns shoot:
- 572 then they countred together sad & sore;
archers they lett sharpe arrowes flee,
they shott guns² both ffell & ffarr,
bowes of vewe³ bended did bee,
- Richard's
men begin to
fail.
- 576 springalls⁴ spedd them speedylye,
harquebusiers pellets throughly did thringe;
soe many a banner began to swee⁵
that was on Richards partye, their King.
- Henry's
archers
take to their
swords,
- 580 then our archers lett their shooting bee,
with ioyned weapons were growden⁶ full right,
brands rang on basenetts hye,
battell-axes ffast on helmes did light.
- and his men
fight
mightily.
- 584 there dyed many a doughtye *Knicht*,
there vnder ffoot can thé thringe;
thus they ffought with maine & might
that was on HENERYES part, our King.
- A knight
advises
Richard to
flee.
- 588 then to *King Richard* there came a *Knicht*,⁷
& said, "I hold itt time ffor to flee;
ffor yonder stanleys dints they be soe wight,
against them no man may dree.

¹ See line 179, page 242.—F.

² MS. gums.—F. ³ yewe.—P.
⁴ Springal, an ancient military engine
for casting stones and arrows. Halliwell.
—F.

⁵ swee, qu. perhaps flee.—P. sway
(& fall).—F.

⁶ ? grownden.—F.

⁷ Vide Pag. 479, St. 255 [of MS., last
part of *Ladye Bessye*], et sequentes.—P.

- " heere is thy horsse att thy hand readye ;
 another day thou may thy worshipp win,
 & ffor to raigne with royaltie,
 592 to weare the crowne, and be our *King*."
- he said, " giue me my battell axe in my hand,
 sett the crowne of England on my head soc hye !
 ffor by him *that* shope both sea and Land,
 596 *King* of England this day I will dye !
- But Richard
calls for his
battle-axe
and crown :
he will die a
King,
- " one ffoote will I neuer ffee
 whilest the breath is my brest within ! "
 as he said, soe did itt bee ;
 600 if hee lost his liffe, if he were *King*.
- and never
flee.
- about his standard can thé light,
 the crowne of gold thé hewed him ffree,
 with dilffull dints his death thé dight,
 604 the Duke of Norffolke *that* day thé slowe.
- Richard
is slain ;

Norfolk too,
- the *Lord* fferrers & many other moe,
 boldlye on bere they can them bringe ;
 many a noble *Knight* in his hart was throwe,
 608 *that* lost his liffe with Richard the *King*.
- Lord
Ferrers,
- there was slaine Sir Richard Ratcliffe, a noble
Knight,
 of *King* Richards counsell was ffull nye ;
 Sir william Conyas,¹ allwayes *that* was wight,
 612 & Sir Robert of Brakenburye.
- Sir Richard
Ratcliffe,

Sir William
Conyers,
- a *Knight* there dyed *that* was ffull doughtye,
that was Sir Richard the good Chorlton ;
that day there dyed hee
 616 with Richard of England *that* ware the crowne.
- and Sir
Richard
Chorlton.

¹ Conyers.—P.

- amongst all other *Knights*, remember
which were hardy, & therto wight :
- Sir William
 Brandon,
 Henry's
 standard-
 bearer,
- 620 *King* Heneryes Standard he kept on height,
- & vanted itt with manhood & might
 vntill with dints hee was dr[i]uen downe,
 & dyed like an ancyent *Knight*,
- was killed,
- 624 with HENERY of England *that* ware the crowne.
- Sir Perciuall Thriball, the other hight,
 & noble *Knight*, & in his hart was true ;
King Richards standard hee kept vpright
- and also
 Sir P.
 Triball,
 Richard's
 standard-
 bearer.
- 628 vntill both his leggs were hewen him free ;
- to the ground he wold neuer lett itt goe,
 whilest the breath his brest was within ;
 yett men pray ffor the *Knights* 2
- 632 *that* euer was soe true to their King.
- then they moued to a mountaine on height,
 with a lowde voice they cryed *king* HENERY ;
 the crowne of gold *that* was bright,
- Henry is
 proclaimed
 King,
- and Lord
 Stanley
- 636 to the Lord stanley deliuered itt bee.
- anon to King HENERY deliuered itt hee,
 the crowne *that* was soe deliuered to him,
 & said, "methinke ye are best worthye
 to weare the crowne and be our King."
- hands the
 crown of
 England to
 him.
- 640
- They ride to
 Leicester,
- Then they rode to Leister *that* night [page 413]
 with our noble prince *King* HENERYE ;
 they brought *King* Richard thither with might
 as naked as he borne might bee,
- 644

<p>& in Newarke ¹ Laid was hee, <i>that</i> many a one might looke on him. thus ffortunes raignes most maruelouslye 648 both with Emperour & with king.</p>	<p>and lay Richard's body in Newark.</p>
<p>now this doubtfull day is brought to an end, Iesu now on their soules haue mercye ! & hee [that] dyed this world to amend, 652 saue stanleys blood, where-soeuer they bee,</p>	<p>Jesu haue mercy on their souls,</p>
<p>to remaine as <i>Lords</i> with royaltye when truth & conseyence shall spread & spring, & <i>that</i> they bee of councill nye 656 to Iames ² of England <i>that</i> is our <i>King</i> !</p>	<p>and save Stanley's blood as <i>Lords</i> whereuer truth shall spread!</p>

ffinis.

¹ A place in Leicester so called.—P.
² This Poem was certainly written
 before the time of *King* James, but some

transcriber applied the Prayer to the
 reigning Prince.—P.

Aeneas & Dido : ¹

THIS song is to be found among “*The Ayres that were sung and played at Brougham Castle in Westmerland, in the King’s Entertainment, given by the Right Honourable the Earl of Cumberland and his Right noble Sonne the Lord Clifford.* Composed by Mr. George Mason and Mr. John Earsden. Printed by Thomas Snodham, 1618.” They were reprinted by John Stafford Smith in *Musica Antiqua* ; and in the preface to that work he says : “The last verse of the famous ballad *Dido Queen* was, on this occasion, added to the more ancient song. The Editor has in his possession an older copy without it.” The verse here referred to begins “Dido wept.”

D’Urfey reprinted the song, with this third verse, in *Pills to purge Melancholy*, vol. vi. p. 192, but to another tune. The old song was very popular, as may be proved by the following quotations :

You ale-knights ! you that devour the marrow of the malt, and drink whole ale-tubs into consumptions ! that sing *Queen Dido* over a cup, and tell strange news over an ale-pot ! you shall be awarded with this punishment, that the rot shall infect your purses, and eat out the bottom before you are aware. (*The Penniless Parliament of Threadbare Poets*, 1608.)

This allusion to the song is ten years earlier than the date of the printed copy of the “Entertainment.” Again, in Fletcher’s *The Captain*, Act iii. Scene 3, Frank says :

These are your eyes—
Where were they, Clora, when you fell in love
With the old footman for singing *Queen Dido* ?

In Charles II.’s reign, Sir Robert Howard (speaking of him-

¹ In praise of Inconstancy.—P.

self) said: "In my younger time I have been delighted with a ballad for its sake; and 'twas 10 to 1 but my muse and I had so set up first: nay, I had almost thought that *Queen Dido*, sung *that way*, was some ornament to the pen of Virgil." (*Poems and Essays*, 8vo, 1673.)

"The most excellent History of The Duchess of Suffolk's Calamity," printed in 1607, was sung to the tune of *Queen Dido*. Several more are quoted in *Popular Music of the Olden Time*, vol. i. pp. 371-2.—W. C.

<p>DIDO: was a Carthage Queene, & loued a Troian <i>Knicht</i>, [that] wandering,¹ many a coste had seene, 4 & many a bloody ffight. as they on hunting [rode,²] a shower droue them in a louing hower, downe to a darkesome Caue, 8 wheras Æneas with his charmes locket Queene didon in his armes, & had what hee wold craue.</p> <p>Dido Hymens rites fforgett,³ 12 her loue was winged with hast; her honor shee regarded not, but in her brest him placet. but when their loues were new begun, 16 Ioue sent downe his winged sonne to ffright Aeneas sleepe, who bade him by the breake of day ffrom <i>Queene</i> dido steale away, 20 which made her wayle and weepe.</p>	<p>Dido loved Æneas, and in a caue he locked her in his armes, But Ioue ordered him away,</p>
--	--

¹ MS. wondering.—F. who wand^r—P.

² went.—P. rode, in the other copy.—W. C.

³ forgot.—P.

and Dido
wept.

Æneas did
no wrong, as
he was
forced to go.
Learn lords,
then,
to be
faithless,

and get new
loves.

dido wept, but what of this ?
the gods wold haue itt soe ;

Æneas nothing did amisse,

24 ffor he was fforcte to goe.

Learne, Lordings, Learne ¹, no ffaith to keepe
with your loues, but lett them weepe ;
itts ffolly to be true ;

28 And lett this story serue your turne,

& lett 20 didoes burne,
soe you gett dalye ² new.

ffinis.

¹ *then* in the other copy.—W. C.

² *daily*.—P.

[“*As it beffell on a Day*,” printed in *Lo. & Hum. Songs*, p. 82, follows
here in the *MS.* p. 444.]

The Squier.¹

THIS is a much abridged and somewhat mutilated version of the charming and most popular old romance, *The Squyr of Lowe Degre*,² reprinted by Ritson from Copland's edition, in his *Ancient English Metrical Romances*; reprinted again more accurately by Mr. Hazlitt in his *Early Popular Poetry*; liberally quoted from by Warton in his *History of English Poetry*. The "Squyr of Lowe Degree," as Mr. Hazlitt (ii. 22) points out, "was licensed to John Kyng on the 10th of June, 1560, with several other articles; but no impression by King has hitherto come to light." The following may possibly be a copy of King's edition.

With one part of the story—the tender care with which the supposed remains of her lover are preserved by the king's daughter—the reader will not fail to compare Keats' *Isabella or the Pot of Basil*.

<p>IT : was a squier of England borne, he wrought a fforffett against the crowne, against the crowne & against the ffee :</p> <p>4 in England tarry no longer durst hee, ffor hee was vexed beyond the ffome³ into the Kings Land of Hungarye. he was no sooner beyond the ffome,</p> <p>8 but into a service he was done ;</p>	<p>An English Squire offended his King,</p> <p>and had to flee to Hungary.</p> <p>There he took service</p>
---	---

¹ A poor imperfect Old Ballad. Of very moderate excellence: yet curious. This is a mutilated incorrect copy of the ancient Romance intituled *The Squire of Lowe Degree*. (So I once thôt, but upon comparing them I find them very different.) This seems to differ from the printed Romance of the *Squier of Low*

Degree about as much as that of Sir Lambwell in pag. 60 [of MS., vol. i. p. 142 of print] does from *that* of Sir Launfal, & probably for the same Reason—vid. supra, p. 60.—P.

² Or *Vndo your doore*: 1132 lines.—F.

³ Sea, qu.—P.

with
the King's
daughter,

and waited
on her
till he won
her love.

When he
was sad,
he went to
his garden
of maples
and hazles,

where the
martin and

thrush sang.

There he
lamented
his want of
money

and birth
that he
might win
his Lady.
She heard
him,

and asked
him
whom he
was

- such a service he cold him gett,
he serued the Kings daughter in her seate;
such a service he was put in,
12 he serued the Kings daughter with bread & wine;
he serued this Lady att table and Chesse
till hee had woone her loue to his.¹
he was made vsher of the hall,
16 the setter of the Lords both great & small.²
the Squier was soe curterous & kind,³
Euery man loued him & was his ffreind.
& alwaies when the Squier was woe,
20 into his arbour he wold goe ;
the maple trees were ffaire & round,
the filbert hangs downe to the ground,
the Iay iangles them amonge,
24 the marttin song many a ffaire songe,
the sparrow spread vpon her spray,
the throstle song both night and day,
the swallow swooped too and ffroe :
28 the squires hart was neuer soe woe,
he Leaned his backe vntill a thorne,
& said, "alacke *that* euer I was borne !
that I had gold, soe had I fee,
32 marry I might yond ffaire Ladye.
O *that* I were borne of soe hye a kin,
the Ladyes loue *that* I might win !"
the Lady lay in her chamber hind,
36 & heard the Squier still mourning ;
shee pulled fforth a pin of Iuorye,
like the sun itt shone by and by ;
shee opened the Casement of a glasse,
40 shee saw the squier well where hee was,
" Squier," shee sayes, " ffor whose sake
is *that* mourning *that* thou dost make ? "

¹ Compare *Thomas of Pote*, p. 136 above.—F.

² See Russell's *Boke of Nurture*, l. 1001.—F.

³ hend, i. e. gentle.—P.

- "Ladye," he sayes, "as I doe see,
 44 of my mourninge I dare not tell yee,
 ffor you wold complaine vnto our King,
 & hinder me of my Liuinge."
 "Squier," shee sais, "as I doe thriue,
 48 neuer while I am woman aline!"
 "Squier," shee sais, "if you will my loue haue,
 another ffashion you must itt craue,
 ffor you must to the ffeild, & ffight,
 52 & dresse you like & other wise Knight¹;
 & euer the fformost I hold you ffirst,
 & euer my ffather hold you next,
 & hee will take such ffavor to yee,
 56 soone marryed together wee shalbee."
 "Lady," he saies, "*that* is soone said:
 how shold a man to the ffeild, was neuer arraid?
 Lady," he said, "itt were great shame
 60 a naked man shold ryde ffrom home."
 "thou shalt haue gold, thou shalt haue ffee,
 strenght of men & royaltie."
 shee went to a Chest of Iuorye,
 64 & ffetched out a 100^{li} and 3:
 "Squier," shee saies, "put this in good Lore;
 when this is done, come ffetch thee more."
 shee had no sooner these words all said,
 68 but men about her chamber her ffather had Laid:
 "open *your* doore, my Lady alone,
 heere is twenty, I am but one."
 "I will neuer my dore vndoe
 72 ffor noe man *that* comes me to,
 nor I will neuer my dore vnsteake²
 vntill I heare my ffather speake."
 then they tooke the Squier alone,
 76 & put him into a chamber of ffrom³;

[page 445] mourning
after,

and told him

that if he
would have
her love,he must
fight and
dress
like a
knight,and then
they could be
married."But I have
no armour."The Lady
giveshim 103*l*.and promises
him more.The King's
men
who have
lain in wait,take the
Squire, put
him in
prison,¹ Another-guesse *Knight*; qu.—P.² i. e. unfusten, open.—P.³ her from, qu.—P. ? frame: cp.
ffrane, l. 153.—F.

- set a corpse & to the gallow tree they be gone,
& feitched downe a hanged man.
- at her chamber door,
80 the dead might ffall vpon the floore ;
they mangled him soe in the face,
and mangle his face. they Lady might not know who he was.
shee harde the swords ding & crye ;
- The Lady gets up,
84 the Lady rose vpp by and by
naked as euer shee was borne,
sauing a mantle her beforne ;
shee opened the chamber dore,
- opens her door, and the corpse falls on the floor.
She thinks
88 the dead man fell vpon the flore.
“alacke,” shee saith, “& woe is aye !
something to Long *that* I haue Lay.
alacke,” shee sais, “*that* euer I was borne !
- her Squire is dead.
92 Squier, now thy liffe dayes are fforlorne !
I will take thy ffigars & thy fflax,¹
I will throwe them well in virgins wax ;
I will thy bowells out drawe,
- She says she will bury his bowels,
96 & bury them in christyan graue ;
I will wrapp thee in a wrapp ² of lead,
embalm his body, and keep it at her bed's head
& reare thee att my beds head.
Squier,” shee sayes, “in powder thoust Lye ;
- till it can be kept no longer :
100 longer kept thou cannott bee ;
I will chest thee in a chest of stree,
& spice thee well with spicerye,
& bury thee vnder a marble stone,
- then she'll bury it, and say her daily prayers on it.
104 & euery day say my praiers thee vpon,
& euery day, whiles I am woman aliue,
for thy sake gett masses ffine.
through the praying ³ of our Lady alone,
- Also she'll wear nothing but black.
108 saued may be the soule of the hanged man.
Squier,” shee sais, “now ffor thy sake
I will neuer weare no clothing but blacke.

¹ A.-S. *feax*, hair of the head.—F.² Wrapper.—P.³ Only half the *n* in the MS.—F.

- Squier," shee sais, "Ile neuer looke att other thing,
 112 nor neuer weare mantle nor ringe."
 her ffather stood vnder an easing¹ bore, Her father
 & heard his daughter mourning euer more ;
 "daughter," he sais, "ffor whose sake
 116 is *that* sorrow *that* still thou makes ?" asks whom
 "ffather," shee sais, "as I doe see, she's sorrow-
 itt is ffor no man in Christentye. ing for.
 ffather," shee sayes, "as I doe thrine, [page 446]
 120 itt is ffor noe man this day aline ; " No man
 ffor yesterday I lost my kniffe ; alive.
 much rather had I haue lost my liffe ! " I've lost my
 "my daughter," he sayes, "if itt be but a blade, kniffe."
 124 I can gett another as good made." "I'll get
 "ffather," shee sais, "there is neuer a smith but one another
that [can] smith you² such a one." blade for
 "daughter," hee sais, "to-morrow I will a hunting you.
 ffare, Come and
 see me hunt
 to-morrow."
 128 & thou shalt ryde vppon thy chaire,
 & thou shalt stand in such a place
 & see 30 harts come all in a chase."
 "ffather," shee sayes, "godamercy,
 132 but all this will not comfort mee." "That won't
 "daughter," he sais, "thou shalt sitt att thy meate, comfort
 & see the ffishes in the ffloud leape." me."
 "ffather," shee sais, "godamercy,
 136 but all this will not comfort mee." "I'll give
 "thy sheetes they shall be of they Lawne, you some
 thy blanketts of the ffine ffustyan." lawn
 "ffathe[r,]" shee sais, &c. fustian
 blanketts,
 140 "& to thy bed I will thee bring, blanketts,
 many torchers ffaire burninge."
 "ffather," shee sais, &c.

¹ Easing, i. e. Eaves of a house.—P.
 ? Building with eaves. *Bor, bore*, a
 place used for shelter, especially by
 smaller animals. *Sir Tristrem. Easin-*

gang, a course of sheaves projecting a
 little at the *easin*, to keep the rain from
 getting in. Jamieson.—F.

² that can smithe you, &c.—P.

- minstrels shall play to you, and
pepper and cloves burn for you.
Why are you so pale?
I have your lover!
He brings the Squire to her;
she swoons,
but recovers when kissed.
She marries the Squire.
Kings come to her wedding.
The feast lasts 34 days,
and the lovers live over 30 years.
- 144 thou shalt haue Minstrells with thee to wake.¹
“ ffather,” shee sais, &c.
“ peper & Cloues shall be burninge,
that thou maist ffeele the sweet smellinge.”
148 “ ffather,” shee sais, &c.
“ daughter, thou had wont to haue beene both white
& red;
now thou art as pale as beaten leade.
I haue him in my keeping
152 *that* is both thy loue & likinge.”
he went to a Chamber of ffrane,
& ffeicht fforth the Squire, a whales bone.²
when shee looked the Squire vpon,
156 in a dead swoone shee ffell anon.
throug³ kissing of *that* worthye wight,
vprisse *that* Lady bright.
“ ffather,” shee sayes, “ how might you for sinn
160 haue kept vs 2 louers in twin ? ”
“ daughter,” he said, “ I did ffor no other thinge
but thought to haue marryed thee to a King.”
to her Marriage came Kings out of Spaine,
164 & Kings out of Almaigne,
& Kings out of Normandye,
att this Ladyes wedding ffor to bee.
a long month and dayes 3,
168 soe long lasted this Mangerye.⁴
30 winters and some deale moe,
soe longe liued these Louers too. ffinis.

¹ A.-S. *wæccan*, to watch.—F.² as white as ivory.—F.³ *ffor* is marked out for *throug*.—F.⁴ Mangerye, i. e. eating, feasting.—P.

[“ *Blame not a Woman*,” printed in *Lo. & Hum. Songs*, p. 84, follows here in the MS. p. 446.]

Ⓢ Noble ffeſtus : ¹

[page 447]

THIS piece is, as Percy mentions, “printed in a Collection of Songs called the Rump, p. 237, A. D. 1662.” (It is not in the 1660 edition of the said collection.) It is reprinted in the two-volumed edition that appeared in 1731. “It was written,” says Percy, “about the beginning of the seventeenth century by the witty bishop Corbet, and is printed from the 3rd edition of his poems 12mo. 1672, compared with a more ancient copy in the editor’s folio MS.”

V. 9. “Coming to Court after he [Sir Walter Mildmay, “formerly a serious student in and benefactor to Christ’s College,”] had founded his college [Emmanuel College,]” says Fuller in his *History of the University of Cambridge*, “the queen told him ‘Sir Walter, I hear you have erected a Puritan foundation.’ ‘No, madam,’ saith he, ‘far be it from me to countenance any thing contrary to your established laws; but I have set an acorn, which, when it becomes an oak, God alone knows what will be the fruit thereof.’” John Gifford, Ezekiel Culverwell, Jeremiah Burroughs, Stephen Marshall, Thomas Shephard, Nathaniel Ward, Samuel Croke, John Cotton, Thomas Hooker, John Yates, John Stoughton, all well-known Puritan divines, were members of Mildmay’s College.

V. 47. Richard Greenham was born *circ.* 1531, educated at and elected fellow of Pembroke Hall, Cambridge, “became pastor to the congregation at Drayton, near Cambridge,” “took such uncommon pains,” says Brook in his *Lives of the Puritans*, “and

¹ Printed in a Collection of songs called the *Rump*, p. 237, A. D. 1662. N. B. *The Various Readings* below are from the printed Copy.—P.

was so remarkably ardent in his preaching, that at the conclusion of the service his perspiration was so great that his shirt was usually as wet as if it had been drenched in water;” “was a most exact and conscientious nonconformist, choosing on all occasions to suffer rather than sacrifice a good conscience;” “died a most comfortable and happy death in the year 1591.” With regard to the “cure” the reading of his writings is said in the following piece to have effected, we quote once more from Brook: “In addition to his public ministerial labours, he had a remarkable talent for comforting afflicted consciences; and in this department the Lord greatly blessed his endeavours. Having himself waded through the deep waters, and laboured under many painful conflicts, he was eminently qualified for relieving others. The fame of his usefulness in resolving the doubts of inquiring souls having spread through the country, multitudes from all quarters flocked to him as to a wise physician, and by the blessing of God obtained the desired comfort. Numerous persons, who to his own knowledge had laboured under the most racking terrors of conscience, were restored to joy and peace in believing. When any complained of blasphemous thoughts, his advice was “do not *fear* them, but *abhor* them.” Amongst his treatises (see his *Works*, fol. 1612) are “A sweet comfort for afflicted conscience,” “A short direction for the comfort of afflicted consciences,” “Rules for an afflicted minde concerning several temptations,” &c.

V. 49. William Perkins (1558–1602), too, was of Cambridge, a fellow of Christ’s College, and afterwards preacher at St. Andrew’s Church. He was both a Boanerges and a Barnabas, according to Brook. “Mr. Perkins’ sermons were *all law* and *all gospel* . . . He used to apply the terrors of the law so directly to the consciences of his hearers, that their hearts would often sink under the convictions; and he used to pronounce the word *damn* with so peculiar an emphasis that it left a doleful *echo* in their ears a long time after.” “As for his books,” says Fuller in

a highly eulogistic sketch of his life in his *Abel Redivivus*, "it is a miracle almost to conceive how thick they lye and yet how far they overspread all over Christendome." . . .

Of all the Worthies in this learned role,
 Our English *Perkins* may, without controle,
 Challenge a crowne of Bayes to deck his head,
 And second unto none be numbered,
 For's learning, wit and worthy parts divine,
 Wherein his Fame resplendantly did shine
 Abroad and eke at home ; for's Preaching rare
 And learned writings, almost past compare ;
 Which were so high esteem'd, that some of them
 Translated were (as a most precious jem)
 Into the Latine, French, Dutch, Spanish tongue,
 And rarely valued both of old and young.
 And (which was very rare) Them all did write
 With his left hand, his right being uselesse quite ;
 Borne in the first, dying in the last year
 Of Quéen *Eliza*, a Princesse without péer.

T. Fuller's *Abel Redivivus* (1651) p. 440.

His works were printed again and again—in 1608–10, 1612, 1616, 1621, 1626, 1635. The reference in the following piece is, no doubt, to his "Golden chaine or the description of Theologie, containing the order of the causes of Salvation and Damnation, according to God's Word, a view whereof is to be seen in the Table annexed." See vol. i. of the 1612 edition of his works. This table, a side-note on it informs us, "may be in stead of an Ocular Catechisme to them which cannot read ; for by the pointing of the finger they may sensibly perceive the chiefe points of religion and the order of them." The reader is instructed that "the white line sheweth the order of the causes of salvation from the first to the last. The blacke line sheweth the order of the causes of damnation." Some of these latter causes are "the decree of Reprobation," "A calling not effectual," "No calling," "Ignorance and vanitie of mind," "the hardening of the heart," "a reprobate sense," "Greedines in sinne," "Fulnes of sinne." A bold analysis of perdition this—an audacious piece of

theological presumption. The black line has a fearful look, as of some dark deadly flood moving across the page. No wonder

Those crooked veins
Long stuck in my brains
That I feared my reprobation.

Am I mad
because I
hope to put
down the
Pope?

AM: I mad, O noble ffestus,
when zeale & godlye knowledge
put me in hope to deale with the Pope
4 as well as the best in the Colledge?
Boldlye I preacht "war¹ & cross war a surplus,
miters, copes, & rochetts!
come heare me pray 9 times a day,
8 & fill *your* head with crochetts."

I was trained
in
Emmanuel's
house.

In the house of pure Emanuell²
I had my educatyon,
till my ffreinds did surmise I dazled my eyes
12 with the light of reuelation.
Boldlye I preacht &c.

I was bound
like a
madman,
and lashed.

Thé bound me like [a]³ bedlam,
& lash[t]⁴ my 4 poore quarters.
while this does endure,⁵ ffaith makes me sure
16 to be one of ffox his Martyres.
Boldlye I preacht &c.

These iniuryes I sufferd
with Antich[r]ists *perswasion*.
lett loose my chaine! neither Roome nor Spaine
20 can withstand my strong inuasyon.
Boldlye I preacht &c.

¹ hate a Cross, hate, &c., or *ware a Cross* &c. i. e. beware, &c.—P.

² Emanuel College, Cambridge, was

originally a seminary of Puritans.—W. C.

³ a.—P. ⁴ t.—P. ⁵ thus I indure.—P.

- I assailed the seauen-hild Cittye
 where I mett the great redd dragon;
 I kept him alooffe with the armor ¹ prooffe
 24 thoughe now I haue neuer a ragg on.
 Boldlye I preacht &c.
- with a ffiery sword and Targett,
 twice ffought I with this monster;
 but the sonnes of pryde my zeale doe deryde,
 28 & all my deeds misconster.
 Boldly I preacht &c.
- I vnhorset the hore of Babel
 with the Launce of Inspiration;
 I made her stinke, & spill the ² drinke
 32 in the Cupp of abbominatyon.
 Boldlye I preacht &c.
- ³ ffrom the beast with 10 hornes, Lord blesse vs,
 I haue plucket of 3 allreadye;
 if theyle Lett me alone, Ile leaue him none;
 36 but they say I am tó headye.
 Boldlye I preacht &c.
- I saw ² in the visyon,
 with a fflying booke betweene them.
 I haue beene in dispaire ⁵ times in a yeere,
 40 & beene cured by reading Greenham.⁴
 Boldlye I preacht &c.

At Rome I
 fought the
 red dragon,

with a sword
 and targett.

I unhorsed
 the whore of
 Babylon.

I pulled out
 three of the
 beast's ten
 horns.

I've been
 rescued
 from despair
 by
 Greenham.

¹ [insert] of.—P.

² her.—P.

³ This Stanza is not in the printed
 Copy.—P.

⁴ *The Works of Richard Greenham,
 Minister and Preacher of the Word of*

God. Lond. 1599, 4to. Greenham was
 a puritan divine of considerable talents
 and popularity. His works consist of
 sermons, treatises, and a commentary on
 Psalm cxix. Lowndes.—F.

Perkins has
I haue read in ¹ Perkins table ²
the blacke Line of damnatyon ;
made me fear
my dam-
nation. 44 these crooked vaines long stucke ³ in my braines,
that I ffear'd my reprobacion.
Boldlye I preacht &c.

In the holy tounge of Cannan
I placed my Cheefest tresure,
till I hurt my ffoot with an hebrew roote
48 that I bled beyond all measure.
Boldlye I preacht &c.

I've told the
Archbishop
that
he favoured
superstition.
52 I was ⁴ before the Archbishoppe
& all the hye Comissyon ;
I gaue him no grace, but told him to his fface
that he ffauoured superstition.
Boldlye I preacht &c. ffinis.

¹ observed in.—P.

² Perkins, William, *The Works*.
Lond., 1608–10, fol., 3 vols. *A Re-
formed Catholike, or a Declaration of De-
clarations*. Camb., 1567. *A Reforma-
tion of a Catholike deformed*. 1604, 4to.,
and a *Second Part of the Reformation*,
etc. 1607. *Discourse of the Damned*

Art of Witchcraft. Camb. 1610. The
works of this Puritan are distinguished
for their piety, learning, extensive know-
ledge of the Scriptures, and strong Cal-
vinistic argumentation. Lowndes.—F.

³ so stuck.—P.

⁴ appear'd.—P.

[“*O Watt, where art tho?*” printed in *Lo. & Hum. Songs*, p. 121,
follows here in the *MS.* p. 447–8.]

Carle off Carlile¹:

THIS poem was printed from the Folio by Sir F. Madden in the Appendix to his *Syr Gawayne* for the Bannatyne Club, pp. 256-74. Some of his readings of the MS. differ from mine; and though, if I can trust my eyes, the MS. does not make all the mistakes that Sir F. Madden attributes to it, I have thought it only due to his well-established reputation and great experience in reading MSS., as well as to our readers, who will probably trust him rather than me, to put his readings in the notes. The poem is, as he says, a modernised copy of the *Syre Gawene and the Carle of Carelyle* in the Porkington MS. No. 10, "written in the reign of Edward IV.," printed by him (Sir F. Madden) in the Appendix to his *Syr Gawayne*, pp. 187-206. Though Mrs. Ormsby Gore has kindly lent me this Porkington MS., I have not collated the Folio with it, as its *Syre Gawene* will be printed by Mr. Richard Morris for the Early English Text Society next year, and will there be easily accessible to all readers. The alterations are great in words, small in incidents, and the earlier poem is the better one. Sir F. Madden looks on the occurrence of the present poem and *The Grene Knight* (vol. ii. p. 58) in our Folio as settling the "question of the genuineness and antiquity of the *romance-poems* (as distinguished from the longer and better-known *romances*) in this celebrated MS."—that is, that the Folio poems are not abstracts made of the old romances in the seventeenth century, but retellings or adaptations of abstracts made in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries. "The original of this story must be sought for in the literature of the Continent, and we find it in the beautiful *fabliau* of *Le Chevalier à l'Epée*, printed in Meon's *Recueil*, tome i. p. 127, 8vo, 1823, and previously analysed by Le Grand."

¹ A curious Song of the Marriage of Sir Gawane, one of King Arthur's Knights.—P.

Like the other Gawaine stories in the Folio, this one takes us into weirdland, the region where necromancers have been at work, where Kelts loved specially to range. And, as in *The Turke and Gowin* and *The Marriage of Sir Gawaine*, the counter charm which undoes the fiendly work is Gawaine's courtesy. Though he was not held worthy of the highest honours in Arthur-story, though he kept not the state of the virgin three who alone achieved the Quest of the Holy Graal¹—Galahad, Percival, Bors,—yet the sweetness of his spirit, his never-failing gentleness to poor as well as rich, to frightful dames as well as beauties, made him the favourite of most² of the Arthur-writers, and they sang his praises and his prowess, blessed him with the loveliest wives—the second appears here—and, with Israelitish unction, added many concubines. In contrast with him, here, is not only crabbed Kay, but also the Christian Bishop who has sunk the humility of his religion in the pride of his office, has forgotten that

It fitteth a clarke to be curteous and free,

and gets accordingly a rap on his crown that sends him down. But Gawaine does not fail: what courtesy requires, that he does, all that his host asks; and so, escapes himself, and rescues his friends, from the fate that had befallen 1500 men before who “coude not their curtasye,”—death at the hand and mouths of the Carle and his Four Whelps. As of the Turke (vol. i. p. 101, l. 288) so of the Carle, Gawaine strikes off the head; the bale that Necromancy had wrought is turned to bliss, the loathsome giant becomes again a man, and Gawaine weds the lady gay. What is not possible to those sweet souls who sun their world, at

¹ “Gauwains, Gauwain! mult a lonc tans que tu fus chivalers, et onques puis ne seruis ton creatour, se peu non: tu ies mais si vieus arbres qu'il n'a en toi ne fuelle ne fruit, car tu penses que nostre sires en eust la moule et l'escorche, puis que li anemis en a eu la flour et le fruit.” Nasciens to Gawain, *Queste*, p. 144. Again: “et quant il vous vit, si

s'en ala, car uous auies le lieu ordi de uotre pechie, et quant il s'en ala il vous dist, 'chivaler plain de poure foi et de poure creanche, ches iij. choses vous faillent: carite, abstinenche, et uerites, et pour che n'en poes auenir as auentures del saint graal.'” *Queste*, p. 133, ed. F. J. F. for Roxb. Club, 1864.—F.

² Others consistently run him down.

whose presence words of wrath and thoughts of evil cease, the remembrance even of whose smile wins us from bitterness and gloom?—F.

<p>LISTEN : to me a litle stond, yee shall heare of one <i>that</i> was sober & sound : hee was meeke as maid in bower, 4 stiffe & strong in euery stoure ; certes <i>withouten</i> fable he was one of the round table ; the <i>Knights</i> name was Sir Gawaine, 8 <i>that</i> much worshipp wan in Brittainne. the Ile of Brittainne called is both England & Scotland I-wis ; wales is an angle to <i>that</i> Ile, 12 where <i>King</i> Arthur soiorned a while ¹ ; with him 24 <i>Knights</i> told, besids Barrons & dukes bold. the <i>King</i> to his Bishopp gan say, 16 “ wee will have a Masse to-day, Bishopp Bodwim ² shall itt done : after, to the ffairest ³ wee will gone, ffor now ittss grass time of the yeere, 20 Barrons bold shall breake the deere. ffaine theroff was Sir Marrocke,⁴ soe was Sir Kay, the <i>Knight</i> stout ;</p>	<p>I'll tell you about</p> <p>Sir Gawaine.</p> <p>Arthur stayed a while in Wales,</p> <p>and one day said he'd hear Mass,</p> <p>and then go hunting.</p> <p>Murrock was glad. Kay too,</p>
---	---

¹ At Cardyfe soiorned þe kyng a whylle. Porkington MS.—F.

² that Bishop Sir Bodwine. *Turke & Gowin*, l. 154, vol. i. p. 96. On this Bodwin or Bawdewyn in *The Grene Knyzt*, Sir F. Madden says that he “occurs nowhere in the early French metrical and prose romances; and his name seems to have been substituted by the English or Scottish poets in the 14th century, for that of Bishop Brice or Dubricius. There was an Archbishop of Canterbury named Baldwin, who held the See from 1184 to 1191, from whom the name may have been taken. *Syr*

Gawayne, p. 312.—F.

³ forrest.—Pork.

⁴ Mewreke.—Pork. Marrake in *The Awntyrs of Arthure*, l. 641. He “appears to be the same as ‘Sir Marrok, the good knyghte, that was bitrayed with his wyf, for she made him seuen yere a werwolf,’ in Malory’s *Morte d’Arthur*, vol. ii. p. 385; and on a similar story is founded the *Lai de Bisclaveret* of Marie, ed. Roquefort, tome i. p. 179.”—Madden’s *Syr Gawayne*, p. 335. Marrocke is also the name of the giant in *Eglumore*, vol. ii. p. 349, l. 239, and of the false steward in *Sir Triamore*, vol. ii. p. 82, l. 51.—F.

and Lancelot, Percival,	24	ffaine was Sir Lancelott Dulake, soe was Sir Perciuall, ¹ I vndertake;
Ewaine,		ffaine was Sir Ewaine ²
Lott, the Green Knight,		& Sir Lott of Lothaine, ³
Gawaine,	28	soe was the <i>Knight</i> of armes greene, ⁴ & alsoe Sir Gawaine the sheene. Sir Gawaine was steward in Arthurs hall, hee was the curteous <i>Knight</i> amongst them all. ⁵
Mordred,		<i>King</i> Arthur & his Cozen Mordred, ⁶
	32	& other <i>Knights</i> withouten Lett, Sir Lybius Disconyus ⁷ was there with proud archers lesse & more,
Lybius Disconyus,		Blanch ffaire ⁸ & Sir Ironside, ⁹
and Iro side,	36	& many <i>Knights</i> that day can ryde.

¹ The nephew of king Pescheor, [or king Pelles, the Rich Fisher,] guardian of the *Sangreal*, whose adventures occupy a quarto volume, printed in 1530. Madden's *Syr Gawayne*, p. 345. See Mr. Halliwell's edition of the verse abstract of the French romance in *The Thornton Romances*.—F.

² See Caxton's *Maleore*, vol. i. p. 231.—F.

³ See Caxton's *Maleore*, vol. i. p. 55, &c.—F. He was the father of Gawayne, and king of Lothian and Orkney. *Geoffr. Monm.*, lib. ix. cap. 9. Madden, p. 346. He is the celebrated Ywain or Owain sometimes surnamed *Le Grand*, son of Urien, king of Moray, according to Geoffrey, or of Rheged, according to the Welsh authorities. His exploits were celebrated in French verse by Chrestien de Troyes, and thence translated into the German, Icelandic, Welsh, and English languages; for which consult Benecke's edition of *Iwein der Riter mit dem Lewen*, 8vo, Berlin, 1827; Von der Hagen's *Grundriss zur Geschichte der Deutschen Poesie*, 8vo, Berlin, 1812, p. 118; Ritson's *Metrical Romances*, vol. i., and Notes, vol. iii., 8vo, 1802; and Lady C. Guest's *Mabinogion*, part i., 8vo, 1838. He must not be confounded (as Ritson has done him) with Ywain

l'Avoultre, a base son of Urien by his seneschal's wife, who was killed by Gawayne without knowing him, *Roman de Lancelot*, iii. f. cxvii. There are also others of the same name mentioned in the *Roman de Merlin*, i., f. ccviii^b, and in the *Roman d'Erec et d'Enide*. Cf. *Arthur and Merlin*, p. 306, 4to, 1838. Madden, p. 312-13.—F.

⁴ Ironside's son, see l. 37-40. I know nothing [of him] as one of Arthur's knights. Madden, p. 346.—F.

⁵ most courteous *Knight* of all.—P.

⁶ Arthur's son by his sister, King Lot's wife.—F.

⁷ Gawayne's bastard. See vol. ii. p. 416, l. 8; p. 418, l. 80.—F.

⁸ Blancheles. Porkn. MS. "But as no knight of that name occurs, in all probability we should read *Brandelys*," says Sir F. Madden, who gives an abstract of the French Romance about him at p. 349 of *Syr Gawayne*. See Caxton's *Maleore*, vol. i. p. 230, 'syre Braundyles'.—F.

⁹ Syre Ironsyde that was called the noble knyghte of the reed laundes, that Syre Gareth [brother of Gawayne] wonne for the loue of dame Lyones. *Maleore*, vol. ii. p. 384. The narrative of the combat may be read in vol. i. p. 211. Madden's *Syr Gawayne*, p. 347.—F.

- & Ironside, as I weene,
 gate ¹ the Knight of armour greene—
 certes as I vnderstand—
 40 of a ffaire Lady of blaunch Land.²
 hee cold more of honor in warr
 then all the *Knights that with Arthur weare* :
 burning dragons he slew in Land,
 44 & wilde beasts, as I vnderstand ;
 wilde beares he slew *that stond* ;
 a hardyer *Knight* was neuer ffound ;
 he was called in his dayes
 48 one of *King Arthurs* ffellowes.
 why was hee called Ironsyde ?
 ffor, euer armed wold he ryde ;
 hee wold allwais arms beare,
 52 ffor Gyants & hee were euer att warr.
 dapple coulour ³ was his steede,
 his armour and his other weede,
 Azure of gold he bare,
 56 with a Griffon lesse or more,
 & a difference of a Molatt ⁴
 he bare in his crest Allgate.⁵
 where-soeuer he went, East nor west,
 60 he neuer fforsooke man nor beast.
 beagles, keenely away thé ran,
 the *King* ffollowed after with many a man.
 they ⁶ gray hounds out of the Leashe,
 64 they drew downe the deere of grasse.⁷
 ffine ⁸ tents in the ffeild were sett,
 a merry sort there were mett

who was
 better than
 any of
 Arthur's
 knights, an

got his
 name
 because he
 went always
 armed,
 to fight
 giants.

Beagles ran,

greyhounds
 pulled down
 the deer,

¹ i. e. begat.—P.

² The *Seigneur de la Blaunche londe* is noticed as one of Arthur's knights, in the *Roman de Perceval*, f. lxxi. Cf. f. clxxi^b. See in regard to this territory a note of M. Michel on *Tristan*, vol. ii. p. 173. Madden's *Syr Gawayne*, p. 348.—F.

³ Dapple colour'd.—P. The steed's name was Fabele-honde. Madden's *Syr Gawayne*, p. 189, l. 79.—F.

⁴ i. e. a mullet.—P.

⁵ The second *l* is over the *g* in the MS.—F.

⁶ the.—P. ⁷ greace.—P. fat.—F.

⁸ or ffine.—F.

of comely *knights* of kind,
 68 vppon the bent there can they lead,¹
 & by noone of the same day
 and by noon
 100 harts
 were killed.
 a 100^d harts on the ground thé ² Lay.
 then Sir Gawaine & Sir Kay,
 But
 Gawaine,
 Kay, and
 Bishop
 Bodwin,
 72 & Bishopp Bodwin, as I heard say,
 after a redd deere ³ thé rode
 into a fforrest wyde & brode.
 a thicke mist ffell them among,
 lose their
 way in
 76 *that* caused ⁴ them all to goe wronge :
 great moane made then Sir Kay
that they shold loose the hart *that* day ;
 following a
 red deer.
that red hart wold not dwell.
 80 hearken what aduentures them beffell :
 ffull sore thé were adread
 ere thé any Lodginge had ;
 then spake Sir Gawaine,
 Gawaine
 proposes to
 84 “ this Labour wee haue had in vaine ;
 this red hart is out of sight,
 wee meete with him no more this night.
 I reede wee of our horsstes do light,
 dismount,
 and stay all
 night in the
 forest.
 88 & lodge wee heere all this night ;
 Truly itt is best, as thinketh mee,
 to Lodge low vnder this tree.”
 [page 450]
 “ nay,” said Kay, “ goe wee hence anon,
 Kay says
 he’ll lodge
 in some-
 body’s
 house.
 No one
 dare stop
 him.
 The Bishop
 says,
 92 ffor I will lodge whersoere ⁵ I come ;
 for there dare no man warne me,⁶
 of whatt estate soeuer hee bee.”
 “ yes,” said the Bishopp, “ *that* wott I well ;
 The Carle of
 Carlisle will:
 96 here dwelleth a Carle in a Castele,
 the Carle of Carlile is his name,
 I know itt well by St. Iame ;

¹ lend.—Madden.² delend.—P.³ rayne-dere, and reyne-dere, l. 79.—Pork.⁴ Only half the *u* in the MS.—F.

caised.—Madden.

⁵ wherforre, Madden’s text: whersoever ?, his note.—F.⁶ wern hit me.—Pork.

- was there neuer man yett soe bold
 100 *that* durst lodge within his hold ;
 but, & if hee scape¹ with his liffe away,
 hee ruleth him well, I you say."²
 then said Kay, " all in ffere,³
 104 to goe thither is my desire ;
 ffor & the Carle be neuer soe bolde,
 I thinke to lodge within his hold.
 ffor if he iangle & make itt⁴ stout,
 108 I shall beate the Carle all about,
 & I shall make his bigging bare,
 & doe to him mickle Care ;
 & I shall beate [him,] as I thinke,
 112 till he both sweate and stinke."
 then said the Bishopp, " so mote I ffare,
 att his bidding I wilbe yare."
 Gawaine said " lett be thy bostlye ffare,⁵
 116 ffor thou dost euer waken care.
 if thou scape⁶ with thy liffe away,
 thou ruleth thee well, I dare say."
 then said Kay, " *that* pleaseth mee ;
 120 thither Let vs ryde all three.
 such as hee bakes, such shall hee brew ;
 such as hee shapes, such shall hee sew ;
 such as he breweth, such shall he⁷ drinke."
 124 " *that* is contrary," said Gawaine, " as I thinke ;
 but if any ffaire speeche will he gaine,
 wee shall make him Lord within his owne⁸ ;
 if noe ffaire speech will auayle,
 128 then to karp on Kay wee will not ffaile."

he never
lets any
man lodge
with him.

" If he
refuses me,

I'll beat
him till he
stinks," says
Kay.

Gawaine
tells Kay
not to brag ;

they'll try
fair speech
first ;

if that's no
good,
Kay may
scold.

¹ stape.—Madden.

² It schall be bette, as I harde say,
And ʒefe he go wtt lyfe away.—
Porkington MS.

³ i. e. together. Perhaps *all on fire*.
—P.

⁴ him.—P.

⁵ Compare vol. i. p. 91, l. 25-30.

Kay was the braggart of Arthur's court.
—F.

⁶ Madden reads the MS. *stape*, and
corrects it to *scape*.—F.

⁷ him?—Madden.

⁸ aine (in pencil).—P. Pork. has the
talk l. 104-30 somewhat differently.—
F.

- then said the Bishopp, "*that* senteth ¹ mee ;
thither lett vs ryde all three."
- They ride to
the Earl's
gate. 132 when they came to the carles gate,
a hammer they ffound hanging theratt :
- Gawaine
knocks,
136 Gawaine hent the hammer in his hand,
& curteouslye on the gates dange.
fforth came the Porter with still ffare,
saying, " who is soe bold to knocke there ? "
- and tells the
Porter
140 Gawaine answered him curteouslye
" man," hee said, " that is I. ²
wee be 2 *Knights* of Arthurs inn,
& a Bishopp, no moe to min ³ ;
wee haue rydden all day in the fforrest still
till horsse & man beene like to spill ;
ffor Arthurs sake, *that* is our Kinge,
- that they
are tired out
with hunt-
ing,
144 and ask his
lord for a
night's
lodging.
wee desire my *Lord* of a nights Lodginge,
& harbarrow ⁴ till the day att Morne,
that wee may scape ⁵ away without scorne."
- Kay
threatens
the Porter,
148 ⁶Then spake the crabbed *Knight* Sir Kay :
" Porter, our errand I reede the say, ⁷
or else the Castle gate wee shall breake,
& the Keyes thereof to Arthur take."
the Porter sayd with words throe, ⁸
- but he
answers
boldly.
152 " theres no man aliue *that* dares doe soe !
of ⁹ a 100^d such as thou his death had sworne,
yett he wold ryde on hunting to morne. ¹⁰ "
- Gawaine
asks him
courteously,
156 then answered GAWAIN *that* was curteous aye,
" Porter, our errand I pray thee say."
" yes," said the Porter, " withouten ffayle
I shall say *your* errand ffull well."
- and the
Porter
gives his

¹ Madden reads *tenteth*.—F.

² " It am I " is the earlier phrase.—F.

³ min, ming, i. e. mention, vide v. 162.
—P.

⁴ Madden reads *harborrow*.—F.

⁵ Madden again reads *stape*, and
corrects to *scape*.—F.

⁶ Pork. puts in the Porter's answer,

warning them that his lord " can no
cortessye," and that they will not escape
without a " wellony."—F.

⁷ thou say or thee (to) say.—P.

⁸ tho, i. e. then.—P. A.S. *þrá*, bold.—
F.

⁹ If.—P.

¹⁰ to-morrow.—P.

- as soone as the Porter the Carle see,
 160 hee kneeled downe vpon his knee :
 "Yonder beene 2 *Knights* of Arthurs in,¹ [page 451]
 & a Bishopp, no more to myn ;
 they haue roden all day in the fforrest still,
 164 *that* horsse [&] man² is like to spill ;
 they desire you ffor Arthurs sake, their *King*,
 to grant them one nights Lodginge,
 & herberrow till the day att Morne
 168 *that* they may scape³ away without scorne."
 "noe thing greeues⁴ me," sayd the Carle without
 doubt,
 "but *that* they⁵ *Knights* stand soe long without."
 with *that* they⁶ Porter opened the gates wyde,
 172 & the *Knights* rode in *that* tyde.
 their steeds into the stable are tane,
 the *Knights* into the hall are gone⁷ :
 heere the Carle sate in his chaire on hye,
 176 with his legg cast ouer the other knee ;
 his mouth was wyde, & his beard was gray,
 his lockes on his shoulders lay ;
 betweene his browes, certaine
 180 itt was large there a spann,
 with 2 great eyen brening as ffyer.
 Lord ! hee was a Lodlye syer⁸ !
 ouer his sholders he bare⁹ a bread
 184 3 taylors yards, as clarkes doe reade ;
 his ffingers were like to teddar stakes,¹⁰
 & his hands like breads *that* wiues may bake ;

message to
the Carle.

The Carle
regrets that
they have
been kept so
long wait-
ing.

Gawaine &c.
ride in,

go to the
hall, and
see the
Carle,

a loathly
man,

with ffingers
like stakes
and hands
like leaves.

¹ inne.—P.

² horse & man.—P.

³ Madden again reads *stape*, and corrects to *scape*.—F.

⁴ Half the *u* left out in the MS.—F.

⁵ the.—P.

⁶ the.—P.

⁷ gane.—P.

⁸ a lodlye sire, i. e. filthy, p. 387.—P.

⁹ bore.—Madden.

¹⁰ The stakes by *which* the hair lines are fasten'd to *the* ground *that* are tied to the horses' feet when they graze in open fields.—P. Madden reads *tedder*.—F.

- 50 Cubitts¹ he was in height ;
 188 Lord, he was a Lothesome wight !
 when Sir Gawaine *that* carle see,
 he halched² him ffull curteouslye,
 & saith, "carle of Carlile,³ god saue thee
 192 as thou sitteth in thy prosperitye !"
 the carle said, "as christ⁴ me saue,⁵
 yee shall be welcome ffor Arthurs sake.
⁶yet is itt not my part to doe soe,
 196 ffor Arthur hath beene euer my ffoe ;
 he hath beaten my *Knights*, & done them bale,
⁷& send them wounded to my owne hall.
 yett the truth to tell I will not Leane,⁸
 200 I haue quitt him the same againe."
 "that is a kind of a knaue⁹," said Kay, "without
 Leasing,
 soe to reuile a Noble King."
 Gawaine heard, & made answeere,
 204 "Kay, thou sayst more then meete weere."
 with *that* they went ffather into the hall,
 where bords were spredd, & couered with pall ;
 & 4 welpes of great Ire
 208 they ffound Lying by the ffire.
 there was a beare *that* did rome,¹⁰
 & a bore *that* did whett his tushes¹¹ ffrome,
 alsoe a bull *that* did rore,
 212 & a Lyon *that* did both gape & rore ;
 the Lyon did both gape and gren.
 "O peace, whelpes !" said the carle then :

Gawaine
salutes him
courteously,

and the
Carle
welcomes
them for
Arthur's
sake, though
Arthur and

he have long
been foes.

They go to
the tables,

and see 4
whelps,

a bear,

a boar,

a bull,

and a lion.

¹ ix. taylloris 3erdis.—Pork.

² i. e. saluted.—P. Madden reads the MS. *haltled*, and corrects it to *halsed*. *Halche* is O. N. *heilsa*, Dan. *hilsa*, to salute, to cry *hail* to. Wedgwood.—F.

³ "Callile, MS.," says Madden.—F.

⁴ Madden reads *cheif*, and puts "Crist?" in his note.—F.

⁵ perhaps take.—P.

⁶ y^t et in MS.—F.

⁷ sent.—P.

⁸ vid. p. 367, St. 45 [of MS.].—P. See Dr. Robson's note in *Sir John Butler* above. Madden says "leave, MS."—F.

⁹ A *c* follows in the MS.—F.

¹⁰ Cp. the bere to ramy. Pork.—F.

¹¹ tusks.—Madden.—F.

- for *that* word *that* they carle ¹ did speake,
 216 the 4 whelpes vnder they bord ² did creepe.
 downe came a Lady ffaire & ffree,
 & sett her on the carles knee ;
 one whiles shee harped, another whiles song,
 220 both of Paramours & louinge amonge.
 "well were *that* man," said Gawaine, "*that* ere were
 borne,
that might Lye with *that* Lady till day att morne."
 "*that* were great shame," said the carle ffree,
 224 "*that* thou sholdest doe me such villanye."³
 "Sir," said Gawaine, "I sayd nought."
 "no, man," said the carle ; "more thou thought."
 Then start Kay to the fflore,
 228 & said hee wold see how his palfrey fflore.⁴
 both corne & hay he ffound Lyand,
 & the carles palfrey by his steed did stand.
 Kay tooke the carles palfrey by the necke,
 232 & soone hee thrust him out att the hecke⁵ :
 thus Kay put the carles ffole out,
 & on his backe he sett a clout.
 then the carle himselfe hee stood there by,
 236 and sayd, "this buffett, man, thou shalt abuy.⁶"
 The carle raught Kay such a rapp [page 452] The Carle
that backward he fell flatt ;
 had itt not beene ffor a ffeald⁷ of straw.
 240 Kayes backe had gone in 2.⁸
 then said Kay, "& thow were without thy hold,
 Man ! this buffett shold be deere sold."
 "what," sayd the carle, "dost thou menace me ? and he tells
 Kay

A fair lady
seats herself
on the
Carle's knee,

and
Gawaine
says her
bedfellow
will be a
happy man.

The Carle
reproves
him.

Kay goes to
the stable,

finds the
Carle's
palfrey next
to his,
turns it out,

and gives it
a clout.

The Carle
knocks Kay
down.

Kay
threatens
him,

and he tells
Kay

¹ the Carle.—P.

² the bord.—P.

³ Pork. substitutes a scene of the knights drinking, for this one of the lady; but describes the Carle's wife at supper-time, p. 197 of Madden's *Syr Gawayne*.—F.

⁴ i. e. fared, *præt. inusitat.*—P.

⁵ i. e. Cratch, verb. Scot. Dr. Graing^r.—P.

⁶ abye.—P. Madden reads *aby*.—F.

⁷ i. e. a truss of straw, Dr. Graing^r.—P.

⁸ twa.—P.

- that if he
says any
more
he'll get
more
knocks.
- 244 I swere by all soules sicerlye¹ !
Man ! I swere ffurther thore,²
if I heere any malice more,³
ffor this one word *that* thou hast spoken
- 248 itt is but ernest thou hast gotten."
then went Kay into the hall,
& the Bishopp to him can call,
saith : Brother Kay, where you haue beene ? "
- 252 " to Looke my palfrey, as I weene.⁴ "
then said the Bishopp, " itt ffalleth me
that my palfrey I must see."
both corne & hay he ffound Lyand,
- Then the
Bishop goes
to look at
his palfrey.
- He finds the
Carle's
there,
and turns it
out
- 256 & the carles palfrey, as I vnderstand.
the Bishopp tooke the carles horsse by the necke,
& soone hee thrust him out att the hecke ;
thus he turned the carles ffole out,
- with a cut,
to go to the
devil.
- 260 & on his backe he sett a clout ;
sais, " wend forth, ffole, in the devills way !
who made thee soe bold with my palfrey ? "
- The Carle
- 264 " man ! this buffett thou shalt abuy.⁵ "
he hitt the Bishopp vpon the crowne,
that his miter & he ffell downe.
" Mercy ! " said the Bishopp, " I am a clarke !
- knocks the
Bishop over,
- 268 somewhatt I can of chr[i]sts werke."
he saith, " by the Clergye I sett nothing,
nor yett by thy Miter nor by thy ringe.
It fitteth a clarke to be curteous & free,
- he cares
nothing for
mitre or
ring.
- 272 by the conning⁶ of his clergy."
with *that* the Bishopp went into the hall,
& Sir Gawaine to him can call,
- Then
Gawaine

¹ Madden reads *sikerlye*.—F.² tho.—P.³ moe.—P.⁴ als I ween, i. e. I also thinke, in-
tend. *Sed vid. infra* 276.—P. *As is*

thus, like.—F.

⁵ abay, MS. says Madden.—F.⁶ MS. coming.—F. cunning or con-
ning.—P.

- saith, "brother Bishopp where haue you beene?"
- 276 "to looke my palfrey, as I weene."
 then sayd Sir Gawaine, "itt ffallerh mee
that my palfreye I must needs see."
 corne & hay he ffound enoughe Lyand,
- 280 & the carles ffole by his did stand.
 the carles ffole had beene fforth in the raine;
 therof Sir Gawaine was not ffaine;
 hee tooke his mantle *that* was of greene,
 284 & couered the ffole, as I weene;
 sayth, "stand vp, ffole, & eate thy meate;
 thy *Master* payeth ffor all that wee heere gett."
 they carle¹ himselfe stood thereby,
- 288 & thanked him of his curtesye;
 they carle² tooke Gawaine by the hand,
 & both together in they hall they wend.
 the carles called ffor a bowle of wine,
 292 & soone they settled them to dine;
 70 bowles³ in *that* bowle were,—
 he was not weake *that* did itt beare,—
 then they⁴ carle sett itt to his Chin,
 296 & said, "to you I will begin!"
 15 gallons he dranke *that* tyde,
 & raught to his men on euery side.
 then they⁵ carle said to them anon,
 300 "Sirrs, to supper gett you gone!"
 Gawaine answered the carle then,
 "Sir, att *your* bidding we will be ben.⁶"
 "if you be bayne att my bidding,
 304 you honor me without Leasinge."
 they washed all, & went to meate,
 & dranke the wine *that* was soe sweete.

goes to see
his palfrey.

He finds
the Carle's
foal by it,

wet with
rain.
Gawaine
covers the
foal with his
mantle

and tells it
to eat away.

The Carle

thanks
Gawaine,
takes him in,

calls for a
bowl of
wine,

and drinks
15 gallons
at one
draught.

Then they
all have
supper.

¹ The Carle.—P.

² The Carle.—P.

³ gallons?—Madden. Ordinary bowls.—F.

⁴ the.—P.

⁵ the.—P.

⁶ baine.—P.

After it, the
Carle tells
Gawaine to
take a speare

and to mark
him in his
face.

Gawaine
takes the
speare,

charges at
the Carle

(who dodges
his head,)

runs the
speare
into the wall,
and breaks it
off.

Then the
Carle
takes
Gawaine to
his wife's
bed,

- the carle said to Gawaine anon,
308 "a long speare see thou take in thy hand,¹
att the buttrye dore take thou thy race,
& marke me well in middest the face.
"a!" thought² Sir Kay, "that that were I!
312 then his buffett he shold deere abuy.³"
"well," quoth the carle, "when thou wilt, thou may,⁴
when thou wilt thy strength assay."—
"well Sir," said Kay, "I said nought."
316 "Noe," said the carle, "but more thou [page 453]
thought."
then Gawaine was ffull glad of *that*,
& a long spere in his hand he gatt;
att the buttrye dore⁵ he tooke his race,
& marked the carle in the middst the fface.
the carle saw Sir Gawaine come in ire,
& cast his head vnder his speare,
Gawaine raught the wall such a rapp,
324 the ffyer fflew out, & the speare brake;
he stroke a ffoote into the wall of stone,
a bolder Barron was there neuer none.
"soft," said the carle, "thow was tó radd.⁶"
328 "I did but, Sir, as you me bade."
"if thou had hitt me as thou had ment,
thou had raught me a ffell dint.⁷"
they carle tooke Gawaine by the hand,
332 & both into a Chamber they weñd;
a ffull ffaire bed there was spred,
the carles wiffe therin was laid:

¹ hond.—P.

² Ah! thought.—P.

³ MS. aluy. Madden reads *a buy*.—
F. abuy or aby.—P.

⁴ then thou (yee) may.—P.

⁵ Madden reads the MS. *doe*.—F.

⁶ furious, O. Fr. *roide*.—Skeat. *Roide*,
rough, fierce, violent.—Cotgrave. A.S.
hræd, swift, quick, rush.—F.

⁷ Pork. MS. puts Gawaine's supper after
this, and brings the Carle's daughter in
to harp and sing to them. She is prettily
described, has the gold-wire hair so much
admired in early times, and

Owyre alle þe halle ganne sche leme
As hit were a sonne-beme.

Madden's *Syr Gawayne*, p. 199.—F.

- the carles said, "Gawaine, of curtesye
 336 gett into this bedd with this ffaire Ladye.
 kisse thou her 3^e before mine eye ;
 looke thou doe no other villanye."
 the carle opened the sheetes wyde ;
 340 Gawaine gott in by the Laydes syde ;
 Gawaine ouer her ¹ put his arme ;
 with *that* his fflesh began to warme :
 Gawaine had thought to haue made in ffare,²
 344 "hold," quoth the carle, "man, stopp there ³ !
 itt were great shame," quoth they carle, "for me
that thou sholdest doc me such villanye ;
 but arise vp, Gawaine, & goe with me,
 348 I shall bring thee to a ffairer Lady then euer was
 shee."
 they ⁴ carle tooke Gawaine by the hand ; ⁵
 both into another Chamber they wend ;
 a ffaire bedd there found they spred,
 352 and the Carles daughter therin Laid :
 saith, "Gawaine, now for thy curtesye
 gett thee to bedd to this ffaire Lady."
 the carle opened the sheetes wyde,
 356 Sir Gawaine gott in by the Ladyes side.
 Gawaine put his arme ouer *that* sweet thing ;
 "sleepe, daughter," sais the carle, "on my blessing."
 they carle turned his backe & went his way,
 360 & lockt the dore with a siluer Kaye.
 on the other morning ⁶ when the carles rose,
 vnto his daughters chamber he goes :
 "rise vp, Sir Gawaine, & goe with mee,
 364 a maruelous sight I shall lett thee see."
 they carle tooke him by the hand,
 & both into another chamber they wend,

and bids him
get in and
kiss her,

but do
nothing
more.

Gawaine
does so,

and thinks
to do more,

but the
Carle stops
him,

and takes
him to his
daughter's
bed, and
tells him

to get into it.

Gawaine
does so,

and the
Carle goes
away,
locking the
door.
Next
morning

he calls
Gawaine,

¹ he.—Madden.

² free. q.—Pencil note.

³ MS. thee.—F.

⁴ the.—P.

⁵ Pork. MS. makes the Carle send his
daughter to Gawaine, *ib.* p. 201.—F.

⁶ In the next m.—P.

- and shows
him
bloody shirts 368 & there they found many¹ a bloody serke
which were wrought with curyous werke :
- and 1500
dead men's
bones, 1500 dead mens bones²
they found vpon a rooke³ att once.
- slain by him,
the Carle. "alacke!" quoth Sir Gawaine, "what haue beene
here?"
- 372 saith, "I & my welpes haue slaine all there."
then Sir Gawaine curteous and kind,⁴
he tooke his leaue away to wend,
& thanked they carle & the Ladyes there,
- Gawaine
wants to
take leave, 376 right as they worthy were.
- but the Carle
makes him
stop to
dinner.
After it
he shows
Gawaine 380 "nay," said the carle, "wee will first dine,
& then thou shalt goe with blessing mine."⁵
after dinner, the sooth to say,
the carle tooke Gawaine to a Chamber gay
where were hanginge swords towe⁶ ;
- a sword,
and begs
him to cut
his (the
Carle's) head
off. 384 the Carle soone tooke one of tho,
& sayd to the *Knight* then,
"Gawaine, as thou art a man,
take this sword & stryke of my head."
- Gawaine
refuses, "Nay," said Gawaine, "I had rather be dead ;
ffor I had rather suffer pine & woe
388 or euer I wold *that* deede doe."
the carle sayd to Sir Gawaine,
"looke thou doe as I thee saine,
& therof be not adread ;
- whereupon 392 but shortly smite of my head,
ffor if thou wilt not doe itt tyte,
ffor-ssooth thy head I will of smyte."
To the carle said Sir Gawaine,
- the Carle
says he'll
cut his head
off if he
don't do it. 396 "Sir, your bidding shall be done :"
he stroke the head the body ffroe,
& he stood vp a man thoe

[page 454]

¹ One stroke too few in the MS.—F.² a bones, MS.—Madden. I think the
a is meant to be blotched out.—F.³ i. e. a ruck, a heap.—P.⁴ hend, q.—Pencil note.⁵ Only half the *m* in the MS. Madden
reads *mine* too.—F.⁶ rowe.—Madden.

- of the height of *Sir Gawaine*,
 400 the certaine soothe withouten Laine.
 the carle sayd, "Gawaine, god blese thee,
 ffor thou hast deliuered mee!
 ffrom all ffalse witchcraft¹
 404 I am deliuerd² att the Last;
 by Nigromance thus was I shapen
 till a *Knight* of the round table³
 had with a sword smitten⁴ of my head,
 408 if he had grace to doe *that* deede.
 itt is 40 winters agoe
 since I was transformed soe;
 since then, none Lodged within this wooun,⁵
 412 but I & my whelpes driuen them downe;
 & but if hee did my bidding soone,
 I killed him & drew him downe,
 euery one but only thee.
 416 Christ grant thee of his mercye!
 he *that* the world made, reward thee this!
 ffor all my bale thou hast turned to blisse.
 now will I leaue *that* Lawe;
 420 there shall no man ffor me⁶ be slawe,
 & I purpose ffor their sake
 a chantrey in this place to make,
 & 5 preists to sing ffor aye
 424 vntill itt be doomes day.
 & Gawaine, for the loue of thee
 euery one shall bee welcome to me."
 Sir Gawaine & the young Lady clere,
 428 the Bishopp weded⁷ them in ffere;

stands up a
proper man.

and thanks
Gawaine
for deliver-
ing him
from the
witchcraft

that 40 years
ago trans-
formed him,
so to be till
a Knight of
the Round
Table should
cut his head
off.

"Christ
reward you!

Henceforth
I'll kill no
one;

but every-
body shall
be welcome
to me.
The Bishop
marries
Gawaine and

¹ ? witchcrafts cast. *Cast* is the regular word for a magical contrivance, and the line is too short as it stands. Skeat.

² Madden omits the *d.*—F.

³ I would read:

by Nigromance thus was I bound,

till a Knight of the table round.—Skeat.

⁴ MS. snitten.—F.

⁵ Madden reads *woom*, and notes *woone?*—F.

⁶ i. e. thro' me.—P.

⁷ wedded.—Madden.

the Carle's daughter.		the carle gaue him ¹ for his wedding a staffe, miter, ² & a ringe.
The Carle gives Kay a blood-red steed, and Gawaine's lady a white palfrey.	432	he gaue Sir Kay, <i>that</i> angry Knight, a blood red steede, & a wight. he gaue his daughter, the sooth to say, an ambling white palfrey, the ffairest hee was on the mold ;
	436	her palfrey was charged with gold ; shee was soe gorgeous & soe gay, no man cold tell her array.
Then he bids Gawaine go to Arthur and ask him	440	the carle commanded Sir Gawaine to wend ³ & " say vnto Arthur our King, & pray him <i>that</i> hee wold— ffor his loue <i>that</i> Iudas sold, & for his sake <i>that</i> in BETHELEM was borne,—
to dine with him next day.	444	<i>that</i> hee wold dine with him to morne." Sir Gawaine sayd the carle vnto, " fforsooth I shall <i>your</i> message doe."
Gawaine goes singing with his lady,	448	then they rode singing by the way with the Ladye <i>that</i> was gay ; they were as glad of <i>that</i> Ladye bright as euer was fflowle of the day-Lyght.
and tells Arthur his adventures.	452	they told King Arthur where they had beene, & what aduentures they had scene. " I thanke god," sayd the King, " cozen Kay, <i>that</i> thou didst on liue ⁴ part away."
Kay gives Arthur	456	" Marry," sayd Sir Kay againe, " of my liffe ⁵ I may be ffaine. ffor his loue <i>that</i> was in Bethlem borne, you must dine with the carle to-morne."
the Carle's invitation. Arthur and his company ride off,	460	in the dawning of the day thé rode ⁶ ; a merryer meeting was neuer made.

¹ Sc. the bishop.—P.² a staff, a miter, &c.—P.³ *wend* rimes also with *bringe*, l. 498.

—Skeat.

⁴ i.e. alive.—P. part = depart.—Skeat.⁵ lifte, MS., says Madden.—F.⁶ rade. qu.—P.

- when they together were mett,
 itt was a good thing, I you hett ;
 the trumpetts plaid att the gate,
 464 with trumpetts ¹ of siluer theratt ² ;
 there [was] all manner of Minstrelsy,
 harpe, Gyttoorne,³ and sowtrye.
 into the hall the King was ffett,⁴
 468 & royallye in seat was sett.
 by then the dinner was readye dight,
 tables were couered ⁵ all on height ;
 then to wash they wold not blinn,
 472 & the ffeast they can beginn.
 there they were mached arright,
 euery Lady against a Knight ;
 And Minstrells sate in windowes ffaire, [page 455]
 476 & playd on their instruments cleere ;
 “ Minstrells ffor worshipp att euery messe
 full Lowd they cry Largnesse ⁶ ! ”
 the carle bade the King “ doe gladlye,
 480 ffor heere yee gett great curtesye.”
 the King said “ by *Saint* Michaell
 this dinner Liketh me ffull well.”
 he dubd the carle a *Knight* anon,
 484 he gaue him the county of carlile soone,
 & made him Erle of all *that* Land,⁷
 & after, *Knight* of the table round.
 the King said, “ *Knight*, I tell thee,
 488 CARLILE ⁸ shall thy name bee.”
 when the dinner was all done,
 euery *Knight* tooke his leaue soone,

are received
 at the
 Carle's

with sound
 of trumpet,

harp,
 gittern, and
 psaltery ;

tables are
 laid,

and the feast
 begins,

minstrels
 playing the
 while.

Arthur likes
 his dinner,

knights the
 Carle, gives
 him Carlisle,

makes him
 an Earl, and
 a Knight of
 the Round
 Table, and
 christens
 him Carlisle.

After dinner
 the guests

¹ trunppetts MS.—F.

² therott, MS., says Madden.—F.

³ gyttoorne, MS., says Madden.—F.

⁴ has fell, MS., says Madden.—F.

⁵ covered.—P. Pork. has a better description of the room and dinner, l. 603–24.—F.

⁶ Largesse.—P.

⁷ Lond.—P.

⁸ No knight of this name occurs in the French romances of the Round Table, nor in the *Morte d'Arthur* of Malory. Madden's *Syr G.*, p. 348.—F.

to wend forward soberlye
 go home. 492 home into their owne countrye.¹
 May God he *that* made vs all with his hand,
 both the sea and the Land,
 grant vs all ffor his sake
 496 this ffalse world to fforsake,
 & out of this world when wee shall wend,
 bring our souls to heaven! to heauens blisse our soules bringe!
 god grant vs grace itt may soe bee!
 Amen! 500 AMEN, say all, ffor Charitye!

ffinis.

¹ The Porkington MS. makes the Carle (according to his promise, l. 422-3 above), found "A ryche Abbey . . in the towne of mery Carleyle . . for the men þat he had slayne."—F.

["*Off all the Seaes,*" printed in Lo. & Hum. Songs, p. 85, follows here in the MS. p. 455.]

Hero : & : Leander : ¹

Quid juvenis, magnum cui versat in ossibus ignem
 Durus amor? Nempe abruptis turbata procellis
 Nocte natat cæca serus freta; quem super ingens
 Porta tonat cœli et scopulis illisa reclamant
 Æquora; nec miseri possunt revocare parentes,
 Nec moritura super crudeli funere virgo.

Virg. *Georg.* iii. 258-63.

THIS subject has been a favourite one with both ancient and modern writers. The eighteenth and nineteenth of Ovid's *Heroides* deal with it. A famous poem was written on it by Musæus :

εἰπέ, θεᾶ, κρυφίῳν ἐπιμάρτυρα λύχρον ἐρώτων,
 καὶ νυχίῳν πλωτῆρα θαλασσοπόρων ὕμεναίων,
 καὶ γάμον ἀχλύόεντα τὸν οὐκ ἴδεν ἄφθιτος Ἥως,
 καὶ Σηστὸν καὶ Ἄβυδον ὅπη γάμος ἔννυχος Ἕρως.

When he lived is unknown; perhaps not before the fifth century of our era. His poem, discovered in the thirteenth century, became passing popular. It was translated again and again, into English by Chapman (the dead shepherd's saw occurs in this translation :

"Who ever loved that loved not at first sight?"),

Stapylton, Stirling, and many others; into German by Stolberg, Passow &c.; into French by Marot; into Italian by Bernardo Tasso, Bettoni &c. (see Smith's *Biog. Dict.* &c.) The story it told was retold in other shapes, and amongst them in the shape of a ballad as here.

This version is, as the Bishop remarks, "*tollerably regular.*" It cannot indeed lay claim to any plenary inspiration; it is

¹ A Poem tollerably (*so*) regular.—P.

evidently the production of a sort of poetical shopkeeper who could serve his customers with whatever amount of verses they wanted, well measured and carefully weighed, on any subject—of one who executed poetical orders.

References to the touching story lie thick in literature, from the mention of “The Amours of Hero and Leander,” in the *Complaint of Scotland*, to Rosalind’s mocking revision of it in *As You Like It*: “Leander, he would have lived many a fair year, though Hero had turn’d nun, if it had not been for a hot midsummer night; for, good youth, he went but forth to wash him in the Hellespont, and being taken with the cramp, was drowned; and the foolish coroners of that age found it was ‘Hero of Sestos.’”

In recent times Hood and Turner have, each in his own way, illumined and glorified the old tragedy.

Once were two lovers,	4	<p>TOW : ffamous louers once there was, whome fame hath quite fforgott, who liued long most constantlye without all enuious blott. shee was most ffaire, & hee most true, which caused <i>that that</i> did ensue : ffa : la : la :</p>	
whose story I'll tell you.	8	<p>whose story I doe meane to write, and title itt trueloues delight : fa : la : la :</p>	
Leander and Hero.	12	<p>Leander was this young mans name, right noble by discent, & hero, shee, whose bewtyes rare might giue Loue great content. hee att Abydos kept his court, shee att cestos liued in sport, fa : la : la.</p>	[page 474]
The Helles- pont separated them,	16	<p>a riuer great did <i>part</i> these twaine,— which caused them oft, poore soules, complaine fa : la : la :—</p>	

- Euen Hellespont, whose current streame
 like lightning swift did glyde ;
 accursed riuer *that* 2 harts
 20 soe ffaithfull must ¹ devyde !
 And more, *which* did augment their woe,
 the parents were eche others ffoe, fa : la : la :
 soe *that* no shipp durst him conuay
 24 vnto the place where his Hero Lay, ffa : la : la :
 Long time these louers did complaine
 the Misse of their desires,
 not knowing how thé ² might obtaine
 28 the thing they did require.
 though hee were *parted* with rough seas,
 no watters cold loues fflame appease, fa : la : la :
 Leander ventured for to swim
 32 to Hero, who well welcomed him, fa : la : la :
 Euen in the midst of darkesome ³ night
 when all things silent were,
 wold young Leander take his fflight
 36 throug[h] Hellespont soe cleere ;
 wher att ⁴ the shore Hero wold bee
 to welcome him most Louinglye, fa : la :
 & soe Leander wold conuay
 40 vnto the Chamber where shee Lay, fa : la :
 Thus many dayes thé did enioye
 the fruite of their delight,
 for he oft to his Hero came,
 44 & backe againe same night ;
 And shee for to encourage him
 through Hellespont more boldlye swim,⁵ fa : la :
 In her tap ⁶ tower a lampe did place,
 48 wherby he might behold her fface, fa : la :

and their
 parents were
 enemies.

For a long
 time the
 lovers could
 not meet.

At last,
 Leander
 swam

at night

across the
 Hellespont,
 and Hero
 took him

to her room.

To help him
 swim,

she used to
 put a lamp
 in her tower,

¹ MS. nnust.—F.

² they.—P.

³ MS. darkesone.—F.

⁴ MS. wheratt.—F.

⁵ ? MS. siarin.—F.

⁶ high : taper, qu.—P. top.—F.

and sit by it,
praying for
her love.

And by this lampe wold Hero sitt,
still pray[i]ng for her loue,
that the rough watters vnto him
52 might not offensiue proue :
“be mild,” *quoth* shee, “while he doth swim,
& *that* I haue well welcomed him, fa : [la :]
& then euer rage & rore amaine,
56 *that* he may neuer goe hence againe, fa : la :

Winter
came with
its storms,

Now boisterous winter hasted on,
when winds & watters rage ;
yett cold itt not the Lustfull hart
60 of this younge youth aswage ;
though winds & watters raged soe,
no shipp durst venter for to goe : fa : [la :]
Leander wold goe see his loue,
64 his manly armes in floods to proue fa : la :

but these did
not stop
Leander.

He leapt into
the Helles-
pont,

Then leapt hee into Hellespont,
desirous for to goe
vnto the place of his delight,
68 *which* hee affected soe ;
but winds & waues did him *withstand*
soe *that* he cold attaine no Land, fa : la : la :
ffor his lounes lampe [he] looked about ;
72 ffaire Hero slept, & itt was out. fa : la : la :

but could
not reach
land, his
lover's lamp
was out.

His body
was cast
ashore.

Then all in vaine Leander stroue
till armes cold doe no more ;
for naked, he, deprived of liffe,
76 was cast vpon the shore.
O had the Lampe still stayed in,
Leander liueles had not beene : fa : la : la :
which being gone, he knew no ground,
80 because thick darknesse did abound. fa : la : la :

- When Hero faire awakēt ffrom sleepe, [page 457]
 & saw her lampe was gone, Hero awoke
 her sences all benumbed were, and found
 84 & shee like to a stone. her lamp
 O! ffrom her eyes, then perles more Cleere, fa : la : She wept,
 proceeded many a dolefull teare,
 perswading ¹ that the angry flood fearing
 88 had drunke Leanders guiltlesse bloode, fa : la : Leander's
 fate.
- Then to the topp of highest tower
 faire hero did ascend,
 to see how the winds did with the waues
 92 for mastershipp contend,
 & on the sand shee did espye She saw his
 a naked bodye liuelesse lye, fa : la : corpse on the
 & lookeing more vpont, shee knew sand.
 96 itt was Leanders bloudlye hew. fa : la :
- Then did shee teare her golden haire,
 & in her greeue thus sayd, She tore her
 "accursed riuer ! that art still hair,
 100 a foe to euery maide cursed the
 since HELLEN faire in thee was drowned, Hellespont,
 named Hellespont, that euer ffround, fa : la :
 & now to see what thou canst doe,
 104 thou hast made me a mourner too ! fa : la : la :
- "But though thou didst attach my loue,
 & tookest him ffor thy owne,
 that hee was only es ² Heroes deere,
 108 hencforth itt shall be knowne."
 then ffrom the tower faire Hero ffell, and fell
 whose woefull death I sighe to tell, fa : la : from her
 and on his body there did dye tower,
 112 that loued her most tenderlye, fa : la : on Leander's
 body, and
 died.

¹ perswaded.—Skeat.² ? for *only his*, or *onlye* without the *s*.—F.

Thus endeth both they ¹ liffe & loue
 in prime ² of their young yeeres,
 since whose untimely ffuneralls

116 no such true loue appeares.

vtill more constant loue arise,

their names I will imupetelasze,³ fa : la :

& heauen [grant] such as haue ⁴ true ffriends,

May true
 lovers now
 have better
 ends!

120 as ffaithffull harts, but better ends! ffinis.

¹ their.—P.

² MS. prine.—F.

³ qu. MS.—F. himpettelaze, corruptly written for *immortalize*.—P.

⁴ grant such.—P.

Cressus: ¹

BOCCACCIO, Chaucer, and Shakespeare have all taken in hand the story of Troilus and Cressida—an episode of the Trojan war not mentioned by Homer or any other extant ancient writer, but first narrated by Guido de Colonna in the thirteenth century. “In the royal [now imperial] library of Paris,” says Warton, “it occurs often as an ancient French romance. ‘Cod. 7546, *Roman de Troilus* ;’ ‘Cod. 7564, *Roman de Troilus et de Briseida ou Creseida.*’” Chaucer, as is well known, in his narrative refers to “myn auctor Lollius;” but who this Lollius was is a question of much difficulty. Manifestly, the tale was extremely popular, and found its way into many different languages and forms.

Warton notices in the Register of the Stationers’ Company “A ballet intituled the *History of Troilus whose troth* ² *had well been tryed,*” licensed to Purfoote in 1565, and again in 1581,³ and in 1608.

The following piece gives a summary of the old tale, with the moral of it.

<p>CRESSUS : was the fairest of Troye, whom Troylus did loue ! the Knight was kind, & shee was coy, 4 no words nor worthes ⁴ cold moue, till Pindaorus ⁵ soe playd his part that the Knight obtained her hart,</p>	<p>Troilus could not win Cressid, till Pandarus helped him.</p>
---	--

¹ It sh^d be Cresside, see Chaucer & Shakespear.—P.

Collier. *Reg. Sta. Comp.* vol. i. p. 121.—F.

³ Collier, vol. ii. p. 146.—F.

² Warton’s correction of “throtes.”

⁴ worth.—P.

⁵ Pandarus.—P.

the Ladyes rose destroyes :

8 [They] held sweet warr a winters night
till the enuyous day gaue light ;
which darkness ¹ louers ioyes.

Cresses ² loue loues mother ³ crost,
12 fforetold her in a dreame
how Grecyans ⁴ won, how Troians Lost.
ffalse loue ffleetes with the streame :

When the
Trojans lost,
Cressid
16 Shee sweete ffaces, vallyant ffights,
who put downe the Troian knights,
downe might their Ladyes put.
loved
Diomedes.
20 dioned ⁵ thought her noe mayd,
yett loues debt was richely paid,
the seas the poorest cutt.

So lasses,
learn
24 Lasses, learne some witt by this !
though Ladyes truth professe,
no signe remaines of vnseen kisse
vnlesse a ffoole confesse.

that one love
cloyes ;
change it
then,
28 what pleased to-day, to-morrow cloyes ;
Ioy growes dull *that* still enioyes ;
change loue, for loues sweet sake.

like your
clothes,
and take the
best.
now hopes pleased ⁶ with pleasure strange ;
then chang loue, with garments change,
& still the better take.

ffinis.

¹ darkens.—P.² Cresside's.—P.³ Love's-mother.—P.⁴ Grecians.—P.⁵ Diomedes.—P.⁶ new hopes please.—Skat.

Songs: of Sheparden.¹

[page 458]

THIS song is in *Westminster Drollery*, Part II. 1672, p. 64, under the title of "The hunting of the Gods." After two long searches through the Museum Catalogues, only Part I. of that work, dated 1671, could be found. Recourse was therefore had to Mr. Lilly, of New Street, Covent Garden, to whose kind help so many editors and writers have been indebted, and he at once produced from his stores a copy of Part II., and allowed Mr. Furnivall to collate the Folio proof with it. We thank him for his courtesy, and wish his example was followed by *all* noble and gentle owners of rare books and MSS. in England. But, alas, among the fair flock of collectors is more than one black sheep.

This piece, as Percy notes, occurs also in the *Collection of Old Ballads*, and is there, too, entitled "The Hunting of the Gods." The copy is much freer from gross blunders than that of the Folio, but is not altogether satisfactory; *e. g.* it loses the rime to Olympical, reads course for courser.

An elaborate collation of the Old Ballads copy with the Folio one, which differs much from it, had been made for us by Mr. Brock before we found out Mr. Lilly; but this has now been put aside in favour of the collation with the earlier *Drollery* copy. In the O.B. copy which Mr. Brock used, the order of the stanzas differs from that of the Folio and *Westminster Drollery*; the first four and the last coincide, but the others vary thus:—

¹ In the printed Collection of old Ballads 12^{mo} vol. 3. pag. 198, N. 36.—P.

Stanza 5 of MS. and W.D. is stanza 9 of O.B.

" 6	"	" 8	"
" 7	"	" 6	"
" 8	"	" 5	"
" 9	"	" 7	"

The gods, ennuys, tired of lying beside their nectar, sick of their "securum ævum," envious of the sports of men, resolve on a sort of divine "meet." They have a day with the harriers. The shepherds wonder what this strange venery means.

The piece illustrates the passionate attachment with which hare-hunting was regarded in the old pre-foxchasing days.¹ It was an attachment of long standing. In the *Squire of Low Degree*, when the king's daughter of Hungary in her forlornness cries out on this world's vanity, and bids adieu to all that was held most precious, she concludes :

Farewell hawkes and farewell hounde ;
Farewell markes and many a pounde ;
Farewell huntynge at the hare ;
Farewell harte and hynde for evermare.

There are other copies, as Mr. Chappell points out, in *Wit and Drollery* (1682), *Pills to purge Melancholy* (1707), and Dryden's *Miscellany Poems*.

Songs of
shepherds

SONGS : of shepards,² rusticall roundelayes
fframed on³ ffancies,² whistled on reeds,
songs⁴ to solace young Nymphes vpon holydayes,
4 are to⁵ unworthy ffor wonderffull deeds.
Phebus Aeminus⁶ or worthy Cylen[i]us,⁷
his lofty Genius⁸ may seem to declare
In verse better coyned, or verse⁹ more refined,
8 how states¹⁰ diuined¹¹ once hunted¹² the hare.

are not
worthy
to tell

how the
Gods hunted
the hare.

¹ See pages 320-1 of Chappell's *Popular Music*.—F.

² *Westminster Drollery* inserts 'and.'—F.

³ Form'd of.—W.D.

⁴ Sung.—W.D.

⁵ too.—W.D. too.—P.

⁶ Ingenious.—W.D. ingenious.—P.

⁷ winged Cylenius.—W.D. witty Cylenius.—P.

⁸ MS. cenius.—F.

⁹ And voice.—W.D.

¹⁰ stars.—P.

¹¹ devin'd.—W.D. divine.—W. Chappell.

¹² the hunting.—P.

<p>Starres inamoured with pastimes Olimpicall, stares & planetts <i>that</i> bewtiffull showne, wold noe longer <i>that</i> earthlye men only shall ¹ 12 swim in pleasures, & they but looke on. Round about horned Lucina thé ² swarmed, & her informed how minded they were, Eche god & goddesse, to take humane bodyes, 16 as Lords & Ladyes, to ffollow the hare.</p>	<p>The stars and planets</p> <p>told the moon that they meant to take human form, and hunt the hare.</p>
<p>chast dyana aplauded the motyon, with ³ pale <i>proserpina</i> sate in her place, Lights ⁴ the welkin & gouernes the Ocean 20 whilest ⁵ shee conducted her nephews in chase, & by her example ⁶ her ffavour ⁷ to trample the cold & ample ⁸ earth, leaueth the ⁹ ayre, Neptune the watter, the wind ¹⁰ liber pater, 24 & Mars the slaughter, to ffollow the hare.</p>	<p>Diana, Proserpine,</p> <p>Neptune, and Mars join in the hunt,</p>
<p>Light young ¹¹ Cupid, horsset ¹² vpon Pegasus, borrowed of Muses with Kisses and prayers; strong Alcydes vpon cloudye caucasus 28 mounts a Centaure <i>that</i> proudly him beares; Postylyon of the skye, light heeld ¹³ Mercurye, makes ¹⁴ his courser ffly as fflight as the ¹⁵ ayre; yellow Appollo the Kenell doth ffollow, 32 with ¹⁶ whoope and hallow after the hare.</p>	<p>with Cupid, Alcides, Mercury, Apollo,</p>
<p>Hymen vshers the Ladyes: Astrea the ¹⁷ iust tooke hands with Minerua the bold,</p>	<p>Astrea, Minerua,</p>

¹ should.—P.² they.—W.D. they.—P.³ And.—W.D. And.—P.⁴ Which lights.—P.⁵ while.—W.D.⁶ and, qu.—P.⁷ Father.—W.D.⁸ The Earth old & ample.—P.⁹ leave.—W.D. leave they the.—P.¹⁰ Wine.—W.D. wine.—P.¹¹ god.—W.D.¹² was hors'd.—W.D.¹³ footed.—P.¹⁴ maketh: Conj.—P.¹⁵ fly Fleet as the.—W.D. fleet as the.—P.¹⁶ and.—W.D.¹⁷ that, qu.—P.

- Ceres, Ceres the browne with the ¹ bright Cyther[e]a,²
 Thetis, 36 Thetis ³ the wanton, Bellona the old,⁴
 Aurora, shame-ffast ⁵ Aurora, with suttle Pandora,
 Maya, & May ⁶ with flora did company ⁷ beare ;
 Juno, Iuno ⁸ was stated too hye to be mated,
 40 but,⁹ O ¹⁰ shee hated not hunting the hare.
- Narcissus, drowned Narssissus ffrom his Metamorphisis
 raised with ¹¹ Eccho, new manhoode did take ;
 Somnus, snoring Somnus vpstarted in cinaris,¹²
 44 that this ¹³ 1000^d yeeres ¹⁴ was not awake,
 Mulciber, to see clubfooted old Mulciber booted,
 Pan. & Pan promoted on Aeolus ¹⁵ mare ;
 Æolus, proud Æolous ¹⁶ pouted, proud ¹⁷ Aeolus ¹⁸ shouted ;
 Momus. 48 & Momus fflowted, but ffollowed the hare.
- The hounds
 give tongue,
 the hunters
 sound their
 horns. -
 52 deepe Melampus & cuning Ignobytes,¹⁹
 Nappy,²⁰ & tigre, & harpye, the s[k]yes ²¹
 rends with ²² roring, whilest hunter like ²³ Hercules
 sounds they ²⁴ plentiffull horne to their cryes.
²⁵ [Till with varieties To solace their Pieties
 The wary Deities Repos'd them where]
 wee shepard's weare seated, the whilest ²⁶ wee repeated
 56 what wee conceited of their hunting the hare.
- We
 shepherds
 told our
 fancies about
 the hunt :

¹ W.D. omits *the*.—F.² Cytherea.—P.³ With Thetis.—W.D.⁴ doth hold. *Sic legerim*.—P.⁵ Shamefac't.—W.D.⁶ Maya.—P. May.—W.D.⁷ MS. company.—F.⁸ But Juno.—P. ⁹ Altho'.—P.¹⁰ yet.—W.D.¹¹ Rowzed by.—P. Rais'd by.—W.D.¹² Cimmeris.—P. Cineris.—W.D.¹³ The which.—P.¹⁴ thousand year.—W.D.¹⁵ Chirons.—W.D.¹⁶ Pallas.—P. Faunus.—W.D.¹⁷ and.—W.D.¹⁸ and Æolus.—P.¹⁹ fortunate Lælaps.—P. Ichnobates
—W.D.²⁰ Jowler.—P. Nape.—W.D.²¹ Harper, the skies.—P.²² Rent with.—W.D.²³ huntsman-like.—W.D.²⁴ Winds the.—W.D.²⁵ Percy inserts here from *Old Ballads* :Till with varieties
To solace their deities,
Their weary Pieties
refreshed were.W.D. has the variations of the text
above, and the two lines are printed as
four.—F.²⁶ And there.—W.D. Line 55 is
written as two lines in the MS.—F.

- yooung Amyntas supposed the gods came to breathe, Amyntas
 after some battell,¹ themselues on the ground ; told his,
 Thirsis thought they starres² came to dwell herebeneath, Thyrsis his,
 60 & *that* herafter they³ world wold goe round ;
 Corydon aged, with Phillis engaged,
 was much intraged with iealous dispayre,
 but ffear⁴ rewarded,⁵ & he was *perswaded*, and I told
 64 when I thus aplauded their hunting the hare : mine.

 "starres⁶ but shadowes where,⁷ states⁸ were but sorrow, " Stars are
*that*⁹ noe¹⁰ motyon, nor *that* no delight¹¹ ; shadows,
 Ioyes are Iouyall, delight is the Marrow gods no
 68 of liffe, & action the apple¹² of light¹³ ; delight ;
 pleasure d[e]pends vpon no other ends,¹⁴
 but¹⁵ ffreely lends to eche vertue a share ;
 only is mesure¹⁶ the Iewell of treasure¹⁷ ; the treasure
 72 of pleasure the treasure is¹⁸ hunting the hare." of pleasure
 is hunting
 the hare."

 ffowre¹⁹ broad bowles to the Olimpicall rector
*that*²⁰ Troy borne²¹ Egle does bring²² on his knee !
 Ioue to Pheobus Carrouses in nector,
 76 And he to HERMES, & HERMES to mee, [page 459]
 where-with infused, I pipet²³ & I mused
 in verse²⁴ vnused, this sport²⁵ to declare. It has
 O²⁶ *that* the rouse of Ioue, round as his sphcere may inspired me
 moue, thus.
 80 helth to all *that* loue hunting the hare ! Here's
 health to all who love
 hunting
 the hare!

ffinis.

- ¹ battels.—W.D. ² the stars.—W.D. ¹⁶ As measures.—W.D.
³ the.—W.D. ⁴ fury was faded.—P. ¹⁷ pleasures.—W.D.
⁵ fury vaded.—W.D. Alone is pleasure
⁶ Starr's.—W.D. The measure of treasure.—P.
⁷ were.—W.D. were: Joys.—P. ¹⁸ treasures of.—W.D.
⁸ state.—W.D. ⁹ Had they.—W.D. ¹⁹ Three.—W.D. ²⁰ His.—W.D.
¹⁰ they without.—P. ²¹ Boy presents.—P.
¹¹ these wanting *Delight*.—P. ²² he brings.—W.D.
¹² axle.—W.D. ¹³ axle of might.—P. ²³ I pip'd.—W.D. ²¹ songs.—W.D.
¹⁴ friends.—W.D. ¹⁵ And yet.—W.D. ²³ their sports.—P. ²⁶ And.—W.D.

[The following pieces, printed in Lo. and Hum. Songs, pp. 87-101, follow here in the MS. (pp. 459-63): "Louers hea[r]ke alarum," "A freinde of mine," "O nay, O nay, not yett," "I cannot bee contented," "Lillumcham," "The Sea-crabb," "Last night I thought."]

The Lauinian Shore.¹

“MR. THORPE, the enterprising bookseller of Bedford Street,” says Mr. Collier in a note in his *History of Dramatic Poetry*, “is in possession of a MS. full of songs and poems, in the handwriting of a person of the name of Richard Jackson, all copied prior to the year 1631, and including many unpublished pieces by a variety of celebrated poets. One of the most curious is a song in five seven-line stanzas thus headed: ‘Shakespeare’s Rime which he made at the Mytre in Fleete Streete.’ It begins, ‘From the rich Lavinian Shore,’ and some few of the lines were published by Playford and set as a catch.”

Mr. Thoms (see *Anecdotes and Traditions*, printed for the Camden Society) and Dr. Rimbault (in an article in *Notes and Queries*, May 13, 1854) apparently accept this heading as a sufficient proof that the piece is verily written by Shakespeare. We certainly cannot so accept it.

Dr. Rimbault gives an interesting version from a MS. collection of songs formerly in possession of J. S. Smith, editor of *Musica Antiqua*.

From the fair Lauinian shore
 I your markets come to store,
 Marvel not I thus far dwell
 And hither bring my wares to sell,
 Such is the sacred hunger of gold.
 Then come to my pack
 While I cry
 What d’ ye lack?
 What d’ ye buy?
 For here it is to be sold.

¹ One stanza of this is in Wilson’s *Cheerfull Ayres* (1660) p. 3.—F.

I have beauty, honour, grace,
 Virtue, favour, time, and space,
 And what else thou wouldst request,
 Even the thing thou likest best.

First, let me have but a touch of thy gold.

Then come too, lad,

Thou shalt have

What thy lust never gave,

For here it is to be sold.

Though thy gentry be but young,
 As the flower that this day sprung,
 And thy father thee before
 Never arms nor scutcheon bore.

First let me have but a catch of thy gold,

Then though thou be an ass,

By this light

Thou shalt pass

For a knight.

For here it is to be sold.

Thou whose obscure birth so base
 Ranks among the ignoble race,
 And desireth that thy name
 Unto honour should obtain.

First, etc.

Madam, come, see what you lack,
 Here's complexion in my pack,
 White and red you may have in this place,
 To hide an old ill-wrinkled face.

First, let me have but a catch of thy gold,

Then thou shalt seem

Like a wench of fifteen,

Although you be three-score and ten years old.

Other less perfect copies are, he points out, to be found in Playford's *Select Ayres and Dialogues* (1659), Dr. Wilson's *Cheerfull Ayres and Ballads* (1660), in Playford's *Catch that Catch Can* (1667). The first stanza is given as "set" by Dr. Wilson in Playford's *Musical Companion* (1673).

A remarkable writer in the *Athenæum*, quoted by Dr. Rimbault, says the "rime is a merely clumsy adaptation from Ben's interesting epigram 'Inviting a Friend to Supper.'" This gentleman had certainly not read both poems.

The speaker in the piece is a sort of superior hawker. His stock consists not of such material blessings as Autolycus vended at the sheep-shearing in the *Winter's Tale*—lawn, and gloves, and bracelets, and pins—or as were proffered to the London Lackpenny strolling through the Chepe and Canwyke Street, but of far subtler wares. He sells Success in Love, Rank, Reputation, Health-restoratives. There is nothing in the world that he does not sell, except Wit and Honesty. These cannot be bought and sold. Otherwise he is an universal outfitter. The satire in the third and fourth stanzas is directed, no doubt, at the venality of the court of James I. and especially at the selling of knighthood countenanced and practised by that disreputable monarch. But as was the court so was the country. Dives was successful everywhere. He could never bear a bad character; he could never be “refused” as a lover; he was always a gentleman born. Riches made the man. An ever-old, an ever-new subject for the satirist. The worship of Plutus never ceases. His temple is never uncrowded.

Vincant divitiæ, sacro ne cedat honori,
 Nuper in hanc urbem pedibus qui venerat albis;
 Quandoquidem inter nos sanctissima divitiarum
 Majestas, etsi funesta pecunia templo,
 Nondum habitas, nullas nummorum ereximus aras.

This famous chapman, himself urged on, as he confesses, by ‘*auri sacra fames*’ (v. 5), comes from far-away Italy—from Lavinia littora (v. 1. Compare, in D’Urfey’s *Pills to purge Melancholy*,

A gentle breeze from the Lavinian shore
 Was gliding o’er the coast of Sicily.)

Did Italy already in the earlier years of the seventeenth century bear that ill name that was affixed to it in the eighteenth and is but now perhaps being removed from it? Was it even then regarded as the cradle and nursery of impostors and charlatans? And were these, its miserable offspring, already overrunning other countries and England? The “Græculus

esuriens" whom Juvenal described with such sarcasm, as ready to turn his hand to anything and everything, to turn

Grammaticus, rhetor, geometres, pictor, aliptes,
Augur, schœnobates, medicus, magus,

was but a type of what his own countryman became in later times.

<p>ffROM the rich¹ Lauinian shore I your marktett² come to store. muse not you I soe farr³ dwell, 4 [&] hither⁴ come my warres to sell;⁵ Such is they⁶ Sacred hunger of gold. come⁷ to my packe! will you buy⁸ what you⁹ lacke:¹⁰ what you lacke,¹¹ heare shall you haue¹² to be sold.</p> <p>8 you whose ffortune young denyes¹³ grace in your beloved¹⁴ eyes; thou thy loues, vowes, or deserts¹⁵ nought preuaile in womans harts; 12 soe be your palmes anointed with gold¹⁶ come to me then! when, gentlemen, will you buy?¹⁷ loue, loue, is heere to be sold.</p> <p>you, whose birth obscure & base 16 rankes you with ignoble¹⁸ race;</p>	<p>I come from far</p> <p>to sell my wares.</p> <p>Buy what you lack!</p> <p>You unsuc- cessful lovers,</p> <p>bring me gold,</p> <p>and I'll sell you love.</p> <p>You base- born men</p>
--	--

¹ faire.—Wilson's Ayres.

² Markets.—W.A.

³ though so farr I.—W.A.

⁴ and hither.—P.

⁵ and my wares come here to sell.
—W.A.

⁶ the.—P.

⁷ then come.—W.A.

⁸ while I cry.—W.A.

⁹ d'ye.—W.A.

¹⁰ What you lacke is here to be sold.
—P.

¹¹ what d'ye buy.—W.A.

¹² for here it is.—W.A.

¹³ you, whom Fortune's Wrong denyes.
—P.

¹⁴ beloved's.—P.

¹⁵ For all your loves, vows, &c.—P.

¹⁶ Unless their palms be (I w^d. read).
—P.

¹⁷ "Come to me then,
will you buy Gent".
"Gen^t love &c.—P.

¹⁸ of ignoble.—P.

- who are ambitions,
bring me gold,
and I'll sell you a place.
- You parvenus
whose fathers had no arms,
bring me gold,
and I'll sell you heraldry.
- You defamed,
deficient in body or mind,
bring me gold, and I'll sell you fame and perfection.
- But you dullards,
and scorers,
whatever gold you bring,
I can sell you neither wit nor honesty.
- 20 hope, ambityon, hyer striues
ffor *your selues* & ffor *your wiues* ;
well then, supply thy deffects with thy gold ;
come for thy race, care not thou for a place, for a
place,
for a place is heare to be sold.
- 24 Though thy gentry be as younge
as the fflower *that* this day spronge,
though thy ffather thee before
neuer sheild nor scuchyon bore :
canst ffind in thy [heart] ¹ for to *part* with thy
gold ?
come to me, lad, thou shalt haue what thy dad
neuer had :
- 28 heeres Heraldrye to be sold.
- Hath blind ffortune hurt thy ffame,
or vnkind nature hurt thy fframe ?
hart,² nor mind, nor body, *partes*,
32 strong³ *proportion*, or deserts ?
well then supply thy defects with thy gold ;
come to me then ! buy thy fame ; come ⁴ againe !
buy thy frame ;
ffor both are heare to be sold.
- 36 But dull chapemen, they dispise
my rich ffairings to be wise ;
they whose humors ⁵ still doth ⁶ scorne
truth,⁷ and trickes & toyes adorne ;
- 40 If you doe come with Millyons of gold,
Seeke ffather yet in my stall ;
there is witt none att all,
nor honesty, to be sold.

ffinis.

¹ in thy heart.—P.² *Hast.*—P.³ strength.—P.⁴ MS. *come*.—F. *come*.—P.⁵ MS. *honors*.—F.⁶ *do*.—P.⁷ those whom.—P.

Come my dainty doxeys.¹

[page 464]

THIS piece praises the joys of a gypsy's life. It prefers tents to homesteads, picking and stealing to honest labour, complete looseness to any sort of restraint.

The word "doxy" Nares defines to mean "a mistress." "Coles has it a 'doxy meritrix' . . . For the use of it among the beggars, see Beaumont and Fletcher in the Beggar's Bush, Act ii. 1." "Dill" is much the same as dilling, which is probably, as Nares suggests, much the same as darling. "Minshew explains it a *wanton*, but there is nothing in its origin to convey that meaning, even if with him we derived it from *diligo* . . .

To make up a match with my eldest daughter, my wife's dilling, whom she longs to call madam.' Eastw. Hoe. O. Pl. iv. 206."

<p>COME: my dainty doxeys, my dills, my deares! we haue neither house nor land, yet neuer want good cheere; 4 wee take no care far candle, rents; wee sleepe, we snort, we snore, in tents.</p> <p>Then rouse betime, & steale our dinners; our store is neuer taken without pigg or bacon, 8 & thats good meate ffor sinners.</p> <p>Att wakes & ffaires we cozen poore cuntry folkes by the dozen; if one haue money, he disbursses, 12 while some tell fortune, some ² picke purses.</p>	<p>Come my dears! Tho' we've no houses</p> <p>we live in tents.</p> <p>Go and steal our dinners!</p> <p>Cheat the countryfolk at fairs.</p>
---	---

¹ A Gypsy's Song.—P.² MS. sone.—F.

For practice,
steal boots,

smocks, or
anything!

rather then liue out of vse,
steale hose or garters, bootes or shooes,
boots, guilded spurres with ingling¹ rowells,
16 shirts or smockes, napkins or towells.

Come and
live with us,
all who love
their ease!
Gipsies get
drunk when
they please,

come liue with vs, come liue with vs,
all you *that* loue *your* eases!
he *thats* a Gipsey, may be drunke & tipsey
20 att what houre he pleases!

laugh,
and steal.

wee laugh, wee quaffe, wee rore, we shuffle,
wee filch, wee steale, wee drab, wee sckuffle!
ffinis.

¹ perhaps jingling.—P.

To : Oxforde :

THIS song is said to have been composed by some contemporary Cambridge wit on the occasion of James I.'s visit to Oxford in 1605. No doubt the whole affair—the speechifying, the play-acting, the “quæstiones”—was absurd enough; and the keen eyes of certain members of the sister university who were present observed and recognised abroad absurdities which might have passed unnoticed if perpetrated at home. Indeed, the spectacle of the universities scraping and bowing before a royal visitation—a spectacle they presented at every possible opportunity—is highly ludicrous. They poured forth Latin verses to a prodigious extent :

The hall was hung with verses thick,
 A goodly sight to see,
 For every one was willed to make
 Verses in his degree.
 To their trade some had made
 Verses called Asclepiad.
 Here might you find, of every kind,
 Verses fitting to your mind;
 Here a Hexameter, there a Pentameter,
 Sapphics and Scazons too.

They overflowed with Latin orations. In a word, their book-wormships exhausted all the powers of hyperbole and adulation.

A full and very amusing account of the visit to Oxford here referred to, is quoted by Nichols in his *Progresses of James I.* (i. 530–59) from Harl. MS. 7044, fol. 201. This, as is stated by a note in the MS. in the handwriting of Baker, to whom the MS. once belonged, was written by one Stringer, a bedell at Cambridge in 1589, and subsequently a holder of other important university posts. It fully illustrates the following squib: *e. g.*

as to v. 9: "they presented to his Majesty," he says, "a Greek Testament in Folio washed and ruled, and two pair of Oxford gloves with a deep fringe of gold, the turneoers being wrought with pearle. They cost, as I was informed, 6*l.* a pair," &c.

Anthony à Wood in his Annals, under 1614, speaking of the King's visit to Cambridge in that year, says (*apud* Nichols l. c. *note*): "It must be now noted that when King James was entertained at Oxford in 1605, divers Cambridge scholars went thither out of novelty to see and hear; yet, if anything had been done amiss, they were resolved to represent it to the worst advantage. Some therefore that pretended to be wits made copies of verses on that solemnity, among which I have met with one that runs thus :

To Oxenford the King is gone
 With all his mighty Peers,
 That hath in grace maintained us
 These four or five long years.
 Such a king as he hath been
 As the like was never seen.
 Knights did ride by his side
 Evermore to be his guide:
 A thousand knights, and forty thousand knights,
 Knights of forty pound a year.

Some have said that it was made by one — Lake, but how true I know not."

The piece, then, was composed for the benefit of the Combination Rooms of Cambridge, or what equivalent institutions there were in the beginning of the seventeenth century, and, we may be sure, was received with much laughter there by the Dons of the Stuart times.

The King's
 gone to
 Oxford
 to see the
 sights.

TO : Oxford the King is gone
 with all his pompous grace,
 to vew the sights & see the learning
 4 of *that* ffamous place,

- where clownes of the towne—
 clothed in their scarlett gownes—
 gaue the *King* such a thing
 8 as passes all imageninge ;
 a paire of gloues, to testifye their loues
 which to the *King* they bore.
- They gaue him a payre of gloues
 12 of stiffe & strong staggs lether ;
 I say, a payre of hunting gloues
 to keepe out wind and wheather.
 Some relate they gaue him plate,
 16 & a purse stufft full with gold :
 “ sure,” said I, “ thats a lye ! ”
 as soone as ere I heard itt told.
 ffor why shold they giue their gold away
 20 to him *that* hath enough of his owne ?
- Next to christs-church was he brought,
 a place of Mickle ffame,
 where the warden him receiued,—
 24 I haue forgott his name.—
 heere they all went to the hall,
 tag & rag, great and small ;
 the bells did ring, the boyes did singe,
 28 & all did crye, “ god saue the Kinge !
 & grant him grace to run a race
 with pleasure in Royston downes ! ”
- The hall was honge with verses thicke,
 32 a goodlye sight to see,
 ffor euery one was willed to make
 verses in his degree.
 to their trade some had made
 36 verses called ascelpiade.

And the
 clownes have
 given him

a pair of
 gloves:

yes,

hunting
 gloves ;

not plate
 and money,
 as some say.

At Christ-
 church

they took
 him to the
 hall,

which was
 hung all
 over with
 verses

of all kinds, here might you find, of euerye Kind,
 verses fitting to your minde :
 hexameters, here an examiter,¹ there a pentamiter,
 sapphics, 40 saphickes,² & seasens³ too. ffinis.
 &c.

¹ hexamet^r.—P.

² Sapphickes.—P.

³ Beyond all doubt an error for *seazons*

(the well-known verses, called also *chol-*
iamb'cs).—Dyce.

Ladpe : Bessye.¹

Inerat ibi ab unguiculis Dei timor et servitium admirabile; in parentes vero mira observantia; erga fratres et sorores amor ferme incredibilis; in pauperes Christique ministros reverenda ac singularis affectio.—*Bernard Andreas.*

Two copies of this song are preserved elsewhere, one in a MS. of the time of Charles II. in the possession of Mr. Bateman, the other in MS. Harl. 367, transcribed apparently, says Mr. Halliwell, about the year 1600. These two copies differ considerably. They have both been printed: the former three times, viz., by Mr. Thomas Heywood in 1829, by Mr. Halliwell for the Percy Society, and by Mr. Jewitt in his *Ballads and Songs of Derbyshire*; the latter by Mr. Halliwell along with the other. The following copy differs but slightly from this latter one from the Harl. MS. It is perhaps a little later than it, as it speaks of 'our comely King,' probably James the First, in v. 3, where the Harleian version reads 'Queen,' probably Queen Elizabeth. Certainly neither copy in its present shape is as old as the events it describes. Both are less modernised than the copy in Mr. Bateman's MS.

But we see no reason to doubt that the main ground-work of the poem was laid early in the sixteenth century, or still earlier,

¹ In 6 Parts. Containing a long Account of the bringing in of Henry 7th and all the steps previous to it, down to the battle of Bosworth.—P.

This is a later copy of the *Lady Bessie* in MS. Harl. 367, fol. 89, printed by Mr. Halliwell for the Percy Society in 1847, at p. 43-79 of *The most pleasant Song of Lady Bessy*. The Harleian copy is doubtless of Elizabeth's reign,—ab. 1600 Mr. Halliwell says—as in its 3rd line, and its last line but one, it has
save and kepe our comlye *queene*,

whereas our copy in the Folio dates from a King's reign—no doubt James I.'s,—

saue & keepe our comelye *Kinge*.

(To prevent the repetition of an objection already made, I add that the epithet 'comelye' was probably applied to James because it was in the text, having been used for Elizabeth.)

Cp. for st. 118, p. 184. The Harleian copy is not divided into parts. The collation of it here is from Mr. Halliwell's text.—F.

by one who himself took part, as he professes, in the exciting transactions that are narrated—by Humphrey Brereton, the active and zealous agent, the ‘true esquire,’ of the Lady Bessy. As to the date of the composition of the poem, there is a great look of authenticity about the work; there is an annalistic air. The account given of the conferences between the Princess and Lord Stanley (styled, proleptically, the Earl of Derby), of the messenger’s journeys into the northern counties and across the sea, is singularly minute and graphic; and these merits can scarcely be ascribed to the brilliant imagination of the writer. There are no signs apparent of any great talent of that kind. The style is that of a man who can relate soberly and steadily what he has seen, not of one fertile in conjuring up ideal pictures. It is matter of fact, autoptic throughout.

We have, unhappily, no means of applying the touchstone of history to the circumstances narrated by the ballad. There is extant no other information as to the movements of Elizabeth of York, between Christmas 1484 and the 21st of the following August, when the battle of Bosworth was fought. We find that at the time of that battle she was living at Sheriff Hutton Castle in Yorkshire, “with no companion,” says Miss Strickland (see that lady’s *Lives of the Queens of England*), “but its young and imbecile owner, her cousin Warwick.” The ballad speaks of her as present at Leicester, when the dishonoured body of her uncle was carried from the field of his fall into that town. But this collision between the ballad and facts cannot be allowed to impugn the validity of the whole account furnished by the ballad. The bringing the lately oppressed lady to the sight of her fallen oppressor, formed a “position” too tempting to be rejected. Facts might pardonably be strained a little to compass such an effective meeting; and the furious spirit of a partisan might put into the mouth of a most gentle lady cruel words derisive of her fallen enemy.

They carried him naked unto Leicester,
 And buckled his hair under his chin.
 Bessie met him with a merry cheer ;
 These were the words she said to him :

“How likest thou the slaying of my brethren twain?”
 She spake these words to him alone.
 “Now are we wroken upon thee here !
 Welcome, gentle uncle, home !”

As to the authorship, we may easily believe that the writer was Humphrey Brereton. Probably no one but Brereton would have described so carefully Brereton's movements, the main interests of the piece centring around the Earl of Richmond, and the lady Elizabeth. This author knows well and describes every passage of them.

This ballad then may be set down as of some considerable historical value for the picture of old times that it gives.

[Part I.]

[How the Princess Elizabeth persuades Lord Derby to help her and her lover Richmond.]

<p>GOD: <i>that</i> is most of might, & borne was of a maiden ffree, saue & keepe our comelye Kinge ¹ 4 & all ² the pore cominaltye !</p> <p>for wheras <i>King</i> Richard, I vnd[e]rstand, had not raigned yeeres three, But the best duke in all the Land [page 465] 8 he caused to be headed ³ att Salsburye.</p> <p>that time the Stanleys without doubt were dread ouer England ffarr & neere,⁴ next <i>King</i> Richard, <i>that</i> was soe stout, 12 of any Lord in England Ire.⁵</p>	<p>God save</p> <p>the King and the Commons!</p> <p>In Richard III.'s time</p> <p>the Stanleys were the greatest lords in England ;</p>
--	---

¹ queene.—Harl.

² also.—Harl.

³ A.-S. *heafðian*, to head, behead.—F.

⁴ nec.—Harl.

⁵ free.—Harl.

and when
Lady Bessye

there was a Lady faire on mold,
the name of her was litle Bessye ;
shee was young, shee was not old,
16 but of the age ¹ of one and twentye ;

was staying
in London
with Lord
Derby,

shee cold write, & shee cold reede,
well shee cold worke by *prophesye* ;
shee soiorrned in the Cittye of London
20 *that time with the Erle of Darbye.*

she com-
plained to
him against
her uncle,
King
Richard :

vpon a time, as I you tell,
there was noe more but the Erle & shee ;
shee made complaint of ² Richard the *King*,
24 *that was her vnckle of blood soe nye :*

"Hedrowned
my brothers

"helpe, ffather stanley, I doe you pray !
for of *King* Richard wroken I wold ³ bee.
he did my brethren to the death on a day
28 in their bedd where they did lye ;

in a pipe of
wine,

" he drowned them both in a pipe of wine ;
itt was dole to heare and see !
& he wold haue put away his Queene
32 for to haue lyen by my bodye !

and wanted
to put away
his Queen
and lie with
me.

" helpe *that* he were put away,
for the royall blood destroyed wilbee ⁴ !
BUKINGAM, *that* duke of England,
36 was as great with *King* Richard as now are yee.

You too may
meet with
Bucking-
ham's fate.

" the crowne of England there tooke hee,—
forsooth, Lord, this is no lye,—
& crowned *King* Richard of England free,
40 *that* after beheaded him att Salsburye.

¹ yeares.—Harl.
² one.—Harl.

³ will I.—Harl.
⁴ destroy will hee.—Harl.

- " helpe, father Stanley, I you pray !
 for on *that* traitor wroken wold I bee ;
 & helpe Erle Richmond, *that* Prince soe ' gay,
 44 *that* is exiled ouer the sea !
- " for & he were *King*, I shold be *Queene* ;
 I doe him loue, & neuer him see.
 thinke on Edward, my father, *that* late was *King*,
 48 vpon his deathe-bed where he did lye :
- " of a litle child he put me to thee,
 for to gouerne and to guide ² ;
 into *your* keeping hee put mee,
 52 & left me a booke of *prophecye* ³ ;—
- " I haue itt in keeping in this citey ;—
 he knew *that* yee might make me a *Queene*,
 father, if thy will itt be ;
 56 for *Richard* is no righteous *Kinge*,
- " nor vpon no woman borne was hee ;
 the royall blood of all this land,
Richard my vnkle will destroye
 60 as he did the DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM,
- " Who⁴ was as great with *King Richard* as now are yee.
 for when he was duke of Gloster,
 he slew good King Henerye
 64 in the Tower of London as he lay there.

Help, too,

Richmond,
who is
exiled.I love him.
Think how
my father,
King
Edward, on
his death-
bed, left me

to your care,

as he knew
that you
could make
me Queen.Richard will
destroy all
the royal
blood.He slew
King Henry
in the
Tower.¹ Harl. omits *soe*.—F.² For *gye* = *guide*.—Dyce.³ See "The most pleasant Song of Lady Bessy," edited from Mr. Bateman's MS. by Mr. Halliwell for the Percy Society, p. 4. King Edward speaks to his little Bessy set in a window :

" Here is a book of Reason ; keep it well,
 As you will have the love of me ;
 Neither to any creature do it tell,
 Nor let no liveing lord it see,
 Except it be to the Lord Stanley,

The which I love full heartiley :
 All the matter to him show you may,
 For he and his thy help must be ;
 As soon as the truth to him is shown,
 Unto your words he will agree ;
 For their shall never son of my body
 be gotten
 That shall be crowned after me,
 But you shall be queen and wear the
 crown,
 So doth expresse the *prophecye*.—F.

⁴ which.—Harl.

- Stanley,
your brother
Sir William
can bring
500 men,
68 “ Sir william Stanley, thy brother decre
in the hol[t]e ¹ where he doth lye,
he may make 500 fightinge men ²
by the marryage of his faire Ladye.³
- your son
George
1000 men,
72 “ your sonne George, the Lord Strange,
in Latham where he doth lye,
he may make a 1000 ⁴ ffighting men in fere,
& giue them wages for monthes three.
- your son
Edward
300 men,
76 “ Edward stanley *that* is thy sonne,⁵
300 men may bring to thee.
thy sonne Iames, *that* young preist,
warden of Manchester was made latelye.
- your nephew
Sir J.
Savage
1500 men,
80 “ Sir Iohn Sauage, thy sisters sonne,—
he is thy sisters sonne of blood soe nye—
hee may make 1500 fighting men,
& all his men white hoods to ⁶ giue ;
“ he giueth the pikes ⁷ on his banner bright ;
vpon a feild backed was neuer ⁸ hee. [page 466]
- Sir G.
Talbot
1000 men (?)
84 “ Sir Gilbert Talbott, a man of might,
in Sheffeld castle where he doth lye,
“ Hele make a 1000^d men ⁹ of might,
& giue them wages ffor monthes three.
yourself
1000 men :
88 & thy selfe a 1000 Eagle ffitt ¹⁰ to ffight,
that is a goodlye sight to see ;
- You and
yours can
bring
Richmond
back,
and then
he'll be
King, and I
Queen.”
92 “ for thou & thine withouten pine
may Bring Richemond ouer the sea ;
for & he were King, I should be Queene ;
ffather Stanley, remember bee !”

¹ holte.—Harl. holte, vid. St. 50, &c.,
passim.—P.

² ten thowsand fighting men in fere.
—Harl.

³ Harl. transposes lines 68 and 72.—F.

⁴ make fyve thowsand.—Harl.

⁵ came, qu.—P. sonne.—Harl.

⁶ doe.—Harl.

⁷ pickes.—Harl.

⁸ neuer backed was.—Harl.

⁹ He may make ten thowsand.—Harl.

¹⁰ ten thowsand egle feete.—Harl.
The Stanley badge was an eagle's foot.
See vol. i. p. 223, note ¹⁴.—F.

- then answered the Earle againe ;
 these were the words he sayd to BESSYE :
 “ & King Richard doe know this thing,¹
 96 wee were vndone, both thou and I ;
- “ In a ffire you ² must brenn,
 my liffe & my lands are ³ lost from mee ;
 therfore these words be in vaine :
 100 leaue & doe away, good BESSYE ! ”
- “ ffather stanley ! is there no grace ?
 noe Queene of England *that* I must bee ?
 then BESSYE stode studying ⁴ in *that* place
 104 with teares trickling ffrom her eyen :
- “ Now I know I must neuer be Queene !
 all this, man, is longe of ⁵ thee !
 but thinke on the dreadffull day
 108 when the great doame itt shalbe,
- “ when righteousnesse on the rainbowe shall sitt,
 & deeme ⁶ he shall both thee and mee,
 & all ffalshood away shall ffitt
 112 when all truth shall by him bee !
- “ I care not whether I hange or drowne,
 soe *that* my soule saued may bee ;
 make good answer as thou may,
 116 ffor all this, man, is longe of ⁷ thee.”
- with *that* shee tooke her head grace ⁸ downe,
 & threw itt downe ⁹ vpon the ground,
 both ¹⁰ pearles & many a *precyous* stone
 120 *that* were better then a 1000 ¹¹ pound.

Lord Derby
answers,
that if
Richard
knew of this

he'd burn
her, and
kill him.

She must
begone.

“ Is there no
grace ?
Am I never
to be
Queen ?

Stanley !
Think on
the day of
doom,

when Christ
shall judge
you.

Care not for
death,
so that you
can answer
God ! ”

Bessye
dashes her
head-jewels
on the
ground,

¹ then.—Harl.

² thou.—Harl.

³ land is.—Harl.

⁴ styding.—Harl.

⁵ on.—Harl.

⁶ And all denie.—Harl.

⁷ on.—Harl. Cp. Cotgrave's "*À toy n'a pas tenu*. Thou wert no hinderance . . . it was not *long* of thee.—F.

⁸ perhaps geare.—P. gere.—Harl. Yet "grace" may have been intended, as in the description of a peasant :

"Her bon grace was of wended straw."
—W.C.

⁹ did it throwe.—Harl.

¹⁰ with.—Harl.

¹¹ then fowertye.—Harl.

- her ffaxe ¹ *that* was as white as silke,
 shortly downe shee did itt rent ;
 with her hands as white as any milke,
 tears her hair, 124 her ffaire ffaxe thus hath shee ² spilt ³ ;
- her hands together can shee wringe,
 & with teares shee wipes her eye ;
 laments, and bids Lord Derby farewell. 128 “ welladay, BESSYE ! ” can shee sing,
 & parted with the Erle of darbye.
- “ ffare-well, man ! now am I gone !
 itt shall be long ere thou me see ! ”
 He turns pale, 132 the Erle stood still as any stone,
 & all blarked ⁴ was his blee.
- when he heard BESSYE make such mone,
 the teares fell downe from his eye,
 weeps, says “ Stay, Bessie !
 Here 136 “ abyde, BESSYE ! wee *part* not soc soone !
 heere is none now ⁵ but thee and I ;
- “ ffeld hath eyen, & wood hath eares,
 you cannott tell who standeth vs by ;
 I fear overhearers, 140 but wend forth, BESSYE, to thy Bower,
 & looke you doe as I bidd yee ⁶ :
- “ put away thy maydens bright,
that noe person doth vs see ⁷ ;
 but at 9 to-night, I’ll be in your bower 144 for att nine of the clocke within this night,
 in thy bower will I be with thee ;

¹ ffaxe, hair, A.-S. *fear*, idem.—P.² he.—Harl.³ ? splent (cf. splinter).—Dyce.⁴ blencked.—Harl. blanked—his blee, vide infra, Page 470 [of MS. l. 412 here]:

i. e. his Complexion turned pale.—P.

⁵ I wene here is noe moe.—Harl.⁶ the.—Harl.⁷ there with us bee.—Harl.

- " then of this matter wee will talke ¹ more,
 when there is no moe but you ² and I ;
 A charcole [fire] ³ att my desire,
 148 *that* no smoke come in our eye ; ⁴
- " Peeces ⁵ of wine many a one,
 & diuers spices be therbye,
 pen, Inke, paper, looke thou want none,
 152 but haue all things ffull readye."
- BESSIYE made her busines, & forth is gone,
 & tooke her leaue att the Erle of DARBYE,
 & put away her maydens anon,
 156 no man nor mayd ⁶ was therby ;
- A charcole fire was ready bowne,—
 there cane no smoke within his eye,—
 peeces of wine many a one,
 160 & diuers spices lay ⁷ therby,
- Pen, Inke, & paper, shee ⁸ wanted none, [page 467] pen and
 & ⁹ hadd all things there ffull readye, paper,
 & sett her selfe vpon a stone
 164 without ¹⁰ any companye.
- shee tooke a booke in her hande,
 & ¹¹ did read of *prophecye*,
 how shee shold bee Queene of ¹² England,
 168 but many a guiltesse man first must dye ;

¹ carpe.—Harl.² thou.—Harl.³ fire, vide infra.—P.⁴ With no chimney in the room, the wood smoke would make their eyes smart. See Pref. to *Babees Book*, p. lxiv.—F.⁵ cups. See 'a peece of wine,' p. 333,l. 306 below, and l. 159 ; also *Babees Book*, p. 325, l. 792.—F.⁶ mayden was there nye.—Harl.⁷ dyvers spices did lye.—Harl.⁸ there.—Harl.⁹ shee.—Harl.¹⁰ withouten.—Harl.¹¹ and there.—Harl. ¹² in.—Harl.

- & as shee read ffurther,¹ shee wept.
 with² *that* came the Erle of Darbye ;
 att nine of the clocke att³ night
 172 to bessyes bower Cometh hee.
- till Lord
 Derby comes
 at 9 at
 night.
- Shee barred the dore aboue and vnder,
that no man shold come them nye⁴ ;
 shee sett him on [a] seate [soe]⁵ rich,
 176 & on another shee sett her by ;
- and gives
 him wine
 and spice.
- shee gaue him wine, shee gaue him spice,
 sais,⁶ “blend in, ffather, & drinke to me.”
 the fire was hott, the spice itt bote,
 180 the wine itt wrought⁷ wonderffullye.
- It works,
- then kind⁸ in heat, god wott,
 then weeped the noble⁹ Erle of Darbye :
 “aske now, BESSYE then,¹⁰ what thou wilt,
 184 & thy boone granted itt¹¹ shalbee.”
- and he
 promises
 her what-
 ever she
 asks.
- “Nothing,” said BESSYE, “I wold haue,
 neither of gold nor yett of fee,
 but ffaire Erle Richmond, soe god me saue,
 188 *that* hath lyen soe long beyond the sea.”
- She wants
 only her
 Richmond.
- Lord Derby
 says he'd
 grant her
 request if he
 had a clerk
 he could
 trust to
 write for
 him.
- “Alas, Bessye! *that*¹² noble Lord
 & thy boone, fforsooth, grant wold I thee ;
 but there is no clarke *that* I dare¹³ trust
 192 this night to write ffor thee and mee,

¹ faster.—Harl.² And with.—Harl.³ within the.—Harl.⁴ nee.—Harl.⁵ a seate soe.—Harl.⁶ Said.—Harl.⁷ wroughte.—Harl.⁸ full kynde.—Harl.⁹ waxed the oulde.—Harl.¹⁰ Harl. omits *then*.—F.¹¹ And nowe thy boune graunted.—Harl.¹² said that.—P. said that.—Harl.¹³ doe.—Harl.

- “because our matter is soe hye,
lest any man wold vs bewray.”
- BESSYE said, “ffather, itt shall not neede ;
96 I am a clarke ffull good, I say.” Bessye says
she'll be
clerk,
- shee drew a paper vpon her knee,
pen and Inke shee had full readye,
hands white & ffingars long ;
200 shee dressed her to write¹ speedylye. and gets her
paper, &c.
ready.
- “ffather Stanley, now let me see,
ffor euery word write shall I.”
- “BESSYE, make a letter to the Holt
204 there² my brother Sir William doth Lye ; Lord Derby
dictates a
letter to Sir
William
Stanley,
- “bidd him bring 7 sad yeomen,
all in greene clothes lett them bee,
& change his Inn in euery towne
208 where before hee was wont to Lye ; telling him
to come to
him
- “& lett his fface be towards the benche,³
lest any man shold him espye ;
& by the 3^d. day of May by May 3.
- 212 that he come and speake with mee.
- “Commend me to my sonne George,
the Lord strange, where he doth lye,
& bidd him bring 7 sadd yeomen ;
216 all in greene clothes lett them bee, He dictates
another
letter to his
son George,
bidding him
also come
- “& lett himselfe be in the same suite,
& change⁴ his Inn in euery towne,
& lett his backe be ffroe the benche,
220 Lest any man shold him knowne ;

¹ wryte full.—Harl.² whereas.—Harl.³ ? meaning.—F.⁴ chaunging.—Harl.

- by May 3. " & by the 3^d day of May
bidd him come & speake with mee.
- Another to
his son
Edward, 224 Commend me to Edward my sonne,
the warden ¹ & hee togetherr bee,
- bidding him
to come by 228 "& bidd them bring 7 sadd yeomen,
& all in greene lett them bee,
changing their Inn in euery towne
where before ² they were wont to Lye ;
- May 3. 232 "lett their backes be ffrom the bench,
lest any man shold them see ;
& by the 3^d day of May
bidd them come & speake with mee.
- Another to
Sir J.
Savage and
Sir G.
Talbot, 236 Comend me to Sir Iohn Sauage
& Sir Gilbert Talbott in the north cuntrye,
& [let] either of them [bring] ³ 7 sad yeomen,
and all in greene lett them bee,
- bidding
them to
come by
May 3. 240 "Changing their Inn in euery towne [page 486]
before where they were wont to bee ;
& by the 3^d day of May
lett ⁴ them come & speake with me."
- Lord Derby
seals the
letters, 244 BESSYE writeth, the Lord he sealet ;
" ffather Stanley, what will yee more ? "
" alas ! " sayd *that* royall Lord,
" all our worke is ⁵ fforlore !
- but then he
has no
messenger
that he can
trust. 248 " ffor there is noe messenger *that* ⁶ wee may trust
to bring the tydings to the north cuntrye,
⁷ lest any man shold vs betraye,
⁷ because our matter is soe hye."

¹ See line 76 above.—F.² Before where.—Harl.³ byd them brynge eyther of them.
—Harl.⁴ byd.—Harl.⁵ whom.—Harl.⁶ yt is.—Harl.
⁷ The Folio transposes these two lines.
Harl. has them as here printed.—F.

- “Humphrey Bretton,¹” said litle Bessye,
 “he hath beene true to my father & mee,
 hee shall haue the writting² in hand,
 252 & bring them into the North cuntrye.
- “goe to thy bedd, ffather, & sleepe,
 & I shall worke³ ffor thee & mee,
 to-Morrow by rising of the sunn
 256 Humphrey Bretton shall be with thee.”
- shee brought the Lord to⁴ his bedd,
 all *that* night where he shold Lye;
 & BESSYE worketh⁵ all the night;
 260 there came no sleepe in her eye.

Bessye says
Humphrey
Bretton
will take
the letters.

She takes
Lord Derby
to bed,

[Part II.]⁶

[How Humphrey Bretton, for the Princess Elizabeth's sake, carries the Letters
 of Lord Derby to his Adherents.]

- In the morninge when the day can spring,
 vp riseth BESSYE in *that* stower,
 to Humphrey Bretton gone is shee⁷;
 264 but when shee came to Humphreys bower,
- with a small voice called shee.
 Humphrey answered *that* Lady bright,
 & saith, “lady, who are yee
 268 *that* calleth on me ere⁸ itt be light?”
- “I am *King* Edwards daughter,
 the countesse cleere, young BESSYE:
 in all the hast thou⁹ can,
 272 thou must come speake with the Erle of Darbye.”

and at day-
spring

goes to
Humphrey

and calls
him.

He asks who
it is.

“King
Edward's
daughter,
Lady Cleere,
come to
Lord Derby.”

¹ Breerton.—Harl. & so throughout.

² writynges.—Harl.

³ wake.—Harl.

⁴ unto.—Harl.

⁵ waketh.—Harl.

⁶ The 2^d P^{te} Query.—P.

⁷ she ys.—Harl.

⁸ yer.—Harl. ⁹ that thou.—Harl.

- Humphrey
goes with
her
- Humphrey cast vpon [him]¹ a gowne,
a paire of slippers on² his ffeete.
for[th] of [his] Chamber³ then he came,
276 & went⁴ with *that* Lady sweet.
- to Lord
Derby,
- shee brought him to the bed side
where they *Lord* lay in bed to sleepe.
when they⁵ Erle did Humphrey see,
280 full tenderlye can hee⁶ weepe,
- & said, "my loue, my trust, my liffe, my Land,
all this, Humphrey, doth Lye in thee!
thou may make, & thou may marr,
284 thou may vndoe BESSYE & mee!
- who gives
him the 6
letters.
- "take sixe letters in thy hand,⁷
& bring them into the north countrye;
they be written on they⁸ backside,
288 where they letterrs deliuered shold⁹ bee."
- he receiued the letterrs sixe;
into the west wend¹⁰ wold hee.
- Bessye
- 292 then meeteth him *that* Ladye bright,
she said, "abide, Humphray, & speake with mee.
- "a poore reward I shall thee giue,
itt shall be but pounds three;
if I be Queene, & may liue,
296 better rewarded shalt thou bee.
- promises to
reward him
when she's
Queen,
- "A litle witt god hath sent mee:
when thou rydest into the west,
I pray thee take no companye
300 but such as shall be of the best,
- and tells
him to avoid
bad
company,

¹ him.—Harl.² upon.—Harl.³ forth of his Chamb^r.—P. forthe of
his chamber.—Harl.⁴ went forthe.—Harl.⁵ the.—Harl.⁶ then can.—Harl.⁷ MS. hamd.—F. thyne hande.—
Harl.⁸ the.—Harl.⁹ levered shall.—Harl.¹⁰ wynde.—Harl.

- "sitt not too long drinking thy¹ wine,
 lest in heat² thou be too merrrye ;
 such words you³ may cast out then,
 304 to-morrow⁴ fforthought⁵ itt⁶ may bee."
- Humphray of⁷ BESSIYE received noble[s] nine⁸ ;
 with a peece of wine shee cold him assay ;
 hee tooke leaue of *that* Ladye sheene,
 308 & straight to the holt he took h[i]s⁹ way.
- when Sir william stanley did him see,
 he said to him with words free,
 "Humphrey Brettom, what maketh thee¹⁰ heere,
 312 *that* hither dost ryde soe hastilye ?
- "How [fareth]¹¹ *that* Lord, my brother deare,
 That lately was made the Erle of darby, [page 469]
 is he dead without letting,
 316 or with *King* Richard his counsell¹² is hee ?
- "Or he be suspected without¹³ lett,
 or taken into the tower so hye,
 London gates shall tremble & quake
 320 but my brother borrowed shall bee !
- "tell me, Humphrey, withouten lett,
that rydest hither¹⁴ soe hastilye."
 "breake *that* letter,"¹⁵ said Humphrey then ;
 324 "behold then, and you shall see."¹⁶
- and not sit
 too long
 over his
 wine.
- She gives
 him nine
 nobles,
 and a cup of
 wine,
 and he rides
 off to
- Sir W.
 Stanley,
- who asks
 after
 Lord Derby.
- If he is put
 in the Tower,
 London
 gates
 shall tremble
 for it.
- Humphrey
 hands him
 the Earl's
 letter.

¹ the.—Harl.² harte.—Harl.³ thou.—Harl.⁴ the other morrowe.—Harl.⁵ for thought.—P. repented of.—F.⁶ Harl. omits *itt*.—F.⁷ at.—Harl.⁸ rec^d nobles nine.—P. nowbles.—Harl.⁹ the.—Harl.¹⁰ thou.—Harl.¹¹ fareth.—Harl. How doth that.—P.¹² what consayte.—Harl.¹³ withouten.—Harl.¹⁴ hither rydeth.—Harl.¹⁵ breake letter.—Harl.¹⁶ Behoulde, sir, and yee may see.—Harl.

- Sir William
bites his
stick,
- when the *Knicht* Looked the Letter ¹ on,
he stood still in a studdinge :
answer to Humphrey gaue he none,
328 but still hee gnew ² on his staffe end.
- gives
Humphrey
100s.,
- he plucket the letter in peeces three,
into the water he cold itt fflinge ³ :
332 “haue heere, Humphrey,” said the *Knicht*,
“I will giue thee a 100 shillinge ;
- “thou shalt not tarry heere all night,
straight to Latham ryd shall yee.”
336 “alas,” sais Humphrey, “I may not ryde,
my horsse is tyred, as ye may see ;
- tells him to
go to sleep,
- 340 “I came ffrom London in this tyde,
there came no sleepe within mine eye.”
“Lay thee downe, Humphrey,” he said, “& sleepe
well the space of houres three ;
- and he'll lend
him a fresh
horse.
- 344 “a ffresh horsse I thee behett,
shall bring [thee] through the north countrye.”
⁴ Humphray slept but howers 2,
but on his Iourney well thought hee ;
- Humphrey
rests two
hours,
- a ffresh horsse was brought to him
to bring him through the west countrye.
he tooke his leaue at the *Knicht*,
- rides to
Latham,
- 348 & straight to Latham rydeth hee,
& att 9 of Clocke in ⁵ the night,
att Latham gates ⁶ knocketh hee.
- and reaches
it at nine.
- The porter
- 352 the Porter ariseth ⁷ anon-right,
& answerd ⁸ Humphray with words ffree,

¹ the latter looked.—Harl.

² gneve.—Harl. gnawed.—F. •

³ slynge.—Harl.

⁴ The Folio wrongly transposes lines
343 & 347, 344 & 348. Harl. has them

right, as printed here.—F.

⁵ At nyne of the clocke within.—Harl.

⁶ yates.—Harl.

⁷ ryseth.—Harl.

⁸ answereth.—Harl.

“ In good ffaith, itt is tó Late
to call on me this time of the night.”

“ I pray the, porter, open the gate,
356 & lett me in anon-right ;

“ with the *Lord* strange I must speake,
from his ffather, the Erle of Darbye.”

the porter opened vp the gates, lets him in,
360 & in came his horsse and hee.

the best wine *that* was therin,
to Humphrey Bretton fforth brought hee,
with torches burning in *that* tyde,

364 & other lights *that* he might see,

& brought him to ¹ the bed syde
wheras the *Lord* strange Lay.

the *Lord* he mused in *that* tyde,
368 & sayd, “ Humphrey, what hast thou to say ?

and takes
him to Lord
Strange in
bed.

“ how ffareth my ffather, *that* noble *Lord* ?
in all England he hath no peere.²”

Humphrey tooke a letter in his hand,
372 & said, “ behold & yee may see.³”

Humphrey
gives him
his letter,

when they *Lord* strange looked the letter vpon,
the teares trickled downe his eye ;

he sayd, “ wee must vnder a cloude,⁴
376 for wee may ⁵ neuer trusted bee ;
wee may sigh ⁶ & make great moane ;
this world is not as itt shold bee.

¹ downe unto.—Harl.
² no peere hath he (to rhyme with
what follows).—Dyce.
³ here.—Harl.

⁴ clodde.—Harl.
⁵ muste.—Harl.
⁶ sike.—Harl.

- and he
promises
380 “ comend me to my father deere,
his daylye blessing he wold ¹ giue me ;
for & I liue another yeere,
this appontment keepe will I.”
- Humphrey
rides on
to Man-
chester,
384 he receined gold of my *Lord* Strange,
& straight to Manchester rydeth hee ;
And when hee came to Manchester,
Itt was prime of the day ; [page 470
he was ware of the warden & Edward Stanley,
sees Sir
Edward
Stanley and
his brother,
388 together their Mattins ffor to say.
- then ² one brother said to the other,
“ behold, brother, & you may see,
heere cometh Humphrey Bretton,
392 some hastye tydings ³ bringheth hee.”
- and gives
them their
letters.
They reioice.
396 he betooke them either a letter,⁴
& bidd them looke & behold ;
& read they did these *letterrs* readylye,⁵
& vp they lope, & laught aloude,
- Buckingham
shall be
revenged,
400 And saith,⁶ “ ffaire ffall *our* ffather *that* noble Lord !
to stirre and rise beginneth hee ;
Buckinghams blood shall be roken,⁷
that was beheaded ⁸ att Salsburye.
- and Bessy’s
love brought
over the sea.
404 “ ffaire ffall the Countesse, the *Kings* daughter,
that good ⁹ Councell giue cold shee ;
wee trust in god ffull ¹⁰ of might
to bring her Lord ouer the sea !

¹ wolde.—Harl.² The.—Harl.⁶ said.—Harl.³ thythandes.—Harl.⁷ wroken.—Harl. revenged.—F.⁴ He tooke eyther a letter in their
handes.—Harl.⁸ headed.—Harl.⁵ radlye.—Harl.⁹ such.—Harl.¹⁰ soe full.—Harl.

- "haue heere, Humphray, of either 40^s ;
 better rewarded shall thou bee."
 he tooke the gold att their hand ;
 408 to ¹ Sir Iohn Sauage rydeth hee,
 & hee tooke him a letter in ² hand,
 bade ³ him " behold, read, and see."
 & ⁴ when the *Knigh*t the Letter hadd,
 412 all blanked ⁵ was his blee :
 " womens witt is wonder to heare !
 my vnckle is turned by *your* ⁶ Bessye !
 & wether itt turne to weale or woe,⁷
 416 att my vnckles biddinge will I bee.⁸
 " haue heere, Humphrey, 40^s :
 better rewarded may thou bee !
 to Sheffield Castle Looke thou ryde
 420 in all the hast *that* may bee."
 fforth then rydeth *that* gentle *Knigh*t ;
 Sir Gilbert Talbott ffindeth ⁹ hee ;
 hee tooke him a letter in his hand,
 424 & bidd him, " reade & yee may ¹⁰ see."
 when Sir Gilbert Talbott the *lett*re looked on,
 a loude laughter laughed hee :
 " ffaire ffall *that* Lord of hye ¹¹ renowne !
 428 to rise and stirr ¹² beginneth hee !
 " ffaire ffall Bessye, *that* Countesse cleere,
that such counsell giueth trulye !
 Comend me to my nephew deare,
 432 the young Erle of Shrewsbyrye,

Humphrey
goes then to
Sir John
Savage,

and he
swears to
back
his uncle.

Sir Gilbert
Talbot's
letter is not
delivered,

and he vows

¹ and to.—Harl.

² in his.—Harl.

³ and bad.—Harl.

⁴ Harl. has no *f*.—F.

⁵ then all blencked.—Harl.

⁶ you.—Harl.

⁷ wayle.—Harl.

⁸ I will.—Harl.

⁹ then fyndeth.—Harl.

¹⁰ he mighte.—Harl.

¹¹ riche.—Harl.

¹² stirre and ryse nowe.—Harl.

that he'll
set Lord
Strange free,

“ bidd him neuer dread for no death,
In London Towre if hee bee ;
I shall make London tremble & quake
436 but my nephew borrowed shalbee !

bring
Richmond
to England,

“ Comend me to *that* Countesse cleere,
King Edwards daughter, young Bessye ;
tell her, I trust in god *that* hath no peere
441 to bring her loue ouer the sea.

“ Comend me to *that* Lord without ¹ dread
that latelye was made Erle ² of darbye ;
& ³ euery haire of my head
444 for a man counted might bee,

and liue and
die with
Lord Derby.

“ with *that* Lord withouten dread,
with him will I liue and dye !
haue heere, Humphray, pounds three ;
448 better rewarded may thou bee !

“ Straight to London looke thou ryde
in all the hast *that* may bee ;
Comend mee to the Kings daughter,⁴ young Bessye,
452 King Edwards daughter forssooth is shee,

Humphrey
rides back to
London,

“ In all this Land shee hath no peere.”
he ⁵ taketh his leaue att the *Kn*ight,
& straight to London rydeth hee.
456 & when he came to London right

and finds
Lord Derby
with King
Richard.

⁶ Itt was but a litle before eueni[n]ge,
there was he ware, walking in a garden greene,
[of] both the Erle & Richard our Kinge.
460 when the Erle had Humphrey see[ne,⁷] [page 471]

¹ withouten.—Harl.

² the Earle.—Harl.

³ and.—Harl.

⁴ to the Cowntas.—Harl.

⁵ thus he.—Harl.

⁶ The 3^d Parte. Query.—P.

⁷ seen.—P.

- he gaue him a priuie twinke¹ with his eye.
 then Humphrey came before the *King* soe ffree,
 & downe he ffalleth vpon his knee.
 464 "welcome, Humphray!" said the Erle of Darbye:
 "where hast thou beene, Humphray?" said the Erle,
 "ffor I haue mist thee weekes three."
 "I haue beene in the west, my *Lord*,
 468 where I was borne and bredd trulyc,
 "ffor to sport me & to play
 amonge my ffreinds ffarr & nye."
 "tell me, Humphrey," said the Erle,
 472 "how ffareth all² *that* Countrye?
³ tell me, Humphray, I thee pray,
 how ffareth *King* Richards Comunaltye?"
 "of all Countryes, I dare well say,
 476 they beene the fflower⁴ of archerye,
 ffor they will be trusty with their bowes,
 for⁵ they will ffight & neuer ffee."
 when *King* Richard heard Humphray soe say,
 480 in his hart hee was full merye;
 hee⁶ with his Cappe *that* was soe deere
 thanked him⁷ full curteouslye,
 & said, "ffather Stanley, thou art to mee neere,⁸
 484 you are cheeffe of *your* Comynaltye,
 "halfe of England shalbe thine,
 & equally devided betweene thee & mee;
 I am thine, & thou art mine,
 488 & for⁹ 2 ffellowes will wee bee.

Derby
winks
at him,

and asks
where he has
been.

"Amusing
myself
among my
friends."

"How are
King
Richard's
commons
there?"

"They are
the flower
of archery,
will fight,
and never
flee."

Richard
is glad,

and promises

Lord Derby
half
England,

¹ twyncke.—Harl the base of *twinkle*.—F.

² all in.—Harl.

³ The Folio wrongly puts lines 473-4 after line 478. Their position is altered here on the authority of the Harleian MS.—F.

⁴ cheefe.—Harl.

⁵ And.—Harl.

⁶ Harl. transfers *he* to the next line.—F.

⁷ that lorde.—H.

⁸ neere: for *neere*, with half the *n* left out.—F.

⁹ soe.—Harl.

for no one is
like him.

“ I swaere by Marry, maid ¹ mild,
I know none such vnder the skye !
whilst I am ² King & weare the Crowne,
492 I will be cheeffe of the poore ³ Comynaltye.

And he,
Richard, will
never tax
the com-
mons,

“ tax nay mise ⁴ I will make none,
in noe Cuntry ffarr nor neare ⁵ ;
ffor if by their goods I shold plucke them downe,
496 for me they will ffaight ⁶ ffull ffaintcouslye.

who are his
dearest
treasures.

“ There is no riches to me soe rich
as is the pore Comynaltye.” ⁷
when they had ended all their speche,
500 they tooke their leaue ffull gladlye,

The King
leaves them,

and they go
to Bessye's
bower.

& to his Bower the King is gone.
then the Erle and ⁸ Humphrey Bretton,
to Bessyes bower they ⁹ went anon,
504 & ffound Bessye there alone.

She kisses
Humphrey,

when Bessye did see Humphrey anon,
anon ¹⁰ shee kissed him times three,
saith, “ Humphray Bretton, welcome home !
508 how hast thou spedd in the west Cuntrye ? ”

Into a *parler* they went anon,
there was no more but hee & shee :

and prays
him to
tell her his
tidings,

“ Humphray, tell mee or hence I ¹¹ gone,
512 some tydings ¹² out of the west Countrye !

¹ mayden.—Harl. ² be.—Harl.

³ Harl. has no *poore*.—F.

⁴ Taske ne myse.—Harl. Tax ne
levies qu.—P. For *mise*, expence, dis-
bursement, money layed out, or the
laying out of money. Cotgrave.—F.

⁵ nye.—Dyce.

⁶ fight. qu.—P. woulde fyghte.—
Harl.

⁷ These sentiments may show who the
Ballad-writer's audience were, and that he

looked to please them rather than engage
their sympathy on Richmond's side.
Had his words represented the King's
real feelings, no doubt Richard would
have kept his crown.—F.

⁸ MS. of.—F. and.—P. and.—Harl.

⁹ *there* has been altered into *they* in
the MS.—F.

¹⁰ Harl. omits *Anon*.—F.

¹¹ I hence.—Harl.

¹² tythandes.—Harl.

- " If I shold send ffor yonder Prince
 to come ouer ffor the Loue of mee,
 and murthered amongst ¹ his ffoes to bee,
 516 alas, *that* were ffull great pittye !
- " fforsooth, *that* sight I wold not see
 for all the gold in Christentye !
 tell me, Humphray, I thee pray,
 520 how hast thou done in the west countrye."
- vnto Bessye anon he told
 how hee had sped in the west countrye,
 what was the answers of them hee ² had,
 524 & what rewards hee had trulye :
- " By the third day of May, Bessye," he sayd,
 " In London there will they bee ;
 thou shalt in England be a Queene,
 528 or else doubtlesse they will dye."

so that she
may not
mislead her
lover.

Humphrey
tells her

that on
May 3
her friends
will be in
London,
and she shall
be Queen.

[Part III.]

[How Lord Derby's friends come to London ; and how the Princess Elizabeth
sends Humphrey Bretton to her lover, Richmond.]

- thus they *providid* in ³ the winter time
 their counsell to ⁴ keepe all three.
 the Erle wrought by *prophecy*,
 532 he wold not abyde in London trulye,⁵ [page 472]
- but in the suburbs without the Cittye
 an old Inn Chosen hath hee,
 & drew an Eagle ⁶ vpon the entrye
 536 *that* the westerne men might know where to Lye.⁷

Lord Derby

withdraws
to an old Inn
in the
suburbs,

¹ by.—Harl. ² he of them.—Harl.
³ for.—Harl. ⁴ for to.—Harl.
⁵ The Earle woulde not in London
 abyde,
 for whye—he wroughte by prophesye.
 —Harl.

⁶ The Eagle's foot was the Badge of
 the Stanleys. Percy in vol. i. p. 223,
 note ¹⁴.—F.

⁷ myghte yt see.—Harl. A curious
 Instance of ancient Hospitality.—P.

and thither
on May 3
come

Sir William
Stanley,

Humphrey stood in a hye tower,
& looked into the west Countrye ;
Sir William Stanley & 7 in greene
540 came straight ryding¹ to the Citye.

when he was ware of the Eagle drawne,
he drew himselfe wonderous nye,
& bade his men goe into the towne,
544 & dranke² the wine and make merrye.

Lord
Strange,

Into the Inn where the Eagle did bee,
fforsooth shortlye is hee gone.
Humphray Looked into the west,
548 & saw the Lord strange & 7 come

ryding in greene into the Cittye.
when hee was ware of the Eagle³ drawen,
he drew himselfe wonderous nye,
552 & bade his men goe into the towne,

⁴ & spare no cost, & where they come
& ⁵ drinke the wine & make good cheere ;
& hee himselfe drew ffull nye
556 into the Inn where his ffather Lay.

Sir Edward
Stanley, and
his brother,

Humphrey looked more into the west ;
Six-teene⁶ in greene did hee see,
the warden & Sir Edward Stanley
560 came ryding both in companye.

¹ ryding streight into.—Harl.

² drynke.—Harl.

³ oulde eigne.—Harl.

⁴ This stanza is in the Harl. MS.

And drynke the wyne and make
good cheare,
and whereever they come, noe
coste to spare.

then to the inne where his father
laye,

he drewe hymselfe wunderous
neare.—F.

⁵ to.—F.

⁶ The form of the *x* changes here,
and in l. 582, &c. to the modern one.
—F.

there as the Eagle was drawn,
 the gentlemen drew itt nye,
 & bade their men goe into the towne,
 564 & drinke the wine & make merrye ;

& went into the same Inn
 there where their ffather Lay.¹
 yett Humphray beholdeth into the west,
 568 & looked towards the North cuntrye ;

he was ware of Sir Iohn sauage & Sir Gylbert
 Talbott
 came ryding both in companye.
 when they where ware of the Eagle drawn,
 572 then they drew themselues ffull ² nye,

Sir John
 Savage, and
 Sir Gilbert
 Talbot.

& bade their men goe into the towne,
 & drinke the wine & make merry ;
 & yode ³ themselues into the inne ⁴
 576 where the Erle and Bessye Lay.⁵

when all the Lords together mett,
 among them all was litle Bessye ;
 with goodlye words shee them grett,⁶
 580 & said, " Lords, will yee doe ffor mee ?

Bessye
 welcomes
 them all.

" what, will yee releuee yonder Prince
 that is exiled beyond the sea ? "
 the Erle of Darbye came fforth then ;
 584 these be ⁷ they words he said to Bessye :

Lord Derby
 says he'll

¹ where the earle their father lee.—Harl.

² wunderous.—Harl.

³ yode, i. e. went.—P. yende.—Harl.

⁴ MS. inne.—F.

⁵ lee.—Harl. *Fortè rythmi gratiâ,*
 Where lay the Earl & L^{dy} Bessye.—P.

⁶ i. e. greeted.—P. can them greete.
 —Harl.

⁷ were.—Harl.

- give her 40l.
and 20,000
men. 588 "ffourty Pound will I send,
Bessye, ffor the loue of thee ;
& 20000 Eagle ffeette,¹
a queene of England to make thee."
- Sir William
Stanley 592 Sir William stanley came fforth then ;
these were the words hee sayd to BESSYE :
"remember, Bessye, another time,²
who doth the best now ffor thee."
- 10,000 men. She shall be
Queen, or
he will die. 596 "10000 Cotes *that* beene red,
in an howers warning ready shalbee.
In England thou shall be a queene,
or else doubtesse I will dye."
- Sir John
Savage
will give
1000
marks. 600 Sir Iohn Sauage came fforth then ;
these were the words he said to Bessye :
"1000 marke³ ffor thy sake
I will send thy loue beyond the sea."
- Lord
Strange 604 the Lord strange Came fforth then ; [page 473]
these were the words he said to Bessye :
"a litle mony & ffew men
will bring thy loue ouer the sea ;
- advises that
they keep
their money
at home. 608 "Lett vs keepe our gold att home
for to wage our companye.
if wee itt send ouer the sea,⁴
wee put our gold in Ieopardye."
- Edward
Stanley
says 612 Edward Stanley came forth then ;
these were the words he sayd to Bessye :
"remember, BESSYE, another time,
he *that* doth now⁵ best ffor thee ;

¹ ? MS. ffeelte.—F. feete.—Harl.
perhaps *feete*.—P. Lord Derby's own
Badge.—F.

² MS. tume.—F.

³ ten thousand markes.—Harl.

⁴ foame.—Harl.

⁵ nowe dothe.—Harl.

- “ ffor there is no ¹ power *that* I haue,
 nor no gold to giue thee ;
 vnder ² my ffathers banner will I bee ³
 616 either ffor to liue or dye.”
- BESSYE came fforth before the *Lords* all,
 & vpon her knees then ffalleth shee ;
 “ 10000 pound I will send
 620 to my loue ouer ⁴ the sea.
- “ who shall be our messenger ⁵
 to bring the ⁶ gold ouer the sea ?
 Humphrey Bretton,” said BESSYE ⁷ ;
 624 “ I know none soe good as hee.”
- “ alas !” sayd Humphrey, “ I dare not take in hand
 to carry the gold ouer the sea ;
 they Galley shipps beene ⁸ soe stronge,
 628 they will me neigh wonderous nighe,
- “ they will me robb, they will me drowne,
 they will take they ⁹ gold ffrom mee.”
 “ hold thy peace, Humphrey,” sayd litle BESSYE,
 632 “ thou shalt itt carry without ¹⁰ Ieopardye ;
- “ thou shalt haue no baskett nor no male ;
 no buchett ¹¹ nor sacke-cloth ¹² shall goe with thee ;
 three Mules *that* be stiffe & stronge,
 636 loded with gold shall they bee ;
 with saddles side ¹³ skirted, I doe thee tell,
 wherin the gold sowed ¹⁴ shalbe.
- he has
 neither
 men nor
 money,
 but he'll
 fight for
 Bessye.
- She thanks
 them all.
- She'll send
 Richmond
 10,000*l.*
- by
 Humphrey
 Bretton.
- He tries to
 excuse
 himself
 from taking
 it,
- but she tells
 him to be
 quiet ; he
 shall take it
- in the saddle-
 flaps of
 three mules.

¹ nowe noe.—Harl.² but under.—Harl.³ fyghte.—Harl.⁴ even to my love beyonde.—Harl.⁵ messenger then.—Harl.⁶ our.—Harl.⁷ litill Bessie.—Harl.⁸ the be.—Harl.⁹ the.—Harl.¹⁰ out of.—Harl.¹¹ Budget.—P. bothed.—Halliwell.¹² *for boched* (t. i. budget).—Harl.¹³ clothe sacke.—Harl.¹⁴ wide, or long.—F.¹⁵ sewed.—Harl.

“ if any man sayes, ‘ who ¹ is the shipp
 640 *that* sayleth fforth vpon the sea ?’
 Say itt is the *Lord Liles* ;
 in England & ffrance welbeloued is hee.”

Lord Derby
 says he
 644 then came fforthe the Erle of Darbye ;
 these were the words he sayd to BESSYE ;
 he said : “ BESSYE, thou art to blame
 to poynt any shipp vpon the sea !

has a ship
 in which
 Humphrey
 shall go :
 no alien will
 648 “ I haue a good shipp of my owne
 shall carry *Humphrey* & my mules three ;
 an Eagle shalbe drawen vpon the top mast,²
that the out allyants ³ may itt see.

touch the
 Eagle.
 652 “ there is no ffreake in all ffrance
that shipp *that* dare come nye.⁴
 if any man aske whose is the shipp,
 say ‘ itt is the Erle ⁵ of Darbyes.’ ”

Humphrey
 sails from
 Hippon with
 the money,
 656 *HUMPHREY* tooke the Mules three ;
 into the west wind taketh hee ;
 att Hippon ⁶ withouten doubt
 there shipping taketh hee ;
 with a ffaire ⁷ wind & a Coole
 660 thus he sayleth vpon the sea

¹ whoes.—Harl.

² maste toppe.—Harl.

³ out-alliens.—P. the Italyants.—
 Harl.

⁴ that the egle darre once come nee.
 —Harl.

⁵ Earles.—Harl.

⁶ Hyrpon.—Harl.

⁷ softe.—Harl.

[Part IV.]

[How Humphrey Bretton takes money from the Princess Elizabeth to Richmond;
and who are on Richmond's side.]

4^d parte { To BIGERAM ¹ abbey, where the English *Prince* and reaches
was. Bigeram
the porter was an Englishman, Abbey,
well he knew HUMPHREY Breitton, where
664 & ffast to him can he ² gone. Richmond is.

Humphrey knocked att the gate priuilye, He knocks
& these words he spake surelye, at the gate ;
" I pray thee, Porter, open the gate
668 & receiue me & my ³ mules three,
I shall thee giue withouten lett [page 474]
ready ⁴ gold to thy meede. ⁵ "

" I will none of thy gold," the Porter said, the porter
672 " nor yett, HUMPHREY, none of thy fee ;
but I will open the gates wyde,
& receiue thy mules and thee, ⁶

" ffor a Cheshire man borne am I, is a Cheshire
676 ffrom the Malpas ⁷ but miles three." man,
the porter opened the gates soone,
& receiued him & the Mules three ; and lets him
in,

the best wine readilye ⁸ then
680 to HUMPHREY Bretton giueth hee.
" alas !" sayd Humphrey, " how shall I doe ?
for I am stead ⁹ in a strange cuntrye ;

¹ Begeram.—Harl.

² gan he.—P. Read ' gone he can.'—
Dyce.

³ and.—Harl.

⁴ red.—Harl.

⁵ Read ' fee.'—Dyce.

⁶ the and thy mules three.—Harl.

⁷ A town in Cheshire.—F.

⁸ radlye.—Harl.

⁹ stad.—Harl.

- " the Prince of England ¹ I do not know ;
 684 before I did him neuer see."
 and shows " I shall thee teach," said the Porter then,
 him " the Prince of England to know trulye.
- Richmond " loe, where he shooteth att the butts,
 shooting. 688 & with him are *Lords* three ;
 he weareth a gowne of veluett blacke,
 & itt is coted aboue his knee ;
 with long visage & pale ;
 He may 692 therby the Prince know may yee ;
 know the
 Earl by his
 long pale
 face,
- and a wart " a priuye wart, withouten lett,
 above his ² a litle aboue the chin ;
 chin. his face h[i]s white, the wart is red,
 696 therby you ³ may him ken."
- Humphrey now ffrom the Porter is he gone ;
 with him hee tooke the Mules ³ :
 goes to to Erle Richmand he went anon
 Richmond, 700 where the other *Lords* bee.⁴
- when ⁵ he came before the Prince,
 lowlye hee kneeled vpon his knee ;
 and gives him Bessye's 704 he deliuered ⁶ the *lettre that* Bessye sent,
 letter,
 her money, & soe he did the mules three,
- and her [&] a rich ring with a stone.
 ring. there the prince glad was hee ;
 Richmond hee tooke the ring att *Humphrey* then,
 kisses the 708 & kissed itt times 3.
 ring,

¹ There is a tag at the end of this word
 in the MS. like an *s*.—F.

² he hathe.—Harl.

³ full well yee.—Harl.

⁴ dyd bee.—Harl.

⁵ And when.—Harl.

⁶ And delivered hym.—Harl.

- HUMphrey kneeled still as any stone,
assuredlye as I tell to thee¹;
- 712 HUMphrey of the Prince word gatt none,
therefore² in his hart hee was not merrye. but does not
speak to
Humphrey,
- HUMphrey standeth vpp then anon ;
to the prince these words said hee,
“ why standeth³ thou soe still in this stead,
716 & no answer does⁴ giue mee ? who there-
upon
gets up,
- “ I am come ffrom the stanleys bold,
King of England to make thee,
& a ffaire Lady to thy fferre,⁵
720 there is none such in Christentye ; tells him he
comes from
the Stanleys
to make him
King and
give him a
Queen.
- “ shee is Countesse,⁶ a Kings daughter,
the name of her is⁷ BESSYE,
a louelye Lady to looke vpon,
724 & well shee can worke by profecye.
- “ I may be called a lewd⁸ messenger,
for answer of thee I can gett none ;
I may sayle hence with a heauy heart ;
728 what shall I say when I come home⁹ ? ” What
answer is he
to give
them ?
- the prince tooke the Lord Lisle,
& the Erle of Oxford was him by¹⁰ ;
they Lord fferres wold him not beguile ;
732 to¹¹ counsell thé goeth all 3. Richmond
consults his
friends,
- when they had their counsell tane,
to HUMphrey Bretton turneth hee,
“ answer, HUMphrey, I can giue none
736 for¹² the space of weekes 3. and says
he can give
no answer
for three
weeks.
- ¹ tell thee.—Harl.
² i. e. on that account.—P.
³ standest.—Harl.
⁴ thou doest.—Harl.
⁵ fere.—P.
⁶ a cowntas.—Harl.
⁷ it is.—Harl.
⁸ lowte.—Harl.
⁹ howme.—Harl.
¹⁰ nee.—Harl.
¹¹ to a.—Harl.
¹² not for.—Harl.

- He rips up
the mules'
saddles, 740
- takes out the
money, 744
- and goes to
Paris
to buy arms. 748
- He asks the
King of
France for
help
and ships. 752
- The King
refuses
them. 760
- " when 3 weekes are come & gone,
Then an answer I will ¹ giue thee." [page 475]
- the mules into a stable are tane ;
the saddle skirtts then rippeth hee ;
- therin he ffindeth gold great plentye
for to wage a companye.²
he caused the houshold to make him cheare ;
" in ³ my stead lett him bee."
- Erly in the morning, as soone as itt was day,⁴
with him he tooke the Lords three,
& straight to paris he tooke the way,
there armes to make readye.⁵
- to the *King* of ffrance wendeth hee,⁶
of men and mony he doth him pray,
⁷ that he wold please to Lend him shippes,
& ffor to bring him ouer the sea : ⁷
- " the Stanleys stout ffor me haue sent,
King of England ffor to make mee,
& if euer I weare the crowne,
well quitt the *King* of ffrance shalbe."
- then answereth the *King* of ffrance,
& shortlye answereth,⁸ " by St. Iohn,
⁹ no shippes to bring him ouer the seas,
men nor money bringeth he none ! " ⁹

¹ shall.—Harl.² Only half the *n* in the MS.—F.³ And saith in.—Harl.⁴ Yerlye on the other mornyng As-
sonne as yt was breake of daye.—Harl.⁵ A herotte of armes they readye
made.—Harl.⁶ then wyndeth.—Harl.⁷⁻⁷ And shippes to brynge hym over
the seae.—Harl.⁸ sweareth shortlye.—Harl.⁹⁻⁹ men nor money getteth he none,
nor shippes to brynge hym over the
foame.—Harl.

- thus the Prince his answer hath tane.
 both the Prince & Lords gay ¹
 to BIGGERAM abbey rydeth hee,
 764 wheras ² HUMphrey Bretton Lay. Richmond
 rides back
 to
- “haue heere HUMphrey a 100 ³ markes ;
 better rewarded shalt thou bee ;
 comend me to Bessye, *that* Countesse cleere,—
 768 & yett I did neuer her see,— gives him
 100 marks,
 and bids him
 tell Bessye
- “I trust in god shee shall be my Queene,
 for her I will trauell the sea.
 comend me to my ffather stanley,—
 772 my owne mother marryed hath hee,— he will come
 to her ;
- “bring him here a loue *lettre*,
 & another to litle Bessye ;
 tell her I trust in the Lord of might
 776 *that* my Queene shee shalbee.
- “Comend me to Sir william stanley,
that noble Knight in the west cuntrye ;
 tell him, about Micchallmasse
 780 I trust in god in England to bee. tell Sir
 William
 Stanley
 that about
 Michaelmas
 he will land
- “att Mylford hauen I will come in,
 with all the power *that* I can bringe ; ⁴
 the ffirst towne *that* I may win ⁵
 784 shalbe the towne of shrewsburye. at Milford
 Haven,
 and take
 Shrewsbury.
- “pray Sir william, *that* noble Knight,
that night *that* hee ⁶ wold looke on mee.
 comend me to Sir Gilbert Talbott *that* is soe wight ;
 788 he lyeth still in the north cuntrye.”

¹ and the English Lordes gaye.—Harl.² there as.—Harl.³ thousand.—Harl.⁴ powers I brynge with me.—Harl.⁵ myn.—Harl.⁶ nyghte he.—Harl.

Humphrey
will none of
Richmond's
gold :
he is his.

" I will none of thy gold, Sir Prince,
nor yett none ¹ of thy fee ;
if euery haire of my head were a man,
792 with you, Sir Prince, *that they shold* ² bee."

Humphrey

returns to
Lord Derby,

thus HUMphrey his leaue hath tane,
& fforth hee sayleth vpon the seas ;
straight to London can he ryde,
796 there as the Erle and Bessye Lyes.

who then
goes
westward,

he tooke them either a *lettre* in hand,
& bade them reade ³ and see.
the Erle tooke leaue of Richard the King,
800 & into the west rydeth hee.

leaving
Bessye at
Leicester.

& leaueth Bessye att Leicecster,
& bade her lye there in ⁴ priuitye :
" ffor if King Richard knew thee there,
804 in a ffyer brent must thou bee."

He sends
Lord
Strange to
King
Richard.

straight to Latham is he gone,
Where the Lord strange he did ⁵ Lye, [page 476]
& sent the Lord strange to London
808 to keepe King Richard ⁶ companye.

On
Richmond's
side are
Sir William
Stanley,
with 10,000
men ;

then to ⁷ Sir william stanley, with ⁷ 10000 cotes
in an howers warning readye to bee :
they were all as red as ⁸ blood,
812 there they harts head ⁹ is sett full hye.

¹ I wyll non.—Harl.

² the, sir prynee, shoulde they.—Harl.

³ looke, reade.—Harl.

⁴ lye in.—Harl.

⁵ Strange dyd.—Harl.

⁶ keepe Richard.—Harl.

⁷ No then to, or with, in Harl.—F.

⁸ were read as any.—Harl.

⁹ The Stanley arms (Lancashire and Earl of Derby) are, argent, on a bend azure, *three bucks' heads cabossed or.* Berry's *Encyc. Herald.* The red cotes must have been worn by the Stanley followers.—F.

	Sir Gilbert Talbott, 10000 doggs ¹ in an howers warning readye to be.	Sir Gilbert Talbot, with 10,000 ;
816	Sir Iohn Sauage, 1500 white hoods, ² ffor they will flight & neuer flee.	Sir John Savage, with 1500 ;
	Sir Edward Stanley, 300 men ; there were no better in Christentye.	Sir Edward Stanley, with 500 ;
820	Rice ³ apthomas, a <i>Knicht</i> of wales, 800 ⁴ spere-men brought hee.	Rice ap Thomas, with 800.

[Part V.]

[How Richmond lands in England, and marches to Bosworth.]

	Sir William stanley, att the holt hee lyes, & looked ouer his head soe hye ; “ which way standeth the wind ? ” ⁵ he sayes ;	Sir William Stanley says
824	“ if there be ⁶ any man can tell mee.”	
5 ^d parte	<p>“ The wind itt standeth south west,” soe ⁷ sayd a <i>Knicht</i> that stood him ⁸ by. “ this night, yonder royall prince, into England entreth hee.”</p> <p>he called <i>that</i> ⁹ gentleman that stood him by, his name was Rowland Warburton, he bade him goe to Shrewsburye <i>that</i> night,</p>	Richmond lands in England to- night.
832	& bade them lett <i>that</i> prince in come.	He sends Warburton to Shrewsbury, to order Richmond to be admitted.

¹ dogges.—Harl. A talbot is a kind of mastiff. Different branches of the Talbot family have a talbot for their crest, or 3 hounds for their arms.—F.

² The Savage arms are lions. The white hoods must have been worn by the retainers.—F.

³ Sir Ryse ap.—Harl.

⁴ eighte thousand.—Harl.

⁵ where standeth the wynde then.—Harl.

⁶ is there.—Harl.

⁷ see.—Harl.

⁸ *hinn* in the MS.—F.

⁹ a.—Harl.

- by *that*¹ Rowland came to Shrewsburye
the portcullis was letten downe ;
thé called the Prince in ffull great scorne,
836 & said " in England he shold weare no crowne."
- Warburton
throws the
orders into
the town,
Rowland bethought him of a wile,
& tyed the writtings to a stone ;
he threw the writtings ouer the wall,
840 & bade the baliffes looke them vpon.
- and the
gates are
thrown
open.
then they opened the gates wyde,²
& mett the Prince with *processyon*³ ;
he wold not abyde in shrewsburye *that* night,
Richard 844 for King Richard heard of his cominge,
- summons his
Lords.
Percy, with
& called his Lords of great renowne.⁴
Lord⁵ Pearcy came to him⁶ then,
& on his knees he kneeled him downe
30,000 men ; 848 ⁷ & sayd, " my leege, I haue 30000 fighting men."
- Norfolk,
the Duke of Norffolke came to the King,
& downe he kneeleth on⁸ his knee ;
the Erle of Surrey came with him,
Surrey, 852 they were both in companye.
- Bishop of
Durham,
Sir William
Bawmer,
Scroope and
Kent,
the Bishopp of Durham was not away,
Sir william Bawmer stood him by,
the Lord scroope⁹ & the Erle of Kent
856 they were both¹⁰ in companye :
- with 20,000
men each ;
¹¹ " & wee haue either 20000 men
and Sir
William
Harrington.
¹¹ ffor to keepe the crowne with thee."
the good Sir william Harrington
860 said they¹² wold ffight & neuer ffliee.

¹ then that.—Harl.² on everie syde.—Harl.³ processioning. *Sic legerim rythmi gratia*.—P. procession.—Harl.⁴ of renowne.—Harl.⁵ the Lorde.—Harl.⁶ *scil.* to King Richard.—P.⁷ saithe.—Harl.⁸ upon.—Harl.⁹ Scroope.—Harl.¹⁰ all.—Harl.
¹¹ Harl. puts these lines before line 853, and lines 855, 856 after them, also before line 853.—F.¹² he.—Harl.

- King Richard made a messenger,
 & send into the west countrye,
 "bidd the Erle of Derbye make him readye
 864 & bring 20000 men vnto mee,
- The King
sends to
- Lord Derby,
he must
bring 20,000
men,
- "or the Lord stranges ¹ head I shall him send ;
 for doubtlesse hee ² shall dye.
 without hee come to me soone,³
 868 his owne sonne hee shall neuer see."
- or Lord
Strange
shall die.
- then another Herald can appeare :
 "to Sir william stanley *that noble Knight*,
 bidd him bring 10000 men,
 872 or to ⁴ death he shalbe dight."
- Sir William
Stanley
must bring
10,000, or
die.
- then answered *that doughtye Knight*,
 & answered the herald ⁵ without lettinge :
 ["Say, on Bosworthe feilde I wyll hym meete ⁶]
 876 On munday earlye in the morninge. [page 477]
- Sir William
- "such a breakeffast I him hett ⁷
 as neuer subiect did to ⁸ Kinge !"
 the messenger is home gone
 880 to tell King Richard this tydand.⁹
- defies the
King.
- Richard
- the King ¹⁰ together his hands can ding,
 & say[d], "the Lord Strange ¹¹ shall dye !"
 hee bade, "put him into ¹² the tower,
 884 ffor ¹³ I will him neuer see."
- orders Lord
Strange
to the Tower.

¹ Strange.—Harl.
² nowe that he.—Harl.
³ full sonne.—Harl.
⁴ to the.—Harl.
⁵ spake to the heryotte.—Harl.
⁶ MS. pared away ; line supplied from Harl.—F.
⁷ hett, i. e. promise.—P.
⁸ did knyghte to noe.—Harl.
⁹ tydinge, *sic legerim Rythmi gratia*.—P. tythinge.—Harl.
¹⁰ Then Richard.—Harl.
¹¹ MS. Stanley; but Strange, l. 961, &c.—F. Strange.—Harl.
¹² had putt hym in.—Harl.
¹³ for sure.—Harl.

- now leaue wee Richard & his Lords
that were prest all ¹ with pryde,
 & talke wee of the stanleys bold ²
 888 *that* brought in the Prince of ³ the other side.
- Richmond
 Now is Richmond to stafford come,
 & Sir william Stanley to litle stone.
 the Prince had leuer then any gold
 892 Sir william Stanley to looke vpon.
- sends to Sir
 William
 Stanley at
 Stone.
 a messenger was readye made,
that night to stone rydeth hee ;
 Sir william rydeth to stafford towne,
 896 with him a small companye.
- They meet
 at Stafford,
 when the *Knight* to stafford came,
that Richmond might him see,
 he tooke him in his armes then,
 Richmond
 kisses him, 900 & kissed him times three :
- and Stanley
 assures
 Richmond 904 " the welfare of thy body ⁴ comforteth me more
 then all the gold in christentye !"
 then answered *that* royall *Knight* ;
 to the Prince thus speaketh hee :
- he'll make
 him King or
 die,
 and Lady
 Bessye shall
 be his wife. 908 ⁵ " in England thou shalt weare the crowne,
 or else doubtlesse I will dye.
 a ffaire Lady thou shalt ffind to thy ffere,
 as any ⁶ is in christentye,
 a *Kings* daughter, a countesse clere ;
 yea, shee is both wise & wittye.

¹ all full.—Harl.² blood.—Harl.³ broughte the prynce on.—Harl.⁴ MS. my.—F. thy.—Harl. thy
 body, *sic legerim*.—P.⁵ Harl. inserts here :Remember, man, bothe daye and nyghte,
 whoe nowe doeth the moste for thee.
 —F.⁶ is any.—Harl.

“I must goe to stone, my soueraigine,
 912 ffor to comfort my men this night.”
 the Prince tooke him by the hand,
 & sayd, “ffarwell, gentle *Knight!*”¹

now is word comen to Sir *william stanley*
 916 Early on the sunday² morninge,
that the Erle of Darby, his brother deere,
 had giuen battell to *Richard* the Kinge.

Sir William
 Stanley
 hears that

Lord Derby
 has fought
 Richard.

“that wold I not,” said Sir *william*,
 920 “for all the gold in christentye,
 except I were with him there,
 att the Battell ffor to bee.”³

then straight to Lichefeild can he ryde
 924 in all the hast *that* might bee.
 & when they came to the towne,
 they all cryed “*King HENERY!*”

He hastens
 to Lichfield,

then straight to Bosworth wold he ryde
 928 in all the hast *that* might bee.
 when they⁴ came to Bosworth feild,
 there they⁵ mett with a royall companye.⁶

and then
 Bosworth;

where are,

¹ A line is drawn here by Percy, as if
 to mark the beginning of Part VI.—F.

² vpon Sundaye in the.—Harl.

³ at that battell myselfe.—Harl.

⁴ and when he.—Harl.

⁵ he.—Harl.

⁶ armye.—Harl.

[Part VI.]

[How Richmond fights and wins the Battle of Bosworth Field, and marries the Princess Elizabeth, Lady Bessy.

- | | | | |
|---|----------------------------|---|---|
| Lord Derby, | 932 | } | The Erle of Darbye he was there,
& 20000 stooode him by; |
| Sir J.
Savage, | 6^d Parte | | Sir John Savage, his sisters sone,
he was his nephew of blood soe nye,
he had 1500 fighting men ; |
| | 936 | | there was no better in christentye. |
| Sir W.
Stanley, | | | Sir william stanley, <i>that noble Knight</i> ,
10000 red Cotes had ¹ hee. |
| and Rice ap
Thomas. | 940 | | Sir Rice ap Thomas, he was there
with a 1000 ² speres mightye of tree. |
| Richmond
asks Lord
Derby to let
him | 944 | | Erle Richmond came to the Erle of Darbye,
& downe he kneeleth vpon his knee ;
he sayd, ³ “ ffather stanley, I you ⁴ pray,
the vawward you will ⁵ giue to me ; |
| lead the van. | | | “ for I come for my right ;
ffull ffaine waged wold I bee.” |
| Lord Derby | 948 | | “ stand vp,” hee sayd, “ my sonne deere,
thou hast thy mothers blessing by mee ; |
| consents,
and puts
Sir W.
Stanley
with him. | 952 | | “ the vanward, sonne, I will thee giue ;
ffor why, by me thou wilt [ordered be ⁶],
Sir William Stanley, my brother deere, [page 475]
in <i>that</i> battell he shalbee ; |

¹ that day had.—Harl. On the ‘red cotes,’ see l. 809.—F.

² with ten thowsand.—Harl.

³ There is a tag at the end of this word in the MS. like an *s*.—F.

⁴ the.—Harl.

⁵ voward thou woulde.—Harl.

⁶ MS. p^ared away.—F. ordered be.—Harl.

- Sir Iohn Sauage, *that* hath no peere,
 hee shall be a winge to thee ;
 Sir Rice ap Thomas shall breake the wray,
 956 ffor he will fight & neuer flee ;
 & I my selfe will houer ¹ on this hill,
that ffaire battell ffor to see."
- King Richard [houed ²] on the mountaines,
 960 & was ware of the banner of the Lord ³ stanley.
 he said, " ffeitch hither the Lord strange to me
 ffor doubtlesse hee shall dye this day."
- " to the death, Lord, make thee bowne !
 964 ffor by Mary, *that* mild mayde,⁴
 thou shalt dye ffor thy vnckles sake !
 his name is william stanleye."
- " if I shold dye," sayd the Lord Strange,
 968 " as god fforbidd itt soe shold bee !
 alas ffor my Lady att home,
 itt shold be long ere shee mee see !
- " but wee shall meete att domesday,
 972 when the great dome itt shalbee."
 he called a gentleman of Lancashire,
 his name was Latham trulye,
- & [a] ring ⁵ beside his ffinigar he tooke,
 976 & cast itt to the ⁶ gentleman,
 & bade him " bring itt to Lancashire,
 to my Ladye *that* is att home ;

Savage is to
 lead one
 wing,
 and Rice ap
 Thomas
 is to break
 King
 Richard's
 line.

Richard sees
 the Stanley
 banner,

and bids
 Lord
 Strange
 prepare to
 die.

Lord
 Strange

laments for
 his wife.

He sends her
 his ring,

¹ hove.—Harl.

² hoved.—Harl. looked mount^{ns} high.
 See Pag. 441 [of MS.], St. 63. N.B.
 Many of the follow^g Stanzas are nearly
 the same with those in Pag. 441 [of MS.]

l. 497-548 of *Bosworth Feilde*, p. 253-5.
 above] q. vide.—P.

³ boulde.—Harl.

⁴ maye.—Dyce.

⁵ a rynge.—Harl.

⁶ that.—Harl.

- " att her table shee may sitt ;
 980 ere shee see her *Lord*, itt may be Longe.
 I haue no ffoot to scutt or ¹ fflytt,
 I must be Martyred ² with tyrant stronge.
- and tells her,
 if his uncle
 loses,
 984 " if itt ffortune my vnckle to lose the ffeild—
 as god defend itt shold soe bee !—
 pray her to take my eldest sonne
 & exile him ouer the sea ;
- to take his
 son over the
 sea,
 that after-
 wards
 988 " he may come in another time ;
 by ffeild, ffrith,³ tower or towne,
 wreake hee may his ffathers death
 vpon *King Richard* ⁴ that weares the crowne."
- he may
 revenge
 his father's
 death.
 a *Knicht* to the *King* did appeare,
 992 good ⁵ *Sir william Harrington* ;
 saies, " lett him haue his liffe a while
 till wee ⁶ haue the ffather, the vnckle, & the sonne.
- Sir William
 Harrington
 asks Richard
 to wait till
 the other
 Stanleys
 are taken,
 996 " wee shall haue them soone on the ffeild,
 the ffather, the vnckle, the sonne,⁷ all 3 ;
 then may you deeme them with your mouth,
 what Kind of death *that* they shall dye."
- so that all
 may be
 killed
 together.
 but a blocke on the ground was cast,
 1000 thervpon the *Lords* head was Layde ;
 an axe ⁸ ouer his head can stand,
 & out of passyon ⁹ itt was brayd.¹⁰
- Richard
 refuses,
 1004 he saith, " there is no other boote
 but *that* the ¹¹ *Lord* needs must dye."
Harrington heard itt, & ¹² was full woe
 when itt wold no better bee :

¹ fecte to schunte nor.—Harl. *scutt*
 is the base of *scuttle*, move bustlingly.
 —F.

² murdered.—Harl.

³ frygh.—Harl.

⁴ on Richard of England.—Harl.

⁵ the gude.—Harl.

⁶ ye.—Harl.

⁷ the sonn and the uncle.—Harl.

⁸ a sawe.—Harl.

⁹ fashion.—Harl.

¹⁰ ? flourished about.—F.

¹¹ thou.—Harl.

¹² harte yt.—Harl.

- he saith, "our ray breaketh on euery syde ;
 1008 wee put our ffolke ¹ in ieopardye."
 then they tooke vp the Lord on liue ;
 King Richard did him neuer see.
- then he ² blew vp bewgles of brasse,
 1012 the shott ³ of guns were soe ffree
that [made] many wiues cry ⁴ alas,
 & many children ⁵ ffatherlesse.
- Rice ⁶ ap Thomas with the blacke gowne,⁷
 1016 shortlye he brake ⁸ the ray :
 with 30000 ffighting men
 the Lord Percy went his way.
- the Duke of Norfolke would haue fled ;
 1020 with 20000 in ⁹ his companye
 he went vp to ¹⁰ a wind-mill,
 & stood vpon a hill soe hye,
- there he mett Sir Iohn Savage, a valyant ¹¹ Knight ;
 1024 with him a worthy companye :
 to the death the duke was dight,
 & his sonne, prisoner taken was hee.
- then they ¹² Lord dakers began to flee,
 1028 soe did many ¹³ others more.¹⁴
 when king Richard *that* sight did see,
 [Then his heart ¹⁵ was ffull w]oe : ¹⁶

but his
line is
broken,

and Richard
goes to fight.

Percy and
30,000 men
leave him.

Norfolk

is slain by
Sir John
Savage,

and his son
taken.

Lord Dacres
and others
flee.

¹ feilde.—Harl.

² they.—Harl.

³ schottes.—Harl.

⁴ made many wyves to.—Harl.

⁵ mony a childe.—Harl.

⁶ Sir Ryse.—Harl.

⁷ crowe.—Harl. ? his badge.—F.

⁸ made haste to breake.—Harl.

⁹ of.—Harl.

¹⁰ unto.—Harl.

¹¹ royall.—Harl.

¹² the.—Harl.

¹³ Only half the *n* in the MS.—F.

¹⁴ moe.—P. other moe.—Harl.

¹⁵ in his harte he.—Harl.

¹⁶ Copied in by Percy. The line is
nearly pared away in the MS.—F.

- Richard prays them to stay and die with him. 1032 " I pray you, my men, be not away, [page 479]
ffor like a man ffree ¹ will I dye !
ffor I had leuer dye this day,
the[n] ² with the stanleys taken bee ! "
- Harrington says they 1036 a *Knight* to *King* Richard can say, ³
good ⁴ Sir william of harrington,
he saith, " wee are like all heere
to the death soone to be done ;—
- can't resist the Stanleys, 1040 " there may no man their strokes abyde,
the stanleys dints they beene soe stronge ;—
yee may come in another time ;
therefore methinke yee tarry too longe ;
- Richard had better flee. 1044 " your horsse is ready att your hand,
another day you may your ⁵ worshipp win,
²² & to raigne with royaltie,
& weare your ⁶ crowne & be our *King*."
- But Richard swears he'll die King of England. 1048 " giue ⁷ me my battell axe in my hand,
& sett my crowne on ⁸ my head so hye !
ffor by him *that* made both sunn & moone,
King of England this day I will ⁹ dye ! "
- His crown is hewed off him, 1052 besides ¹⁰ his head thé hewed the crowne,
& dange on him as they were wood ;
thé stroke his Basnett to his head
vntill his braines came out with blood.
- and his helmet dashed into his head, 1056 thé carryed him naked vnto ¹¹ Leicester,
& buckeled his haire vnder his chin.
- and he is carried to Leicester. 1056 Bessye mett him with ¹² merry cheere ;
these were they words shee sayd to him :
- Bessye

¹ here.—Harl.² then.—Harl.³ Vid. Pag. 442, St. 74 & sequentes [of MS.; p. 256, l. 585 here].—P.⁴ yt was gude.—Harl.⁵ yee maye.—Harl. ⁶ the.—Harl.⁷ He said, give.—Harl.⁸ Sett the crowne of England upon.—Harl.⁹ will I.—Harl.¹⁰ Besyde.—Harl.¹¹ into.—Harl.¹² with a.—Harl.

- “ how likest thou they slaying of my brethren
twaine ? ” ¹
- 1060 shee spake these words to him alowde ² :
“ now are wee wroken vppon thee heere !
welcome, gentle vnckle, home ! ”
- great solace itt was to see,
1064 I tell you, *masters*, without lett,
when they red rose of Mickle price
& our BESSYE ³ were mett.
- a Bishopp them marryed with a ringe,
1068 they ⁴ 2 bloods of hye renowne.
BESSYE sayd, “ now may wee sing,
wee tow bloods are made all one.”
- the Erle of Darbye he was there,
1072 & Sir william Stanley a man of might ;
vpon their heads they sett the crowne
in presence of many a worthy wight.
- then came hee ⁵ vnder a cloud,
1076 *that* sometime in England was ffull high ⁶ ;
the hart began to cast his head ;
after, noe man might itt see.
- but god *that* is both bright & sheene,
1080 & borne was of [a ⁷] mayden ffree,
saue & keepe our comelye King ⁸
& ⁹ the poore cominaltye !

taunts his
corpse,welcomes
Lord Derby.The Red
Rose and
White meet,and are
married.Lord Derby
and Sir
William
Stanley
crown them.

God save

our King
and the
Commons!

ffinis.

¹ the sleaying of my brethren dere.—
Harl.² alon.—Harl.³ yonge Bessie togeder.—Harl.⁴ the.—Harl.⁵ Sir William Stanley. See l. 812.—F.⁶ MS. hight. Read *high*, pronounced
hee.—Dyce.⁷ a.—Harl.⁸ queene.—Harl.⁹ and also.—Harl.

Are women faire.¹

“A VERY imperfect copy of this song,” notes Percy, “is in Pepys’ *Merriments*, vol. ii. p. 330.”

It is a handful of woman-abusing commonplaces, true enough perhaps of such specimens of the sex as the writer of them was likely to see or appreciate.

Women are
fair, and
sweet to
those that
love them;

“ARE women faire?” I! wonderous faire to see too.
“are women sweete?” yea, passing [sweete²] they
be too;
most faire & sweete to them *that* only loue them;
4 chast & discreet to all saue those *that* proue them.

not wise,

“Are women wise?” not wise; but they be wittye.

but so wittye,
they beguile
you;

“are women wittye?” yea, the more the pittye;
they are soe wittye, & in witt soe whylye,³
8 *that* be you neare soe wise, they will beguile ye.

not ffooles,
but fond,

“are women ffooles?” not ffooles, but ffoundlings
many.

and never
stable;

“can women ffound⁴ be ffathfull vnto any?”
when snow-white swans doe turne to colour sable,
12 then women ffond⁵ will both be firme & stable.

not devils,

“Are women *Saints*?” no saints, nor yett no diuells.

but very
like them;
needful
evils.

“are women good?” not good, but needfull euills;
soe Angell-like, *that* diuells I doe not doubt them;
16 soe needffull euills, *that* ffew can liue with-out them.

¹ a satire on Women. A very imperfect Copy of this Song is in Pepys *Merrim^s*, vol. 2, p. 330.—P.

² sweet.—P.

³ wilye.—P.

⁴ Three strokes only for *un* in the MS.—F.

⁵ found.—F.

"Are women proud?" I! passing proud, & praise¹ them. Proud they are,
 "are women kind?" I! wonderous kind, &² please them, and kind when they like to be;
 or soe imperyous,³ no man can endure them,
 20 or soe kind-harted, any may procure them. *ffinis.* often too kind.

¹ *praisinge* was first written in the MS., but the *inge* has been crossed out, and an *e* written above it by a later

hand.—F.

² an't, if it.—F.

³ MS. imperious.—F.

["*I Dreamed my Loue*," printed in *Lo. & Hum. Songs*, p. 102,
follows here in the MS. page 480.]

A : Caulere.¹

THE author of *The Treatyse of Fysshynge wyth an Angle*, printed by Wynkyn de Worde in his edition of the Book of St. Alban's in 1496, sets himself to "dyscryue foure good dysportes and honest games, that is to wyte, huntynge, hawkyng, fyshynge and foulynge," in order to find out the best; which is the most fit mean and cause to "enduce man into a mery spyryte," that brings a man "fayr aege and longe life;" for "Salamon in his parablys sayth that a good spyryte makyth a flourynge aege, that is, a fayre aege and a longe." Our Fisher with an Angle proceeds with the description of the four sports as follows:

. . . huntynge, as to myn entent, is to laboryous, for the hunter must alwaye renne and folowe his houndes: traueyllynge and swetyng full sore. He blowyth till his lypes blyster. And whan he wenyth it be an hare, full oft it is an hegge hogge. Thus he chasyth, and wote not what. He comyth home at eyn, rayn-beten, pryckyd, and his clothes torne, wete-shode, all myry, Some hounde lost, some surbat.² Suche greues and many other hapyth vnto the hunter, whyche, for dyspleysaunce of them y^t loue it, I dare not reporte. Thus truly me semyth that this is not the beste dysporte and game of the sayd foure. The dysporte and game of hawkyng is laboryous and noyouse also, as me semyth. For often the fawkener leseth his hawkes as the hunter his houndes. Thenne is his game and his dysporte goon. Full often cryeth he and whystelyth tyll that he be ryght euyl a-thurste. His hawke taketh a bowe, and lyste not ones on hym rewarde.³ whan he wold haue her for to flee: thenne woll she bathe. with mysfedyng she shall haue the Fronse⁴: the Rye: the Cray: and many

¹ A Curious Old Song in praise of Falconry.—P.

² . . . *surboted* or riven of their skin. Topsell, p. 689, in Halliwell.—F.

³ look.

⁴ The Fronse is a sore in a hawk's

mouth. See "Medicyne for the Frounce" in *Reliquiæ Antiquæ*, i. 294, 297. The *Rye* is a sore in the nostrils, *ib.* i. 294; the *Cray* a disease of the 'fondement,' *ib.* i. 295. (*The Booke of Hawkyng, after Prince Edward, Kyng of Englande.*)—F.

other syknesses that brynge them to the Sowse.¹ Thus by prouff this is not the beste dysporte and game of the sayd foure. The dysporte and game of fowlynge me semyth moost symple. For in the wynter season the fowler spedyth not but in the moost hardest and coldest weder: whyche is greuous. For whan he wolde goo to his gynnes he maye not for colde. Many a gynne and many a snare he makyth. Yet soryly dooth he fare. At morn tyde in the dewe he is weete shode unto his taylle. Many other suche I cowde tell: but drede of magre² makith me for to leue. Thus me semyth that huntynge and hawkyng and also fowlynge ben so laborous and greuous that none of theym maye perfourme nor bi very meane that enduce a man to a mery spyryte: whyche is cause of his long lyfe acordynge unto y^e sayd parable of Salamon: ¶ Dowteles thenne folowyth it that it must nedes be the dysporte of fysshynge with an angle. For all other manere of fysshynge is also laborous and greuous: often makynge folkes full wete and colde, whyche many tymes hath be seen cause of grete Infirmytees. But the angler maye haue no colde, nor no dysease nor angre, but yf he be causer hymself. For he maye not lese at the moost but a lyne or an hoke: of whyche he may haue store plentee of his owne makynge, as this symple treatyse shall teche hym. So thenne his losse is not greuous. and other greyffes may he not haue, sauynge but yf ony fische breke away after that he is take on the hoke, or elles that he catche nought: whyche ben not greuous. For yf he faylle of one he maye not faylle of a nother, yf he dooth as this treatyse techyth, but yf there be nought in the water. And yet atte the leest he hath his holsom walke, and mery at his ease. a swete ayre of the swete sauoure of the meede floures: that makyth hym hungry. He hereth the melodyous armony of fowles. He seeth the yonge swannes: heerons: duckes: cotes, and many other foules wyth theyr brodes; whyche me semyth better than alle the noyse of houndys: the blastes of hornys and the scrye of foulis that hunters, fawkeners, and foulers can make. And yf the angler take fysshe: surely thenne is there noo man merier than he is in his spyryte. ¶ Also who soo woll vse the game of anglynge: he must ryse erly, whiche thyng is prouffyt-able to man in this wyse, That is to wyte: moost to the heele of his soule. For it shall cause hym to be holy. and to the heele of his body, For it shall cause him to be hole. Also to the encrease of his

¹ ? death. 'Dead as a fowl at *souse*,' i.e. at the stroke of another bird descending violently on it. So explained by Mr. Dyce (*Beaumont & Fletcher*, vii.

278). 'To leape or seaze greedily upon, to *souze* doune as a hauke.' Florio, p. 48, ed. 1611. Halliwell.—F.

² Fr. *malgré*, illwill.—F.

goodys. For it shall make hym ryche. As the olde englysshe pro-
uerbe sayth in this wyse. ¶ who soo woll ryse erly shall be holy
helthy and zely.¹ ¶ Thus have I prouyd in myn entent that the
dysporte and game of anglynge is the very meane and cause that
enducith a man in to a mery spyryte: Whyche, after the sayde parable
of Salomon and the sayd doctryne of phisyk, makyth a flouryng aege
and a longe. And therefore to al you that ben vertuous: gentyll:
and free borne, I wryte and make this symple treatyse folowyng:
by whyche ye may haue the full crafte of anglynge to dysport you at
your luste: to the entent that your aege maye the more floure and
the more lenger to endure.

Now this is all very well for a quiet man with no devil in him;
but Crecy and Agincourt were not fought and won by men of
this type; Nelson and Napier could hardly have been content to
be fools at one end of a rod, with worms at the other. Nor
could our Cauileere have accepted the reason of "Perkyn þe
plou mon" why knights should hawk:

fecche þe hom Faucuns · þe Foules to quelle,
For þei comen in-to my croft · And Croppen my Whete.
(William's *Vision of Piers Plowman*, Pass. vii. p. 76, l. 34-5, ed. Skeat.)

There are many men whom, more or less, Tennyson's "Sailor-
boy" represents, even in their sports:

My mother clings about my neck,
My sisters clamour "stay for shame!"
My father raves of death and wreck:
They are all to blame; they are all to blame.
God help me! Save I take my part
Of danger on the roaring sea,
A devil rises in my heart,
Far worse than any death to me.

The electric force within them must out; the excitement that
the chance of danger in the chase gives is necessary for them, is
the condition of health for body and mind, which if cooped up in
city and court would both become diseased; the devil would rise.
But the sportsman cares not to look at this negative side of the

¹ A.-Sax. *sélig*, happy, lucky, blessed, prosperous. Bosworth.—F.

question: he knows that he loves his sport; its toils are his pleasures, its danger his business to beat; his horse, his dog—in old time, his hawk—is his friend. What matters the chance of a fall, when you feel your horse going under you, and hear the hoofs of the field about you? Sit close, and *take your chance*, whatever it be.

Our ballad is by a man of the right breed. It has the true lilt in it; carries us back to bright old days, and makes us wish that all our workers could have something more of healthy outdoor life. Of the poem itself we know no other copy.—F.

SOME: in their traine, & some in their gaine,
 doe sett their whole delight;
 they[r] time¹ some doe passe with a comb & a glasse,
 4 to be loued in their mistresse sight;
 Some loue the chace, & some loue the race
 of the hare & of the ffearffull deere;
 but the braonest delight is the ffawcon in her ffligh[t],
 8 when shee stoopes with a cauleere.

ffor shee will moue iust like a doue;
 when once her game shee doth ffind,
 shee clipps itt amaine, shee strikes itt a plane,
 12 but seemes² to outstripp the wind.
 shee fflyeth att once her marke Iumpe³ vpon,
 & mounteth the we[1]kin⁴ cleere;
 then right shee stoopes, when the ffalkner hee whoopes,
 16 triumphing in her cauleere.

Some delight
 in gain,
 others
 in adorning
 themselves,

others in
 hunting the
 hare;

but the
 falcon's
 flight beats
 all.

She flies at
 her game
 like the
 wind;
 she soars
 aloft,

¹ their time.—P.

² MS. scenes.—F.

³ He set her on my selfe, a while, to
 draw the Moor apart,

And bring him *iump*e, when he may
 Cassio find

Soliciting his wife.—*Othello*, Actus Se-
 cundus, Scena Secunda.—F.

⁴ welkin.—P.

- In a moments space shee will better place ¹
 as though shee did disdaine to carrye ² ;
 the earth is soe ³ neere, shee mounteth the sphere,
 and makes the clouds her quarry, 20 & maketh the clouds her quarrey, ⁴
 till the ffawkner quite now hath Lost her sight,
 & her bells no longer can heare ;
 then listening ⁵ to a starr, he espyes her affarr,
 She stoops, 24 come stooping with a cauleere.
- Then comes he in, through thicke, through thin,
 as nothing can his passage stay ;
 his paines doth him please, his pleasure doth him ease,
 and her master rushes through
 thorn and wood to meet her 28 through studds, ⁶ through woods, is his way.
 he fforceth not ⁷ to sweat, though breathles with heat,
 but with a resounding Cheare
 with a ringing cheer.
 he reacheth fforth his throte, & whoopeth fforth his
 note,
 32 triumphing in her cauleere.
- He is ffree ffrom court & Cittyes resort,
 & thus his houres doth imploye ;
 the brooke & the ffeild him pleasure doth yeeld ;
 He's free from care, 36 theres nothing interrupts his ioye.
 his paines doth him please when he sleepeth att ease ;
 but this ffawcon, when day doth appeare,
 and sleeps at his ease. His falcon's bells are his chimes.
 her bells are his Chimes when he riseth betimes
 40 triumphing in her Cauleere.

ffinis.

¹ pace, or her place.—P.² tarry.—P.³ too.—P.⁴ ? MS. qurwey.—F.⁵ lessen^g or less^d query.—P.⁶ Lin. 4. perhaps *stubs*, i. e. shortstumps of cut underwood, tho' *studds* signify Posts. See Pag. 407, St. 7 [of MS.]—P.⁷ doesn't mind: cp. 'no force,' it's no matter, of no consequence.—F.

A Prophecy.

THE hero of this strange piece is obviously James I. The earlier verses are, no doubt, prophecies founded on fact—prophecies after the event—as indeed is not unfrequently the case with prophecies, they being but chapters of history with the tenses altered and the language darkened. After verse sixteen our author either turns satirical, or perchance indulges in a wild dream born of his ardent Protestantism and his study of the book of Joel. We prefer the latter supposition, and conjecture that the poem was written about the time of the beginning of the Thirty Years' War. The writer sympathised with the cause of the Elector Palatine. The general excitement in this country in the Winter King's behalf was unbounded. "The Protestants of England," says Mr. Knight, "were roused to an enthusiasm which had been repressed for years. Volunteers were ready to go forth full of zeal for the support of the Elector. James was professing an ardent desire to Protestant deputies to assist his son-in-law, and at the same time vowing to the Spanish ambassador that the alliance with his Catholic master, which was to be cemented by the marriage of Prince Charles to the Infanta, was the great desire of his heart. At length the Catholic powers entered the Palatinate; and the cry to arm was so loud amongst the English and Scotch that James reluctantly marshalled a force of four thousand volunteers, not to support his son-in-law upon the throne of Bohemia, but to assist in defending his hereditary dominions." At this crisis, we should suggest, the following piece was composed. The Prophet, rejoicing that the darling wish and hope of his Protestant heart is about to be realised, recognises in the King who has sent forth the expedition him who, after grand

successes achieved in the Occident, is to fight that great final battle in the valley of Jehoshaphat.

The news that reached England towards the end of the year 1620 must have sadly disappointed the poor visionary. This once hopeful monarch proved but a traitor to the Good Cause. Perhaps he was the one who was to be vanquished—not to vanquish—at Armageddon.

A prince from the North shall come,	A : Prince out of the north shall come,	[page 481]
called J. S.,	King borne, named babe ; his brest vpon, a Lyon rampant strong to see, 4 and I I S ¹ Iclippedd hee :	
find good fortune,	borne in a country rude & stonye, ² yett hee couragyouis, wise, & holy ; att best of strenght, his ffortunes best	
and couch as a lion.	8 he shall receiue, & therin rest, coach as a Lyon in the den, & lye in peace soe long till men shall wonder, & all christendome	
He calls a parliament, and at once breaks it up. Then, roused by foreign foes, he draws his sword	12 thinke the time long, both all and some. Att Last he calls a Parlaiment, & breakes itt straight in discontent ; ³ & shortly then shall roused bee	
and punishes them,	16 by enemyes beyond the sea. but when in wrath he drawes his sword, ⁴ woe <i>that</i> the sleeping Lyon stured ! ffor ere he sheath the same againe, 20 he puts his foes to mickle paine.	

¹ James Stuart. The *l* before J. S. may be a *c*: the two letters are often exactly alike.—F.

² Scotland.—F.

³ James's second Parliament, which met April 5, 1614, and was dismissed angrily, without passing a single act,

because it declined to grant supplies till the illegal impositions and other grievances were redressed.—F.

⁴ ? referring to the 4000 volunteers whom he sent to defend the Palatinate in 1620.—F.

- & vallyant actes he shall then doe,
 great Alexanders ffame outgoe :
 he passeth seas, & ffame doth winn,
 24 & many princes ioyne with him,
 & chuse him ffor their gouernor,
 & crowne him westerne Emperour ;¹
 after a while he shal be-girt
 28 *that* cittye ancyeut and great
which vpon 7 hills scituate,
 till hee her all haue ruinate.
 then shall a ffoe ffrom east appeare,
 32 the brinckes of one great riuer neere ;
 this Lyon rampant him shall meete ;
 & iff on this side hee shall fflight,
 the day is Lost : but hee shall crosse
 36 this riuer great, & being past,
 shall in the strenght of his great god,
 into his ffoes discouraging rode,
 causing him thence take his fflight,
 40 of Easterne *Kings* succour to seekee ;
 during *which* time he is in owne²
 of East & west crowned Emperowne.
 then shall the ffoe in ffury burne,
 44 & ffrom the East in hast returne—
 with aid of *Kings* & princes great—
 to the valley of Iehosaphatt :
 then shall hee meete the Lyon stronge,
 48 who in a battell ffeirce & longe
 shall ffoyle his ffoe. then cruell death
 shall take away his aged breath. *ffinis.*

outdoing
 Alexander's
 fame,

and being
 crowned
 Western
 Emperor.
 Then he
 shall besiege
 Rome,

meet his
 eastern foe,

and rout
 him.

But the
 foe shall
 return,
 reinforced,

and be
 routed
 again, in the
 valley of
 Jehosha-
 phat.
 Then the
 Emperor
 shall die.

¹ James I. was proclaimed by the new title of "King of Great Britain, France, and Ireland," on Oct. 24, 1604; but on

his medals he assumed the title of *Imperator*.—F.

² ? one.—F.

Maudline.¹

THIS ballad occurs in the *Roxburghe Collection* (reprinted in Collier's *Book of Roxburghe Ballads*, p. 104, and from it in Professor Child's *English and Scottish Ballads*), and in the *Collection of Old Ballads*.

“This narrative-ballad,” says Mr. Collier, “which is full of graceful but unadorned simplicity, is mentioned in Fletcher's *Monsieur Thomas* (Act III. sc. 3), [see Introduction to the *Rose of Englande*] by the name of Maudlin the Merchant's Daughter. Two early editions of it are known; one, without printer's name (clearly much older than the other), is that which we have used; we may conclude that it was written considerably before James I. came to the throne. It was last reprinted in 1738, but in that impression it was much modernised and corrupted.”

[The first Fitt.]

Maudlin, a Bristol merchant's daughter,	4	<p>BEHOLD: the touchstone of true loue, Maudlin, the Merchants daughter of Bristow ² towne, whose firme affection nought ³ cold moue! this ⁴ ffauor beares the louely browne. a gallant youth was dwelling by, which long time ⁵ had borne this Lady great good will; shee loued him most ffaithffully, but her friends 8 but all her ffreinds withstoode itt still.</p>
--	---	--

¹ In *the printed Collection of Old Ballads*, 12^{mo}, vol. 3, p. 201. N. 37.—P. In two Fitts.—F.

² Bristol.—O.B. ³ nothing.—O.B.

⁴ Her.—O.B.

⁵ O.B. omits *time*.—F.

- the young man now perceiuing well
 he cold not gett nor winn¹ the fauor of her ffreinds,
 the fforce of sorrow to expell,
- 12 to² vew strange countryes hee intends ;
 & now to take his last ffarwell
 of his true loue &³ constant Maudlin,
 with sweet musicke,⁴ *that* did excell,
- 16 he playes vnder her windowe then :
 “ farwell,” quoth he, “ my owne true Loue !
 “ ffarwell,” quoth he, “ the cheeffest tres[ure of my
 Heart]”⁵
 Throughe ffortunes⁶ spite, *that* false did proue, [page 482]
- 20 I am inforcet ffrom thee to parte
 into the Land of Italye⁷ ;
 there will I waite & weary out my dayes⁸ in woe.
 seing my true loue is kept ffrom mee,
- 24 I hold my liffe a mortall foe.
 therefore, ffaire Bristow towne, now adew !⁹
 for Padua shalbe my habitation now
 although my loue doth Lodge¹⁰ in thee,
- 28 to welcome [whom]¹¹ alone my heart I vow.”
 with trickling¹² teares this did hee singe ;
 with¹³ sighes & sobbs discendinge from his hart full
 sor[e],
 he said, when hee his hands did wringe,
- 32 “ ffarwell, sweet loue, ffor euer-more ! ”
 ffaire Maudline from a window hye
 beholding¹⁴ her true loue with Musicke where he
 sto[ode],

oppose the
match.

So he
resolves to
go and see
strange
countries,

and
serenades his
love before
going.

In Italy
he'll spend
his days in
woe,

and forsake
Bristol
for Padua.

He sighs and
sobs

and wrings
his hands,
and bids his
love fare-
well.

¹ *winn* in the MS. O.B. omits *nor winn*.—F.

² And.—O.B.

³ his fair and.—O.B.

⁴ Musick sweet.—O.B.

⁵ MS. pared away: *the . . heart* read by the help of, or supplied from Old Ballads, which omits *quoth he*.—F.

⁶ ? MS. pared away.—F.

⁷ fair Italy.—O.B.

⁸ Life.—O.B.

⁹ Fair *Bristol* Town therefore adieu.—O.B.

¹⁰ rest.—O.B.

¹¹ whom.—O.B.

¹² tickling.—O.B.

¹³ O.B. omits *with*.—F.

¹⁴ See.—O.B.

- She dares not
answer him,
- 36 but not a word shee durst¹ replye,
ffearing her parents angry moode.
- but weeps
all night,
- in teares shee spends this² woefull night,
wishing her³ (though naked) with her ffaithfull
ffrein[d].
- shee blames her ffriends & ffortunes spight
- 40 *that* wrought their⁴ Loue such Luckless end;
& in her hart shee made a vowe,
cleane to fforsake her country & her kinsfolkes⁵ all,
& ffor to ffollow her true loue
- and vows
she'll give
up her
family
and follow
her love.
- 44 to bide what⁶ chance *that* might befall.
the night is gone & the day is come,
& in the morning verry early shee did rise ;
shee getts her downe to the⁷ Lower roome,
- She gets up
- 48 where sundry seamen shee espyes,
A gallant *Master* amongst them all,—
the *master* of a gallant⁸ shipp was hee,—
which there stood⁹ waiting in the hall
- and finds a
master
seaman
- waiting to
see her
father.
- 52 to speake with her ffather, if itt might bee.
shee kindly takes him by the hand ;
“good Sir,” she said,¹⁰ “wold yee speake with any
heere ?”
- She takes
- quoth hee, “ffaire mayd, therefore I¹¹ stand.”
- him into
- 56 “then, gentle Sir, I pray you come¹² neere
Into a pleasant *parlour* by.”
with¹³ hand in hand shee brings the seaman all alone ;
sighing to him most pyteouslye,
- a parlour,
- 60 shee thus to him did make her moane ;

¹ did.—O.B.

² spent that.—O.B.

³ herself.—O.B. The ‘naked’ alludes to the early custom of sleeping naked, occasionally mentioned in romances. The authority of early illuminated MSS. is also cited for it; but as kings and queens in bed are almost always drawn with their crowns on, and lying flat on their backs, one does not feel compelled to accept the illuminators’ authority for the

nakedness any more than the crowns.—F.

⁴ her.—O.B.
⁵ ? MS. kinffolkes.—F. To forsake her Country and Kindred.—O.B.

⁶ abide all.—O.B. ⁷ into a.—O.B.

⁸ a great and goodly.—O.B.

⁹ Who there was.—O.B.

¹⁰ said she.—O.B.

¹¹ and therefore I do.—O.B.

¹² I pray draw.—O.B.

¹³ O.B. omits *with*.—F.

- shee falls vpon her tender ¹ knee,
 “good Sir,” shee said, “now pittie yee a womans
 case,²
 & proue a ffaithffull freind to mee,
 64 *that* I to you my greeffe may show ! ”
 “sith you repose your trust,” hee sayd,
 “to me *that* am vnknowne,³ & eke a stranger heere,
 be you assured, proper ⁴ maid,
 68 most ffaithfull still I will appeare.”
 “I haue a brother,” then quoth shee,
 “whom as my liffe I ⁵ ffauor tenderlye.
 In Padua, alas ! is hee ;
 72 full sicke, god wott, & like to dye ;
 & ⁶ ffaine I wold my brother see,
 but *that* my father will not yeeld to let me goe.
 therefore, good Sir, bee good ⁷ to mee,
 76 & vnto me this ffauor show.
 some shippboyes garments bring to me,
that I disguised may goe away ffrom hence ⁸ vn-
 knowne,
 & vnto sea Ile goe with thee
 80 if thus much ffreindshipp may ⁹ be showne.”
 “ffaire mayd,” quoth hee, “take heere my hand ;
 I will ffulfill eche thing *that* you now doe ¹⁰ desire,
 & sett ¹¹ you saffe in *that* same Land,
 84 & in *that* place where ¹² you require ! ”
 shee gaue him ¹³ then a tender kisse,
 & saith, “your servant, gallant *Master*, will I bee,¹⁴
 & proue your ffaith-full ffreind ffor this.
 88 sweet *Master*, fforgett ¹⁵ not mee ! ”

falls on her
knees to
him,
prays him

to hear her
troubles,

and then
tells him
that her
brother is
dying in
Padua,

and her
father won't
let her go to
him.

“ Bring
me some
shipboy's
clot hes,

and let me
go with
you.”

The seaman
promises to
do all she
wants.

She kisses
him and says

she'll be his
friend.

¹ bended.—O.B.
² (said she) pity a Woman's Woe.—
 O.B.

³ In me unknown.—O.B.

⁴ most beauteous.—O.B.

⁵ I love and.—O.B.

⁶ Full.—O.B. ⁷ kind.—O.B.

⁸ O.B. omits *away from hence*.—F.

⁹ Favour might.—O.B.

¹⁰ O.B. omits *now doe*.—F.

¹¹ see.—O.B.

¹² the Place that.—O.B.

¹³ to him.—O.B.

¹⁴ said, Your Servant, Master, I will
 be.—O.B.

¹⁵ then forget.—O.B.

- this done, as they had both decreede,¹
 soone after, earlye before the² breake of day,
 he brings her garments then with speed,
 92 wherin shee doth her-selfe³ array.
 & ere her ffather did arise,
 shee meetes her *Master* walkeing⁴ in the hall;
 shee did attend on him likewise
 and goes with him before her father.
 96 euen vntill⁵ her ffather did him call.
 but ere⁶ the Marchant made an end
 [page 483] Of all the matter to the *Master* he cold saye,⁷
 his wiffe came weeping in with speed,
 Her mother comes in, saying their daughter is gone.
 100 saying, "our daughter is gone away!"
 the marchant, much⁸ amazed in minde,
 "yonder vile wretch inticed away my child⁹!"
 but well I¹⁰ wott I shall him ffind
 104 att Padua or in Italye."¹¹
 with *that* bespake the *Master* braue:
 "worshippfull *Master*,¹² thither goes this pretty
 youth,¹³
 & any thing *that* you wold haue,¹⁴
 108 he will perfforme itt,¹⁵ & write the truth."
 "sweete youth," quoth shee,¹⁶ "if itt be soe,
 beare me a *lettre* to the English Marchants¹⁷ there,
 & gold on thee I will bestowe;
 112 my daughters welfare I doe ffeare."
 her mother takes¹⁸ her by the hand:
 "faire youth," quoth shee, "if¹⁹ thou dost my
 daughter see,
 leitt me therof soone²⁰ vnderstand,
 116 & there is 20 crownes ffor thee."

¹ agreed.—O.B.² after that by.—O.B.³ Therein herself she did.—O.B.⁴ as he walked.—O.B.⁵ Until.—O.B.⁶ But here.—O.B.⁷ Of those his weighty Matters all that Day.—O.B.⁸ then.—O.B.⁹ intic'd my Child away.—O.B.¹⁰ I well.—O.B.¹¹ In *Italy* at *Padua*.—O.B.¹² Merchant.—O.B.¹³ this Youth.—O.B.¹⁴ crave.—O.B.¹⁵ perform.—O.B.¹⁶ he.—O.B.¹⁷ the *English*.—O.B. ¹⁸ took.—O.B.¹⁹ Youth, if e'er.—O.B.²⁰ soon thereof.—O.B.

thus, through the daughters strange disguise,
 the mother knew not when shee spake vnto her
 child;
 & ¹ after her *master* straight shee hyes, and Maudlin
 120 taking her leaue with countenance myld.
 thus to the sea faire ² Maudlin is gone goes to sea
with her
master.
 with her gentle *master*. god send them a merry
 wind!
 where ³ wee a while must leaue them alone,⁴
 124 till you the second fitt ⁵ doe ffind.

[The Second Fitt.]

2^d parte { “welcome, sweet Maudlin, ffrom the sea Maudlin and
her master
land in
Italy.
 where bitter stormes & tempests doe rise ⁶!
 the pleasant bankes of Italye
 128 wee ⁷ may behold with morttall eyes.”
 thankes, gentle *master*,” then quoth ⁸ shee, She thanks
him for his
kindness,
 “⁹ a ffaithfull ffreind in all sorrowes hast thou ¹⁰
 beene!
 if ffortune once doe smile on mee,
 132 my thankfull hart shall then ¹¹ be seene.
 blest be the hand *that* ffeeds my loue,
 blest be the place wheras his *person* ¹² doth abyde!
 nor ¹³ tryall will I sticke to proue and says
she'll
 136 wherby my good will ¹⁴ may be tryde.
 now will I walke with ioyfull hart walk about
till she finds
 to vew the towne wheras my darling ¹⁵ doth remaine,
 & seeke him out in euery *part*
 140 vntill I doe his sight attaine.” ¹⁶ her love.

¹ Then.—O.B.² sweet.—O.B.³ ? MS. when. The *n* (or *re*) is
blotted out in the MS.—F. Where.—
O.B.⁴ all alone.—O.B.⁵ Part.—O.B.⁶ arise.—O.B.⁷ You.—O.B.⁸ said.—O.B.⁹ There is a tag like an *s* at the end of
this word.—F.¹⁰ in Sorrow thou hast.—O.B.¹¹ My gratitude shall soon.—O.B.¹² wherein he.—O.B.¹³ No.—O.B.¹⁴ true Love.—O.B.¹⁵ wherein he.—O.B.¹⁶ Until his Sight I do obtain.—O.B.

- The Master
says he'll
- see her safe
to Padua.
- At last she
arrives
there,
- and finds
her lover
condemned
to death
unless he'll
turn Papist.
- Maudlin
walls,
- walks under
the prison
walls,
- and hears
her lover
bid farewell
to England,
- friends,
- and love.
- 144 & I," quoth hee, " will not fforsake
Sweete Maudlin in her sorrowes vp & downe ;
in wealth & woe, thy *part* Ile take,
& bring thee saffe to Padua towne."
& after many weary stepps
In Padua thé arriued saffely ¹ att the Last :
for verry ioy her harte itt leapes,
148 shee thinkes not on her *perills* ² past.
condemned hee was to dye, alas,
except he wold ffrom his religion turne ;
but rather then hee wold goe to ³ masse,
152 in ffiery fflames he vowed to burne.
now doth Maudlin weepe and waile,
her ioy changed to weeping,⁴ sorrow, greeffe &
care ;
but nothing can ⁵ her plaints *preuaile*,
156 ffor death alone must be his share.
shee walked vnder the prison walls
where her true louedoth lye & languish ⁶ in distresse ;
most ⁷ woefullye for ffood hee calls
160 when hungar did his hart oppresse ;
he sighes, & sobbs, & makes great moane ;
" farwell," he said, " sweete England, now ⁸ for eu-
ermore !
& all my ffreinds *that* haue me knowne
164 In Bristow towne with health ⁹ and store !
but most of all, ffarwell," quoth hee,
" my owne true loue,¹⁰ sweet Maudlin, whom I left
behind !
for neuer more I shall see thee.¹¹
168 woe to thy ffather Most vnkind !

¹ O.B. omits *saffely*.—F.² Sorrows.—O.B.³ would to.—O.B.⁴ O.B. omits *weeping*.—F.⁵ For nothing could.—O.B.⁶ Love did languish.—O.B.⁷ Then.—O.B.⁸ Farewel, Sweet-heart, he cry'd.—
O.B.⁹ Wealth.—O.B.¹⁰ O.B. omits *true loue*.—F.¹¹ thou wilt me see.—O.B.

- how well were I if thou were ¹ here,
 with thy ffaire hands to close vp both these² wretched
 eyes !
 my torments easye wold appeare ;
 172 My soule with ioy shall ³ scale the skyes." [page 484]
 when *Maudlin* hard her louers moane,
 her eyes with teares, her hart with sorrow, feild.⁴
 to speake with him noe meanes was knowne,⁵
 176 such greenous doome on him did passe.⁶
 then cast shee of ⁷ her Ladds attyre ;
 a maydens weede vpon her backe shee⁸ seemlye sett ;
 to ⁹ the indges house shee did enquire,
 180 & there shee did a service gett.
 shee did her duty there soe well,
 & eke soe prudently shee did her-selfe ¹⁰ behaue,
 with her in Loue her *Master* fell,
 184 his servants ffaueur he doth craue :
 "Maudlin," quoth hee, "my harts delight,
 to whome my hart in affectyon is tyed,¹¹
 breed not my death through thy despite !
 188 a ffaithfull ffreind I wilbe ¹² tryed ;
 grant me thy loue, ffaire mayd," quoth hee,
 "& att my hands ¹³ desire what tho[u] canst d[e]-
 uise,¹⁴
 & I will grant itt vnto thee,
 192 wherby thy creditt may arrise."
 "I haue [a] ¹⁵ brother, Sir," shee sayd,
 "ffor his religion is now ¹⁶ condemned to dye ;
 in Lothesome prison is he ¹⁷ Laid,
 196 opprest with care ¹⁸ and misery.

Maudlin
sorrors,

but cannot
speak to her
lover.

She dresses
again as a
girl,
takes service
in the
judge's
house,

and he falls
in love with
her,

and promises
her what-
ever she asks
him.

She asks for
the life of
her brother.
in prison for
his belief.

¹ I were if thou wert.—O.B.

² close my.—O.B.

³ would.—O.B.

⁴ Heart soon filled was.—O.B.

⁵ found.—O.B.

⁶ did on him pass.—O.B.

⁷ she put off.—O.B.

⁸ Her Maiden-weeds upon her.—O.B.

⁹ At.—O.B.

¹⁰ so well herself she did.—O.B.

¹¹ my Soul is so inclin'd.—O.B.

¹² thou shalt me.—O.B.

¹³ And then.—O.B.

¹⁴ ? MS. diuise.—F.

¹⁵ The *a* is written above the line in a
later hand.—F.

¹⁶ O.B. omits *now*.—F.

¹⁷ he is.—O.B.

¹⁸ Grief.—O.B.

- grant you ¹ my brothers [life],” ² shee sayd,
 “to you my liffe ³ & liking I will giue.”
- “He must recant or die!” 200 “that may not be,” quoth hee, “faire mayd;
 “except he turne, he cannott liue.”
- “Then let an English friar I know be sent to him.” 204 “an English ffryer there is,” shee said,
 “of learning great, & of a passing pure ⁴ liffe;
 lett him to my brother be sent,
 & hee will soone ffinish ⁵ the striffe.”
- The judge agrees. Maudlin dresses up the seaman as a friar, and sends him with a letter to her lover. 208 her *Master* granting ⁶ her request,
 the *Marriner* in ffryers weed ⁷ shee did array,
 & to her loue *that* lay distrest
 shee doth a letter straight ⁸ conuay.
 when he had read those gentle lines,
 his heauy hart was rauished with ⁹ ioye;
 where now shee was, ¹⁰ full well hee knew.
- 212 the ffryer Likewise was not coye,
 but did declare to him att large
 the enterprise his loue had taken in hand.
 the young man did the ffryer charge
- Her lover charges her 216 his loue shold straight depart the Land;
 “here is no place for her,” hee sayd,
 “but death & danger of her harmless ¹¹ liffe;
 & testing death, ¹² I was betrayd,
- 220 but ¹³ ffearfull flames must end our striffe,
 for ere I will my faith deny,
 & sweare to ¹⁴ ffollow my selfe damned ANTI-
 CHRIST, ¹⁵
 I will ¹⁶ yeeld my body for to dye,
 224 & ¹⁷ liue in heauen with the hyst.”

¹ me.—O.B.
² Life.—O.B.
³ And now to you my Love.—O.B.
⁴ passing pure of.—O.B.
⁵ finish soon.—O.B.
⁶ granted.—O.B.
⁷ Weeds.—O.B.
⁸ did a Letter soon.—O.B.
⁹ His Heart was ravish'd with pleasant.—O.B.

¹⁰ is.—O.B.
¹¹ But woful Death and Danger of her.—O.B.
¹² Professing Truth.—O.B.
¹³ And.—O.B.
¹⁴ MS. to to.—F.
¹⁵ And swear myself to follow damned Atheist.—O.B.
¹⁶ I'll.—O.B.
¹⁷ To.—O.B.

- “O Sir,” the gentle fryer sayd,
 “for your sweet loue reccant, & saue your wicked
 liffe.”¹
- 228 “a woefull match,” quoth hee, “is made,
 where chr[i]st is left to win² a wiffe.”
 when shee had wrought³ all meanes shee might
 to saue her ffreind, & *that* shee saw itt⁴ wold not bee,
 then of the iudge shee claimed her right
- 232 to [dye]⁵ the death as well as hee.
 when no *perswassyon* wold⁶ *preuaile*,
 nor change her mind in any thing *that* shee had⁷
 sayd,
 shee was with him condemned to dye,
- 236 and for them both one Fire was made,⁸
 &⁹ arme in arme most Ioyffullye
 these louers twaine vnto the fflyer they¹⁰ did goe.
 the marriner most ffaith-ffullye
- 240 was likewise¹¹ partner of their woe :
 but when the Iudges vnderstood
 the ffaith-ffull ffreindshipp *that*¹² did in them re-
 maine,
- they saued their liues, & afterward
- 244 to England sent them home¹³ againe.
 Now was their sorrow turned to Ioy,
 And ffaithffull louers had now¹⁴ their harts desire ; [page 485]
 their paines soe well they did imploy,
- 248 god¹⁵ granted *that* they did require ;
 & when they were¹⁶ to England come,
 & in merry Bristowe arriued att the Last,

The seaman
urges him
to recant.

He refuses.

Then
Maudlin
resolves to
die with
him,

and both
walk to the
stake with
the seaman.

But the
judges

pardon them
and send
them home
to England.

They get
back to
Bristol.

¹ Consent thereto, and end the strife.
—O.B.

² gain.—O.B.

³ us'd.—O.B.

⁴ To save his Life yet all.—O.B.

⁵ dye.—O.B.

⁶ could.—O.B.

⁷ thing she.—O.B.

⁸ MS. condemned to dye. one Fire

was made.—O.B.

⁹ Yea.—O.B.

¹⁰ O.B. omits *they*.—F.

¹¹ Two strokes for the first *i*.—F.

¹² O.B. omits *that*.—F.

¹³ back.—O.B.

¹⁴ have.—O.B.

¹⁵ The *d* has a tag to it.—F.

¹⁶ did.—O.B.

find
 Maudlin's
 father dead,
 her mother
 joyful to see
 her,
 and they
 are married
 at once,
 the seaman
 giving her
 away.

great Ioy there was to all & some
 252 *that* heard the danger they had past.
 her ffather, hee was dead, god wott,
 & eke her mother was ioyfull of¹ her sight ;
 their wishes shée denyed not,
 256 but weded them with harts delight.
 her gentle *Master* shée² desired
 to be her ffather, & att Church to giue her then.
 itt was ffulfilled as shée required,
 260 vnto³ the ioy of all good men. ffinis.

¹ at.—O.B.² he.—O.B.³ To.—O.B.

Come pretty wanton.

A LOVER praying for pity, would fain know the reason of his idol's indifference. If she will not look at him, yet will she hear him? If she will not hear him, will she look at him and his tears?

The poor fellow is in a weak condition; and his verses are such as might be expected.

<p>COME: pretty wanton, tell me why thou canst not loue as well as I? sett thee downne, sett thee downe, sett thee downe, and <i>thou</i> shalt see 4 why thus vnkind thou art to me.</p>	<p>Tell me why you won't love me.</p>
<p>My dearest sweet, be not soe Coy, for thou alone art all my Ioy. sett thee downe &c. 8 <i>that</i> itt is hye time to pittye mee.</p>	<p>You alone are my joy.</p>
<p>O gentle loue! be not yett gone; leaue me not heere distrest alone! sett thee downe &c. 12 <i>that</i> I delight in none but thee.</p>	<p>Go not yet;</p>
<p>Lett me not crye to thee in vaine! Looke but vpon me once againe! if a looke, if a looke, if a looke thou wilt not lend, 16 lett but thy gentle eares attend.</p>	<p>look on me once more!</p>
<p>If thou doe stopp those gentle eares, Looke but vpon these cruell teares which doe fforce me still to crye 20 'pittye me, sweet, or else I dye!' <i>ffinis.</i></p>	<p>Pity me, or I die.</p>
<p>VOL. III.</p>	<p>C C</p>

Here is a ffoolle:¹

THIS piece, as Mr. Furnivall notes, was printed in the first edition of the *Reliques* with the title of "The Aspiring Shepherd." (Cf. "The Steadfast Shepherd," "The Shepherd's Resolution," &c.)

The lover here holds his head up. He is not for everybody. He must have some rarer beauty for his affection, not of the common sort or such as will smile upon anybody.

Shall I love one who's loved by the herd? No.	4	HEE: is a ffoole <i>that</i> baselye dallyes where eche peasant mates with him. shall I haunt the thronged valleys, hauinge noble hills to climbe? no! no! those clownes be scared with ffrownes shall neuer my affectyon ² gayne! & such as you, ffond ffooles, adew, 8 <i>that</i> ³ seeke to captiue me in vaine!
Give me one whom buzzards daren't gaze at, who needs effort to win.	12 16	I doe scorne to vow a dutye where eche lustfull Ladd may woe. giue me those whose seemlye ⁴ bewtye, bussards dare not gazt ⁵ vnto. shee itt is affords my blisse ffor whome I will reffuse no payne; & such as you, fond fooles, adew, 16 <i>that</i> seeke to captiue me in vaine! ffinis.

¹ Printed in the *Reliques*, iii. 253, (1st ed.), with the title of "The Aspiring Shepherd."—F.

² esteeme.—*Rel.*

³ Ye.—*Rel.*

⁴ sun-like.—*Rel.*

⁵ gaze.—P.

Lulla : Lulla :

A LOVER here, parting from the object of his affections, would lull to sleep all doubts of his truth and constancy. He is going away; but let her put a calm unruffled faith in him. The verses are but commonplace.

	BY : constraint if I depart,—	If forced to go,
	sing lullabee,—	
	I leaue with [thee] behind, my constant hart.	I leave my heart with thee.
4	placed with thine, there lett itt rest	
	till itt by death be disposest,	
	sing lulla lullabee ! loue, liue loyall till I dye.	
	doe not any wayes distrust—	Never doubt my
8	sing lullabye—	
	that I shall proue inconstant or vniust. ¹	constancy.
	though banishment a while I try,	
	yett shall affectyon neuer dye.	
12	[sing lulla &c. (<i>a line pared away here</i>)]	
	If by absence I be fforcet—	[page 486] While absent from thee
	sing lullabee—	
	a litle while to be deuorcet	
16	ffrom thee whose brest can testifye	
	where my subiects hart doth Lye,	
	Lulla &c.	

¹ One stroke too many in the MS.—F.

I crave only
thy
constancy
to me.

constancye is all I craue—
20 sing lullabee;—
performed by thee, my wish I haue;
If I to thee vnconstant proue,
lett death my liffe ffrom earth remoue.
24 Lulla &c.
ffinis.

A Louer off Late :¹

HERE a lover asserts and proclaims his independence. He has loved, and been rejected; and here he makes up his mind to bear his rejection well. He gives the lady up. Let who will, win her; he will not.

- A LOUER of late was I, I was lately
in love
 ffor Cupid wold haue itt soe,
 the boy *that* hath neuer an eye,
 4 as euery man doth know.
 I sighed, and sobbed, and cryed alas
 ffor her *that* laught & called me asse, ²& called me with a girl,
and she
called me an
ass.
 assee,
 & called me asse ∴ for her *that* &c.²
- 8 Then knew not I what to doe
 when I see itt was ³vaine
 a lady soe coy to woove,
 & ⁴gaue me the asse soe plaine.
- 12 yett would [I] her asse *that* I should bee,⁵ If she'd have
had me, I'd
like to have
been her ass.
 soe shee would helpe & beare with mee, ⁶& beare &c.
 soe shee &c.⁶
- And I were as faine ⁷as shee,
 16 & shee were as kind ⁸as I, If we could
have
changed
places,
I'd have
loved her.
 what payre cold haue mad[e] ⁹as wee

¹ Printed in the *Reliques*, iii. 176 (1st ed.).—F.

²⁻² Omitted in *Rel.*—F.

³ saw it was all in.—*Rel.*

⁴ Who.—*Rel.*

⁵ Yet would I her asse freeely bee.—*Rel.*

⁶⁻⁶ Omitted in *Rel.*—F.

⁷ An' I were as faire.—*Rel.*

⁸ Or shee were as fond.—*Rel.*

⁹ made.—P.

soe prettye a sumpathye?
 I was as kind¹ as shee was faire,
 20 but for all this wee cold not paire; ² we cold &c.
 wee cold not paire, but ffor all &c.²

But as she
 won't have
 me,

Paire with her *that* will, ffor mee!
 with her I will neuer paire
 24 *that* cunningly can be coy,
 for being a litle faire.

why, let her
 scorn away.
 I'm myself
 again.

the Asse Ile leaue to her disdane,
 & now I am, my selfe againe, ³ my selfe &c.
 28 & now I am, my selfe againe.³ ffinis.

¹ fond.—*Rel.*

²⁻² Omitted in *Rel.*—*F.*

³⁻³ Omitted in *Rel.*—*F.*

[“*Panders come away,*” printed in *Lo. & Hum. Songs*, p. 104, follows
 here in the *MS.* p. 486-7.]

Great or Proude.

HERE again a lover protests his independence. He will not be derided by anybody, however great she may be. He will act like a rational being.

Man by reason should be guided.

But is he? Our dislikes are proverbially inscrutable—are not the work of conscious reason. We cannot say why we do not like “Dr. Fell” or Sabidius; but we do not like them. Perhaps our likes are not always more intelligible. Can we always say why we like Sabidius? Pallas Athené and Aphrodité were never close friends.

<p style="text-align: center;">GREAT or proud, if shee deryde mee, lett her goe! I will¹ not dispaire! ere to-morrow Ile prouide mee</p> <p>4 one as great,² lesse proud, more ffaire. he that seeks loue to constraine, shall haue but Labor ffor his paine.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">And yett strongly will I proue her</p> <p>8 whome I meane to haue indeede. if shee constant proue, Ile loue her; & if ffalse, Ile not proceede. ought from mee, <i>that</i> may constraine³</p> <p>12 my mind & reason to be twaine!</p>	<p>If my love sneers at me, I'll get a fresh one to-morrow.</p> <p>But before taking her, I'll prove her.</p>
---	---

¹ Read *Ile*.—Dyce.

² good.—P.

³ Away from me! what may constrain.
Query.—P. Ought = out, *interj.*—F.

No one
should stand
disdain.

Man by reason shold be guided,
& not loue where hees disdained;

If *that* once he be deryded,

Any girl
can be
matched by
some other.

16 others loue may be obtained.

hold you not one mayd soe rare;

theres none *that* liues without compare.

ffinis.

[*Two verses of "A Dainty Ducke," printed in Lo. & Hum. Songs, p. 108, follow here; and the next leaf of the MS., containing the beginning of "The Spanish Lady," has been torn out.*]

The Spanish Ladies Love.¹

PROF. CHILD, in his *English and Scottish Ballads*, prints his copy of this ballad "from the *Garland of Good Will*, as reprinted by the Percy Society, xxx. 125. Other copies, slightly different, in *A Collection of Old Ballads*, ii. 191, and in Percy's *Reliques*, ii. 246."

"Percy conjectures," Prof. Child adds, "that this ballad took its rise from one of those descents made on the Spanish coast in the time of Queen Elizabeth. The weight of tradition is decidedly, perhaps entirely, in favour of the hero's having been one of Essex's comrades in the Cadiz expedition, but which of his gallant captains achieved the double conquest of the Spanish Lady is by no means so satisfactorily determined. Among the candidates put forth are, Sir Richard Levison of Trentham, Staffordshire, Sir John Popham of Littlecot, Wilts, Sir Urias Legh of Adlington, Cheshire, and Sir John Bolle of Thorpe Hall, Lincolnshire. The right of the last to this distinction has been recently warmly contended for, and, as is usual in similar cases, strong circumstantial evidence is urged in his favour. The reader will judge for himself of its probable authenticity.

"On Sir John Bolle's departure from Cadiz,' it is said, 'the Spanish Lady sent as presents to his wife a profusion of jewels and other valuables, among which was her portrait, drawn in green, plate, money, and other treasure.' Some of these articles² are maintained to be still in possession of the family, and also a portrait of Sir John, drawn in 1596, at the age of thirty-six, in which he wears the gold chain given him by his enamoured prisoner.³ See the *Times* newspaper of April 30 and May 1, 1846 (the latter article cited in *Notes and Queries*, ix. 573), and

¹ Percy heads this "Fragment of the Spanish Lady."—F. In the printed *Collection of Old Ballads* 12^{mo} Vol. 2. pag. 192.—P.

² The necklace is still extant in the possession of a member of my family, and in the house whence I write (Coldrey, Hants). Charles Lee, in *The Times*, May 1, 1846.—F.

³ The portrait is still in the possession

of his descendant, Captain Birch. Illingworth's *Topographical account of Scampton, with anecdotes of the family of Bolles*. That portrait is now in the possession of Captain Birch's successor, Thomas Bosvile Bosvile, Esq., of Ravensfield Park, Yorkshire, my brother, and may be seen by any one. Charles Lee, *ib. supra*. Dr. Rimbault has reprinted Mr. Lee's letter in his *Musical Illustrations*, p. 23-4.—F.

the *Quarterly Review*, Sept. 1846, Art. iii. The literary merits of the ballad are also considered in the *Edinburgh Review* of April, 1846.

“Shenstone has essayed, in his *Moral Tale of Love and Honour*, to bring out ‘the *Spanish Ladye and her Knight* in less grovelling accents than the simple guise of ancient record;’ while Wordsworth, in a more reverential spirit, has taken this noble old romance as the model of his *Armenian Lady’s Love*.” (Child.)

Dr. Rimbault has printed the tune of this ballad at p. 72 of his *Musical Illustrations*. He says, “the tune . . . is preserved in the Skene MS.; in ‘The Quaker’s Opera, Performed at Lee and Harper’s Booth in Bartholomew Fair, 1728;’ and in ‘The Jovial Crew, 1731.’ Our copy is taken from the ballad operas, and altered from three-four time to common time, upon the authority of the Skene MS.” Mr. Chappell also prints the tune at p. 187 of his *Popular Music*, and notes early quotations of the ballad in *Cupid’s Whirligig*, 1616; Brome’s *Northern Lasse*, 1632, &c., and a parody of it in Rowley’s *A Match at Midnight*, 1633.

In order to complete the story of the ballad, we add here the portion of it in *Roxburghe Ballads*, vol. ii. p. 406, collated with the *Collection of Old Ballads*, vol. ii. second edition, 1726, p. 191, which corresponds to the part torn out of the Folio MS.—F.

The Spanish Lady’s Love.

Will you hear a *Spanish Lady*,
 how she woo’d an *English Man*;
 Garments gay as rich may be,
 bedeckt¹ with jewels, had she on;
 Of a comely countenance
 and grace was she;
 Both by birth and Parentage
 of high degree.

As his prisoner there he kept her,
 in his hands her life did lye;
Cupid’s Bands did tye them faster,
 by the liking of an Eye:

¹ Deck’d.—O.B.

In his courteous company
 was all her joy :
 To favour him in any thing
 she was not coy.

But at last there came commandment
 for to set all ladies free,
 With their jewels still adorned :
 none to do them injury ;
 O then, said this Lady gay,¹
 full woe is me,
 O let me still sustain this kind
 Captivity.

Gallant captain, take some pittie
 on a woman in distress,
 Leave me not within this City,
 for to dye in heaviness :
 Thou hast set this present day
 my body free,
 But my heart in prison still
 remaine ² with thee.

How should'st thou, fair Lady, love me,
 whom thou know'st thy Country hate,³
 Thy fair words make ⁴ me suspect thee :
 Serpents lye where flowers grow.
 All the harm I think on thee,
 most courteous Knight,
 God grant upon my Head the same
 may fully light ⁵ ;

Blessed be the time and season
 that thou ⁶ came on *Spanish* ground ;

If our ffoes you may ⁷ be termed,
 gentle ffoes wee haue you ffound ;
 with our cittye ⁸ you haue woon our harts eche one ;
 4 then to your Country beare away that ⁹ is your owne."

You've won
 my city and
 heart too.
 Take back
 with you
 your own.

¹ most mild.—O.B.

² Remains.—O.B.

³ Country's Foe.—O.B.

⁴ speech makes.—O.B.

⁵ lght.—O.B.

⁶ you.—O.B.

⁷ If you may our Foes.—Rox. and O.B.

⁸ City.—O.B.

⁹ what.—O.B.

"Nay, Lady,
stay in
Spain,
you'll find
plenty of
lovers
there."

"Rest you still, most gallant Ladye !

rest you still, & weepe noe more !

of faire Louers there is ¹ plenty ;

8 Spaine doth yeelde a ² wonderous store."

"Spanyards ffraught with ielousye wee often ³ ffind,
but Englishmen through all the world are counted
Kind.

No. I
love you
alone ;

"Leaue me not vnto a Spanyard,

12 you alone inioy ⁴ my hart ;

I am louely, young, and tender ;

loue likewise is ⁵ my desert.

let me serue
you night
and day.

still to serue ⁶ thee day & night, my mind is prest ;

16 the wiffe of euery Englishman is counted blest."

"As a
soldier I
can't take
you."

"Itt wold be a shame, faire Ladye,

ffor to beare a woman hence ;

English souldiers neuer carry

20 any such without offence."

Then I'll be
your page.

"I will quicklye change my selfe, if itt be soe,

& like a page Ile ffollow thee whersoere ⁷ Thou goe."

"I've no
money to
keep you
with."

"I haue neither gold nor siluer

24 to maintaine thee in this case,

& to trauell is great charges,

as you know, in euery place."

My jewels
and money
are yours.

"My chaines and Iewells euery one shalbe thy owne,

28 & eke 500⁸ in gold *that* Lyes vnknowne."

"The sea is
full of
danger."

"On the seas are many dangers ;

many stormes doe there arrise,

¹ you have.—O.B.

² you.—O.B.

³ oft do.—O.B.

⁴ Thou alone enjoy'st.—O.B.

⁵ is likewise.—O.B.

⁶ save.—O.B.

⁷ Where-e'er.—O.B.

⁸ Ten thousand Pounds.—O.B.

- which wilbe to Ladyes dreadffull,
 32 & fforce teares ffrom watterye eyes.”
 “well in worth I will endure extremitye,¹
 for I cold find my ² hart to lose my liffe for thee.”
 “curteous Ladye, leane this ffancye.³
 36 here comes all *that* breakes ⁴ the striffe :
 I in England haue already
 a sweet woman to my wiffe.
 I will not ffalsifye my vow for gold nor gaine,
 40 nor yett ffor all the ffairest dames *that* liue in Spaine.”
 “O how happy is *that* woman
that enioyes soe true a ffreind !
 many dayes of ioy god send you !⁵
 44 of my suite Ile ⁶ make an end.
 vpon ⁷ my knees I pardon craue for this ⁸ offence
 which loue & true affectyon did first commence.
 “comend me to thy Louely ladye ;
 48 beare to her a ⁹ Chaine of gold
 & ¹⁰ these braceletts ffor a token,
 greeuing *that* I was soe bold.
 all my iewells in Like sort take ¹¹ with thee ;
 52 these ¹² are fitting ffor thy wiffe, & ¹³ not ffor mee.
 “I will spend my dayes in prayer ;
 loue & all her ¹⁴ Lawes deffye ;
 in a nunery will I ¹⁵ shrowd me,
 56 ffar ffrom other ¹⁶ companye ;
 but ere my prayers haue an end, be sure of this,
 to pray ffor thee & ffor thy Loue I will nott misse.

I would lose
my life for
you.

“Cease your
offers, Lady,

I have a
wife in
England,

and will be
true to her.”

Happy
she !

I end my
suit.

Give your
lady my
chain

and jewels.

I will seek
refuge in

a nunery,

and pray for
you and
your love.

¹ Well in Troth I shall endure Ex-
treamly.—O.B.

² in.—O.B.

³ Folly.—O.B.

⁴ breeds.—O.B.

⁵ Many happy Days God lend her.—
O.B.

⁶ I.—O.B.

⁷ On.—O.B.

⁸ my.—O.B.

⁹ this.—O.B.

¹⁰ With.—O.B.

¹¹ Take thou.—O.B.

¹² For they.—O.B.

¹³ But.—O.B.

¹⁵ I will.—O.B.

¹⁴ his.—O.B.

¹⁶ any.—O.B.

" Thus ffarwell, most gallant captaine,
 60 & ffarwell ¹ my harts content!
 count not spanish Ladyes wanton
 though to thee my loue ² was bent.
 Ioy & true prosperitye be still ³ with thee!"
 64 "the Like ffall euer to ⁴ thy share, most ffaire Ladye!"

All joy to
you!

¹ Farewel too.—O.B.

² Mind.—O.B.

³ Remain.—O.B.

⁴ fall unto.—O.B.

St. Andrew Barton : ¹

THIS ballad is on an event of considerable historical importance, on one, if not the first, of the causes that led to the war between James IV. of Scotland and Henry VIII. of England, and which ended in the death of James at Flodden Field. Henry's motive in desiring to have Andrew Barton and his ships captured cannot be put down to the cause to which the prejudiced John Lesley, Bishop of Ross, attributes his interference in the Low Countries (*Historie of Scotland*, A. D. 1436-1561, Bannatyne Club, 1830, p. 83).

“Here is to be considered and weile noted, the first motion of the gryit trubles quhilk eftiruart did fall betuix the tuo princis of Scotland and Yngland, quhilk happinit principale becaus King Henry the aucht of Yngland, being ane young man left be his fader with greit welth and riches, wes varray desierous to haif weiris quhairin he mycht exerce his youthhed, thinking thairby to [dilate] his dominions.”

Henry's order to take Barton can only have sprung from the injuries which his subjects received from that sailor; and there can be little doubt that in those early years after 1500, a privateer, as Barton was, took whatever the Lord put in his way, whether neutral's or foe's, and pocketed the proceeds without qualms of conscience. He would perform the service his sovereign sent him on, and then take care of himself.

Andrew Barton and his brother Robert were evidently James IV.'s right hand at sea; and Andrew's character may be judged of by the way in which he took revenge on the Dutch for their piratical doings against the Scotch. Lesley tells us that “ane greit and costly ship, quhilk had bene apon the Kingis expensis, was compleit” in 1506,² and after a preliminary sail in her by the King—

¹ In the printed *Collection of Old Ballads* 1727, Vol. I. p. 159, N. xx. Very different from the printed ballad: but containing some things there want-

ing; yet a few stanzas may be better given from the other.—P.

² James was a great shipbuilder: see Mr. Gairdner's Preface to his *Letters and*

“wes schortlie thaireftir send furth agane to the seas with sundre vailyeant gentill men into her aganis the Holanderis, quha had takin and spollyeit divers Scotis ships, and crewally had murdrest and cassin ourburd the merchauntis and passingeris being thairintill; bot for revenge of the samyn, Andro Bartone did tak mony shippis of that countrey, and fillit certane pipis with the heidis of the Holandaris, and send unto the King in Scotland, for dew punishment and revenge of thair crueltie.—*Lesley*, p. 74.

After this, Barton kept at sea and greatly pestered, if he did not plunder, the English. What followed is told in different ways by the English and Scotch. For the former we will take Percy's quotation from Guthrie's *Peerage*; for the latter, *Lesley's* account. And first, says Guthrie:

“The transaction that did the greatest honour to the Earl of Surrey and his family at this time (A.D. 1511) was their behaviour in the case of Barton, a Scotch sea-officer. This gentleman's father having suffered by sea from the Portuguese, he had obtained letters of marque for his two sons to make reprisals upon the subjects of Portugal. It is extremely probable that the court of Scotland granted these letters with no very honest intention. The council-board of England, at which the Earl of Surrey held the chief place, was daily pestered with complaints from the sailors and merchants that Barton, who was called Sir Andrew Barton, under pretence of searching for Portuguese goods, interrupted the English navigation. Henry's situation at that time rendered him backward from breaking with Scotland, so that their complaints were but coldly received. The Earl of Surrey, however, could not smother his indignation, but gallantly declared at the council-board, that while he had an estate that could furnish out a ship, or a son that was capable of commanding one, the narrow seas should not be infested.

“Sir Andrew Barton, who commanded the two Scotch ships, had the reputation of being one of the ablest sea-officers of his time. By his depredations he had amassed great wealth, and his ships were very richly laden. Henry, notwithstanding his situation, could not refuse the generous offer made by the Earl of Surrey. Two ships were immediately fitted out, and put to sea with letters of marque, under his two sons, Sir Thomas and

Papers illustrative of the Reigns of Richard III. and Henry VII., vol. ii. Notices of the Bartons also occur in these volumes.

Sir Edward Howard. After encountering a great deal of foul weather, Sir Thomas came up with the *Lion*, which was commanded by Sir Andrew Barton in person; and Sir Edward came up with the *Union*, Barton's other ship (called by Hall, *The Bark of Scotland*). The engagement which ensued was extremely obstinate on both sides; but at last the fortune of the Howards prevailed. Sir Andrew was killed, fighting bravely, and encouraging his men with his whistle to hold out to the last; and the two Scotch ships, with their crews, were carried into the River Thames (Aug. 2, 1511).

Now hear Lesley:

“In the moneth of Junij, Andro Bartone, being one the sey in weirfair contrar the Portingallis, aganis quhome he had ane lettre of mark, Sir Edmond Haward, Lord Admirall of Ingland, and Lord Thomas Haward, sone and air to the Erle of Surry, past furth at the King of Inglandis command, with certane of his best schippis; and the said Andro being in his vayage sayling towart Scotland, haveand onelie bot one schipe and ane barke, thay sett apoun at the Downis, and at the first entre did make signe unto thame that thair wes friendship standing betuix the tua realmes, and thairfoir thocht thame to be freindis; quhairwith thay, na thing movit, did cruelly invaid, and he manfullie and currageously defendit, quhair thair wes mony slane, and Andro himself sair woundit that he diet shortlye; and his schip callit the *Lyou*, and the bark callit *Jennypirroyne*, quhilkis with the Scottis men that wes levand wer hed to Londoun, and keipit thair as presonaris in the bischop of York hous, and eftir wes send hame in Scotland. Quhen that the knalege herof come to the King, he send incontynent ane harald to the Kinge of Yngland with lettres requiring dress for the slauchter of Andro Bartane, with the schippis to be randerit agane, utherwayis it mycht be ane occasioun to break the leage and peace contractit betuix thame.¹ To the quhilk it wes ansuerit be the King of Ingland, that the slauchter being ane pirat, as he allegit, suld be na break to the peace; yit nochttheles he suld caus commissioneris meit upoun the bordouris, quhair thay suld treat upoun that and all uther enormities betuix the tua realmes.”—*Historie of Scotland*, p. 82–83.

Accordingly, says Lesley, p. 87, in A. D. 1513

¹ See the remonstrance shortly abstracted, and referred to, in Prof. Brewer's Calendar, *temp.* Henry VIII.; also the entries as to James's repeated complaints to the King of Denmark about Barton's slaughter, &c.—F.

“The commissioners of baith the realmes, as wes appointit be Doctor West, meit on the bordouris in the moneth of Junij, qubair the wrangs done unto Scotland mony wayis, speciallie of the slauchter of Andro Bartone and takin of his schippis, ware confessit. . . . bot the commissioneris of Ingland wuld not consent to mak ony redress or restitucione”

till they thought that Henry would be clear of his French war. But James, unwilling to lose such a favourable chance of attacking England,—empty of troops, as he thought, the King and his generals away in France,—sent a herald to Henry in his camp at Turenne, alleging, among other things, the

“slauchter of Andro Bartane by your awine command, quha thane haid nocht offendit to yow nor your leigeis, unredressed, and breking of the amitie in that behailf by your deid; and withholding of oure schippis and artillarie to your use.” (*Lesley*, p. 89),

and, notwithstanding Henry's answer, declared to him war. This did not trouble Henry much, for he knew that the Howard who (with his father) had taken Barton, could deal with Barton's master too. What Lord Thomas himself thought of the matter may be seen from his message to James: that as high-admiral, and one who had helped to take Barton, he was ready to justify the death of that pirate, for which purpose he would lead the van, and there his enemies would find him, expecting as little mercy as he meant to grant. ‘No quarter’ was the word. What followed has already been told by Mr. Hales in prose (vol. i. p. 203–9), and in verse by our *Scotish Feilde*, i. 212, and *Flodden Feilde*, i. 334. Lancashire and Cheshire did the deed, and Scotland's pride lay low. Andrew Barton's master followed his man.

As to the details mentioned in our ballad, we can only repeat Percy's words:

“I take many of the little circumstances of the story to be real, because I find one of the most unlikely to be not very remote from the truth. In Pt. 2, v. 156, it is said that England had before ‘but two ships of war.’ Now the GREAT HARRY had been built but seven years before, viz. in 1504: which ‘was,

properly speaking, the first ship in the English navy. Before this period, when the prince wanted a fleet, he had no other expedient but hiring ships from the merchants.' *Hume*."

The present ballad was printed by Percy in his *Reliques*, vol. ii. p. 180, with some deficiencies (as he calls them), supplied from a black-letter copy, in the Pepys collection, of the "vulgar ballad, which is evidently modernised and abridged from" that in the Folio. Prof. Child printed Percy's version in his *English and Scottish Ballads*, vol. vii. p. 57; and at p. 201 he also printed the said "vulgar ballad:" *A True Relation of the Life and Death of Sir Andrew Barton, a Pirate and Rover on the Seas*. The Professor says:

"This copy of *Sir Andrew Barton* is to be found in *Old Ballads* (1723) vol. i. 159, Ritson's *Ancient Songs* ii. 204, Moore's *Pictorial Book of Ancient Ballad Poetry*, p. 256, and *Early Naval Ballads of England*, Percy Society, vol. ii. p. 4, with only exceedingly trifling variations. We have followed the last, where the ballad is given from a black-letter copy in the British Museum, 'printed by and for W. O., and sold by the booksellers.'—F.

[Part I.]

AS : itt beffell in M[i]dsummer time
 when burds singe sweetlye on euery tree,
 our noble King, King Henery the 8th,¹
 ouer the riuer of Thames past hee.

To Henry
 VIII.

¹ For the above three simple and natural lines, Percy actually substituted in his *Reliques* the four following, from the printed copy in the Pepys collection:

When Flora with her fragrant flowers
 Bedeckt the earth so trim and gaye,
 And Neptune with his daintye showers
 Came to present the monthe of Maye.

Well did Prof. Child say in his Introduction to this Ballad, "We would fain believe that nothing except a defect in the manuscript could have reconciled the Bishop to adopting the four lines with which the ballad now begins" (*Engl. and*

Scot. Ballads, vii. 56). The remaining four lines of Percy's first stanza, given without any of his inverted commas to mark them as altered from his MS., are:

King Henrye rode to take the ayre,
 Over the river of Thames past hee;
 When eighty merchants of London came,
 And downe they knelt upon their
 knee.

After this, it may be well to carry the collation right through, though it involves waste of time, loss of money, and vexation of spirit.—F.

- hee was no sooner ouer the riuer,
 downe in a fforrest to take the ayre,
 but 80 merchants of London cittye
 8 came kneeling before *King* Henery there :
- " O yee are welcome, rich merchants,
 [Good saylors, welcome unto me¹ !]"
 they swore² by the rood thé were saylers good, [page 491]
 12 but rich merchants they cold not bee ;
 " to ffrance nor fflanders dare³ we nott passe,
 nor Burdeaux⁴ voyage wee dare not ffare,⁵
 & all ffor a ffalse robber⁶ *that* lyes on the seas,
 16 & robb⁷ vs of our merchants ware."
- King* HENERY was stout, & he turned him about,⁸
 & swore by the Lord *that* was mickle of might,
 " I thought he had not beene in the world throughout,⁹
 20 *that* durst haue wrought¹⁰ England such vnright."
 but euer they¹¹ sighed, and said—alas !—
 vnto¹² *King* HARRY this answeere¹³ againe¹⁴
 " he is a proud Scott *that* will¹⁵ robb vs all¹⁶
 24 if wee were 20 shipp¹⁷ and hee but one.¹⁸ "
- Henry asks
 his Lords,
 " who'll
 fetch that
 traitor to
 me ? "
 28 The *King* looket ouer his left shoulder,
 amongst his Lords & Barrons soe ffree¹⁹ :
 " haue I neuer Lord²⁰ in all my realme
 will ffetch yond traitor vnto mee ? "

¹ From the *Reliques*. The MS. is pared away, and the tops of letters left don't suit either of Percy's lines.—F. For sailors good are welcome to me.—P.

² MS. pared away, but read by Percy.—F.

³ dare we pass.—P. and *Rel.*

⁴ & to Bourdeaux.—P.

⁵ dare we fare.—P. and *Rel.*

⁶ a rover.—*Rel.*

⁷ s added by P.—F. Who robb.—*Rel.*

⁸ frownd, and turned him round.—

Rel.

⁹ *Rel.* omits *throughout*.—F.

¹⁰ us.—P.

¹¹ The merchants.—*Rel.*

¹² And to.—P.

¹³ thus answered.—P.

¹⁴ And thus they did their answer frame.—*Rel.*

¹⁵ would.—P.

¹⁶ that robbes on the seas.—*Rel.*

¹⁷ Were we 20 ships.—P.

¹⁸ And Sir Andrew Barton is his name.—*Rel.*

¹⁹ And an angry looke then looked hee.—*Rel.*

²⁰ a Lord.—P.

- “yes, *that* dare I!” says my Lord Chareles HOWARD,¹ “I,” says
 neere to the King wheras² hee did stand³; Lord
 Howard,
 “If *that* your græce will⁴ giue me leaue,
 32 my selfe wilbe the only man.”
- “⁵ thou shalt haue 600⁶ men,” saith our King,
 “& chuse them out of my realme soe ffree;
 besids Marriners and boyes,⁷
 36 to guide⁸ the great shipp on the sea.”
 “He goe speake with Sir ANDREW,” sais Charles, my “I’ll bring
 Lord Haward; you Sir An-
 drew Barton
 “vpon the sea, if hee be there,
 I will bring him & his shipp to shore,
 40 or before my prince I will neuer come neere.⁹” and his
 ship.”
- the ffirst of all my Lord did call,¹⁰ Lord
 Howard
 a noble gunner hee was one¹¹; chooses an
 old gunner,
 this man was 60¹² yeeres and ten,
 44 & Peeter¹³ Simon was his name. Peter Simon,
 “Peeter,” sais hee, “I must sayle to the sea
 to seeke out an enemye; god be my speed!¹⁴”
 before all others I haue chosen thee;
 48 of a 100^d gunners thoust be my head.¹⁵”

¹ lord Howard sayes.—*Rel.*² where.—P.³ Yea, that dare I with heart and hand.—*Rel.*⁴ it please your Grace to.—P.C., P., and *Rel.*⁵ This stanza Percy alters to:Thou art but yong; the king replied:
Yond Scott hath numbred manye a
yeare,“Trust me, my liege, He make him quail,
Or before my prince I will never
appeare.”Then bowemen and gunners thou shalt
have,And chuse them over my realme so free;
Besids good mariners, and shipp-boyes,
To guide the great shipp on the sea.—*Rel.* ii. 181.⁶ a hundred.—P.C., P.⁷ good sailors and ship boys.—P.C., P.⁸ a, *al. ed.*—P.⁹ appear.—P.¹⁰ The first man, that Lord Howard
chose.—*Rel.*¹¹ the ablest gunner in all the Realm.
—P.C., P. Was the ablest gunner in
all the rea'me.—*Rel.*¹² three-score.—P. Though he was
threescore.—*Rel.*¹³ Good Peter.—*Rel.*¹⁴ Peter, sayd he, I must to the sea,
To bring home a traytor live or dead.
—*Rel.*¹⁵ to be the Head.—P. to be head.—
Rel.

- who can
shoot close
to his mark. 52 “ my *Lord*,” sais hee, “ if you ¹ haue chosen mee
of a 100^d gunners to be the head,
hange me att ² your maine-mast tree
if I misse my marke past 3 pence bread.³ ”
 Then he
chooses a
noble
bowman,
 William
Horsley, 56 The next of all my *Lord* he did call,⁴
a noble bowman hee was one ⁵ ;
In yorekeshire was this ⁶ gentleman borne,
& william Horsley was his name.
 “ Horsley,” says ⁷ hee, “ I must sayle to the sea ⁸
to seeke out an enemye ; god be my speede ⁹ !
before all others I haue chosen thee ;
60 of a 100 bowemen thoust be my head.¹⁰ ”
 “ My *Lord*,” sais hee, “ if you ¹¹ haue chosen mee
of a 100^d bowemen to be they head,¹²
hang me att your mainemast tree ¹³
64 if I misse my marke past 12^d ¹⁴ bread.”
 with pikes, and gunnes, & bowemen bold,
this ¹⁵ Noble HOWARD is gone to the sea
on the day before Midsummer euen,¹⁶
 and to sea
he goes, 68 & out att ¹⁷ Thames mouth sayled they.¹⁸
They had not sayled dayes 3 ¹⁹
vpon their Iourney ²⁰ they ²¹ tooke in hand,
but there they ²² mett with a Noble shipp,
 He soon
meets
a ship, 72 & stoutely made itt both stay ²³ & stand.

¹ If you, my lord.—*Rel.*

² Then hang me up on.—*Rel.*

³ i.e. breadth.—P. marke one shilling bread'th.—*Rel.*

⁴ My lord then chose a bowman rare.—*Rel.*

⁵ A bowman who had gained fame.—P. Whose active hands had gained fame! From the pr. copy.—*Rel.*

⁶ he was a.—*Rel.*

⁷ A letter blotted out before the *a* in the MS.—F. sayd.—*Rel.*

⁸ must with speede.—*Rel.*

⁹ Go seeke a traytor on the sea.—*Rel.*

¹⁰ And now of a hundred bowemen brave

To be the head I haue chosen thee.—*Rel.* to be the head.—P.

¹¹ If you, quoth hee.—*Rel.*

¹² to be head.—*Rel.*

¹³ On your maine-mast Ile hanged bee.—*Rel.*

¹⁴ A shilling.—P. If I miss twelue-score one penny bread'th.—*Rel.*

¹⁵ The.—*Rel.*

¹⁶ With a valyant heart and a pleasant cheare.—*Rel.*

¹⁷ Out at.—*Rel.*

¹⁸ he.—*Rel.*

¹⁹ and days he scant had sayled three.—*Rel.*

²⁰ the Voyage.—P. and *Rel.*

²¹ he.—*Rel.*

²² he.—*Rel.*

²³ itt stay.—*Rel.*

“thou must tell me thy name,” sais Charles, my ¹ and asks its
 Lord HAWARD, owner
 who he is.

“or who thou art, or ffrom whence thou came,²
 yea, & ³ where thy dwelling is,

76 to whom & where thy shipp does belong.⁴”

“My name,” sayes hee, “is HENERY HUNT,⁵ “ Henry
 Hunt,

with a pure ⁶ hart & a penitent mind ;

I and my shipp they doe ⁷ belong of New-
 castle,

80 vnto the New castle ⁸ that stands vpon tine.”

“Now thou must tell me,⁹ HARRY HUNT, [page 492]

as thou hast sayled by day & ¹⁰ by night,
 hast thou not heard of a stout robber ¹¹ ?

84 men calls ¹² him Sir Andrew Bartton, *Knight.*” and Andrew
 Barton

but ¹³ euer he sighed, & sayd, “ alas !

¹⁴ ffull well, my ¹⁵ Lord, I know *that* wight !

he robd me of my merchants ware,

88 & I was his prisoner but yesternight.

“ as I was sayling vppon the sea,

& ¹⁶ Burdeaux voyage as I did ¹⁷ ffare, .

he Clasped me to his Archborde ¹⁸

92 & robd me of all my merchants ware ; robbed me
 last night.”

¹ MS. ny.—F.

² come.—P.

³ and shewe me.—*Rel.*

⁴ Wherto thy Ship belongs & whom.
 —P. And whither bound, and whence
 thou came.—*Rel.*

⁵ is Henrye Hunt, quoth hee.—*Rel.*

⁶ poor, heavy.—P. heavye . . carefull.
 —*Rel.*

⁷ do both.—P. and *Rel.*

⁸ To the Newcastle.—*Rel.*

⁹ Hast thou not heard, now.—*Rel.*

¹⁰ or.—P. and *Rel.*

¹¹ Of a Scottish rover on the seas.—
Rel.

¹² call.—*Rel.*

¹³ Than.—*Rel.*

¹⁴ With a grieved mind, and well away!
 But over-well I knowe that wight,
 I was his prisoner yesterday.—*Rel.*

¹⁵ MS. ny.—F.

¹⁶ A.—*Rel.*

¹⁷ voyage for to.—*Rel.*

¹⁸ ship, or side of a ship: see l. 278,
 “ouer the hatch-bord cast into the sea.”
 A.-S. *earc-bord*, Ark's-board, the ark.
 Bosworth.

“*þæt earce-bórd heold heofona frea,*”
 the Lord of Heaven held the ark.
Cædmon, p. 84, l. 26. ed. Thorpe. See
 also *Genesis & Exodus*, l. 576:

Sexe hundred ger noe was hold
 Quan he dede him in *ðe arche-wold*.
 and Mr. Morris's note, p. 123.—F.

& I am a man both poore ¹ & bare,²
 & euery man will haue his owne ³ of me,
 & I am bound towards London to ffare,⁴
 96 to complaine to my Prince HENERYE.⁵”

Lord
Howard says,
“ Show me
Bartcn,
and I'll give
you 1s. for
every penny
you've lost.” 100
 “ *that* shall not need,” sais my Lord HAWARD ⁶ ;
 if thou canst lett me this robber ⁷ see,
 ffor euery peny he hath taken ⁸ thee ffroe,
 thou shalt be rewarded a shilling,” *quoth* hee.⁹
 “ Now god ffore-fend,” saies HENERY HUNT,¹⁰
 “ my Lord, you shold worke ¹¹ soe ffarr amisse !
 god keepe you out of *that* Traitors hands !
 Hunt tries
to dissuade
him from
fighting
Barton, 104 for you wott ffull litle ¹² what a man hee is.

“ hee is brasse within, & steele without,
 & beanes hee beares in ¹³ his Topcastle ¹⁴ stronge ;
 108 ¹⁵ his shipp hath ordinance cleane round about ;
 besides, my Lord, hee is verry well mand ;
 he hath a pinnace is ¹⁶ deerlye dight,
 who has a
well-man-
ned pinnace
 Saint ANDREWS crosse, *that* ¹⁷ is his guide ;
 his pinnace beares ¹⁸ 9 score men & more,¹⁹
 and 30 guns. 112 besids 15 ²⁰ cannons on euery side.²¹

¹ There is a tag at the end like an *s* in the MS.—F.

² And mickle debts, God wot, I owe.—*Rel.*

³ his own.—P., P.C., and *Rel.*

⁴ And I am nowe to London bounde.—*Rel.*

⁵ Of our gracious King to beg a boon.—P., P.C., and *Rel.*

⁶ You shall not need, lord Howard sayes.—*Rel.*

⁷ Lett me but once that robber.—*Rel.*

⁸ penny tane.—*Rel.*

⁹ It shall be doubled shillings three.—*Rel.*

¹⁰ the merchant sayes.—*Rel.*

¹¹ That you shold seek.—*Rel.*

¹² little you wot.—P. Full litle ye

wott.—*Rel.*

¹³ beams.—P. With beames on.—*Rel.* The MS. has *beanes* or *beaues* again in l. 116, 208, 220.—F.

¹⁴ Top-castles. Ledgings surrounding the mast-head. Halliwell.—F.

¹⁵ And thirtye pieces of ordinance He carries on each side along.—*Rel.*

With 18 pieces of ordinance He carries on each side along. Pr. Copy.—P.

¹⁶ And he hath a pinnace.—*Rel.*

¹⁷ itt.—*Rel.*

¹⁸ beareth.—P. and *Rel.*

¹⁹ *Rel.* omits *& moe.*—F.

²⁰ And fifteen.—P. and *Rel.*

²¹ on each side.—P. and *Rel.*

- “ if you were 20 ¹ shippes, & he but one,
 either in charke-bord ² or in hall,³
 he wold ouercome you ⁴ euerye one,
 116 & if ⁵ his beanes they doe downe ffall.”
 “ this is cold comfort,” sais my Lord HAWARD,⁶
 “ to wellcome a stranger thus to ⁷ the sea;
 He ⁸ bring him & his shipp to shore,
 120 or else into ⁹ Scotland hee shall carrye mee.”
- “ then you must gett a noble gunner, my Lord,
 that can sett well with his eye
 & sinke his pinnace into ¹⁰ the sea,
 124 & soone then ouercome will hee bee.¹¹
 & when that you haue done this,¹²
 if you chance Sir ANDREW for to bord,¹³
 lett no man to his Topcastle goe ;
 128 & I will giue you a glasse, my Lord,¹⁴
- “ & then you need to fferae ¹⁵ no Scott,
 whether you sayle by day or by night ;
 & to-morrow by 7 of the clocke,
 132 you shall meete with Sir ANDREW BARTTON, *Knight*.

Howard
says
he'll beat
Barton,
or Barton
shall him.

Hunt advises
him first to
sink

Barton's
pinnace,
and then
board him,
avoiding the
topcastle.

By 7 next
day he shall
meet
Barton,

¹ Were you 20.—P. and *Rel*.
² ? same as *archebord*, l. 91.—F.
³ I swear by kirke, and bower, and
 hall.—*Rel*.
⁴ orecome them.—*Rel*.
⁵ If once.—*Rel*.
⁶ *Rel*. omits Howard.—F.
⁷ stranger on.—*Rel*.
⁸ Yett He.—*Rel*.
⁹ Or to.—*Rel*.
¹⁰ in.—*Rel*.
¹¹ he'll be.—P. Or else he ne'er ore-
 come will be.—*Rel*.
¹² thing [added by P.]
¹³ And if you chance his shipp to borde,
 This counsel I must give withall.
 —*Rel*.
¹⁴ To strive to let his beames downe
 fall.—*Rel*. Percy's next two stanzas,
 altered seemingly from the printed copy,
 take in the next three stanzas of the
 Folio :

And seven pieces of ordinance,
 I pray your honour lend to mee,
 On each side of my shipp along,
 And I will lead you on the sea.
 A glasse I'll sett, that may be seene,
 Whether you sayle by day or night ;
 And to-morrowe, I sweare, by nine of the
 clocke,
 You shall see Sir Andrewe Barton
 knight.

THE SECOND PART.

The merchant sett my lorde a glasse
 Soe well apparent in his sight,
 And on the morrowe, by nine of the clocke,
 He shewd him Sir Andrewe Barton
 knight.
 His hatchborde it was 'gilt' with gold,
 Soe deerly dight it dazzled the ee,
 Nowe by my faith, lord Howarde says,
 This is a gallant sight to see.
 —*Rel*. ii. 185-6. ¹⁵ feare.—F.

- I was his prisoner but yester night,
 & he hath taken mee sworne ¹;” quoth hee,
 “I trust my L[ord] god will me fforgiue
 136 & if *that* oath then ² broken bee.
- but he must
 lend Hunt
 six guns.
 “you must lend me sixe peeces, my *Lord*,” quoth hee,
 “into my shipp to sayle the sea,
 & to-morrow by 9 of the clocke
 140 your honour againe then will I see. ³”
 And the hache-bord where Sir ANDREW Lay,
 is hached with gold deerlye dight :
- Lord
 Howard
 “now by my ffaith,” sais *Charles*, my Lord HAWARD,
 144 “then yonder Scott is a worthye wight !

[Part II.]

- orders his
 flags to be
 taken in,
 and a white
 wand put
 out.
 2^d parte { “Take in your ancients & your standards,⁴
 yea *that* no man shall ⁵ them see,
 & put me fforth a white willow wand,
 148 as Merchants vse to ⁶ sayle the sea.”
- They sail by
 Barton,
 taking no
 notice of
 him,
 But they stirred neither top nor mast,
 but Sir Andrew they passed by.⁷
 “whatt English are yonder,” said Sir ANDREW,⁸
 152 “*that* can so litle curtesye ?
- which
 enrages
 Barton,
 9 “I hauc beene Admirall ouer the sea
 more then these yeeres three ;
 there is neuer an English dog, nor Portingall,
 156 can passe this way without leaue of mee.

¹ made me swear.—P.² now.—P.³ Again your hon! I will see.—P.⁴ ancients, standards eke.—*Rel.*⁵ [insert] now.—P. So close that no man may.—*Rel.*⁶ that.—*Rel.*⁷ Stoutly they past Sir Andrew by.—*Rel.*⁸ he sayd.—*Rel.*⁹ Now by the roode, three yeares and moreI have been admirall over the sea ;
 And never an English nor Portingall
 Without my leave can passe this
 way.Then called he forth his stout pin-
 nace;“Fetch back yond pedlars nowe
 to mee ;I sweare by the masse, yon English
 churlesShall all hang at my maine-mast
 tree.”—*Rel.* ii. 186.

- But now yonder pedlers, they are past,
 which is no litle greffe to me : [page 493]
- ffleich them backe," sayes Sir ANDREW BARTTON,
 160 "they shall all hang att my maine-mast tree."
 and he declares he'll hang them,
- with *that* they pinnace itt shott of,
 that my Lord Haward might itt well ken,¹
 itt strokes downe my Lords fforemast,²
 164 & killed 14 of my Lord his³ men.
 and sends out his pinnace to take them.
- "come hither, Simon!" sayes my Lord Haward,⁴
 "looke *that* thy words be true thou sayd⁵ ;
 Ile hang thee att my maine-mast tree⁶
 168 if thou misse thy marke past 12^d bread.⁷ "
- Simon was old, but his hart itt⁸ was bold,
 hee tooke downe a peece, & layd itt ffull lowe⁹ ;
 he put in chaine yeards 9,¹⁰
 172 besids¹¹ other great shott lesse and more.¹²
 and with his chain shot
- with *that* hee lett his gun shott goe¹³ ;
 soe well hee settled itt with his eye,¹⁴
 the ffirst sight *that* Sir ANDREW sawe,
 176 hee see¹⁵ his pinnace sunke¹⁶ in the sea.
 sinks the pinnace.
- when¹⁷ hee saw his pinace sunke,
 Lord! in his hart hee was not well¹⁸ :
 "cutt¹⁹ my ropes! itt is time to be gon!
 180 Ile goe ffeitch²⁰ yond²¹ pedlers backe my selfe²²!"
 Barton sails to fetch Lord Howard himself.

¹ well it ken.—P. Full well Lord Howard might it ken.—*Rel.*

² For it strake downe his fore-mast tree.—*Rel.*

³ of his.—*Rel.*

⁴ *Rel.* omits Howard.—F.

⁵ word doe stand in stead.—*Rel.*

⁶ For at my maine-mast thou shalt hang.—*Rel.*

⁷ twelve score one penny bread.—P.C., P. one shilling bread'th.—*Rel.*

⁸ *Rel.* omits *itt*.—F.

⁹ His ordinance he laid right lowe.—*Rel.* 'Aim low' is the regular rule.—F.

¹⁰ full 9 yards long.—P. and *Rel.*

¹¹ with.—*Rel.*

¹² moe.—P. and *Rel.*

¹³ And he lett goe his great gunnes shott.—*Rel.*

¹⁴ ee.—*Rel.*

¹⁵ saw.—P. He sawe.—*Rel.*

¹⁶ MS. sunke.—F. sunke i'.—*Rel.*

¹⁷ and when.—*Rel.*

¹⁸ Lord, how his heart with rage did swell.—*Rel.*

¹⁹ Nowe cutt.—*Rel.*

²⁰ Ile fetch.—*Rel.*

²¹ MS. yomd.—F.

²² mysel.—P. and *Rel.*

when my Lord Haward ¹ saw Sir ANDREW loose,
 lord! in his hart *that* hee ² was ffaine ;
 “ strike on *your* drummes, spread out *your* ancycents ! ³
 184 sound out *your* trumpetts ⁴ ! sound out amaine ! ”

“ fight on, my men ! ” sais Sir ANDREW BARTTON ⁵ ;
 “ weate, howsoeuer this geere will sway,
 itt is my Lord Adm[i]rall of England
 188 is come to seeke mee on the sea. ”

Old Simon's
 son
 puts in
 another
 shot, and
 kills 60 of
 Barton's
 men.
 6 Simon had a sonne, with shott of a gunn,—
 well Sir ANDREW might itt Ken,—
 he shott itt in att a priuye place,
 192 & killed 60 more of Sir ANDREWS men. ⁶

Hunt
 attacks
 Barton too,
 7 HARRY HUNT came in att the other syde,
 & att Sir ANDREW hee shott then,
 he droue downe his fformost tree,
 and kills 80
 more men.
 196 & killed 80 ⁸ more of Sir ANDIRWES men.
 “ I haue done a good turne, ” sayes HARRY HUNT,
 “ Sir ANDREW is not our Kings ffreind ;
 he hoped to haue vndone me yesternight,
 200 but I hope I haue quitt him well in the end. ”

Barton
 laments,
 “ Euer alas ! ” sayd Sir ANDREW BARTON, ⁹
 “ what shold a man either ¹⁰ thinke or say ?
 yonder ffalse theeffe is my strongest Enemye,
 204 who was my prisoner but yesterday.

¹ *Rel.* omits Howard.—F.

² how he.—P. Within his heart.
 —*Rel.*

³ your Ancients spread.—P.

Nowe spread your ancycents, strike up
 drummes.—*Rel.*

⁴ Sound all your trumpetts.—*Rel.*

⁵ Sir Andrew says.—P. and *Rel.*

⁶⁻⁸ Simon had a sonne, who shott right
 well,

That did Sir Andrewe mickle scare ;
 In att his decke he gave a shott,
 Killed threescore of his men of
 warre.

Rel. ii. 188, (altered from printed copy.
 —F.)

⁷ Of the next stanza and a half Percy
 makes one, taking two lines from the
 Folio, and the rest (altered) from the
 printed copy :

Then Henrye Hunt with rigour hott
 Came bravely on the other side,
 Soone he drove downe his fore-mast tree,
 And killed fourscore men beside.
 Nowe, out alas ! Sir Andrew cryed,
 What may a man now thinke, or say ?
 Yonder merchant theefe, that pierceth
 mee,

He was my prisoner yesterday.

⁸ fifty.—P.C., P. fourscore men be-
 side.—*Rel.*

⁹ Sr And^w sayd.—P. ¹⁰ now.—P.

- come hither to me, thou Gourden ¹ good,
 & be thou ² readye att my call,
 & I will giue thee 300¹³
 208 if thou wilt lett my beanes ⁴ downe ffall.”
- ⁵ with *that* hee swarned ⁶ the maine-mast tree,
 soe did he itt ⁷ with might and maine :
 HORSELEY ⁸ with a bearing⁹ arrow
 212 stroke the Gourden ¹⁰ through the braine,
 And he ffell into ¹¹ the haches againe,
 & sore of this wound *that* he ¹² did bleed.
 then word went throug Sir ANDREWS men,
 216 *that* they Gourden ¹³ hee was dead.
- “ come hither to me, JAMES HAMBLITON,¹⁴—
 thou art my sisters sonne, I haue no more,¹⁵—
 I will giue [thee] 600¹⁶
 220 if thou will lett my beanes downe ffall.¹⁷ ”
 with *that* hee swarned the maine-mast tree,
 soe did hee itt with might and maine ¹⁸ :
 Horseley with an-other ¹⁹ broad Arrow
 224 strake the yeaman ²⁰ through the braine,

and offers
Gordon

300l. to
climb the
mast and let
the beames
fall.

He climbs
up,

but Horseley
shoots him
through the
brain.

Barton then
offers his
nephew 600l.
to climb up.

He climbs,

but Horseley
shoots him
dead.

¹ Gordon.—P. and *Rel.*

² That aye wast.—*Rel.*

³ I will give thee three hundred
markes.—*Rel.*

⁴ beames.—P.

⁵ For the next four lines, Percy,
without notice, takes (and alters) the
printed copy:

Lord Howard hee then calld in haste,
 “ Horseley see thou be true in stead ;
 For thou shalt at the maine-mast hang,
 If thou misse twelvescore one penny
 bread’th.—*Rel.* ii. 188.

⁶ swarmed, i.e. climbed, a word still
used in Shropshire [? all over England.
—F.] in this sense.—P. Then Gordon
swarvd.—*Rel.* MS. may be *swarued*.—F.

⁷ He swarved it.—*Rel.*

⁸ But Horseley.—*Rel.*

⁹ See *Adam Bell &c.*, p. 98, l. 601. The
bearing arrow was a broad one, l. 223 below.

I suspect the word means only well-
feathered for far shooting, like a ‘good
carrying cartridge.’—F.

¹⁰ Gordon.—P. and *Rel.*

¹¹ downe to.—*Rel.*

¹² sore his deadlye wounde.—*Rel.*

¹³ Gordon.—P. How that the Gordon.
—*Rel.*

¹⁴ Hamilton.—P. Hambilton.—*Rel.*

¹⁵ mo.—P. my only sisters sonne.—
Rel.

¹⁶ thee six hundred pounds.—P.

¹⁷ wilt to my Top-castle go. Printed
Copy.—P.

If thou wilt let my beames downe fall,
 Six hundred nobles thou hast wonne.
—*Rel.*

¹⁸ He swarved it with nimble art.—
Rel.

¹⁹ But Horseley with a.—*Rel.*

²⁰ yeoman.—P. Pierced the Hambil-
ton thorough the heart.—*Rel.*

- ¹ *that* ² hee fell downe to the haches againe ³ :
 sore of his wound *that* ⁴ hee did bleed.
 itt is verry true, as the welchman sayd,
 228 covetousness getts no gaine.⁵
 but when hee saw his sisters sonne ⁶ slaine,
 Lord! in his heart hee was not well.
 “goe ffeitch me downe ⁷ my armour of proue,⁸
 232 ffor I will to the topcastle my-selfe.⁹
 “goe ¹⁰ ffeitch me downe my armour of prooffe, [page 494]
 for itt is gilded ¹¹ with gold soe cleere.
 god be with my brother, Iohn of Bartton!
 236 amongst ¹² the Portingalls hee did itt weare.¹³”
 but when hee had his ¹⁴ armour of prooffe,
¹⁵ & on his body hee had itt on,
 euery man *that* looked att him
 240 sayd, “gunn nor arrow hee neede feare none!”
 “come hither, Horsley!” sayes my Lord HAWARD,¹⁶
 “& looke ¹⁷ your shaft *that* itt goe right;
 shoot a good shoote in the time ¹⁸ of need,
 244 & ffor thy shooting ¹⁹ thoust be made a *Knicht*.”
 Horsley “Ile doe my best,” sayes²⁰ Horslay then,
 “your honor shall see beffore I goe ²¹ ;

¹ For the next six lines the *Reliques* have:

And downe he fell upon the deck,
 That with his blood did streame
 amaine:
 Then every Scott cryed, Well-away!
 Alas a comelye youth is slaine!
 All woe-begone was Sir Andrew then,
 With griefe and rage his heart did
 swell.—F.

² And.—P.

³ MS. *agaime*.—F. ⁴ then.—P.

⁵ Covetousness brings nothing home.
 Ray: ed. Bohn, p. 81.—F.

⁶ nephew.—P.

⁷ forth.—*Rel.* ⁸ proof.—P. and *Rel.*

⁹ top-mast mysel.—P. topcastle my-
 sel.—*Rel.*

¹⁰ MS. *pared away*.—F.

¹¹ gilt.—P. That gilded is.—*Rel.*

¹² Against.—*Rel.*

¹³ ware.—P. hee it ware.—*Rel.*

¹⁴ on this.—*Rel.*

¹⁵ Percy has a bit of his own for the
 next three lines:

He was a gallant sight to see.
 Ah! nere didst thou meet with living
 wight,
 My deere brothèr, could cope with
 thee.—*Rel.* ii. 190.

¹⁶ my lord.—*Rel.*

¹⁷ looke to.—*Rel.*

¹⁸ in time.—*Rel.*

¹⁹ it.—P. it thou shalt.—*Rel.*

²⁰ quoth.—*Rel.*

²¹ see, with might and maine.—*Rel.*

- if I shold be hanged att your mainemast,¹
 248 I haue in my shipp but arrowes tow.²”
- ³ but att Sir ANDREW hee shott then ;
 hee made sure⁴ to hitt his marke ;
 vnder the spole⁵ of his right arme
- 252 hee smote Sir ANDREW quite throw the hart.
 yett ffrom the tree hee wold not start,
 but hee clinged to itt with might & maine.
 vnder the coller then of his Iacke,⁶
- 256 he stroke Sir ANDREW thorrow the braine.
- “ fight on my men,” sayes Sir ANDREW BARTTON,⁷
 “ I am⁸ hurt, but I am⁹ not slaine ;
 Ile lay mee¹⁰ downe & bleed a-while,
 260 & then Ile rise & fight againe.¹¹
 ffight on my men,” sayes Sir ANDREW BARTTON,¹²
 “ these English doggs they bite soe lowe ;¹³
¹⁴ ffight on ffor Scotland & Saint ANDREW
 264 till¹⁵ you heare my whistle blowe ! ”
- but when thé cold not heare his whistle blow,
 sayes HARRY HUNT, “ Ile lay my head
 you may bord yonder noble shipp, my Lord,
 268 for I know Sir ANDREW hee is dead.”¹⁶

has only two
arrows left :

with one he
shoots
Barton
through the
heart,

and with the
other,
through the
brain.

Barton tells
his men

to fight on
till
they hear his
whistle.

No whistle
sounds.

¹ But if I were hanged at your mainemast tree.—*Rel.*

² I have now left but arrowes twaine.—*Rel.*

³ For this stanza Percy has the following, altered from the printed copy:

Sir Andrew he did swarve the tree,
 With right good will he swarved then:
 Upon his breast did Horseley hitt,
 But the arrow bounded back agen.
 Then Horselye spyed a privye place
 With a perfect eye in a secrette part;
 Under the spole of his right arme
 He smote Sir Andrew to the heart.

⁴ right [sure].—P.

⁵ Fr. *espaule*, a shoulder.—Cotgrave.

⁶ leather tunic over the armour. See Fairholt, on *Jacket*.—F.

⁷ Sir And^w. says.—P. Sir Andrew sayes.—*Rel.*

⁸ a little I'm hurt.—Pr. Copy, P., and *Rel.*

⁹ but yett.—*Rel.* ¹⁰ but lye.—*Rel.*

¹¹ Only half the *n* in the MS.—F.

¹² Sir And^w. says.—P. Sir Andrew sayes.—*Rel.*

¹³ and never flinche before the foe.—*Rel.*

¹⁴ But stand fast by St. Andrew's Cross.—P. Copy, P., and *Rel.* with *And* for *But*.—F.

¹⁵ Until.—P.

¹⁶ They never heard his whistle blow,
 Which made their hearts waxe
 sore adread:

Then Horseley sayd, Aboard, my lord,
 For well I wott Sir Andrew's dead.
Rel. (altered from printed copy).—F.

Howard and
Hunt
board
Barton's
ship.

with *that* they borted this ¹ noble shipp,
soe did they itt ² with might & maine ;
thé ffound 18 score Scotts aliue,³

272 besids the rest were maimed & ⁴ slaine.

Howard cuts
off Barton's
head,

My Lord ⁵ Haward tooke a sword in his hand,⁶
& smote ⁷ of ⁸ Sir ANDREWS head.

the Scotts stood by, did weepe & mourne,

276 but neuer a word durst speake or say.⁹

has his
body thrown
overboard,

he caused his body to be taken downe,¹⁰

& ouer the hatch-bord cast ¹¹ into the sea,

& about his middle 300 crownes :

280 " wheresoeuer thou lands, itt ¹² will bury thee."

and sails to
England,

¹³ with his head they sayled into England againe

with right good will, & fforce & meanye,¹⁴

¹ they boarded then [his].—P. and
Rel.

² They boarded it.—*Rel.*

³ Eighteen score Scotts alive they
found.—*Rel.*

⁴ The rest were either maimd or.—*Rel.*

⁵ Lord.—*Rel.* ⁶ in hand.—*Rel.*

⁷ [insert] ther.—P.

⁸ And off he smote.—*Rel.*

⁹ they spake or said.—P.

I must ha' left England many a daye,
If thou wert alive as thou art dead.—

Rel. (from printed copy, altered.)—F.

¹⁰ to be cast.—*Rel.*

¹¹ *Rel.* omits *g* and *cast*.—F.

¹² Wherever thou land this.—*Rel.*

¹³ For the next four stanzas, Percy has
these four from his own head, the printed
copy, and the folio :

Thus from the warres lord Howard came,
And backe he sayled on the maine,
With mickle joy and triumphing
Into Thames mouth he came againe.

Lord Howard then a letter wrote,

And sealed it with seale and ring :

"Such a noble prize have I brought to
your grace,

As never did subject to a king.

Sir Andrewes shipp I bring with mee ;

A braver shipp was never none :

Nowe hath your grace two shippes of
warre,

Before in England was but one."

King Henryes grace with royall cheere,

Welcomed the noble Howard home,

And where, said he, is this rover stout :

That I myselfe may give the doome ?

"The rover, he is safe, my leige,

Full many a fadom in the sea ; [Percy]

If he were alive, as he is dead,

I must ha' left England many a day :

And your grace may thank four men i'
the ship

For the victory wee have wonne,

These are William Horseley, Henry
Hunt,

And Peter Simon, and his sonne."

To Henry Hunt, the king then sayd,

In lieu of what was from thee tane,

A noble day thou shalt have,

With Sir Andrewes jewels and his
chayne."

And Horseley thou shalt be a knight,

And lands and livings shalt have

store ;

Howard shall be earl Surrye hight,

As Howards erst have beene before.

—*Rel.* ii. 192-3.

¹⁴ main.—P.

- & the day beffore Newyeeres euen
 284 & into Thames mouth againe they came.¹
 My Lord HAWARD wrote to King HENERYES grace,
 with all the newes hee cold him bring :
 “such a newyeeres giff I haue² brought to your
 gr[ace],
 288 as neuer did subiect to any³ King.
- “ ffor Merchandyes & Manhood,
 the like is nott to be ffound ;
 the sight of these wold doe you good,
 292 ffor you haue not the Like in your English ground.”
 but when hee heard tell *that* they were come,
 full royally hee welcomed them home :
 Sir ANDREWS shipp was the Kings Newyeeres guiff ;
 296 a brauer shipp you neuer saw none.
- Now hath our King Sir ANDREWS shipp
 besett with pearles and precyous stones ;
 Now hath England 2 shippes of warr,
 300 2 shippes of warr, before but one.
 “who holpe to this ? ” sayes King HENERYE,
 “ *that* I may reward him ffor his paine.⁴ ”
 “ HARRY HUNT & PEETER SIMON,
 304 WILLIAM HORSELEAY, & I THE SAME.”
- “ HARRY HUNT shall haue his whistle & chaine, [page 495] jewels &c.
 & all his Iewells, whatsoever they bee,
 & other rich gifts *that* I will not name,
 308 for his good service he hath done ⁵ mee.
 HORSLEY, right thoust be a Knight ;
 Lands & liuings thou shalt haue store.
 Howard shalbe Erle of Nottingham,
 312 & soe was neuer HAWARD before.

which he reaches on December 30. Lord Howard writes to Henry VIII. that he has a grand new-year's gift for him.

Henry is delighted to find that it's Barton's ship,

all over pearls. The King has now two ships of war.

He gives Hunt Barton's

makes Horseley a knight, Howard Earl of Nottingham,

¹ they came again.—P.

² a noble prize have L.—Rel.

³ a.—Rel.

⁴ MS. paimē.—F.

⁵ [insert] to.—P.

and gives
Simon and
his son
500*l*.

316 “ Now Peeter Simon, thou art old,
I will maintaine thee & thy sonne,
thou shalt haue 500^l all in gold
ffor the good service *that* thou hast done.¹ ”
then King HENERYE shifted his roome ;
in came the Queene & ladyes bright ;
other arrands they had none

The Queen
comes

to see
Barton's

320 but to see Sir ANDREW BARTTON, *Knight*.

face.

but when they see his deadly fface,
his eyes were ² hollow in his head,
“ I wold giue a 100^l ; ” sais King HENERYE,
324 “ the ³ man were aliue as hee is dead !
yett ffor the manfull part *that* hee hath playd ⁴
both heere & ⁵ beyond the sea ⁶
his men shall haue halfe a crowne⁷ a day
328 to bring them to my brother King IAMYE.⁸ ” ffinis.

The King
wishes he
were
alive again,

and sends
his men
back to
Scotland.

¹ And the men shall have five hundred
markes
For the good service they have done.—
Rel. ; which has for the next four lines :
Then in came the queene with ladyes
fair
To see Sir Andrewe Barton knight :
They weend that hee were brought on
shore,
And thought to have seen a gallant
sight.

² soe.—*Rel.*
³ This.—*Rel.*
⁴ part he playd.—*Rel.*
⁵ [insert] eke.—*P.*
⁶ Which fought soe well with heart
and hand.—*Rel.*
⁷ tweluepence.—*Rel.*
⁸ Till they come to my brother king's
high land.—*Rel.* Oh, this restless itch
of alteration!—*F.*

The : Sillye Siluan.

“PITY the sorrows of a lover” is the gist of this piece. The swain protests that he is scorched with the flame of love, and must be altogether consumed by it, if his lady will not put forth a hand and pluck him like a brand from the burning. His only claim to such a service is that he loves her. He hopes she may be induced to reflect his love.

Fire warms to life; it also burns to death; as the simple savage found, who was consumed by the flames in which he had taken pleasure. And so it is with love.

LIKE: to the sillye Siluan
 burnt by the ffire he liked,
 I scor[c]hed am with cupidds ffery fflame,
 4 wherin I became ¹ delighted. I'm scorched
with Cupid's
flame!
 grant then, o grant, my desire to allay,
Then, love,
 lest *that* I ruined bee ;
 & godd[e]sse like, saue mee!
save me!
 8 [By] Loue ² my liffe I maintaine ;
 death by hatred I gaine :
 you ³ the Murthresse, if slaine I bee.

 Then hand in hand lett pittye
Let Pity join
with thy
Beauty.
 12 with bewtye March intwined ⁴ ;
 harmonious paire, if soe linked they were,
 how delightffull in thee combined !
 ffairest of all *that* the sun doth survay,
 16 lett gracyousnesse take place ;

¹ MS. became.—F.

² By your Love.—P.

³ you are.—P.

⁴ entwined.—P.

Be not too
coy :

O be not to coye ¹ !
Thou art an Angell, if a ffreind ;
if an enemye, a ffeend.

pity me !

20 then to pittye condisceud, I pray !

Love your
lover again.

ffaine wold I *that* my desires
on her might haue reflectyon.
Loue loued againe ; itt is my only ² aime
to be answered with true affectyon.
Loue is attended with many a plesure
to thee vnknowene as yett.
mee ³ to those ⁴ Ioyes admitte !

Grant me
love's
rights,

28

crowne me with those loues rights,
with those precyous delights,

now the time
is so fit.

whiles the time *that* vs invites if itt's fitte. ⁵ ffinis.

¹ too coye.—P.

² it is my only.—P.

³ MS. meete.—F.

⁴ mee then to those.—P.

⁵ *that* invites us is so fit.—P.

Patient Grissell : ¹

THIS is a later version of the story which seems to have been first told in English by Chaucer, who derived it from Boccaccio, who derived it perhaps from Petrarch, who derived it from some floating tradition. There were current in the Middle Ages numberless tales and songs abusive of women. This sorry literature sprung probably from the monks, who, whatever their practice may have been, were ready enough to clamour that women's society was by all means to be avoided and detested—that women were everything bad and abominable. One would think that Eve had tempted the serpent, not the serpent Eve. Had there arisen no authors of broader and truer experiences than these cloistered libellers, the very acrimony of their slanders would have sufficed to excite a literature reactionary and protesting. Certainly such a literature grew and flourished. Women found their advocates. In the fields of poetry as well as of tournament and war they found their knights, who did battle bravely for them. Men rose up and called them blessed, and put ignorant scandal-mongers to shame. The *Nut Brown Maid* was written especially to gainsay those who accused them of perpetual inconstancy; *Patient Grissell* to rebuke those who pronounced them ever shrews. *Griselda* is essentially a reactionary story; else, the patience of the heroine is too extreme to be tolerated, she is tame to excess, she is characterless. If we remember how incessantly the shrewishness of women, their obstinacy, their furiousness were asserted and proclaimed, then we shall understand why *Griselda's* patience is represented as so extreme and

¹ In the printed Collection of Old Ballads, 1727, Vol 3. p. 252.—P. "To the tune of *The Bride's Good-morrow &c.*" *ib.*—F. vid. Boccace Chaucer (*pencil note*).

invincible, why the roughest, cruellest, shamefullest wrongs cannot ruffle it. The story does not contemplate the virtue it celebrates in reference to other virtues. It does not concern itself with these; in its devotion to its one object, it may even outrage some of these. Its aim and purpose is to picture patience in a woman. This picture it paints surely with surpassing success. Is there any more moving picture of meekness in any secular literature? Griselda bears the grievous burdens laid upon her shoulders with a quiet un murmuring spirit. No angry cries, no burning reproaches escape from the lips of this most gentle lady. And yet, if ever any tongue might grow shrewish and curst, assuredly hers might grow so. But in meekness she possesses her soul. Bereft of her children, cast off by her husband, the tenderest fibres of her soul thus rudely torn and broken, she cannot but weep somewhat. "The tears stood in her eyes." But

She nothing answered, no words of discontent
Did from her lips arise.

And when ready to "part away,"

"God send long life unto my lord," quoth she.
"Let no offence be found in this,
To give my lord a parting kiss."

The following version of the story is found elsewhere—in an old chap-book, dated 1619, from which it has been reprinted by the Percy Society in Deloney's *Garland of Good Will*, and in the *Collection of Old Ballads*, 1727.

"Two plays upon the subject," observes Professor Child in the Introduction to his copy of *Patient Grissel*, "are known to have been written, one of which (by Dekker, Chettle, and Haughton) has been printed by the Shakespeare Society, while the other, an older production of the close of Henry VIII.'s reign, is lost. About the middle of the sixteenth century (1565) a *Song of Patient Grissell* is entered in the Stationers' Registers, and a prose history the same year." License is given to "Owyn Rogers" "for pryntinge of a ballett intituled the soung of pacyente Gressell unto byr make."

The poem given by Percy in the *Reliques*, called *The Patient Countess*, an extract from Warner's *Albion's England*, represents rather tact and management than patience in the wife of an unfaithful (not a tempting and assaying) husband. "The subject of this tale," says the Bishop, "is taken from that entertaining colloquy of Erasmus intituled *Uxor μεμψύγαμος* sive *Conjugium*; which has been agreeably modernized by the late Mr. Spence in his little Miscellaneous Publication intituled 'Moralties &c. by Sir Harry Beaumont, 1753, 8vo. pag. 42.'" "Jam si molestum non erat," says Eulalia, one of the interlocutors in that dialogue, "referam tibi quiddam de marito commo-ditate uxoris correcto; quod nuper accidit in hac ipsâ civitate." "Nihil est quod agam," rejoins Xantippe, whose name indicates her views as to how husbands should be dealt with, "et perquam grata mihi est tua confabulatio." "Est vir quidam," proceeds her more discreet friend, and relates the tale versified by Warner. Xantippe does not appreciate the forbearance shown by the wronged lady of the story. "O matronam nimium bonam! Ego citius pro lecto substravissem illi fasciculum urticarum ac tribulorum." The Patient Countess then is other than our Griselda.

Griselda became a proverb of patience. Scarcely has the patience of Job been more widely heard of than hers. Butler (*Hudibras*, part i. cant. ii.) speaks of

Words far bitterer than wormwood,
That would in Job or Grizel stir mood.

A : noble Marquesse, as hee did ryde on ¹ huntinge
hard by a fforrest syde, A Marquis
out hunting
a proper maid,² as shee did sitt a spinninge,
4 his gentle eye espyde. spies a
lovely maid,

¹ a.—O.B.

² fair and comely Maiden.—O.B.

- Most faire & louely, & of comely ¹ grace, was shee,
 although in simple attire ;
 singing. shee sung ffull sweet ² with pleasant voice melodyous-
 lyee,
 His heart is 8 which sett the Lords hart on ffire.
 on fire, the more he looket, the more hee might ;
 bewtye bred ³ his harts delight ;
 & to this dainty ⁴ damsell then [hee went.] ⁵
 and he 12 " God speed," quoth hee, " thou ffamous fflower, [p. 496]
 accosts the ffaire *Mistress* of this homely bower
 maiden. where louee & vertue liues ⁶ with sweet content ! "
- She 16 with comely Iesture & modest ffine ⁷ behaiour
 welcomes shee bade ⁸ him welcome ; then
 him shee entertained him in ffaithffull ffrendly man[ner]
 modestly. & all his gentlemen.
- The Marquis 20 the Noble Marquesse in his hart felt such a fflame,
 which sett his sences att striffe ;
 asks her 20 quoth hee, " faire mayd,⁹ show me soone what is thine ¹⁰
 name ; he [name ;]
 means to I meane to make thee my wiffe."
 marry her. " Grissell is my name," quoth shee,
 " Grissell 24 " ffarr vnffitt ffor your degree :
 is my name. a silly mayden, & of parents poore."
 I'm quite " nay, Grissell ! thou art rich," he sayd ;
 unfit for " a virtiuos, ffaire, & comelye mayde !
 you." 28 grant me thy loue, & I will aske no more."
- He urges his 32 Att Lenght shee Consented, & being both contented,
 suit ; they marryed were with speed.
 she consents, her country russett was changed to silke & veluett,
 they marry, as to her state agreed ;
 she is clad 32 in silke
 in silk velvet,

¹ a comely.—O.B.
² most sweetly.—O.B.
³ was.—O.B.
⁴ O.B. omits *dainty*.—F.
⁵ Strait the Noble went.—O.B.

⁶ Dwells.—O.B.
⁷ O.B. omits *ffine*.—F.
⁸ bids.—O.B.
⁹ Maiden.—F.
¹⁰ thy name.—P. & O.B.

- & when *that* shee was trimly tyred in the same,
her bewtye shined most bright,
ffarr stainninge euery other braue & comelye ¹ dam[e]
36 *that* did appeare in her sight.² and looks
lovelier than
anyone else.
- many enuyed her therefore,
because shee was of parents poore,
& twixt her Lord & shee great striffe did raise.
40 some said this, & some said that,
& some did call her beggars bratt,
& to her Lord they wold her offt dispraise : call her
beggar's
brat,
- “O noble Marquesse” (quoth they) “why doe you ³
wrong vs,
44 thus baselye ffor to wedd,
that ⁴ might haue gotten an honourable ⁵ Ladye
into *your* princely bed ? with having
married a
base-born
girl ;
- who will not now *your* noble issue still ⁶ deryde,
48 *which* heerafter shall ⁷ be borne,
that are of blood soe base on ⁸ the Mothers syde,
the *which* will bring them in scorne.
his children
will be
scorned.
- put her therefore quite away ;
52 take ⁹ to you a Ladye gay,
wherby *your* Linage may renowned bee : ” He should
put her
away,
and marry a
Lady.
- thus euery day thé seemed to ¹⁰ prate
that malliced ¹¹ GRISSELLS good estate,
56 who tooke all this most mild & patyentlye.¹² Grissell
takes it all
patiently.
- when ¹³ the Marquesse see ¹⁴ *that* ¹⁵ they were bent thus The Marquis
against his ffaithfull ¹⁶ wiffe,
loves her
as his life,
who ¹⁷ most dearlye, tenderlye, & entirlye,
60 he loued ¹⁸ as his liffe ; but thinks
to prove her,

¹ Fair and Princely.—O.B.² O.B. omits this line.—F.³ didst thou.—O.B.⁴ Who.—O.B.⁵ hom^{bl} in the MS.—F.⁶ now.—O.B.⁷ shall hereafter.—O.B.⁸ base Born by.—O.B.⁹ And take.—O.B.¹⁰ they did.—O.B. ¹¹ envy'd.—O.B.¹² Who all this while Took it most
patiently.—O.B.¹³ When that.—O.B.¹⁴ Did see.—O.B.¹⁵ O.B. omits *that*.—F.¹⁶ lawful.—O.B.¹⁷ Whom he.—O.B.¹⁸ Beloved.—O.B.

- and seems
cruel,
that men
may pity
her.
- 64 Minding ¹ in secrett for to proue ² her patyent hart,
therby her ffoes ³ to disgrace,
thinking to play ⁴ a hard discourteous part
that men might pittye her case ;—
great with child this ⁵ Ladye was ;
& att lenght ⁶ itt came to passe,
- She gives
birth to
twins,
a boy and
girl.
- 68 2 goodlye children att one birth shee had,
a sonne & daughter god had sent,
which did their ffather ⁷ well content,
& *which* did make their mothers ⁸ hart full glad.
- A grand
christening
feast
is held for
six weeks,
- 72 Great Ioy & ⁹ feasting was att the ¹⁰ childrens christ-
enin[g,]
& princely triumph made.
6 weekes together all nobles *that* came thither
were entertained, and stayd.
& when *that* all these plasant sporttings ¹¹ quite were ¹²
done,
- and then
the Marquis
sends a
messenger to
fetch the
twins
to be
murdered.
- 76 the Marquesse a Messenger sent
ffor his young daughter & his pretty smiling so[ne,]
declaring his ffull entent,
how *that* they ¹³ babes must murdered bee,—
80 for soe the Marquess did decree :
“ come, lett me haue thy ¹⁴ children,” then hee say[d].
with *that*, ffaire Grissell wept ffull sore,
shee wrong her hands, & sayd no more :
- Grissell
weeps,
but says her
lord must be
obeyed.
- 84 “ My ¹⁵ gracyous Lord must haue his will obeyd.”
- [page 497]
- Shee tooke the babyes ¹⁶ ffrom ¹⁷ the nursing Ladyes
betweene her tender armes ;
shee often wishes with many sorrowfull kisses
88 *that* shee might helpe ¹⁸ their harmes :
- She kisses
her babes,

¹ Meaning.—O.B.³ his Foes for.—O.B.⁴ shew her.—O.B.⁵ the.—O.B.⁶ at the last.—O.B.⁷ Mother.—O.B.⁸ Father's.—O.B.² try.—O.B.⁹ Royal.—O.B.¹⁰ these.—O.B.¹¹ the pleasant Sporting.—O.B.¹² was.—O.B.¹⁴ The.—O.B.¹³ But my.—O.B.¹⁶ the Babes.—O.B.¹⁷ Even from.—O.B.¹⁸ How the.—O.B.¹⁸ case.—O.B.

- “ffarwell, ffarwell 1000 times, my children deere !
 neere¹ shall I see you againe !
 tis long of me, *your* sad and wofull mother heere,
 92 for whose sake you ² must be slaine.
 had I beene borne of royall race,
 you might haue liued in happy case,
 but you must dye for my vnworthynesse !
 96 come, messenger of death,” sayd ³ shee,
 “take my despised ⁴ babes ffrom mee,⁵
 & to their ffather my complaints expresse !”
- Hee tooke the children ; vnto ⁶ his Noble *Master*
 100 he brought ⁷ them both ⁸ with speed,
 who ⁹ secrett sent them vnto a noble Ladye
 to bee brought vp indeed.
 then to ffaire Grissell with a heauy hart hee goes
 104 where shee sate myldlye alone.¹⁰
 a pleasant gesture & a louelye looke shee showes,
 as if greeffe ¹¹ shee had neuer ¹² knone.
 quoth hee, “ my children now are slaine :
 108 what thinkes ffaire Grissell of the same ?
 sweet Grissell, now declare thy mind to mee.”
 “sith you, my *Lord*, are pleased with itt,
 poore GRISSELL thinkes the actyon ¹³ fitt.
 112 both I and mine att *your* comand wilbee.”
- “ My Nobles ¹⁴ murmure, ffaire Girssell, at thy honour,
 & I noe Ioy Can haue
 till thou be banisht both ffrom my court & presence,
 116 as they vniustly craue.

bids them
farewell,

tells them
they're to
die

because she's
of low blood,

and bids the
messenger

repeat her
plaints to
her husband.

He takes
them
to the
Marquis,
who sends
them to a
lady to be
brought up,
and then he
goes
to Grissell

(who
receives him
pleasantly),

says the
children are
slain ;
what does
shee think of
it ?
“ If it
pleases you,
I think it
right.”

Then he tells
her that, to
please his
nobles, she's
to be sent
away

¹ Never.—O.B.

² both.—O.B.

³ quoth.—O.B.

⁴ dearest.—O.B.

⁵ to thee.—O.B.

⁶ And to.—O.B.

⁷ bore.—O.B.

⁸ thence.—O.B.

⁹ Who in.—O.B.

¹⁰ all alone.—O.B.

¹¹ no Grief.—O.B.

¹² O.B. omits *neuer*.—F.

¹³ this.—O.B.

¹⁴ One stroke too few in the MS.—F.

in her plain
 grey frock,
 thou must be stript out of thy ¹ garments all,
 & as thou camest vnto ² mee,
 in homely gray, instead of bisse ³ & purest pall,
 120 now all thy clothing must bee.
 and be his
 wife no
 more.
 My *Lady* thou shalt ⁴ be no more,
 nor I thy *Lord*, which greeues me sore.
 the poorest liffe must now content thy mind ;
 124 a groate to thee I may ⁵ not giue
 to maintaine thee ⁶ while I liue ⁷ :
 against my Grissell such great ffoes I ffind."

The tears
 come to
 her eyes,
 but she says
 nothing,
 128 When gentle Grissell had hard this ⁸ wofull tydings,
 the teares stood in her eyes.
 she nothing ⁹ answered, no words of discont[ent]-
 ment ¹⁰
 did ffrom her lipps arrise ;
 takes off her
 velvet gown,
 132 her veluett gowne most pitteouslye shee slipped of,¹¹
 her kirtle of silke with the same.
 puts on her
 russet one,
 her russett gowne was browght againe with many a
 scoffe :
 to bere ¹² them all,¹³ her selfe shee did fframe.
 when shee was drest in this array,
 136 and readye was ¹⁴ to part ¹⁵ away,
 "god send long liue vnto my *Lord*!" quoth shee,
 "Let no Offence be ffound in this,
 to giue my *Lord* a parting kisse."
 kisses her
 husband,
 140 with wattered ¹⁶ eyes, "ffarwell, my deare!" quoth
 hee.¹⁷

¹ Of thy brave.—O.B.² to.—O.B.³ Byssus, Lat.—Pencil note. Silk.—O.B.⁴ must.—O.B.⁵ dare.—O.B.⁶ Thee to maintain.—O.B.⁷ I do live.—O.B.⁸ Did hear these.—O.B.⁹ Nothing she.—O.B.¹⁰ Discontent.—O.B.¹¹ patiently she stripped off.—O.B.¹² hear.—O.B.¹³ O.B. omits.—F.¹⁴ for.—O.B.¹⁵ pass.—O.B.¹⁶ watry.—O.B.¹⁷ said she.—O.B.

- from statelye ¹ pallace, vnto her ffathers cottage
 poore Grissell now ² is gone. and goes to
 her father's
 cottage.
 full 15 winters shee liued there contented ; There she
 stays 15
 years,
 144 no wrong shee thought vpon ;
 & att *that* ³ time through all the Land the Speeches
 went,
 the Marquesse shold marryed bee and is then
 sent for
 vnto a Ladye great ⁴ of hye discent ; to prepare
 the
 148 & to the same all *partyes* did ⁵ agree. Marquis's
 new wife's
 the Marquesse sent ffor Grissell ffaire room,
 the bryds bedchamber to prepare,
that nothing therin shold ⁶ bee ffound awrye.
 152 the bryde was withe her brother come,
 which was great Ioy to all & some :
 & ⁷ Grissell tooke all this most patyentlye.
 And in the Morning when *that* ⁸ they shold be weded, [page 498]
 156 her patyence now ⁹ was tryde :
 Gr[i]ssell was chargd, her-selfe in princely ¹⁰ mannour and dress her
 ffor to attyre the bryde. for her
 wedding.
 most willingly shee gaue consent vnto ¹¹ the sam[e :] Grissell
 dresses the
 160 the bryde in her ¹² brauery was drest, bride ;
 & presentlye the noble Marquesse thither came and then the
 Marquis
 with all his *Lords* att his request :
 " O Grissell, I wold ¹³ aske of thee asks her if
 she agrees to
 164 if thou wold to this match ¹⁴ agree ; the match.
 methinkes thy lookes are waxen ¹⁵ wonderous coy." with *that* they all began to smile,
 & Grissell shee replies ¹⁶ the while,
 168 " god send Lord Marquesse many yeeres of Ioy ! " She wishes
 him many
 happy years.

¹ Princely.—O.B.² she.—O.B.³ this.—O.B.⁴ Noble Lady.—O.B.⁵ O.B. omits *did*.—F.⁶ Might.—O.B.⁷ But.—O.B.⁸ as.—O.B.⁹ there.—O.B.¹⁰ friendly.—O.B.¹¹ to do.—O.B.¹² O.B. omits *her*.—F.¹³ will.—O.B.¹⁴ If to this Match thou wilt.—O.B.¹⁵ waxed.—O.B.¹⁶ reply'd.—O.B.

The Marquis The Marquesse was moued to see his best beloued
 thus patyent in distresse ;
 steps to her he stept vnto her, & by the hand he tooke her ;
 and says, 172 these words he did expresse :
 " You are " thou art the ¹ bryde, & all the brydes I meane to
 my only haue !
 bride : these ² thine owne children bee ! "—
 these are the youthfull [Lady] ² on her knees did blessing craue ;
 your 176 her brother as willing ³ as shee ;—
 children. " & you *that* enuye her estate
 whom I haue made my louing ⁴ mate,
 Now blush ffor shame, & honour vertuous liffe !
 You who the chronicles of Lasting ffame
 envied her, 180 shall euermore extoll the name
 blush for of patyent Grissell, my most patyent ⁵ wiffe !"
 shame ! ff[inis.]

Fame shall the chronicles of Lasting ffame
 evermore shall euermore extoll the name
 praise of patyent Grissell, my most patyent ⁵ wiffe !"
 Patient ff[inis.]
 Grissell."

¹ my.—O.B.² youthful Lady.—O.B.³ well.—O.B.⁴ chosen.—O.B.⁵ constant.—O.B.

Scroope & Browne :

THIS piece was manifestly written by a professional hand. Dolorous and tragic incidents which now form the subjects of newspaper paragraphs were in old pre-public-press day reported, with such graceful varieties of narrative as might seem expedient, by vagrant versifiers. The ballad-writer of James I.'s time performed the functions of the penny-a-liner of our day. Some such grievous duel as that described in the following piece may probably enough have been fought not far from the Tweed early in the seventeenth century, and this be the ryming news-monger's account of it. There is a certain reality about the narration, which cannot be attributed to the art of the narrator. It is evidently an event that actually transpired which he celebrates. His artistic merit is sufficiently indicated by the morals he appends to his story. He belongs to the *Οὔτος ἕππος* school.

<p>IN : Barwicke Low,¹ as late beffell, a great mishap happened therin wold peaine ² a stony hart to tell :</p> <p>4 the great discourse that did begin</p> <p>Betwixt 2 youthes of gentle blood. as they were walking all alone, they wrought their wills as they thought good,</p> <p>8 which made their ffreinds to waile & mone.</p> <p>The one hight Scroope, as I heard tell, the other browne, as I hard say :</p> <p>betwixt these 2 itt soe beffell,</p> <p>12 that hand to hand thé made affray.</p>	<p>At Berwick a sad mishap befell</p> <p>between two well-born youths,</p> <p>Scroope and Browne.</p>
---	--

¹ ? Berwick Low, a hill near Berwick.—H.

² Qu. MS.—F.

Scroope
taunted
Browne
with not
daring to
fight him.

Saith Scroope to Browne, "what dost thou meane
to come all naked¹ thus to mee?
itt meaneth sure, by thy comming,
16 thou wilt not ffight, but rather fflee."

Browne
retorted ;

Quoth Browne, "my weapons are att hand,
as to thy paine shall soone bee seene ;
ffor while *that* I may goe or stand,
20 one floote to ffly I doe not meane."

they drew
their
swords,
and fought

They drew fforth their swords anon,
they ffought together manffullye,
they² bright blades in the sun shone,—
24 O Lord, itt was great Ioy to see !—

manfully,
till Scroope

They Laid on strokes *that* were soe strong,
they ffought together manffullye.
att Lenght Scroope [pressed]³ vnto Browne,
28 [&] with his sword ffull Egarlye

hit Browne
a cruel cut
in the leg,

Hee hitt Browne on the legg, god wott,
hee cutt him vaines 2 or 3 ;
a man might haue seene where *that* stroke bo[te ;]
32 O Lord, itt pearced him cruelly !

and called
on him to
yield.
Browne
would not ;
they fought
again ;

They tooke their breath, & still they stooode :
Quoth Scroope, "thou Browne, yeelde thee to mee !"
[on] *which*, Browne waxing neere hand wood,
36 together ffearfullye they cold fflee.

and Browne
killed
Scroope.

They Lady came runinge apace :
Browne cast vp his head & did her see ;
with that hee cut Scroope in the fface ;
40 [the sword to the brain went through his ee.⁴]

¹ naked = unarmed. So *nudus* in "In maximo metu *nudum* et *cæcum* corpus ad hostes *vortere*."—Sall. *Jug.* 107 and elsewhere, and *γυμνός* in Hom. *Il.* xvi., 815, οὐδ' ὑπέμεινε Πάτροκλον γυμνόν

περ' ἔδοντ' ἐν δηϊότητι, and elsewhere.—H.

² their.—P.

³ pressed.—Dyce.

⁴ A line of the MS. is pared away.—F. Alas ! it was the more pittye.—P.

Ladies,
learn to keep
secrets!

72 You Ladyes all *that* heere my song,
 & maidens all of Eche degree,
 see yee neuer speake word with *your* tounge,
 but keepe itt till the day you dye.

Young men,
seek for a
true love :

76 And young men all *that* heere my song,
 to seeke true loue doe you not spare ;
 though PIRAMUS be eft ¹ to find,
 yett Thisbye is a bird most rare. *ffinis.*

it's a rare
bird.

¹ eath.—P. *eft*, quick, ready: Shakspeare, in Halliwell.—F.

[“*Now ffye on Dreames,*” printed in *Lo. & Hum. Songs*, p. 109,
follows here in the MS. p. 499.]

Kinge Humber :¹

[page 500]

GEOFFREY OF MONMOUTH tells us² that after the Trojan war, Æneas, flying with his son Ascanius from the destruction of Troy, sailed to Italy. There Ascanius begat a son named Sylvius, and he begat Brutus, who at the age of fifteen accidentally killed his father out hunting. Driven from Italy for so heinous a deed, Brutus landed in Greece, headed the oppressed Trojans there, took their adversary Pandrasus prisoner, married his daughter, and then sailed to the shores of the Tyrrhenian Sea, where he found other descendants of Trojans, under the command of Corineus. Having together conquered the king of Aquitaine, Brutus and Corineus sailed to the island called Albion, then inhabited by none but a few giants, and divided it. Corineus chose Cornwall (probably called after him) because in it there were more giants than elsewhere, and it was a diversion to him to encounter them. Among others he slew the biggest and most detestable monster Goëmagot. Brutus took the rest of the island, christened the whole of it Britain, after his own name, and built on the Thames the city of New Troy, afterwards called Kaer Lud and then London. After Brutus's death his three sons shared his kingdom—Locrin, the eldest, taking the middle of the island called Loegria, of which we hear so often in the Arthur romances; Kamber, the second son, taking Kambria, or Wales; and Albanact, the youngest, taking Albania, or Scotland. Locrin

¹ A late version of the story told by Geoffrey of Monmouth and his Welsh translators, by Wace (i. 65-71), Layamon (i. 91-106), Robert of Gloucester (i. 23-7), Robert of Brunne (Inner Temple MS. fol. 13) &c.—F. In *the printed Col-*

lection of Old Ballads 1726, Vol. 2. p. 5. N. I.—P.

² Book i, Chapters iii-xviii, Book ii, Chapters i-v, A. Thompson's translation revised by Giles (Bohn, 1848) p. 91-109.—F.

was betrothed to Guendolæna, the daughter of Corineus. Then Humber, king of the Huns, invaded Albania, and slew Albanact. Locrin and Kamber routed Humber near the river which now bears his name, and in which he was drowned. In one of Humber's ships Locrin found the lovely Estrildis, of beauty "hardly to be matched. No ivory or new-fallen snow, no lily could exceed the whiteness of her skin." For love of her, Locrin would have broken his troth to Corineus's daughter, but the giant-slayer shook his battle-axe at him, and he thereupon married Guendolæna. But he kept Estrildis in "apartments underground," and begat on her a most beautiful daughter who was named Sabren. In process of time Corineus died, Locrin divorced Guendolæna, and advanced Estrildis to be queen. But "twenty thousand Cornish men would know the reason why," as a modern ballad sings of another event. They met Locrin near the river Sture; he was killed by the shot of an arrow; and Guendolæna became queen. She had Estrildis and her daughter Sabren thrown into the river now called Severn after that daughter; Guendolæna hoping thus to perpetuate Locrin's infamy by his fair girl's name.

Of Geoffrey's story told above, our ballad retells, with variations, the part after Humber's invasion. Sir F. Madden shows in his note in *Layamon* iii. 313 (p. 440, note ¹ here) how by Geoffrey's misreading the name of Estrildis' daughter as *Sabren*, instead of *Avren*, he has transferred the legend of the Avon's christening to the Severn's, so that we have the names of two rivers accounted for by the process so familiar to comparative mythologists, of the invention of stories about men and women to account for existing names of streams and hills, countries and towns. But surely this linking of natural objects with the stories and fates of human beings is a gain to the imagination, the life, of man. A light is on Greece and Judæa, on Norse-land and England too, when the sun is down, and no moon or star can be seen. A glory of legend and history rests for ever on the spots where the deeds they tell of

were done, the sufferings they sing were suffered. And though we now can people the Severn's course with the wondrous vegetation, the coral-reef islands and fishful lagoons of the carboniferous system, with the gigantic saurians of the trias, and the earliest creations of mammal being, yet how did the river acquire to many of us a new life when we read—

The Danube to the *Severn* gave
The darken'd heart that beat no more, (*In Memoriam*, xix.)

when we learnt that Tennyson's friend lay on Severn's bank,
and that there from his ashes might be made

The violet of his native land. (*ib.* xviii.)

Though Geoffrey's stories be not true, let us not forget that we owe him a debt of gratitude for them.

<p>WHEN Humber in his wrathe-ffull rage King Albanack in ffeild had slaine, those bloody broyles ffor to asswage, 4 King Loclin then applyed his paine, & with an host of Brittaines stout att Lenght hee ffound King Humber out.</p> <p>Att vantage great he mett him then, 8 & with his hoast besett him soe that hee destroyed his warlike men, & HUMBERS power did ouerthrowe; & HUMBER, which ffor ffeare did fflye, 12 leapt into a riuier desperattlye.</p> <p>And be[i]ng drowned in the deepe, & left a Ladye there a-liue, &¹ sadlye did lament and weepe 16 for ffeare they shold her liffe deprive; but by her face that was soe ffaire the King was caught in cupidds snare.</p>	<p>After Humber had slain Albanack, Loclin attacked and routed his army, and Humber drowned himself. Loclin fell in love with a Hunnish lady, Estrilde, and secretly</p>
--	--

¹ who.—F.

- Hee tooke the Ladye to his loue,
 20 & secrettlye ¹ did keepe her still ;
 soe *that* they Queene did quicklye proue
 the *King* did beare her small good ² will ;
 although in wedlocke late begun,
 24 hee had by her a gallant sonne.
- Queene Guendoline was greeued in m[i]nde
 to see the *King* was altered soe ;
 att lenght the cause shee chanct to ffind,
 28 *which* brought her to much bitter woe.
 ffor ESTRILDE was his ioy, god wott,
 by whom a daughter hee begott.³
- The duke of cornewall being dead,
 32 the ffather of *that* gallant queene ⁴ ;
 the *King* by lust being ouer-ledd,
 his lawfull wiffe hee cast of cleane,
 who with her deare and tender sonne
 36 for succour did to cornewall turne.
- Then Lochrine crowned Estrild bright,
 & made of her his lawfull wiffe ;
 with her *which* was his harts delight,
 40 he thought to lead a pleasant liffe.
 thus GUENDOLINE, as once ⁵ fforlorne,
 was of her husband held in scorne.

(to the
sorrow of his
Queen
Guendoline,
by whom he
had a son)

begat a
daughter on
Estrilde.

Humber
then put
away
Guendoline,
(who took
refuge in
Cornwall),

and crowned
Estrilde his
wife.

¹ Wace puts her into a deep cellar,
and keeps her there seven years :

Par un, son bon familier,
Fist à Londre faire un celiier,
Desos terre parfondement ;
Là fu Estril bien longement :
Set ans la tint issi Lochrin
Celéement el sostérin.—*Brut*, i. 68-9.

² There is a tag at the end in the MS.
like an s.—F.

³ Tant i ala et conversa
Qu' Estril une fille enfanta.
Abren ot nom, mult par fu clère
Et plus bèle qu' Estril sa mère
Qui mult fu bèle et avenant.

Wace, *Romans de Brut*, i. 69, l. 1435-9.

(ed. le Roux de Lincy, Paris, 1836).

We have been already assured, at p. 66,
that Estril's match could not then be
found :

mult par fu bèle ;

Ne péust, ou nol liu trover

Plus bèle de li, ne sa per.

⁴ He was Corineus, the Trojan chief,
who slew the king of the giants, Gog-
gamog, that was, men say, about four and
twenty feet long. *R. Glo'ster*, i. 22. It
should be remembered of England, that
in those days "in this island were
giants; no other people dwelt there."
(*Wace*, i. 51).—F.

⁵ one, Al. Ed.—P.

- But when the cornish men did know
 44 the great abuse ¹ shee did endure,
 with her a number great did goe,
 which shee by prayers did procure.
 in battell ² then they marcht alonge
 48 for to redresse this greuous wronge,
- And neere a riuer called store ³
 the King with all his host shee mett,
 where both the armyes fought full sore,
 52 [but then the qu]eene the feild did gett ;
 yett ere they did the conquest ga[i]ne, [page 501]
 the King was with an arrow slaine. and kill him.
- Then GUENDOLINE did take in hand—
 56 vntill her sonne was come to age—
 the gouer[n]ment of all the Land ;
 & that great ffury to aswage,
 shee did command he[r]⁴ souldiers wild
 60 to drowne both Estrill & her child. orders
 Estrilde and
 her girl to
 be drowned.
- Incontinent then did they bringe
 ffaire Estrild to the riuers syde,
 & Sabrine, daughter to a Kinge,
 64 whom Guendoline cold not abyde ;
 who, being bound together ffast,
 into the riuer they were cast. are cast into
 the river,

¹ A stroke between the *s* and *e* in the MS.—F. abuse.—P.

² column, military formation.—F.

³ Lazamon's account (ed. Madden, i. 104-5) is:

MS. Cott. Calig. A. ix.
 & heo to gadere comen :
 vppen ane watere.
 þat watere hatte Stoure :
 þat feiht was swiðe sturne.

inne Dorsete :
 Loctrin deað þolede.

MS. Cott. Otho, C. viii.
 and hii to gadere comen :
 vppen one watere.
 þat hatte Steure :
 þat fiht was swiðe sturne.
 ine Dorsete :
 Loctrin deað þolede.

⁴ her al. id.—P.

which has
since been
called
Severn,
because
Sabrine
was drowned
there.

And euer since *that* runing streame
68 wherin these Ladyes drowned were,
is called SEUERNE throughe the realme,
because *that* Sabrine dyed there.¹
thus ² they *that* did to lewdnesse bend,
72 were brought vnto a wofull end. *ffinis.*

¹ Lazamon (ed. Madden i. 105) says:
þa hehte heo [Gvendoleine] ane heste . .
þat me sculde þat ilke water:
þer Abren was adrunken.
clepien hit Auren:
for þaune mæidene Abren.
& for Loctrines lufe:
þe wes hire kine louerd.
þo het 3eo one heste.
þat me solde þat ilk water:
þar Abren was a-dronke.
cleopie hit Auren:
for þan maide Abren.

On this passage Sir F. Madden remarks,
iii. 313:

“Lazamon has here strictly adhered to
the text of Wace, as we find it in the
Cotton MS.

Puis fut l'ewe u ele fut jetée,
Del nom Abren *Avren* apelee;
Avren, ke de Abren son nom prent,
A *Criste-cherche* en mer descent.—*f.* 28^b

“It is very evident that by Auren or
Avren the river *Avon* is intended, which,
after being joined by the *Stour*, falls into
the sea at Christchurch. So far all is
intelligible enough; but in the printed
text of Wace, for *Criste-cherche* is absurdly

read *Circecestre*, which the editor at once
declares to be Cirencester in Gloucester-
shire, and interprets Avren to be the
Severn. The latter error, however, is of
ancient date, and is found in the text of
Geoffrey, who writes, ‘Jubet enim Es-
trildem et filiam ejus Sabren præcipitari
in fluvium qui nunc *Sabria* dicitur.
Unde contigit quod usque in hunc diem
appellatum est flumen Britannica lingua
Sabren [*Havren*], quod per corruptionem
nominis alia lingua Sabrina vocatur,’ lib.
ii. c. 5. He is followed in this by the
Welsh translations, by the anonymous
author of the metrical Anglo-Norman
Brut, in MS. Reg. 13 A. xxi. f. 45^b c. 1,
by Robert of Gloucester, vol. i. p. 27, and
by Robert of Brunne:—

Scho did take faire Estrilde,
& Sabren, th' was hir childe,
& did tham in a water cast,
The name for tham is rotefast.
Seuerne it hate for the child Sabren,
For th' childe the name we ken.
f. 13^b c. 1.”

Ebren is the name of one of the
daughters of Ebroc. (*Wace* i. 76, l.
1596).—F.

² MS. this.—F.

In the Dayes of Olde.¹

COPIES of this ballad occur in Thomas Deloney's *Garland of Good Will* (reprinted by the Percy Society), in the *Collection of Old Ballads*, in the *Roxburghe Collection*, in the *Bagford*, in the *Reliques* (from the Editor's ancient folio MS. collated with another in black-letter in the Pepys Collection intitled "An excellent Ballad of a prince of England's courtship to the King of France's daughter &c. To the tune of Crimson Velvet,") in Ritson's *Ancient Songs*, in Child's *English and Scotch Ballads* from the Percy Society reprint of the *Garland of Good Will*.

The story of this ballad (says Percy in his introduction to his "repaired" copy) seems to be taken from an incident in the domestic history of Charles the Bald King of France. His daughter Judith was betrothed to Ethelwulf King of England: but before the marriage was consummated, Ethelwulf died, and she returned to France; whence she was carried off by Baldwyn, Forester of Flanders; who after many crosses and difficulties, at length obtained the King's consent to their marriage, and was made Earl of Flanders. This happened about A.D. 863. See Rapin, Henault, and the French historians.

This may be the historical basis of the ballad. A strange edifice is built upon it.

Judith was formally married to Ethelwulf, with her fathr's full consent.

In his return [Ethelwulf's return from his second visit to Rome] (says Lingard), he again visited the French monarch, and after a

¹ In the printed *Collection of Old Ballads* 1727. Vol. i. p. 182. No. xxiii. —P. There the long lines of our copy are printed in two, and the Ballad is entitled "An Excellent Ballad of a Prince of *England's* Courtship to the King of *France's* Daughter, and how the

Prince was disasterously slain, and the aforesaid Princess was afterwards married to a Forrester." To the tune of *Crimson Velvet*. The Clarendon commas in our text are for the heavy commas of the MS., meant for metrical points or bars.—F.

courtship of three months was married to his daughter Judith, who probably had not reached her twelfth year. The ceremony was performed by Hincmar, Archbishop of Reims. At the conclusion the princess was crowned and seated on a throne by the side of her husband, a distinction which she afterwards claimed, to the great displeasure of the West Saxons.

And on his return homewards (say some texts of the Saxon Chronicle) he took to [wife] the daughter of Charles King of the French, whose name was Judith, and he came home safe. And then in about two years he died, and his body lies at Winchester. (Stevenson's *Church Historians of England*.)

After this period [his second visit to Rome] (says Asser), he returned to his own country, bringing with him as a bride Juditha, daughter of Charles the King of the Franks. . . . He also commanded Judith, the daughter of King Charles, whom he had received from her father, to sit by his side on the royal throne; and this was done without any hostility or objection from his nobles even to the end of his life, in defiance of the perverse custom of that nation. . . . King Æthulwulf, then, lived two years after his return from Rome, during which, among many other useful pursuits of the present life, in the prospect of his going the way of all flesh, that his sons might not engage in unseemly disputes after their father's death, he commanded a will, or rather a letter of instructions, to be written, &c. &c.

After the demise of Ethelwulf, the young widow was married by Ethelbert the son, who immediately succeeded him on the throne.

This incestuous connection (says Lingard) scandalised the people of Wessex; their disapprobation was publicly and loudly expressed; and the King, overawed by the remonstrances of the Bishop of Winchester, consented to a separation. . . .

Judith, unwilling to remain in a country which had witnessed her disgrace, sold her lands, the dower she had received from Ethelwulf, and returned to the court of her father. Charles, who dared not trust the discretion of his daughter, ordered her to be confined within the walls of Senlis, but to be treated at the same time with the respect due to a queen. The cunning of Judith was, however, more than a match for the vigilance of her guards. By the connivance of her brother she eloped in disguise with Baldwin, great forester of France, and the fugitives were soon beyond the reach of royal resent-

ment. The King prevailed on his bishops to excommunicate Baldwin for having forcibly carried off a widow, but the Pope disapproved of the sentence, and at his entreaty Charles gave a reluctant consent to their marriage, though neither he nor Archbishop Hincmar could be induced to assist at the ceremony. They lived in great magnificence in Flanders, the earldom of which was bestowed on them by the King; and from their union descended Matilda, the wife of William the Conqueror, who gave to England a long race of sovereigns.

See Palgrave's *History of Normandy*.

The first part of the poem then—that containing the dismal end of the English prince—is purely fictitious. The marriage brought about in the latter part, and the reconciliation at last effected between the French King and his daughter, are historical facts.

The metre is notable. The piece was sung, as we have seen, to the tune of Crimson Velvet. Could it have given the name originally to that tune? The Queen is described in v. iii, when she is awaiting the coming of the King her father, as “richly clad in fair crimson velvet.” This tune, says Mr. Collier, in his *Roxburghe Ballads*, was “highly popular in the reigns of Elizabeth and her successor.” “Amongst the ballads that were sung to it,” adds Mr. Chappell in his *Popular Music*, “is ‘The lamentable complaint of Queen Mary, for the unkind departure of King Philip, in whose absence she fell sick and died’—and ‘Constance of Cleveland.’”

<p>IN : the dayes of old, when faire ffrance did flourish, storyes plaine haue ¹ told, louers felt annoye. the King a daughter had, bewtyous, bright, & louelye,² 4 which made her ffather glad, shee was his onlye ioye.</p>	<p>In days of old, a French King had a lovely daughter,</p>
--	--

¹ plainly.—O.B.

² fair and comely.—O.B.

whom an
English
Prince
wood
and won.

A prince of¹ England came, whose deeds did merit
fame ;

he wood he[r] long, & loe, att last,
looke² what he did requ[i]re, shee granted his de-
sire ;

8 their harts in one were linked ffast:

This made
her father
angry,

which when her ffather proued, Lord ! how he was
moued

& tormented in his minde !

he sought pro³ to preuent them, and to discontent
them,

12 fortune crossed louers kind.

and he
forbade
their
meeting.

When these princes twaine, were thus debarred of⁴
plesure

through the Kings disdaine, which their ioyes with-
stoode,

The Lady
packed up
her jewells,

the Ladye gott⁵ vp close, her iewells & her treasure.

and went,
poorly
dressed,
to meet her
lover
in a forest.

16 hauing no remorse of state or royall bloode,
in homelye poore array shee went ffrom court away
to meete her ioy⁶ & harts delight,

who in a fforrest great, had taken vp his seate

20 to wayt her cominge in the night.

But while he
was waiting

but see⁷ what sudden danger, to this princly stranger
chanced, as he sate⁸ alone :

outlaws
robbed and
stabbed him

by outlawes hee was robbed, & with ponyards⁹
stabbedd,

mortally.

24 vttering many a dying grone.

The Prin-
cess, uncon-
scious,

The princesse armed by him, and by true desire,
wandring all the night without dreat¹⁰ att all,
still vnknowne shee past, in her strange attyre

28 coming att the last, in the¹¹ Ecohes call,

¹ from.—O.B.

² Look.—O.B.

³ for.—O.B.

⁴ barr'd of.—O.B.

⁵ lock'd.—O.B.

⁶ Love.—O.B.

⁷ lo.—O.B.

⁸ set.—O.B.

⁹ a Poniard.—O.B.

¹⁰ Dread.—O.B.

¹¹ Within.—O.B.

- "you faire woods," quoth shee, "honored may you
 bee!
 harbouring my harts delight,
 which doth compasse ¹ heere, my ioy & only deere,
 32 my trustye ffreind & comelye *Knight*.
 sweete, I come vnto thee, sweete, I come to woo thee,
 that thou maist not angrye bee.
 for my long delaying, & thy ² curteous staying,
 36 amends ffor all Ile make to thee ³!"
- Passing thus alone through the silent forrest,
 many greenous grones,⁴ sounded in her eares,⁵
 where shee heard a man to lament the sorest
 40 that was euer seene,⁶ fforct by deadlye teares ⁷:
 "ffarwell my deere," quoth hee, "whom I must ⁸
 neuer ⁹ see!
 ffor why, my liffe is att an end!
 through villanes crueltye, lo ¹⁰! heere for thee I dye ¹¹!
 44 to show I am a ffaith[f]ull ffreind,
 there ¹² I lye a ¹³ bleeding, while my thoughts are
 feedinge
 on thy ¹⁴ rarest bewtye ffound.
 O hard hap that may bee, litle knowes my Ladye
 48 my harts blood Lyes on the ground!"
- With that he gaue a grone, which ¹⁵ did burst in sunder ¹⁶
 all the tender strings of his bleedinge ¹⁷ hart.
 shee, which ¹⁸ knew his voice, att his tale did wonder:
 52 all her former ioy,¹⁹ did to greeffe conuert.

thanks the
woods forharbouring
her love,

and promises

to make him
amends for
his waiting.Then she
hears
groans,a lover
lamenting,bidding
farewellto his
beautiful
love,[page 502]
and then
dying.She knows
her lover's
voice,¹ encompass.—O.B.² One stroke too many to the *y*.—F.³ make thee.—O.B.⁴ Many a grievous Groan.—O.B.⁵ Ear.—O.B.⁶ Chance that ever came.—O.B.⁷ Strife.—O.B.⁸ shall.—O.B.⁹ MS. *meuer*.—F.¹⁰ MS. *to*.—F.¹¹ For thy sweet sake I dye,

Through Villians Cruelty.—O.B.

¹² Here.—O.B.¹³ O.B. omits *a*.—F.¹⁴ the.—O.B.¹⁵ that.—O.B.¹⁶ break asunder.—O.B.¹⁷ gentle.—O.B.¹⁸ who.—O.B.¹⁹ Joys.—O.B.

runs to him, straight shee ran to see, who this man shol[d] ¹ be
that soe like her loue did speake,
and finds him dead. & found, when as shee came, her louely Lord lay
slaine,
56 all ² smeared in blood *which liffe did breake.*
She cries when this deed shee spyed,³ Lord, how sore shee
cried!
her sorrow cannott ⁴ counted bee.
and exclaims, her eyes like fountaines runinge, while shee cryed out,
“my darli[ng!] ⁵
60 wold god *that I had dyed for thee!*”
Would God I had died for thee!
She kisses him, His pale lipps, alas, 20 times shee kissed,
& his fface did washe, with her trickling ⁶ teares,
euery bleeding wound, her faire eyes ⁷ bedewed,
64 wiping of the blood, with her golden haire.
“speake, faire ⁸ loue!” quoth shee, “speake, faire ⁹
prince, to me!
one sweete word of comfort giue!
lifet vp thy fayre eyes, listen to my cries!
68 thinke in what great greeffe I liue!”
Alas! in vain. all in vaine shee sewed, all in vaine shee vewed,¹⁰
the princessse ¹¹ liffe was dead ¹² and gone.
She mourns there stood shee still mourning, vntill ¹³ the sunns ¹⁴
approching,¹⁵
72 & bright day was coming on.
and then resolves “In this great ¹⁶ distresse,” quoth this royall Ladye,
not to return to court, “who can now expre[s], what will become of me?
but to seek service 76 but some service seeke where I may placed bee.”
somewhere.

¹ might.—O.B.² O.B. omits *All.*—F.³ Which when that she espyed.—O.B.⁴ could not.—O.B.⁵ Query the MS. The *a* or *ar* is blotched, and the *g* and half the *n* pared away.—F.⁶ brinish.—O.B.⁷ face.—O.B.⁸ my.—O.B.⁹ dear.—O.B.¹⁰ wooed.—O.B.¹¹ Prince's.—O.B.¹² fled.—O.B.¹³ Till.—O.B.¹⁴ sunns in the MS.—F.¹⁵ returning.—P.¹⁷ Never will I.—O.B.¹⁶ sad.—O.B.

- & ¹ thus shee made her mone, weeping all alone,
all in dread ² and deadlye ffeare.
- A fforrester all in greene, most comely to be seene, A forester
- 80 ranging the woods,³ did ffind her there,
round besett with sorrow, "maid,⁴" quoth [he,⁵] "god accosts her.
morrowe !
what hard hap hath brought you heere ? "
- "harder happ did neuer, chance vnto ⁶ maiden euer. She tells
him
her brother
lies slain,
- 84 heere lyes slaine my brother deere !
- "where might I be placed, gentle forster, tell mee,
where shall ⁷ I procure a service in my neede ?
paines I will ⁸ not spare, but will doe my dutye ;
88 ease mee of my care, helpe my extreme neede ! "
- the fforrester all amazed, att ⁹ her bewtye gazed and asks
him
where she
can get
taken into
service.
- till his hart was sett on ffire : The forester
falls in love
with her,
- "if, ffaire mayd," quoth hee, "you will goe with mee,
92 you shall haue your harts desire."
- he brought her to his mother, & aboue all other takes her
to his
mother,
- he sett fforth this maydens praise.
- long was his hart inflamed, att last ¹⁰ her loue he gains her
love,
- gained :
- 96 thus did fortune ¹¹ his glory raise ;
- Thus vnknownen he macht, with a ¹² Kings ffaire and so
marries a
King's
daughter.
She bears
him seven
children,
and then
tells him
who she is.
- daughte[r] ;
- children ⁷ shee ¹³ had ere shee told the same.¹⁴
- but when he vnderstood, shee was a royall princesse,
- 100 by this meanes att last, hee shewed forth her ¹⁵ tells him
who she is.
fame :

¹ Whilst.—O.B.² In this deep.—O.B.³ wood.—O.B.⁴ Fair Maid.—O.B.⁵ quoth he.—P. & O.B.⁶ to.—O.B.⁷ might.—O.B.⁸ will I.—O.B.⁹ On.—O.B.¹⁰ length.—O.B.¹¹ So Fortune did.—O.B.¹² the.—O.B.¹³ he.—O.B.¹⁴ to him was known.—O.B.¹⁵ ? MS. *ther* with the *t* blotched out.
—F. her.—O.B.

He dresses
his children
in cloth of
gold on the
left side,
wool on the
right.

he clothed his children then, not like to other men,
in partye coulors strange to see ;
the left¹ side, cloth of gold ; *the* right² side, now³
behold,

104 of wollen cloth still fframed hee.

men heratt⁴ did wonder, golden fame did thunder⁵
this strange deede in euery place.

The King
of France
comes

the *King* of ffrance came thither, being pleasan[t]⁶
whether,

to the forest
to hunt,

108 in the⁷ woods the harts⁸ to chase.

and the
children
are placed in
his way,
with the
mother in
velvet,
the father in
grey.

The children then⁹ did stand, as their father¹⁰ willed,
where the royall *King* must of force come by,
their mother richly clad, in faire crimson¹¹ veluett,
112 their ffather all in gray, comelye¹² to the eye.

The King
asks him
how he dares
dress his
wife and
children so.

then the¹³ famous *King*, noting euery thinge,
did aske "how hee durst be soe bold
to let his wiffe to weare, & decke his children the[re,]
116 in costly robes of cloth, of¹⁴ gold."

"Because
their mother
is a prin-
cess,"

the fforrester replyed,¹⁵ & the cause descryed ;
to¹⁶ the *King* thus did hee¹⁷ say :

120 "well may they by their mother, weare rich gold¹⁸
with other,
being by birth a princesse¹⁹ gay."

The King

The *King* vpon these words, more heedfully beheld
them,
till a crimson blush his conceipt did crosse :

¹ Right.—O.B.

² Left.—O.B.

³ to.—O.B.

⁴ thereat.—O.B.

⁵ MS. thinder.—F.

⁶ The *t* is put on by a later hand.—F.

⁷ these.—O.B.

⁸ Hart.—O.B.

⁹ there.—O.B.

¹⁰ Mother.—O.B.

¹¹ MS. crinson.—F.

¹² Most comely.—O.B.

¹³ When this.—O.B.

¹⁴ of Pearl and.—O.B.

¹⁵ boldly reply'd.—O.B.

¹⁶ And to.—O.B.

¹⁷ he thus did.—O.B.

¹⁸ Cloaths.—O.B.

¹⁹ Only half the *n* in the MS.—F.

- “ the more,” quoth hee, “ I looke¹ on thy wiffe &
 Children,
 124 [The more I call to mind the Daughter whom I
 lost.”]²
 “ I am *that* child,” quoth shee, falling on her knee ;
 “ pardon mee, my soueraine leege ! ”
 the King perceiuing this, did his daughter³ kisse,
 128 &⁴ ioyfull teares did stopp his speech.
 with his traine he turned, & with them⁵ soiourned ;
 straight hee dubd her husband knight,
 then⁶ made him Erle of fflanders, one of his cheefe
 commanders :
 132 thus was his sorrow⁷ put to flight. ffinis.

says the
 mother
 must be
 his lost
 daughter.

[page 503]
 She owns
 that she is.

He kisses
 her,

knight
 her husband,
 and makes
 him Earl of
 Flanders.

¹ I look, quoth he.—O.B.

² O.B. The line was pared off the
 folio by the binder.—F.

³ His Daughter dear did.—O.B.

⁴ 'Till.—O.B.

⁵ her.—O.B.

⁶ He.—O.B.

⁷ were their Sorrows.—O.B.

Amintas.¹

AMINTAS is here chided for his inconstancy by the unhappy victim of it, who, having said her say and moaned her moan, dies. The piece is but commonplace. The allusion to the name-cutting on the trees will remind the reader of Orlando's habit, so distasteful to Jacques. Both in the stanza that contains it and in the preceding one the poet closely imitates the pretty lines Ovid puts in poor forlorn CEnone's mouth, or rather assigns to her pen, in his Fifth Heroid :

Incisæ servant a te mea nomina fagi,
 Et legor CEnone falce notata tua ;
 Et quantum trunci, tantum mea nomina crescunt.
 Crescite et in titulos surgite recta meos.
 Populus est, memini, fluviali consita ripa,
 Est in qua nostri litera scripta memor.
 Popule, vive precor, quæ consita margine ripæ
 Hoc in rugoso cortice carmen habes :
 Quum Paris CEnone poterit spirare relicta,
 Ad fontem Xanthi versa recurret aqua.'
 Xanthe, retro propera, versæque recurrite lymphæ,
 Sustinet CEnonen deseruisse Paris.

One hot day,
 Amintas

drove his
 flocks to
 water,

and heard

AMINTAS, on a summers day
 to shunn Apolloes beames,
 went driuing of his flockes away
 4 to tast some cooling streames.
 and through a fforrest as hee went,
 neere to a riuer side,
 a voice *which from* a groue was sent,
 8 invited him to abyde :

¹ An old Song not inelegant or unpoetical.—P.

- A voice well seeming¹ to bewraye
 a discontented mind,
 ffor oftentimes I hard him² say,
 12 10000 times, “vnkinde!”
 the remnant³ of this ragged mone
 wold not escape my eare
 till euery sigh brought fforth a grone,
 16 & euery sobb a teare.
- But leauing her vnto her-selfe;—
 in sorrowes, sighes, & mone,
 I heard a deadly discontent:
 20 these 2 brake fforth att one:
 “Amintas! is my loue to thee
 of such⁴ small account,
 that thou disdainest to looke on mee,
 24 & loue as thou was wont?
- “How often⁵ didest thou protest to me,
 ‘the heauens shold turne to naught,
 the sunn shold ffirst obscured bee,
 28 ere thou wold change thy thought!’
 but heauens, be you dissolved quite!
 sunn, show thy fface no more!
 ffor my Amintas, hee is lost,
 32 a! woe⁶ is me therffore!
- “How oft didst thou ingraue *our* names,
 neere to the rocke of⁷ Bay?
 still wishing *that* our Loue shold haue
 36 no worse successe then they.
 but they in groues still happy proue,
 & flourish doe thé still,
 whiles I [in⁸] sorrow doe remaine,
 40 still wanting of my will.
- a voice
 complain-
 ing,
 Oh unkind!
 A girl
 broke forth
 “Amintas!
 Why dost
 thou disdain
 me?
 Alas!
 Amintas is
 lost to me.
 I live in
 sorrow, and
 want my
 love.

¹ MS. seeming.—F.² it.—P.³ MS. rennant.—F.⁴ [insert] a.—P.⁵ oft did'st, as in line 33.—Dyce.⁶ Ah! woe.—P.⁷ on.—P.⁸ in.—P.

False man,

thou hast
broken thy
promise,

and left me
alone

to end my
days in
woe."

" O ffalse, forsworne, & ffathelesse man!
disloyall in thy loue !

thou hast fforgott thy promises,
44 and dost vnconstant proue.

& thou hast [left ¹] me all alone
in this woefull distresse,

to end my dayes in heauinesse,
48 *which* well thou might redresse."

And then shee sate vpon the ground,
her sorrowes to deplore ;

She breathed
her last,

but after this was neuer seene
52 to sigh nor sobb noe more.

and died for
love.

And thus in loue as shee did liue,
soe ffor loue shee did dye ² ;

a ffairer creature neuer man
56 beheld with morttall eye.

ffinis.

¹ left.—P.

² Shee for her love did.—P.

Winning of Cadiz.¹

THIS ballad, of which another copy is preserved in Deloney's *Garland of Good Will*, reprinted by the Percy Society, celebrates what Macaulay has declared to be "the most brilliant military exploit that was achieved on the Continent by English arms during the long interval which elapsed between the battle of Agincourt and that of Blenheim" (Essay on Lord Bacon). It was undoubtedly written at the time, as the details are extremely accurate. It may have been written, as Percy suggests in his Introduction to his "corrected" Folio version in the *Reliques*, by some person concerned in the expedition. Certainly it is eminently authentic. The vauntings and threatenings of the Spaniards (they were meditating a second Armada about the year 1596)—the setting forth from Plymouth under Howard of Effingham (the Lord Admiral) and the brave impetuous Earl of Essex, as commanders-in-chief (amongst the other officers were the Lord Thomas Howard, Sir Walter Raleigh, Sir Francis Vere, Sir George Carew, Sir Coniers Clifford)—the capturing or burning of the ships beneath Cadiz—the landing of the soldiery and surrender of the town—the enormous booty seized—the generous protection by the Earl of the women and children—the advance to the market-place—are all historical facts; of which there are, as Lingard points out, several accounts by Birch, Camden, Stowe, Strype, Raleigh.

"Never before," says Lingard, "had the Spanish monarch received so severe a blow. He lost thirteen men of war and immense magazines of provisions and naval stores; the defences of Cadiz, the strongest fortress in his dominions, had been razed to the ground; and the

¹ An excellent old ballad: on the Under the Lord Admiral Howard, & Winning of Cadiz—on June 21st 1596: Earl of Essex, General.—P.

secret of his weakness at home had been revealed to the world, at the same time that the power of England had been raised in the eyes of the European nations. Even those who wished well to Spain, allotted the praise of moderation and humanity to the English commanders, who had suffered no blood to be wantonly spilt, no woman to be defiled, but had sent under an escort the nuns and females to the port of St. Mary, and had allowed them to carry away their jewels and wearing apparel."

"The town of Cales," says Raleigh (*apud* Cayley, i. 272) "was very rich in merchandise, in plate, and money; many rich prisoners given to the land commanders, so as that sort are very rich. Some had prisoners for 16,000 ducats, some for 20,000, some for 10,000, and beside great houses of merchandise."

[page 504]
The proud
Spaniards
boasted
they'd
conquer us.

LONG: the proud Spamyareds had vanted to conquer vs,

threatning ¹ our Country with ffyer & sorde,
often preparing their nauy most sumptuos,

4 with as great plenty as spaine cold afforde:
duba-dub, dub-a-dub! thus strikes their drummes.
tanta-ra, ra-ra! the Englishmen comes!

But Howard
and Essex

To the seas presentlye went our Lord Admirall,
8 with *knights* ² couragious, & captaines ffull good;
The Erle of Essex, a prosperous generall,
with him prepared to passe the salt ffloode.
dub a dub &c.

set sail from
Plymouth,

12 Att plimmouth speedilye, tooke they shipp valliantly
brauer shippes neuer weere scene vnder sayle,
with their ffayre colours spread, & streamers ore their
hea[d].
now, bragging spanyards, take heede of your tayle!
16 dub &c.

¹ One stroke too few in the MS.—F.

² Knights.—P.

- Vnto cales¹ cunninglye came wee most speedylye,
 where the *Kings* nauye securely did ryde;
 being vpon their backes, pearcing their butts of
 sackes,
 20 ere any spanyards our coming descryde. dub: &c.
- Great was the crying, runing & rydinge,
 which att that season was made in that place;
 the beacons were ffyered, as need then required;
 24 to hyde their great treasure they had litle space.
- There you might see their shippes, how they were ffired
 ffast,
 & how their men drowned themselues in the sea;
 there might they here them crye, wayle & weepe
 piteouslye,
 28 when they saw no shift to scape thence away.
- The great *Saint* Phillipp, the pryde of the Spanyards,
 was burnt to the bottom, & sunke in the sea.
 but the *Saint* ANDREW & eke the *Saint* Mathew,
 32 wee tooke in ffight manfullye, & brought them
 away.
- The Erle of Essex most vallyant and hardy,
 with horsemen & ffootmen marched toward the
 towne.
 the spanyards which saw them, were greatly affrighted,
 36 did fflye ffor their sauegard, & durst not come
 dow[ne.]
- “Now,” quoth the Noble Erle, “courage, my soul-
 diers all!
 ffight and be vallyant! they² spoyle you shall haue,
 & [be³] well rewarded from they⁴ great to the small;
 40 but looke *that* women & Children you saue.”

¹ So they called Cadiz in Queen Elizabeth's Time.—P.

² the.—P.

³ be.—P.

⁴ the.—P.

- The Spaniards
surrendered,
- we put our
colours on
their walls,
- plundered
their houses,
- and took
their fair
satins and
velvets.
- And when
our
prisoners
- wouldn't
pay their
ransom,
we burnt
their town
- and marcht
away.
- The spanyards att *that* sight though[t] in vaine twas
to fight,
hunge vpp fflaggs of truce,¹ yeelded the towne.
wee marcht in *presentlye*, decking the walls on hye
44 with our English coulours, *which* purchast renowne.
- Entring the houses then of the most richest men,
ffor gold & treasure wee serched eche day :
in some places wee did ffind pyes bakeing in the
oue[n],
48 meate att the ffire roasting, & ffolkes fled away.
- ffull of rich merchandize euery shop wee did see,
damaskes, & sattins, & veluetts, full ffaire,
which souldiers mesured out by the lenght of their
swo[rds.]
52 of all comodytyes eche one had a share.
- Thus cales was taken, & our braue generall
marcht to the markt-place where hee did stand ;
there many prisoners of good account were tooke,
56 many craued mercy, & mercy they found.²
- When our braue generall saw they delayed time,
& wold not ransome their towne, as they said;
with their faire wainescotts, their presses & bedsteeds,
60 their ioyned stooles & tables, a ffire were made.
& when the towne burned all in a ffame,
with ta-ra, tan-ta-ra, away wee came ! ffinis.

¹ [insert] &.—P.² fann'd, Rhythmi gratiâ.—P.

Edward the third.¹

COPIES of this ballad occur in the *Garland of Good Will*, the *Collection of Old Ballads*. In Halliwell's *Descriptive Notices of Popular English Histories*, Percy Soc. 1848, No. 63 is "*The Story of King Edward III. and the Countess of Salisbury*, 12mo. Whitehaven, n. d. This is a small prose history; and there is one, if not more [than one,] early play on the same subject. A ballad . . . is printed in Evans' *Old Ballads*, ed. 1810, ii. 301."

This ballad tells how Edward the Third became enamoured of the Countess of Salisbury, and how the brave lady most excellently converted him to a better mind.

Chapter lxxvii. of Berners' *Cronycle of Froissart* narrates "how the kyng of England was in amours with the Countess of Salisbury." She receives the king at Wark Castle, and by her exceeding beauty and grace strikes him "to the hert with a sparcle of fyne love." He falls into a "gret study." Presently she "came to the kyng with a mery chere."

She came to the kyng with a mery chere, who was in a gret study, (and she sayd) dere syr, why do ye study so for, your grace nat dyspleased, it aparteyneth nat to you so to do: rather ye shulde make good chere and be ioyfull, seyng ye haue chased away your enmies, who durst nat abyde you: let other men study for the remynant; than the kyng sayd, a, dere lady, knowe for trouthe, that syth I entred into the castell, ther is a study come to my mynde, so that I can nat chuse but to muse, nor I can nat tell what shall fall therof, put it out of my herte I can nat: a sir, quoth the lady, ye ought alwayes to make good chere, to confort therwith your peple: god hath ayded you so in your besynes, and hath gyuen you so great graces, that ye be the moste douted and honoured prince in all christendome, and if the kyng of scottes haue done you any dyspyte

¹ In the printed *Collection of Old Ballads* 1726, Vol. 2, p. 68, N. xi.—P.

or damage, ye may well amende it whan it shall please you, as ye haue done dyuerse tymes or this ; sir, leave your musyng and come into *the* hall, if it please you, your dyner is all redy ; a, fayre lady, quoth the kyng : other thynges lyeth at my hert that ye knowe nat of : but surely *the* swete behauyng, the perfyt wysedom, the good grace, noblenes, and excellent beauty, that I se in you, hath so sore surprised my hert, *that* I can nat but loue you, and without your loue I am but deed : than the lady sayde, a, ryght noble prince, for goddessaake mocke nor tempt me nat : I can nat byleue that it is true that ye say, nor that so noble a prince as ye be, wold thynke to dyshonour me, and my lorde, my husbände, who is so valyant a knight, and hath done your grace so gode seruyce, and as yet lyethe in prison for your quarell ; certesly sir, ye shulde in this case haue but a small prayse, and nothyng the better therby : I had neuer as yet such a thought in my hert, nor I trust in god neuer shall haue, for no man lyueng ; if I had any suche intencyon, your grace ought nat all onely to blame me, but also to punyssh my body, ye and by true iustice to be disembred : therwith the lady departed fro the kyng, and went into the hall to hast the dyner, than she returned agayne to the kyng, and broght some of his knyghtes with her, and sayd, sir, yf it please you to come into the hall, your knyghtes abideth for you to wasshe, ye haue ben to long fastyng. Then *the* kyng went into the hall and wassht, and sat down amonge his lordes, and the lady also ; the kyng ete but lytell, he sat styll musyng, and as he durst, he cast his eyen vpon the lady : of his sadnesse his knyghtes had maruell, for he was nat acustomed so to be ; some thought it was bycause the scottes were scaped fro hym. All *that* day the kyng taryed ther, and wyst nat what to do : *som*tyme he ymagined *that* honour and trouth defended him to set his hert in such a case, to dyshonour such a lady, and so true a knyght as her husband was, who had alwayes well and truely serued hym. On thother part, loue so constrayned hym, that the power therof surmounted honour and trouth : thus *the* kyng debated in hymself all that day, and all that night ; in the mornyng he arose and dysloged all his hoost, and drewe after the scottes, to chase them out of his realme. Than he toke leaue of the lady, sayeng, my dere lady, to god I commende you tyll I returne agayne, requiryng you to aduyse you otherwyse than ye haue sayd to me : noble prince, quoth the lady, god *the* father glorious be your conduct, and put you out of all vylayne thoughtes : sir, I am, and euer shal be redy to do your grace seruyce to your honour and to myne ; therwith the kyng departed all abashed.

Not long afterwards, when the king held his Round Table at Windsor, his passion was still fervent. Probably this passion thus entertained by the king about the time when he instituted the Order of the Garter suggested to the popular mind the traditional story which professes to explain the name and the motto of the Order. The earliest occurrence of that story is, perhaps, in the *Anglica Historia* of Polydore Vergil; but he omits the name of the countess. The tale soon won general acceptance. There is no historical evidence for it whatever. It is but a specimen of what may be called vulgar etymology.

The "sleight of fine advice," by which the countess in the following ballad saves her own and the king's honour, is admirably told.

WHEN : as Edward the 3^d did liue, *that vallyant* In Edward
King, III.'s time,
 david of Scotland to rebell did then begin ; David II. of
 the towne of Barwicke suddenlye ffrom vs he woone, Scotland
 took
 4 & burnt Newcastle to the ground: thus strife begun. Berwick,
 burnt New-
 to Rose-bury ¹ castle marchet he then, castle,
 & by the force of warlicke men
 beseiged therin a gallant ffaire Ladye
 8 while *that* her husband was in ffrance, and besieged
 Lady
 his cuntryes honor to advance, Salisbury in
 Rosebury
 Castle.
 [The Noble and Famous Earl of Salisbury.]²
 Braue Sir *william* Montague rode then in post,³ [page 505]
 12 who declared vnto the *King* the Scottishmens hoast; News is
 brought to
 Edward,
 and he
 prepares to
 march north,
 who like a Lyon in a rage did straight-way *prepare*
 ffor to deliuer *that* woefull⁴ Lady from wofull care.
 but when the Scottishmen did heare say
 16 *Edward* our king was comen⁵ *that* day, on which
 the Scotch
 raise the

¹ Roxbury.—O.B.

² O.B. The line is pared away in the MS.—F.

³ haste.—O.B.

⁴ fair.—O.B.

⁵ come.—O.B.

siege and
run away,

so that the
Lady
alone meets
Edward.

He falls in
love with
her.

She thanks
him for
frightening
her foes,

Edward is
sad for love

of the
Countess,

and tells
her he has
been
wronged.

She says,
"Tell me
how,
and I'll
right it."

"Swear
that," says
Edward.

thé raised their seege, & ran away with speede,¹
soe *that* when he did thither come
with warlike trumpett, fiffe, & drum,
20 none but a gallant Lady did him meete² ;
who³ when hee did with greedy eyes behold & see,
her peereles bewtye straight⁴ intralld⁵ his mai-
esty ;
& euer the longer *that* he looked, the more hee might,
24 for in her only bewty was his harts delight.
& humbly then vpon her knee
shee thankett his royall maiesty
that he had driuen danger ffrom her gate.
28 "Lady," quoth he, "stand vp in peace,
although my warr doe now increase."
"Lord, keepe," quoth shee, "all hurt ffrom your
estate⁶ !"
Now is the King ffull sad in soule ; & wott you⁷
why ;
32 all⁸ for the loue of the faire countesse⁹ Salsbury.
shee, litle knowing his cause of greefe, did come to see
wherefore his highnesse sate alone soe heauilye :
"I haue beene wronged, faire dame," quoth hee,
36 "since I came hither vnto thee."
"no, god forbid, my souerainge !" shee sayd¹⁰ ;
"if I were worthy for to know
the cause & ground of this your woe,
40 itt¹¹ shold be helpet if itt did Lye in mee.¹² "
"Swear to performe to me thy words, thou Lady
gay ;
to thee the sorrow of my hart I will bewray.¹³ "

¹ Fear.—O.B.² met he there.—O.B.³ whom.—O.B.⁴ did.—O.B.⁵ enthrall.—O.B.⁶ State.—O.B.⁷ wots not.—O.B.⁸ And.—O.B.⁹ Countess Of.—O.B.¹⁰ said she.—O.B.¹¹ You.—O.B.¹² thy Word to me.—O.B.¹³ betray.—O.B.

- “ I sweare by all the *Saints* in heauen I will,” quoth shee, She swears,
- 44 “ & lett my Lord haue no mistrust at all in me.”
 “ Then take thy selfe asyde,” he sayd ; and the
King says,
“ You have
wounded
me ;
 quoth hee,¹ “ thy bewtye hath betrayd
 & wounded² a *king* with thy bright shining eye ;
- 48 if thou doe then some mercy show, show me
mercy, or
 thou shalt expell a princes woe ;
 soe shall I liue, or else in sorrow dye.” I shall die.”
- “ you haue you[r] wish, my soueraine Lord, effectuallye :
- 52 take all the loue³ that I may⁴ giue your maiestye.” “ I give
you all the
love I may.”
 “ but in⁵ thy bewtye all my woes⁶ haue their abode.”
 “ take then⁷ my bewtye from my face, my gracyous
 Lord.”
- “ didst thou not sweare to grant my will ? ” “ But grant
my will,
- 56 “ all⁸ that I may, I will fulfill.”
 “ then⁹ for my loue let thy¹⁰ true loue be seene.” love me,”
says the
King.
 “ my Lord, your speech I might reprove ;
 you cannott giue to me your loue,
- 60 ffor that alone¹¹ belongs vnto your queene :
- “ But I suppose your grace did this onlye to trye
 whether a wanton tale might tempt DAME SALSBURYE ;
 Nor¹² ffrom your selfe therefore, my leege, my stepps
 doe stray, “ You are
trying to
tempt me,”
says Lady
Salisbury.
“ I go from
your tempt-
ing talk.”
- 64 but from your tempting wanton¹³ tale I goe my way.”
 “ O turne againe, thou¹⁴ Lady bright !
 come vnto me, my hartes delight !

¹ For why.—O.B.² Wounding.—O.B.³ Leave.—O.B.⁴ can.—O.B.⁵ on.—O.B.⁶ Joys.—O.B.⁷ thou.—O.B.⁸ O.B. omits *all*.—F.⁹ All then.—O.B.¹⁰ my.—O.B.¹¹ O.B. omits *alone*.—F.¹² Not.—O.B.¹³ wanton tempting.—O.B.¹⁴ my.—O.B.

- Lord
Warwick,
the
Countess's
father,
- 68 gone is the comfort of my pensiue hart.
heere comes the Erle of warwicke, hee
the father of this faire Ladye ;
my mind to him I meane for to impart."
- asks Edward
why he is
grieved.
- 72 " why is my Lord & soueraine¹ soe greened in mind ?"
" because *that* I haue lost the thing I cannott find."
" what thing is *that*, my gracyous Lord, *that*² you
haue lost ?"
" itt is my heart, *which* is neare dead twixt³ ffire &
frost."
" curst be the⁴ ffire, & ffrost too,
76 *that* causeth⁵ this your hynesse woe !"
" O warwicke! thou dost wrong me wonderous⁶ sore.
It is thy daughter, Noble Erle ;
that heauen-bright lampe, *that* peereles pearle,
80 *which* kills my hart ; yett I doe⁷ her adore."
" If *that* be all, my gracyous [Lord,]⁸ *that* workes
your greefe,
I will perswade the scornefull dame to yeelde reliefe.
neuer shall shee my daughter be if shee refuse ;
84 the loue & ffauor of a king may her excuse."
thus whylye⁹ warwicke went his way,¹⁰
& quite contrary he did say
when as hee did the bewtyous countesse meete :
88 " well mett, my daugheter deere,¹¹ " quoth hee,
" a message I must doe to thee :
our royall King most kindlye [doth thee greete ;]
The King will dye vnlesse to him thou grant¹² thy
loue."
92 " to loue the King, my husbands loue I shall¹³ remoue."
- " I adore
your
daughter."
- " I'll per-
suade her to
yield to
you."
- Warwick
- meets his
daughter,
- tells her the
King is
- [page 506]
dying for
her love,
and urges
her to grant
it.

¹ Sovereign King.—O.B.² Which.—O.B.³ Betwixt.—O.B.⁴ that.—O.B.⁵ caused.—O.B.⁶ very.—O.B.⁷ do I.—O.B.⁸ King.—O.B.⁹ wise.—O.B.¹⁰ away.—O.B.¹¹ then.—O.B.¹² less thou to him Do grant.—O.B.¹³ must.—O.B.

- “It is right charytye to loue, my daughter deere.”
 “but not ¹ true loue, soe ² charytable to ³ appeare.”
 “his greatnesse may beare out the blame.⁴” She refuses ;
 96 “but his kingdome cannott buy out the shame.⁵”
 “he craues thy loue *that* may bereaue thy liffe ;
 itt is my duty to urge thee this ⁶ !” she will be
 “but not my ⁷ honestye to yeeld, I-wis ; true to her
 100 I meane to dye a true vnspotted wiffe.” husband.

- “Now hast thou spoken, my daughter deere, as I Warwick
 wold hau[e]; approves her
 chastity beares a golden name vnto her ⁸ graue ; answer:
 & when vnto⁹ thy wedded *Lord* thou proues vntrue,
 104 then lett my bitter cursses still thy soule pursue. would curse
 then with a smiling cheere goe thou, her if she
 as right & reason doth allowe, were untrue.
 yett show the *King* thou bearest no strumpetts She must
 minde.” show the
 108 “I goe, deere ffather, with ¹⁰ a trice ; King she’s
 & with ¹¹ a sleight of ffine deuce no strumpet.
 Ile cause the *King* ¹² confesse *that* I am kind.¹³” She says
 she’ll
 bring him
 round.

- “Heere comes the Lady of my liffe !” the *King* did
 say.
 112 “my ffather bidde me, soueraigne *Lord*, your will
 obay,
 and I consent if you will grant one boone to mee.” She tells
 Edward
 that she’ll
 yield to him
 if he’ll let
 her kill her
 husband.
 “I grant itt thee, my Lady ffaire, what-ere itt bee !”
 “my husband is aliue, you know ;
 116 ffirst lett mee kill him ere I goe,

¹ no.—O.B. ² O.B. omits *soe*.—F.³ For to.—O.B.⁴ Shame.—O.B.⁵ Blame.—O.B.⁶ move this.—O.B.⁷ thy.—O.B.⁸ the.—O.B.⁹ to.—O.B.¹⁰ in.—O.B.¹¹ by.—O.B.¹² King to.—O.B.¹³ confess I’m not unkind.—O.B.

"But he is
in France."
"No, in my
breast:"

& att your commande ffor euer will I bee ¹!"
"thy husband now in ffrance doth rest."
"noe, noe! hee lyes within my brest;
120 & being soe nye,² hee will my ffalshoode see."

and she tries
to stab
herself.

with *that* shee started ffrom the *King*, & tooke her
kniffe,

The King
says she

& desperattly shee thought to rydd her selfe of liffe.
the *King* vpstarted ³ ffrom his chayre her hand to
stay:

124 "O noble *King*, you haue broke your word with me
this day."

shan't do it.
"Then I'll
not lie with
you."
"No, live on
in honour
with your
Lord!
I'll trouble
you no
more."

"thou shalt not doe this deed," quoth hee.
"then will I neuer ⁴ lye with thee."
"now liue thou ⁵ still, & lett me beare the blame;
128 liue thou ⁶ in honour & in ⁶ high estate
with thy true *Lord* & wedded mate!
I will neuer ⁷ attempt this suite againe." ffinis.

¹ I will ever be.—O.B.

² MS. mye.—F.

³ he started.—O.B.

⁴ never will I.—O.B.

⁵ No; then live.—O.B.

⁶ O.B. omits *thou* and *in*.—F.

⁷ never will.—O.B.

As yee came from the Holpe

THIS piece occurs also in the *Garland of Good Will*, reprinted by the Percy Society; from which reprint Prof. Child draws the version he gives in his collection. The copy given in the *Reliques* was communicated to the editor by the late Mr. Shenstone, as corrected by him from an ancient copy, and supplied with a concluding stanza. Shenstone's edition differs not materially from the following one from the Folio except in this said concluding stanza, which is this:

But true love is a lasting fire
Which viewless vestals tend,
That burnes for ever in the soule
And knowes nor change nor end.

A note considerably instructs the reader that by "viewless vestals" is meant "angels"! What a shocking discord the phrase makes! It has about the same effect as if you should add to the costume of a gentleman of Queen Elizabeth's time one of Lincoln and Bennett's newest and silkiest hats!

A lover growing or grown old, it would seem, has been left in the lurch by the object of his affections. As all the world thronged to Walsingham, the lover supposes that she too must have gone that way; and meeting a pilgrim returning from that English Holy Land, asks him if he has seen anything of her runaway ladyship. The lover, having described how his true and untrue love may be known from many another one, learns that she has been met making for Walsingham; and then, asked why she has deserted him, explains that, though she once loved him, she has lost her love now he waxes old, and generally, that a

woman's love is ever capricious and veering; whereas the genuine passion

is a durable fire
In the mind ever burning,
Ever sick, never dead, never cold,
From itself never turning.

The Pilgrimage to Walsingham, says Percy, "suggested the plan of many popular pieces. In the Pepys collection, vol. i. p. 226, is a kind of Interlude in the old ballad style, of which the first stanza alone is worth reprinting :

As I went to Walsingham,
To the shrine with speede,
Met I with a jolly palmer
In a pilgrimes weede.
"Now God you save, you jolly palmer!"
"Welcome, lady gay,
Oft have I sued to thee for love."
"Oft have I said you nay."

"The pilgrimages undertaken on pretence of religion were often productive of affairs of gallantry, and led the votaries to no other shrine than that of Venus.

"The following ballad was once very popular; it is quoted in Fletcher's¹ *Knight of the Burning Pestle*, Act II. sc. ult.; and in another old play called *Hans Beer-pot, his Invisible Comedy*, &c. Act I. 4to. 1618."

Of the tune of Walsingham, Mr. Chappell observes: "This tune is in Queen Elizabeth's and Lady Neville's *Virginal Books* (with thirty variations by Dr. John Bull), in Anthony Holborne's *Cittham Schools*, 1597, in Barley's *New Book of Tablature*, 1596, &c. It is called 'Walsingham,' 'Here with you to Walsingham,' and 'As I went to Walsingham.' It belongs, in all probability, to an earlier reign, as the Priory of Walsingham in Norfolk, which was founded during the episcopate of William Bishop of Norwich (1146 to 1174), was dissolved in 1538. Pilgrimages to this once

¹ It is by no means certain that Beaumont had *not* a share in the com- position of *The Knight of the Burning Pestle*.—Dyce.

famous shrine commenced in or before the reign of Henry III., who was there in 1241; Edward I. was at Walsingham in 1280, and again in 1296, and Edward II. in 1315. The author of the *Vision of Piers Ploughman* says,

Heremytes on a hepe with hooked staves
Wenten to Walsingham, and her (their) wenchies after.

“ Henry VII. having kept his Christmas of 1436–7 at Norwich, from thence went in manner of pilgrimage to Walsingham, where he visited Our Lady’s Church, famous for miracles; and made his prayers and vows for help and deliverance; and in the following summer, after the battle of Stoke, he sent his banner to be offered to our Lady of Walsingham, where before he made his vows.

“ In *The Weakest goes to the Wall*, 1600, the scene being laid in Burgundy, the following lines are given:

King Richard’s gone to Walsingham, to the Holy Land,
To kill Turk and Saracen, that the truth do withstand,
Christ his cross be his good speed, Christ his foes to quell
Send him help in time of need, and to come home well.

“ In Nashe’s ‘Have with you to Saffron-Walden,’ 1596, sign. L, ‘As I went to Walsingham’ is quoted, which is the first line of the ballad in the Pepysian collection, vol. i. p. 226.

“ One of the *Psalmes and Songs of Sion, turned into the language and set to the tunes of a strange land*, 1642, is to the tune of Walsingham; and Osborne, in his *Traditional Memoirs* in the reigns of Elizabeth and James, 1653, speaking of the Earl of Salisbury, says:

Many a hornpipe he tuned to his Phillis,
And sweetly sung Walsingham to’s Amaryllis.

“ In *Don Quixote*, translated by J. Phillips, 1688, p. 273, he says: ‘An infinite number of little birds, with painted wings of various colours hopping from branch to branch, all naturally singing ‘Walsingham’ and whistling ‘John come kiss me now.’”

Perhaps the most interesting picture of this once popular resort

of the people of all nations is drawn by Erasmus in his colloquy between Menedemus and Ogygius, entitled *Peregrinatio Religionis ergo*. Ogygius, it seems, had been missing for some time, for some six months, and had been given out for dead. But at last, to the surprise of his friend and neighbour Menedemus, he turns up and accounts for his eclipse. "Visi," he says, "divum Jacobum Compostellanum, et hinc reversus Virginem Parathalassiam apud Anglos percelebrem; quin potius hanc revisi, nam ante annos tres inviseram." "Animi gratiâ ut arbitror," suggests Menedemus. "Imo religionis causâ," rejoins the other. "De Jacobo frequenter audivi," presently says the stay-at-home; "sed obsecro te describe mihi regnum istius Parathalassiae." And then follows a long gossiping account of the buildings, the relics, the traditions, the miracles appertaining to the famous spot; which, for the curious details it furnishes, and the dry humour with which these are accepted by the less enthusiastic Menedemus, is well worth reading. The pilgrim sees "Sacellum prodigiis plenum." "Eo me confero," he says. "Excipit alius mystagogus. Illic oravimus paulisper. Mox exhibetur nobis articulus humani digiti, è tribus maximi; exosculor: deinde rogo cujus sint reliquiæ. Ait, Sancti Petri. Num Apostoli, inquam? Aiebat. Deinde contemplans magnitudinem articuli, qui gigantis videri potuerit: Oportuit, inquam, Petrum fuisse virum prægrandi corpore. Ad hanc vocem è comitibus quidam in cachinnum solutus est; id certe moleste tuli. Nam si is siluisset, ædituus nos nihil celâset reliquorum. Eum tamen utcunque placavimus, datis aliquot drachmis. Ante ædiculam erat tectum, quod aiebat hiberno tempore, cum nix obtexisset omnia, eo subito fuisse delatum è longiuo. Sub eo tecto putei duo ad summum pleni; fontis venam aiunt esse, sacram divæ Virgini; liquor est mire frigidus, efficax medicando capitis stomachique doloribus.

"*Me*. Si frigida medetur doloribus capitis et stomachi, posthac et oleum extinguet incendium.

“*Og.* Miraculum audis, ô bone : alioqui quid esset miraculi, si frigida sedaret sitim ?

“*Me.* Et ista sane est una pars fabulæ.

“*Og.* Affirmabant, eum fontem derepente prosiliâsse e terrâ jussu Sanctissimæ Virginis. Ego cuncta diligenter circumspiciens rogabam quot essent anni quod ea domuncula fuisset eo deportata ; dixit aliquot secula. Alioqui parietes, inquam, non præ se ferunt aliquid vetustatis. Non repugnabat. Ne columnæ quidem hæ lignæ : non negabat esse nuper positas et res ipsa loquebatur. Deinde hæc, inquam, tecti culmea arundineaque materia videtur esse recentior. Assentiebatur. Ac ne trabes quidem hæ, inquam, transversæ nec ipsa tigna quæ culmos sustinent videntur ante multos annos posita. Annuebat. Atqui cum jam nulla casæ pars superesset : Unde igitur constat, inquam, hanc esse casulam illam è longinquo delatam ?

“*Me.* Obsecro quomodo sese ab hoc nodo expediebat ædituus ?

“*Og.* Scilicet incunctanter ille ostendit nobis pervetustam ursi pellem, tignis affixam, ac propemodum irrisit nostram tarditatem, qui ad tam manifestum argumentum non haberemus oculos. Itaque persuasi, et tarditatis culpam deprecati, vertimus nos ad cœleste lac Beatæ Virginis.”

“Among other superstitions belonging to the place,” says a writer in Chambers’s *Book of Days*, “was one that the Milky Way pointed directly to the home of the Virgin, in order to guide pilgrims on their road ; hence it is called the Walsingham Way, which had its counterpart on earth in the broad way which led through Norfolk : at every town that it passed through, a cross was erected pointing out the path to the holy spot ; some of these elegant structures still remain.”

The place was in wonderful repute. To it Catherine of Arragon, dying, entrusted her soul ; and so her sometime husband, when his hour came. In the second volume of the *Reliques*, Percy gives “a few extracts from the household book of Henry

Algernon Percy, fifth Earl of Northumberland, to shew what constant tribute was paid to our Lady of Walsingham :—Item. My lorde usith yerly to send afor Michaelmas for his Lordschip's Offerynge to our Lady of Walsyngeham, iiijd." The Paston letters abound in allusions to pilgrimages made to this shrine, pilgrimages made by the Duke of Norfolk in 1459, by Edward IV. and his queen in 1469, by the Duchess of Norfolk in 1471, by the Duke of Buckingham in 1478 (five years before his beheading).

This stream of pilgrims stayed its flowing at last. In August, 1538, the priory was dissolved. The gorgeous image of Our Lady was carried away to Chelsea, and there burnt before the commissioners. The people of Norfolk murmured, and wailed, and rebelled. Their idol was thrown down and burnt with fire; and their hopes of gain were gone. Not only was their religion affronted, but their purse was spoiled. No wonder if they beat their breasts, and rove their hair, and threw dust and ashes over their heads and in their enemies' faces!

In the Bodleian Library is preserved the following poem :

In the wrackes of Walsingam
Whom should I chuse
But the Queene of Walsingam,
to be guide to my muse?
Then thou Prince of Walsingam,
graunt me to frame
Bitter plaintes to rewe thy wronge,
bitter wo for thy name.

Bitter was it, oh! to see
The seely sheepe
Murdred by the raueninge wolues
While the sheephardes did sleep!
Bitter was it, oh! to vewe
the sacred vyne,
Whiles the gardiners plaied all close,
rooted vp by the swine.

Bitter, bitter, oh! to behould
the grasse to growe
Where the walles of Walsingam
so statly did sheue.

Such were the workes of Walsingham
 while shee did stand!
 Such are the wrackes as now do shewe
 of that holy land!
 Levell, Levell with the ground
 the towres doe lye,

[Fol. 26b]

Which with their golden glitteringe tops
 pearsed once to the skye!
 Wher weare gates, no gates ar nowe;
 the waies vnknownen
 Wher the presse of peares did passe,
 while her fame far was blowen.
 Oules do srike wher the sweetest himnes
 lately weer songe;
 Toades and serpentes hold ther dennes
 wher the Palmers did thronge.

Weepe, weepe, o Walsingham!
 whose dayes are nightes,
 Blessinge turned to blasphemies,
 holy deedes to dispites!
 Sinne is wher our Ladie sate,
 heauen turned is to hell!
 Sathan sittes wher our Lord did swaye
 Walsingham, oh! farewell!
 finis.

'Earl of Arundel MS.' among Rawlinson MSS.

“AS: yee came ffrom the holy Land
 of walsingham,
 mett you not with my true loue
 4 by the way as you came?”
 “how shold I know your true loue,¹
 that haue mett many a one
 as I came ffrom the holy Land,
 8 that haue come, that haue gone?”
 “Shee is neither white nor browne,
 but as the heauens ffaire;
 there is none hathe their² fforme diuine
 12 on the earth or the ayre.”

Did you not
 meet my
 love, as you
 came?

She is fair as
 the heavens,

¹ The MS. makes the verses of 8 lines.—F.

² her, Qu.—P.

“ such a one did I meete, good Sir,
 with an angellike fface,
 who like a nimph, like a queene, did appeare
 16 in her gate, in her grace.”

but has left
 me here all
 alone,

“ Shee hath left me heere alone,
 all alone as vnknowne,
 who sometime loued me as her liffe
 20 & called me her owne.”

“ what is the cause shee hath left thee alone,
 & a new way doth take,
that sometime did loue thee as her selfe,
 24 & her ioy did thee make ? ”

because I
 am old.

“ I haue loued her all my youth,
 but now am old, as you see.
 loue liketh not the ffalling ffruite
 28 nor the whithered tree ;

Love is

for loue is like a carlesse child,
 & fforgetts promise past :
 he is blind, he is deaffe when he list,

never fast,

32 & infaith neuer ffast ;

but fickle,

“ his desire is ffickle, ffond,
 & a trustles ioye ;
 he is won with a world of dispayre,

lost with a
 toy.

36 & lost with a toye.
 such is the [fate of all man]¹ kind,
 Or the word loue abused,
 vnder *which* many childish desires
 40 & conceipts are excused.”

[page 507]

“ No, true
 Love burns
 ever, turns
 never.”

“ But loue is a durabler ffyer
 in the mind euer Burninge,
 euer sicke, neuer dead, neuer cold,
 44 ffrom itt selfe neuer turninge.”

ffinis.

¹ MS. pared and broken away.—F. ? read [way of woman].—Skeat.

Leofricus : ¹

A COPY of this piece is to be found in the *Collection of Old Ballads*, 1726.

The story told in it is that made so well known to us of to-day by Tennyson's exquisite poem of *Godiva*.

Few chronicles which deal with the time of Edward the Confessor omit to mention Leofric, Earl of Chester, and afterwards of Mercia, and his wife Godiva. The *L'Estoire de Seint Edward le Rei*; Ailred's *Vita Regis Edwardi Confessoris*; Ingulph's (?) *Historia Croylandensis* (she was "tunc fœminarum pulcherrima sic corde sanctissima"), the *Mailros Chronicles*, Hoveden's *Annales* (he says, "dei cultrix et sanctæ Mariæ semper virginis amatrix devota nobilis comitissa Godiva"), all mention her with enthusiasm as a charitable and most pious lady. The earliest account of her famous ride through Coventry which is quoted by Dugdale (see his *History of Warwickshire*), is given by Brompton, who "flourished" about the close of the twelfth century :

De dicta quoque *Godiva* Comitissa quæ ecclesiam de *Stowe* sub promontorio *Lincolniæ*, et multas alias construxerat, legitur, quod dum ipsa *Coventreiam* a gravi servitute et importabili tolneto liberare affectasset, *Leofricum* Comitem virum suum sollicitavit, ut sanctæ Trinitatis Deique genitricis Mariæ intuitu, villam a prædicta solveret servitute. Prohibuit Comes ne de cetero rem sibi dampnosam inaniter postularet. Illa nichilominus virum indesinenter de petitione præmissa exasperans, tale responsum ab eo demum extorsit. Ascende, inquit, equum tuum, et nuda a villæ initio usque ad finem populo congregato equites, et sic postulata cum redieris impetrabis. Tunc *Godiva* Deo dilecta equum nuda ascendens, ac capitis crines et tricas dissolvens, totum corpus præter crura inde velavit. Itinere completo à nemine visa ad virum gaudens est reversa, unde *Leofricus Coventreiam* a servitute et malis custumis et exactionibus liberavit, et cartam

¹ In the printed *Collection of Old Ballads* 1726. Vol. 2. p. 34. N. v.—P.

suam inde confectam sigilli sui munimine roboravit, de quo adhuc isti pauperes mercatores ad villam accedentes plenarie sunt experti.

Matthew of Westminster, some hundred years after the Abbot of Joreval, gives the following version :

Hæc autem comitissa religiose villam Conventrensem a gravi servitute ac turpi liberare affectans, sæpius comitem virum suum magnis precibus rogavit, ut sanctæ Trinitatis, sanctæque genetricis Dei intuitu, villam a prædicta absolveret servitute. Cumque comes illam increparet, quod rem sibi damnosam inaniter postularet, prohibuit constanter, ne ipsum super hac re de cetero conveniret. Illa contrario, pertinacia muliebri ducta, virum indesinenter de petitione præmissa exasperans, tale responsurum extorsit ab eo. Ascende (inquit) equum tuum nuda, et transi per mercatum villæ, ab initio usque ad finem, populo congregato, et cum redieris, quod postulas, impetrabis. Cui comitissa respondens, ait : Et si hoc facere voluero, licentiam mihi dabis? Ad quam comes, Dabo, inquit. Tunc Godyva comitissa, Deo dilecta, die quadam, ut prædictum est, nuda equum ascendens, crines capitis et tricas dissolvens, corpus suum totum, præter crura candidissima, inde velavit, et itinere completo, a nemine visa, ad virum gaudens, hoc pro miraculo habitum, reversa est. Comes vero Leofricus, Conventrensem a præfata servitute liberans civitatem, chartam suam inde factam sigilli sui munimine roboravit.

Higden, some half century afterwards, says briefly :

Ad jugem quoque instantiam uxoris suæ urbem suam Coventrensem ab omni tolneto præterquam de equis liberam fecit ; ad quod impetrandum uxor ejus Comitissa Godyva quodam mane per medium urbis nuda sed comis tecta equitavit.

Knighton adopts Higden's account word for word.

Bower, the continuer of Fordun's *Scotichronicon*, in the first half of the following, the fifteenth century, tells the story of Matilda, wife of Henry II. ; for which act he is severely reproved by his and Fordun's editor, Hearne (1722). The only other noticeable variation in his account is, we think, particularly coarse. He says the poor lady performed her ride "rege et populo spectantibus."

In our own age the story has been gracefully and refinedly told by Leigh Hunt, and in an incomparable manner by Tennyson.

There is then, extant, no narrative of the gentle Godiva's most generous feat till upwards of two centuries after its alleged performance.

We find, indeed, in the reign of Henry I. that the good Queen Maude, "that's right well loved England through" (Hardyng), who did so many good services for the people, and taught her Norman husband a milder policy than his own nature prompted, received the *sobriquet* of Godiva. She, too, loved the people well, and so was called after the Saxon countess who had so signally testified her affection for them. This is the earliest reference to the story.

<p>LEOFFRICUS the ¹ noble Erle of chester, as I read, did ffor the cittye of couentrye 4 many a noble deede ;</p> <p>great priuiledges for the towne this noble-man did gett, of all things did make itt soe, 8 <i>that</i> they tole ffree did sitt,</p> <p>sauē onlye <i>that</i> for horssees still they did some custome paie, <i>which</i> was great charges to the towne 12 ffull long & many a day.</p> <p>wherfore his wiffe, Godiua ² ffaire, did of the Erle request that therfore ³ he wold make itt ffree 16 as well as all the rest.</p>	<p>Leoffricus Earl of Chester</p> <p>made the city of Coventry</p> <p>toll-free,</p> <p>except a horse-tax.</p> <p>This his wife Godiua asked him to take off ;</p>
--	---

¹ that.—O.B. The first two lines are written as one in the MS.—F.

² Godina.—O.B.

³ thereof.—O.B.

- & when the Lady long ¹ had sued,
her purpose to obtaine,
and finding him one day
in a good humour,
20 att last her noble Lord ² shee tooke
within ³ a pleasant vaine,
& vnto him with smiling cheere
shee did fforthwith *proceede*,
entreated him to
remit the tax.
24 intreating greatly *that* hee wold
performe *that* godlye ⁴ deede.
“you moue me much, ffaire dame,” ⁵ quoth hee,
“your suite I ffaine wold shunn;
“What’ll you do
if I will?”
28 but what wold ⁶ you performe & doe,
to haue the ⁷ matter done?”
“why, any thing, my Lord,” quoth shee,
“you will with reason craue,
I will performe itt with good will
32 if I my wish may ⁸ hauc.”
“if thou wilt grant one ⁹ thing,” he said,
“which I shall now require;
soe ¹⁰ soone as itt is ffinished,
36 thou shalt haue thy desire.”
“command what you thinke good, my Lord;
I will ther-to agree
on *that* condityon, *that* this ¹¹ towne
40 in all things ¹² may bee ffree.”
“Then strip,
and ride naked
through the town.”
44 “if thou wilt stripp thy clothes ¹³ off,
& heere wilt ¹⁴ lay them downe,
& att noone-da ye ¹⁵ on horsbacke ryde,
starke naked through the towne,

¹ So when that she long Time.—O.B.² Her Noble Lord at length.—O.B.³ When in.—O.B.⁴ goodly.—O.B.⁶ will.—O.B.

might.—O.B.

⁵ my Fair.—O.B.⁷ this.—O.B.⁹ the.—O.B.¹¹ the.—O.B.¹³ but thy Cloaths.—O.B.¹⁴ by me.—O.B.¹⁵ The MS. has a tag like *s* to the
e.—F. Noon-day.—O.B.¹⁰ as.—O.B.¹² For ever.—O.B.

“ they shalbe free for euerniore.
 if thou wilt not doe see,
 more lyberty then now they haue
 48 I neuer will bestowe.”

the Lady att this strange demand
 was much abashet in minde ;
 & yett ffor to fulfill this thing
 52 shee neuer a whitt repinde.

The
 Countess
 is taken
 aback,
 but does not
 hesitate,

wherfore to all the ¹ officers
 of all the towne ² shee sent,
that they, perceiuing her good will,
 56 *which* for their ³ weale was bent,

and tells the
 town-
 officials

that on the day *that* shee shold ryde,
 all persons through the towne
 shold keepe their houses, & shutt their dore,⁴
 60 & clap their windowes downe,

to order that
 when she
 rides
 through,
 all houses,
 doors, and
 windows
 shall be
 shut,
 so that no
 one may see
 her.

soe *that* no creature, younge nor ⁵ old,⁶
 shold in the streete ⁷ bee seene
 till shee had ridden [all about] ⁸
 64 Through all the Cittye cleane. [page 508]

And when the day of ryding came,
 no person did her see,
 sauing her lord . after *which* time
 68 the towne was euer ffree. ffinis.

She rides.
 None see her.
 The town is
 freed.

¹ unto all.—O.B.

² Of Coventry.—O.B.

³ the.—O.B.

⁴ and Doors.—O.B.

⁵ or.—O.B.

⁶ There is a tag at the end like an s
 in the MS.—F.

⁷ Streets.—O.B.

⁸ all about, Throughout.—O.B.

[“ *A Mayden-heade* ” and “ *Tom Longe*,” printed in Lo. & Hum.
 Songs, p. 111–13, follow here in the MS. p. 508.]

Proude where the Spenc[ers]¹

THIS ballad first occurs in the *Garland of Good Will*.

A more complete copy than that of the Folio is to be found in the *Collection of Old Ballads*, so often referred to in our Introductions; but it too is miserably mutilated.

It is evidently the work of a later writer, of one who wrote generations after the memory of Queen Isabella's profligacy in the subsequent years of her life was keenly remembered. Its sympathy with the Queen's side is vehement; and may possibly have sprung from the fact that a Queen was sitting on the throne when it was written.

It would seem not to have been founded on current traditions; but to be the result of some historical research. The details are, for the most part, accurate to a degree most unusual in ballad-poetry. In other respects it can boast no great superiority over other historical ballads—a department of literature by no means pre-eminent for its poetic worth. It tells its tale in a business-like way.

It tells it, as we have said, with surprising accuracy; but there is when it errs. The Queen departed for France nominally on a diplomatic mission—to smooth down certain differences with regard to Gascony which were dividing her brother Charles IV. of France and her husband; she did not make her escape from the country with the aid of any such pretext as that preferred in the text. The letters written by the deserted Edward both to her and to his son who was with her, urging their return, are still extant (see *Fœdera*). The Pope persuaded Charles to dismiss his sister from his court. Then she found refuge at the

¹ In the printed *Collection of old Ballads* 1726. Vol. 2. p. 59. N^o x.—P.

court of William Count of Hainault, to whose daughter Philippa the Prince her son was there betrothed. This Count placed at her service a force of 2,000 men under the command of John of Hainault (see vv. 40-62).

On September 24, 1326, those whose return Edward II. had so earnestly urged, landed at Orwell in Suffolk, armed. The nobles, who some five years before had been overthrown with Lancaster, now flocked from their hiding-places and their places of exile to support this frightful insurrection of wife and son. The King's brothers, his cousins, and many bishops, hastened to support it. London murdered the King's lieutenant, and supported it. The elder Despenser was seized at Bristol, the burghers there turning against him, and there executed as a traitor. His son was seized in Wales, carried to Hereford, and executed as a traitor there. The Earl of Arundel and others were beheaded. (See Knight's *Popular History of England*.)

The ballad alludes but briefly to the end of the tragedy :

Then was King deposed of his Crown ;
From rule and princely dignity the
Lords did cast him down.

Written in admiration of Isabella, it, naturally enough, shrinks from any allusion to the atrocities perpetrated in Berkeley Castle—to the “shrieks of death” that rang through its roof—

Shrieks of an agonizing King!

PROUD : were the Spencers, & of condityons¹ ill ;
all England & the *King* they ruled
likewise² att their will ;

The
Spencers
were an ill-
conditioned
lot,

¹ Condition, in *Old Ballads*, 3rd ed., ii. 62.—F.

² likewise They ruled.—O.B. Each couple of lines 2 and 3, 5 and 6, 19 and 20, is written as one in the MS.—F. The true arrangement is :

Proud were the Spencers,
& of condityons ill ;

all England & the King they ruled
likewise att their will ;
& many Lords
& nobles of this Land
through their occasion lost their liues,
& none durst them withstand.

The first line very short ; only two accents at most ; the second, third, and fourth lines with three accents.—Skeat.

- and the
cause of
many nobles'
deaths.
- 4 & many Lords & nobles of this ¹ Land
through their occassion ² lost their liues,
and none durst *them* [withstand.] ³
- They raised
strife
between
King
Edward and
his Queen,
- 8 & att the last they did increase great ⁴ greeffe
betweene the [King and Isabel] ⁵
his queene and ffaithfull wiffe, [page 509]
soe *that* her liffe shee dreaded wonderous sore,
& cast with[in] ⁶ heer present thoughts
- so that she
was forced
- 12 some present helpe therfore.
- then shee requested,⁷ with countenance graue &
sage,
that shee to THOMAS BECCETTS tombe
might goe on pilgramage.
- 16 then being ioyfull to haue *that* ⁸ happy chance,
her sonne & shee tooke shipp with speede,
& sayled into ffrance ;
- to escape
into France.
- & royally shee was receiued then
- The French
King, her
brother,
received her
well,
- 20 by the *King* & all the rest
of the peeres & noblemen ;
and vnto him att lenght ⁹ shee did expresse
the cause of her arriuall there,
- 24 her greeffe ¹⁰ & heauinesse.
- when as her brother her greeffe did vnderstand,
he gaue her leaue to gather men
out of ¹¹ his ffamous land,
- gave her
leave to
raise men,
and
promised her
- 28 & made his ¹² promise to aide her euermore
as oft as shee shold stand in Neede ¹³
of gold & siluer store.
- money.

¹ the.—O.B.² Occasions.—O.B.³ did them withstand.—O.B.⁴ much.—O.B.⁵ MS. pared away. Supplied from
Old Ballads.—F.⁶ within.—O.B.⁷ requests.—O.B.⁸ the.—O.B.⁹ last.—O.B.¹⁰ care.—O.B.¹¹ Throughout.—O.B.¹² a.—O.B.¹³ N written over *st* in the MS.—F.
need.—O.B.

- but when indeed he shold performe ¹ the same,
 32 he was as farr ffrom doing itt
 as when shee thither came,
 & did *proclaime*,² while matters yett were greene,³
that none on paine of death shold goe
 36 to aide the English queene.
- this alteration did greatly greene the Queene,
that downe along her comely fface
 they ⁴ bitter teares were seene.
 40 when shee perciued her ffreinds forsooke her soe,
 shee knew not, ffor her saftey,
 which way to turne or goe;
- but through good happ, att last shee thenn decreede
 44 to seeke in ffruitfull GERMANYE
 some succour in ⁵ this neede ;
 And to Sir Iohn HENAULT ⁶ then went shee,
 who entertained this wofull queene
 48 with great solempnitye ;
- & with great sorrow to him shee then complained
 of all the greefe ⁷ & iniuryes
 which shee of late sustained,
 52 soe *that* with weeping shee dimnd her princly
 sight.
 the sunn ⁸ therof did greatly greefe
that noble curteous knight,
- who made an othe he wold her champyon bee,
 56 & in her quarrell spend his bloode,
 from wrong to sett her ffree ;
- But he afterwards broke his word,
 and refused to let men enlist for her.
 This grieved her greatly,
 and she took refuge in Germany,
 where Sir John Henault
 swore to be her champion, and fight for her,

¹ she did require.—O.B.² MS. *proclaime*.—F.³ whilst matters were so.—O.B.⁴ The.—O.B.⁵ to.—O.B.⁶ Hainault.—O.B.⁷ her Griefs.—O.B.⁸ MS. sunn or s \bar{m} m : ? for summ, or E. E. *sunne*, sin.—F. *sunne* not to be thought of.—Dyce. cause.—O.B.

with all his
friends.

“ & all my freinds with whom I may preuaile,
shall helpe for to aduance your state,
60 whose truth no time shall faile.”

He proves
faithful ;
sails with
many lords,

And in this promise, most faithfull he was found,
& many Lords of great account
was in this voyage bound.

and lands
with her at
Harwich.

64 soe setting fforward with a goodlye traine,
att lenght through gods especiall grace
into England they came.

Many
English
lords join
her.

Att HARWICH then when they were come a-shore,¹
68 of English Lords & Barrons bold
there came to her great store,
which did reioce the queenes afflicted hart,
that English nobles² in such sort
72 did come³ to take her part.

Edward II.
hears of this,

when as King Edward herof did vnderstand,
how that the queene with such a power
was entered on his Land,
76 & how his nobles were gone to take her part,
he fled from London presentlye ;
then⁴ with a heauye hart,

and flies,

with the
Spencers,
to Bristol,

And with the Spencers, did vnto BRISTOWE⁵ goe,
80 [To fortify that gallant town,]⁶
Greatt cost he did best[owe ;] [page 510]

leaving the
Bishop of
Exeter in
London,

leauing behind, to gouerne London towne,⁷
[The stout Bishop of *Exeter*,
84 Whose Pride was soon pull'd down.

¹ were ashore.—O.B.

² Lords.—O.B.

³ Came for.—O.B.

⁴ Even.—O.B.

⁵ Unto Bristol did.—O.B.

⁶ MS. pared away. Line supplied
from O.B.—F.

⁷ (N.B. There are upwards of 22
stanzas wanting: which are all in *the*
Printed Copy.)—P. and are here printed,
with the leads out, from the 2nd edition
of *Old Ballads*, 1726, vol. ii. p. 62.
About half a page in the MS. is left
blank.—F.

- [The Mayor of *London*, with Citizens great Store,
The Bishop and the *Spencers* both
In Heart they did abhor ;
88 Therefore they took him without Fear or Dread,
And at the Standard in *Cheapside*
They soon smote off his Head. where the
citizens
soon
- [Unto the Queen this Message then they sent,
92 The City of *London* was
At her Commandement :
Wherefore the Queen, with all her Company,
Did strait to *Bristol* march amain,
96 Wherein the King did lie : She marches
to Bristol,
- [Then she besieg'd the City round about,
Threatning sharp and cruel Death,
To those that were so stout ;
100 Wherefore the Townsmen, their Children, and their
Wives,
Did yield the City to the Queen
For Safe-guard of their Lives : besieges it,
and it is
yielded up
to her.
- [Where was took, the Story plain doth tell,
104 Sir *Hugh Spencer*, and with him
The Earl of *Arundel*.
This Judgment just the Nobles did set down,
They should be drawn and hanged both,
108 In Sight of *Bristol Town*. Sir H.
Spencer
and Lord
Arundel are
taken,
- [Then was King Edward in the Castle there,
And *Hugh Spencer* still with him,
In Dread and deadly Fear ;
112 And being prepar'd from thence to Sail away,
The Winds were found contrary,
They were enforc'd to stay : the King
and Spencer
- [But at last Sir *John Beaumont*, Knight,
116 Did bring his sailing Ship to Shore,
And so did stay their Flight :
And so these Men were taken speedily,
And brought as Prisoners to the Queen,
120 Which did in *Bristol* lie. being
caught as
they were
escaping by
ship.
- [The Queen, by Counsel of the Lords and Barons bold,
To *Barkley* sent the King,
There to be kept in hold : The Queen
imprisons
the King

124 And young *Hugh Spencer*, that did much Ill procure,
Was to the Marshal of the Host
Sent unto keeping sure.

[And then the Queen to *Hereford* took her way,
128 With all her warlike Company,
Which late in *Bristol* lay :
And here behold how *Spencer* was
From Town to Town, even as the Queen
132 To *Hereford* did pass ;

and has
Spencer
carried from
town to
town on a

jade's back,

[Upon a Jade, which they by chance had found,
Young *Spencer* mounted was,
With Legs and Hands fast bound :
136 A Writing-Paper along as he did go,
Upon his Head he had to wear,
Which did his Treason show :

men playing
before him.

[And to deride this Traytor lewd and ill,
140 Certain Men with Reeden-Pipes
Did blow before him still.
Thus was he led along in every Place,
While many People did rejoice
144 To see his strange Disgrace.

Then at
Hereford

[When unto *Hereford* our Noble Queen was come,
She did assemble all the Lords
And Knights, both all and some ;
148 And in their Presence young *Spencer* Judgment had,
To be both hang'd and quartered,
His Treasons were so bad.

Spencer is
hanged and
quartered,

King
Edward is
deposed,

[Then was the King deposed of his Crown ;
152 From Rule, and princely Dignity,
The Lords did cast him down :

and his son
crowned
King.

And in his Life, his Son both wise and sage,
Was crowned King of fair *England*,
156 At Fifteen Years of Age.] fin[is.]

Kinge Edgar.¹

THIS rhyming version of a good old Saxon tale occurs in the *Garland of Good Will*, "to the tune of Labandulishot," in the *Collection of Old Ballads*, in Evans's *Old Ballads*.

The authority followed by the writer of it is William of Malmesbury.

There was in his time (says that chronicler) one Athelwold, a nobleman of celebrity, and one of his confidants; him the king had commissioned to visit Elfrida, daughter of Orgar, Duke of Devonshire (whose charms had so fascinated the eyes of some persons that they commended her to the king), and to offer her marriage if her beauty were really equal to report.

Hastening on his embassy, and finding everything consonant to general estimation, he concealed his mission from her parents, and procured the damsel for himself. Returning to the king, he told a tale that made for his own purpose, that she was a girl of vulgar and commonplace appearance, and by no means worthy of such a transcendent dignity. When Edgar's heart was disengaged from this affair, and employed on other amours, some tattlers acquainted him how completely Athelwold had duped him by his artifices. Driving out one nail with another, that is, returning him deceit for deceit, he showed the earl a fair countenance, and, as in a sportive manner, appointed a day when he would visit this far-famed lady. Terrified almost to death with this dreadful pleasantry, he hastened before to his wife, entreating that she would administer to his safety by attiring herself as unbecomingly as possible; then first disclosing the intention of such a proceeding. But what did not this woman dare? She was hardy enough to deceive the confidence of her miserable lover, her first husband, to adorn herself at the mirror, and omit nothing that could stimulate the desire of a young and powerful man. Nor did events happen contrary to her design; for he fell so desperately in love with her the moment he saw her, that, dissembling his indignation, he sent for the earl into a wood at Warewelle, under

¹ In the printed *Collection* 1726, Vol. 2, p. 25, N. iv.—P.

pretence of hunting, and ran him through with a javelin. When the illegitimate son of the murdered nobleman approached with his accustomed familiarity, and was asked by the king how he liked that kind of sport, he is reported to have said, "Well, my sovereign liege, I ought not to be displeased with that which gives you pleasure," with which answer he so assuaged the mind of the reigning monarch, that for the remainder of his life he held no one in greater estimation than this young man; mitigating the tyrannical deed against the father by royal solicitude for the son. In expiation of this crime, a monastery, which was built on the spot by Elfrida, is inhabited by a large congregation of nuns.—Stevenson's *Church Historians of England*.

Another account is given by Brompton. He narrates how Athelwold, after securing, by his deception, the hand of Alfrida, as he calls her, persuaded the king to stand godfather to their first-born son, "de sacro forte levare," in order that—a spiritual affinity ("spiritualis cognatio") contracted thus between his wife and Edgar—he might be secure from his majesty's amorousness. But the king made but little of this restraining tie. He speedily put Athelwold out of the way, sending him to oppose the Danes in the North, and perhaps getting him killed on his way to his post—at all events he was killed on the way—and took Alfrida to his arms. In vain Dunstan, who seems to have been extremely free of the palace, entering the royal chamber the morning after the espousals, asked the king, "quænam illa esset quæ secum in lecto jacebat," and chafed at the answer "regina." Edgar married Alfrida.

The story is told in the following ballad with some skill, but in a somewhat prosy manner.

The form adopted is the favourite one of the old romances (revived by Scott in the *Lay of the Last Minstrel*); and the besetting blemish of the piece—prolixity—is also an imitation of the old romances.

The sympathy of the account is all on the king's side.

Thus he which did the king deceive
Did by deceit this death receive,

says the loyal poet, after describing Athelwold's assassination. "Be true and faithful to your friend" is the moral. And when that friend is a king, why, expect the extremest penalties, if you are false.

WHEN as King Edgar did gouerne this land,¹
 & in the strenght of his yeeres did² stand,
 such praise was spread of a gallant dame
 4 which did through England carry great fame,
 & shee a Ladaye of noble³ degree,
 the Erle of deuonshires daughter was shee.
 the King, which had latetly⁴ buryed the queene,
 8 & a long⁵ time a wydower had⁶ beene,
 hearing the praise of this⁷ gallant maid,
 vpon her bewtye his loue hee laid ;
 & in his sighes⁸ he wold often say,
 12 " I will goe⁹ send for *that* Lady gay ;
 yea, I will send for *that*¹⁰ Lady bright
 which is my treasure and delight,
 whose bewty, like to Phebus beames,
 16 did¹¹ glister¹² through all Christen realmes."
 then to himselfe he wold repleye,
 saing, " how fond a prince¹³ am I,
 to cast my loue soe base and Lowe,
 20 & on¹⁴ a girle I doe not know !
 King Edgar will his fancy frame
 to loue¹⁵ some peereles princely dame,

The widowed
King Edgar

hears of a
gallant
dame,

the Earl of
Devonshire's
daughter,

and sets his
love on her.
He often
says that
he'll
send and
fetch her,

but then
thinks how
stupid he is
to fall in
love with a
low-born
girl he has
never seen.
He'll find **and**
love some
Princess,

¹ O.B. adds :
A down, adown, down, down down :
and after line 2,
Call him down a.—F.

² he did.—O.B.

³ high.—O.B.

⁴ who lately had.—O.B.

⁵ not a long. Printed C.—P. not

long.—O.B.

⁶ O.B. omits *had.*—F.

⁷ this Praise of a.—O.B.

⁸ mind. Printed C.—P.

⁹ O.B. omits *goe.*—F.

¹⁰ this.—O.B.

¹¹ doth. Pr^d Copy.—P.

¹² Doth glitter.—O.B.

¹³ The MS. has only one stroke for the
n.—F.

¹⁴ Upon.—O.B.

¹⁵ have.—O.B.

with a good dowry,
who is more beautiful
than Estrild.
Then he thinks
again, how wrong it is

24 the daughter of some ¹ royall King,
that may a worthy ² dowry bringe,³
whose macheles bewty brought in place
may Estrilds coulour cleane disgrace.
but senceless man, what doe I meane,

28 vpon a broken reede to leane ?
& what fond fury doth ⁴ me moue
thus to abuse my deerest loue,
whose visage, gracet with heauenlye hue,

to abuse his love
Estrild,
who is more lovely than
Helen.

32 doth HELLENS honor quite subdue ?
the glory of her bewtyous pride
[Sweet Estrild's Favour doth deride]⁵
Then pardon m[y unse]mely speech,⁶ [page 511]

36 deere loue & lady, I beseech !
& ⁷ I my thoughts hencforth will ⁸ frame
to spread the honore of thy name."
then vnto him he called a *knight*

and sends off a knight,
Ethelwold,

40 *which* was most trusty in his sight,
& vnto him thus did he ⁹ say :
" to Erle Orgarus ¹⁰ goe thy way,
& ¹¹ aske for ESTRILDS ¹² comely dame,

to her father's,
to look at her,

44 whose b[e]wty is soe for by ¹³ fame ;
& if thou ¹⁴ find her comlye grace
as fame hath ¹⁵ spread in euery place,
then tell her father shee shalbe

and if he finds her
beautiful,

then he's to propose to
her, for Edgar.

48 my crowned queene, if shee agree."

¹ a.—O.B.² dainty.—O.B.

³ Betere were a ryche mon
For te spouse a god womon
Thath hue be sum del pore,
Then to brynge into his hous
a proud quene ant daungerous,
That is sum del hore.
"Moni mon for londe wyveth to
shonde."

Quoth Hendyng.

Reliquie Antiquæ i. 115.—F.⁴ or what did, Pr^d C.—P. & O.B.⁵ O.B. MS. pared away.—F. sweet

Estrild's favour doth deride.—P. For the original Estrild, see p. 466-7 above.—F.

⁶ Then pardon my unseemly speech, Printed Copy.—P.⁷ For.—O.B.⁸ will henceforth.—O.B.⁹ he did.—O.B.¹⁰ Orgator, Printed Copy.—P.¹¹ Where.—O.B.¹² *Estrild*.—O.B.¹³ went so far for.—O.B.¹⁴ you.—O.B.¹⁵ did.—O.B.

- the *knight* in message did *proceede*,
 & into deuonshire went ¹ with speede ;
 but when he saw *that* ² Ladye bright,
 52 he was soc rauisht att her sight,
that nothing cold his passyon moue
 except he might obtaine her loue.
 & ³ day & night there while ⁴ he stayde,
 56 he courted still *that* ⁵ peereles mayd ;
 & in his suite hee showed such skill,
that att the lenght woon ⁶ her good will,
 fforgetting quite the duty tho
 60 *which* hee vnto the kinge did owe.
 then coming home vnto his grace,
 he told him with dissembling face
that those reporters were to blame
 64 *that* soe aduanced *that* ⁷ maidens name ;
 “ for I assure your grace,” quoth ⁸ hee,
 “ shee is as other women bee ;
 her bewtye of such great report,
 68 no better then they ⁹ common sort,
 & far vnmeet in eury thing
 to mach with such a noble Kinge.
 but though her face be nothing ffaire,
 72 yett sith shee is her ffathers heyre,
 perhapps some Lord of hye degree
 wold verry glad ¹⁰ her husband bee ;
 & ¹¹ if your grace wold giue consent,
 76 I cold ¹² my selfe be well content
 the damsell for my wife to take,
 for her great Lands & liuings sake.”
 the *King*, whom thus he did deceiue,
 80 incontinent did giue him leaue ;
- The knight goes,
 and is so ravished with Estrild,
 that he courts her for himself,
 and wins her heart.
 Then he goes back to Edgar, and tells him
 that Estrild is nothing particular,
 one of the common sort, quite unfit for a King ;
 but as she'll have her father's lands,
 he, Ethelwold, would like to have her himself, for her lands.
 Edgar consents.

¹ O.B. omits *went*.—F.² the.—O.B.³ For.—O.B.⁴ while there.—O.B.⁵ this.—O.B. ⁶ he gain'd.—O.B.⁷ the.—O.B.⁸ said.—O.B.⁹ the.—O.B.¹⁰ fain.—O.B.¹¹ Then.—O.B.¹² would.—O.B.

for on *that* poynt he did not stand,
 for why, he had no ¹ need of land.
 then being glad, he went his way,²
 The knight marries Estrild,
 84 & weded straight *that* ³ Lady gay ;
 the fairest creature bearing life,
 had this false *knight* to ⁴ his wiffe ;
 & by *that* mach of high degree,
 and is made an Earl.
 Then the report of her beauty reaches Edgar,
 88 an Erle soone after *that* was hee.
 ere hee long time had marryed beene,
 many ⁵ had her bewtye seene ;
 her praise was spread both farr & neere,
 92 soe *that* they *King* ⁶ therof did heare,
 who sees how he's been cheated out of his love,
 who then in hart did plainly proue
 he was betrayed of his loue.
 though therof ⁷ he was vexed sore,
 96 yett seemed he not to greene therfore,
 but kept his countenance good & kind,
 but puts a good face on it.
 as though hee bore no grudg in minde.
 One day though
 but on a day itt came to passe
 100 when as the *King* full merry was,
 to ETHELWOLD in sport hee said
 he asks Ethelwold how he'd receive him if he paid him a visit.
 Ethelwold, sad at heart, says,
 " You'd be most welcome."
 " I muse what cheere there shold be made
 if to thy house I wold ⁸ resort
 104 a night or 2 for princely sport."
 heratt the Erle shewed contenance glad,⁹
 though in his hart he was [full sad ;] ¹⁰
 And said,¹¹ " your grace s[hall welcome be] ¹² [page 512]
 108 if soe your grace will honor mee."
 Before the King comes,
 when ¹³ as the day apointed was,
 before the *King* shold ¹⁴ thither passe,

¹ not.—O.B.² away.—O.B.³ this.—O.B.⁴ unto.—O.B.⁵ That many.—O.B.⁶ The King again.⁷ therefore.—O.B.⁸ should.—O.B.⁹ One stroke too many in the MS.—F.¹⁰ full sad.—O.B.¹¹ Saying.—O.B.¹² shall welcome be.—O.B.¹³ Then.—O.B.¹⁴ did.

- the Erle before-hand did prepare
 112 the *Kings*¹ coming to declare,
 & with a countenance passing grim
 he called his Lady vnto him,
 saing with sad & heauye cheere :
- 116 "I pray you, when the *King* comes heere,
 sweet Lady, as you tender mee,
 lett *your* attire but homelye bee ;
 & washe not thou thy Angells face,
 120 but doe² thy bewtye quite³ disgrace ;
 therto thy gesture soe apply,
 itt may seeme lothsome to his⁴ eye ;
 for if the *King* shold heere⁵ behold
 124 thy gloirous bewtye soe extold,
 then shold⁶ my liffe soone shortened bee
 ffor my desartt⁷ & trecherye.
 when to thy ffather ffirst I came,
 128 though I did not declare the same,
 yett was I put in trust to bring
 the ioyfull tydings of the Kinge,
 who for thy glouryous bewtye seene,
 132 did thinke of thee to make his queene.
 but when I had thy *person* found,
 thy bewty gaue me such a wound,
 no rest nor comfort cold I take
 136 till *your*⁸ sweet loue my greffe did slake ;
 & thus,⁹ though duty charged me
 most ffaithfull to my *Lord* to bee,
 yett loue vpon the other side
 140 bade¹⁰ for my selfe I shold *prouide*.
 then for my sute & service knowne,¹¹
 att lenthgt I woon you for my owne ;

Ethelwold

prays his
 wife,
 when Edgar
 does come,
 to dress
 badly,
 not wash
 her face,

and behave
 disgust-
 ingly ;

for if the
 King
 sees her
 beauty,
 he'll kill her
 husband.

Ethelwold
 then tells
 his wife of
 his
 treachery
 to Edgar :
 how, sent to
 woo her
 for the King,

he fell in
 love with
 her himself,

and wooed
 and won her.

¹ King his.² so.—O.B.³ clean.—O.B.⁴ the.—O.B.⁵ there.—O.B.⁶ shall.—O.B.⁷ Deserts.—O.B.⁸ you.—O.B.⁹ that.—O.B.¹⁰ Bid.—O.B.¹¹ shown.—O.B.

- But for their
wedlock's
sake
- 144 & for your loue & ¹ wedlocke spent,
your choice you need no whitt repent.
- he prays her
to disguise
herself.
- & sith ² my greaffe I haue exprest,
sweet Lady, grant me my request.”
- She answers
smilingly ;
- 148 good words shee gaue with smiling cheere ;
musing att ³ that which shee did heeare ;
& casting many things in mind,
great fault herwith ⁴ shee seemed to find ;
& ⁵ in her-selfe shee thought itt shame
- but, as it
would be a
shame to
mar God's
work,
she dresses
herself out
as bravely as
possible,
- 152 to make that ffoule which god did fframe.
most costly robes & ⁶ rich, therefore,
in brauest sort that day shee wore,
& did all things ⁷ that ere shee might
- and does all
she can to
please the
King.
He falls
madly in
love with
her ;
- 156 to sett her bewtye forth to sight,
& her best skill in euery thing
shee shewed, to entertaine the King,
wherby ⁸ the King soe snared was,
- 160 that reason quite ffrom him did passe ;
his hart by her was sett on ffire,
he had to her a great desire ;
& for the lookes he gaue her then,
- she gives
him ten
sweet looks
for one ;
- 164 for euery looke shee gaue him ten ;
wherfor the King perceiued plaine
his loue & lookes were not in vaine.
vpon a time ⁹ itt chanced soe,
- and next
hunting-day
- 168 the King hee wold a hunting goe,
& into HORSWOOD did he ryde,¹⁰
the Erle on horsbake by his side.
& there ¹¹ the story telleth plaine,
- he kills her
husband,
- 172 that with a shaft the Erle was slaine.
& when that ¹² hee had lost his liffe,
he ¹³ tooke the Lady to his ¹⁴ wiffe ;

¹ my Love in.—O.B.² Then since.—O.B.³ of.—O.B.⁵ But.—O.B.⁷ Doing all.—O.B.⁸ Wherefore.—O.B.⁴ therewith.—O.B.⁶ full.—O.B.⁹ MS. tine.—F.¹⁰ And as they through a Wood did ride.—O.B.¹¹ For so.—O.B.¹² So that when.—O.B.¹³ King Edgar.—F.¹⁴ unto.—O.B.

he marryed her, all shame ¹ to shunn,
 176 by whom he had begott ² a sonne.
 thus hee *which* ³ did the *King* deceiue,
 did by desart this ⁴ death receiue.
 then, to conclude & make an ende,
 180 be true & ffaithfull to your ⁵ freind !

marries her,

and begets a
 son on her.
 So the
 deceiver
 lost his life.

Moral :

Be true to
your friend.

ffinis.

¹ Who marry'd her, all Harm.—O.B.

² did beget.—O.B.

³ that.—O.B.

⁴ his.—O.B.

⁵ thy.—O.B.

Christop[h]er White :

WE know of no other copy of this ballad.

A wealthy merchant—a burgess of four towns, one of them Edinburgh—makes love to the sweetheart of Christopher White, during Christopher's banishment. She hesitates; she has found Christopher White good company; she warns the man of business that, if she is false to her old love, she cannot be true to him. But he still urges his suit, and at last—

The Lady she took 'his' gold in her hand,
The tears they fell fast from her eyes;
Says, 'Silver & gold makes my heart to turn,
And makes me leave good company.'

The honey-moon, and two or three other moons over, "the merchants are ordered to sea" to serve against Spain (see vv. 40, 68). Such an employment of mercantile-navy was not unfrequent in the later middle ages, and if discontinued, may not have been forgotten at the time this ballad was written (see *Pictures of English Life*, Chaucer, p. 233). Or possibly "that all the merchants must to the sea" may mean only that the convoy was ready to accompany them, and they must at once put themselves under its protection. In any case, whether by his own business, or that of the State, the merchant was called away from his bride. When he returns, he finds her gone off to England with the companionable Christopher (who has managed to get pardoned) and his own spoons and plate and silver and gold. The excellent man protests he cares nothing for the missing goods and chattels; but for his "likesome lady" he mourns; yet confesses ingenuously that she warned him when he wooed her, that—

If he were false to Christopher White,
She would never be true to me.

And so aptly follows the moral :

All young women, a warning take,
A warning, look, you take by me ;
Look that you love your old loves best,
For in faith they are best company.

-
- AS I walked fforth one morni[n]ge [page 513]
by one place *that* pleased mee,
wherin I heard a wandering wight,
4 sais, "christopher white is good companye."
- I drew me neere, & very neere,
till I was as neere as neere cold bee ;
loth I was her councell to discreeme,¹
8 because I wanted companye.
- "Say on, say on, thou well faire mayd,
why makest thou ² moane soe heauilye ?"
sais, "all is ffor one wandering wight,
12 is banished fforth of his owne countrye."
- "I am the burgesse of Edenburrow,
soe am I more of townes 3,
I haue money & gold great store,
16 come, sweet wench, & ligg thy loue on mee."
- the merchant pulled forth a bagg of gold
which had hundreds 2 or three,
sais, "euery day throughout the weeke
20 He count ³ as much downe on thy kneee."
- "O Merchant, take thy gold againe,
a good liuing twill purchase thee ;
if I be ffalse to *Christopher white*,
24 Merchant, I cannott be true to thee."

I overheard
a girl
mourning
for Christo-
pher White.

I drew close
to her,

and she said
that White
was
banished.

An Edin-
burgh
burgess tells
her he has
plenty of
money ; will
she love
him ? He
offers her
gold,

and 200*l.* or
300*l.* a week.

She answers

that if she's
false to
White,
she can't be
true to him.

¹ ? discreeme.—F.

² MS. thom.—F.

³ MS. comt.—F.

He tells her
what wealth
he has,

sais, "I haue halls, soe haue I bowers,"
sais, "I haue shipps sayling on the sea ;
I ame the burgess of Edenburrowe ;
28 come, sweete wench, ligge thy loue on mee.

and offers to
marry her
next day.

"Come on, come, thou well faire mayde!
of our matters lett vs goe throughe,
for to-morrowe Ile marry thee,
32 & thy dwelling shalbe in Edenburrough."

The girl
takes his
money,
and agrees
to have him.

The Lady shee tooke this gold in her hand,
the teares thé fell ffast ffrom her eyes¹ ;
sais, "siluer & gold makes my hart to turne,
36 & makes me leaue good companye."

But soon
after their
marriage,

all the
merchants
have to go
to sea.

They had not beene marryed
not ouer monthes 2 or 3,
but tydings came to Edenburrowe
40 *that* all the merchants must to the sea.

On this, the
wife sends a
love letter,
and 100*l.*, to
Christopher,

Then as this Lady sate in a deske,
shee made a loue letter ffull round ;
shee mad a *lettre to christopher white*,
44 & in itt shee put a 100^{li}

Shee lind the letter with gold soe red,
& mony good store in itt was found,
shee sent itt to *christopher white*
48 *that* was soe ffar in the Scotts ground.

and bids him
come to her.

Shee bade him then ffrankely spend,
& looke *that* hee shold merry bee,
& bid him come to Edenburrowe
52 now all the merchants be to the sea.

¹ eye.—P.

- But *christopher* came to leeu London,
 & there he kneeled lowly downe,
 & there hee begd his pardon then,
 56 of our noble *King that* ware the crowne.
- But when he came to his true loues house,
 which was made both of lime and stone,
 shee tooke him by the lilly white hand,
 60 sais, "true loue, you ¹ are welcome home !
- "welcome, my honey ! welcome, my ioy !
 welcome, my true loue, home to mee !
 ffor thou art hee *that* will leng[t]hen my dayes,
 64 & I know thou art good companye.
- "*Christopher*, I am a merchants wiffe ;
christopher, the more shall be *your* gaine ;
 siluer & gold you shall haue enough,
 68 of the merchants gold *that* is in Spaine."
- "But if you be a Merchants wiffe,
 something to much you are to blame ;
 I will thee reade a loue letter ²
 72 shall stu[r]e thy stumpes, thou noble dame."
- "Althoug I be a marchants wiffe,
 shall ³mine
 . & g [page 514]
 76 into England Ile goe with the."
- They packet vp both siluer & p[late,]
 siluer & gold soe great plentye ;
 & they be gon into litle England,
 80 & the marchant must them neuer see.

He goes
first to
London,

and gets the
King's
pardon.

Then he
comes to his
old love.

She
welcomes
him,

promises
him as much
gold as
he wants,

and declares
that she'll
elope with
him.

So they pack
up all the
merchant's
money,
and are off to
England.

¹ MS. *yo*.—F.

² MS. *letter*.—F.

³ The MS. is pared away at the bottom

of p. 513 ; and the writing has perished,
and part of the paper is broken away at
the top of p. 514.—F.

When the
merchant
comes back
from sea, his
neighbours
tell him
how his wife

And when the merchants they came home,
their wiues to eche other can say,
“ heere hath beene good *christopher* white,
84 & he hath tane thy wiffe away ;

has run
away with
White.

“ They haue packett vp spoone & plate,
siluer & gold great plenty,
& they be gon into litle England,
88 & them againe thow must neuer see.”

“ Well,”
says the
merchant,
“ I don’t
grieve for
my gold,
though I do
for my wife :

“ I care nott ffor my siluer & gold,
nor for my plate soe great plentye,
but I mourne for *that* like-some Ladye
92 *that christopher* white hath tane ffrom mee.

but she gave
me fair
notice, so I
mustn’t
grumble.”

“ But one thing I must needs confesse,
this lady shee did say to me,
‘ if shee were ffalse to *christopher* white,
96 shee cold neuer be true to mee.’ ”

Moral:
Young
women,
love your old
loves best!

All young [wo]men, a warning take !
a warning, looke, you take by mee !
looke *that* you loue your old loues best,
100 for infaith they are best companye.

ffinis.

Queene Dido.¹

² "A BALLETT intituled 'The Wanderynge Prince' was entered on the Registers of the Stationers' Company in 1564-5. This was, no doubt, the 'Proper new ballad, intituled The Wandering Prince of Troy: to the tune of Queen Dido,' of which there are two copies in the Pepys Collection (i. 84 and 548). Of these copies, the first, being printed by John Wright, is probably not of earlier date than 1620; and the second, by Clarke, Thackeray, and Passinger, after 1660. The ballad has been reprinted in Percy's *Reliques of Ancient Poetry*, iii. 192, A. D. 1765; and in Ritson's *Ancient Songs*, ii. 141, 1829. Its extensive popularity will be best shown by the following quotations:

You ale-knights, you that devour the marrow of the malt, and drink whole ale-tubs into consumptions; that sing Queen Dido over a cup, and tell strange news over an ale-pot . . . you shall be awarded with this punishment, that the rot shall infect your purses, and eat out the bottom before you are aware.—*The Penniless Parliament of Threadbare Poets*, 1608. (Percy Soc. reprint, p. 44.)

Frank.—These are your eyes!
Where were they, Clora, when you fell in love
With the old footman for singing Queen Dido?
Fletcher's *The Captain*, Act iii. Sc. 3.

"Fletcher again mentions it in Act i. Sc. 2 of *Bonduca*, where Petillius says of Junius that he is 'in love, indeed in love, most

¹ This Song is in Print, and commonly intitled "Æneas the Wandering Prince of Troy."—P. Printed in the fourth edition of the *Reliques*, vol. iii. p. 240; not in the first three editions.
² From Chappell's *Popular Music*, i. 370-1. The quotations have been already given by him, p. 260-1.—F.

lamentably loving,—to the tune of Queen Dido.’ At a later date, Sir Robert Howard (speaking of himself) says :

In my younger time I have been delighted with a ballad for its sake ; and ’twas ten to one but my muse and I had so set up first : nay, I had almost thought that Queen Dido, sung that way, was some ornament to the pen of Virgil. I was then a trifler with the lute and fiddle, and perhaps, being musical, might have been willing that words should have their tones, unisons, concords, and diapasons, in order to a poetical gamuth.—*Poems and Essays*, 8vo, 1673.

“A great number of ballads were sung to the tune, either under the name of Queen Dido or of Troy Town.”

Percy gives it in the *Reliques* from the Folio, “collated with two different printed copies both in black-letter, in the Pepys Collection.”

This ballad tells, with some trifling variations, the story of Æneas’ visit to Carthage, and Dido’s passion and unhappy end. Pity for his sufferings as he recounted them quickly grew into love, and “this silly woman never slept,” and she “rolled on her careful bed,” and sighed and sobbed, and drove her knife home to her heart. Thus far the ballad follows the famous Roman epic ; afterwards it narrates circumstances uncommemorated by Virgil. Dido’s sister writes to Æneas (the Wandering Prince’s address at this time was “an isle in Græcia”) to inform him of the poor lady’s decease, and how with her last breath she prayed * for his prosperity. The perusal of the letter much distresses him. Just as he has completed it, appears before him Queen Dido’s ghost, grim and pale, reproachful, portentous. It bids him prepare his fitting soul to wander with her through the air. The miserable deserter prays for mercy ; he would fain live, he says, to make amends to some of her most dearest friends—offers “damages,” in fact ; but, when he sees her inflexible, he makes a virtue of necessity, and professes himself content to die. His hour comes at once.

And thus as one being in a trance,
 A multitude of ugly fiends
 About this woeful prince did dance;
 He had no help of any friends.
 His body then they took away,
 And no man knew his dying day.

So that even an inquest could not be held over him.

In the *Æneid* the hero does indeed see the ghost of the Carthaginian Queen; but it is because he goes to its habitation, not that it comes to his. When in the sixth book he descends into hell, he sees the hapless Phœnician in the region or quarter of those

Qui sibi letum

Insontes peperere manu, lucemque perosi
 Projecere animas.

He sees her, and with tears would explain his departure from her arms. He left her, he urges, against his own will, by divine compulsion, and entreats her to stay and converse with him. But she answers him never a word.

Talibus Æneas ardentem et torva tuentem
 Lenibat dictis animam, lacrimasque ciobat.
 Illa solo fixos oculos aversa tenebat;
 Nec magis incepto vultum sermone movetur,
 Quam si dura silex aut stet Marpesia cautes.
 Tandem corripuit sese, atque inimica refugit
 In nemus umbriferum; confux ubi pristinus illi
 Respondet curis, æquatque Sichæus amorem.
 Nec minus Æneas, casu percussus iniquo,
 Prosequitur lacrimans longe, et miseratur euntem.

Ovid in the third book of his *Fasti* describes an apparition of Dido, but it is revealed, not to Æneas, but to Dido's sister Anna, who is at the time the welcome guest of Æneas in Italy, to warn her of Lavinia's jealousy.

Nox erat; ante torum visa est adstare sororis
 Squalenti Dido sanguinolenta comâ,
 Et 'Fuge ne dubita, mæstum fuge,' dicere, 'tectum.'

The door creaked opportunely; and Anna, alarmed, escaped through the window, and finally threw herself into the river Numicius.

- After the
Trojan war,
- WHEN¹ Troy towne for ten yeeres warr
withstood the greekes in manfull wise,
yett did their foes encrease soe ffast,
4 *that* to resist none² cold suffice ;
wast ly³ those wall[s]⁴ *that* were soe good,
& corne now growes where Troy towne stooode.
- Æneas
- Æneas, wandring prince of Troy,
8 when he ffor land long time had sought,
att last arriued⁵ with great ioy,
to mighty carthage walls was brought,
where dido queene with s[u]mptuous feast
12 did entertaine *that* wandering guest.
- lands at
Carthage,
Dido makes
him a sump-
tuous feast,
- and at it
- And as in hall att meate thé sate,
the queene, desirous newes to heare
of thy vnhappy 10 yeeres warr,
16 . “ declare to me, thou troian deere,
thy⁶ heauy hap, & chance soe bad,
that thou, poore wandering prince, hast had.”
- asks him to
tell her the
story of his
hard
fortune.
- This he does,
- And then anon this comelye *knight*,
20 with words demure, as he cold well,
of his vnhappy ten yeeres warr
soe true a tall⁷ begun to tell,
with words sooe sweete & sighes soe deepe,
24 *that* oft he made them all to weepe ;
- so sweetly
and patheti-
cally that all
weep,
- And then a 1000 sighes he ffeiht,⁸
& euery sigh brought teares amaine,
that where he sate, the place was wett
28 as though he had seene those warrs againe ;
soe *that* the Queene with ruth therfore
said, “ worthy prince, enough ! no more ! ”
- and at last
Dido is
obliged
to ask him
to stop.

¹ Although or albeit.—P. now added
after *when* by P.—F.

² nought.—P.

³ MS. wastly.—F. waste lie.—P.

⁴ walls.—P.

⁶ The.—P.

⁸ fet. olim pro fetcht. vid. Bible.
2 Sam. 9. 5. item 1 K^g. 9. 28, &c.—P.

⁵ Arriuing.—P.

⁷ tale.—P.

- And then the darkesome night drew on,
 32 & twinkling starres on skye was ¹ spread,²
 & ³ he his dolefull tale had told.
 euery ⁴ one were layd in bedd,
 where they full sweetly tooke their rest,
 36 saue only didos boyling brest.
- This silly woman neuer slept,
 but in her chamber all alone,
 as one vnhappye, alwayes wept.
 40 vnto the walls shee made her moane
that she shold still desire in vaine
 the thing *that* shee cold not obtaine.
- And thus in greeffe shee spent the night
 44 [Till twinkling starres] ⁵ in skye were ffiledd,⁶
 [And now bright Phebus morn]ing beames [page 515]
 [Amidst they] clouds appeared redd.
 [Then tidings] came to her anon
 48 [How that the] TROIAN shipps we[r]e gone.⁷
- ⁸ And then the queene with bloody kniffe
 did armee, her hart as hard as stone ;
 yett something loth to loose her liffe,
 52 in wofull wise shee made her mone ;
 then rowling on her carfull ⁹ bed,
 with sighes & sobbs these words shee sayd :

At night

all take
sweet rest,
save Dido,

who cannot
sleep,

but always
weeps and
moans,
desiring
Æneas.

In the
morning
she hears
that the
Trojan ships
are gone.

She seizes
a knife ;

but before
killing
herself,

¹ were.—P.
² the skye bespread.—P.
³ when.—P. ⁴ then every.—P.
⁵ Pared away in the MS. The bracketed parts of the next four lines are torn away.—F.
⁶ Till twinkling starres in *the* skye were ffiled.—P.
⁷ And now bright Phebus morning beames
 Amids the clouds appeared red,
 Then tidings came to her anon
 How that the Trojan Shipps were gone. Qu.—P.

⁸ And then the Queen with bloody knife
 Did arm her heart &c.
 Yet something &c.
 In woful wise &c.
 Then rowling on &c.
 With sighs &c.—P.
⁹ care-full, as in *Piers Plowman's Crede*:
 And al they songen o songe
 That sorwe was to heren ;
 They crieden alle o cry,
 A *kareful* note.—F.

she laments
her sad fate.

“ O wretched dido queene ! ” shee said,¹
56 “ I see thy end approcheth neere,
ffor hee is gone away ffrom thee
whom thou didst loue & hold soe dere.
what, is he gone, & passed by ?
60 O hart, *prepare* thy selfe to dye !

Then she
calls on
Death,
and stabs
herself.

“ Though reason sais thou shouldest fforbeare,
to ² stay thy hand ffrom bloody stroke,
yett ffancy sais thou shalt not ffear³
64 who ffettereth thee in cupids yoke.
come death ! ” *quoth* shee, “ resolute my smart ! ”
& with those words shee peered her hart.

when death had peercet the tender hart
68 of DIDO, CARTHIGINIAN Queene,
& bloody kniffe had ended ⁴ the same,⁵
which shee sustained in mournfull teene,
Æneas being shipt & gone,
72 whose ffattery caused all her mone.

Her funeral
is costly,

Her ffuneral most costly made,
& all things ffinisht mournfullye,
her body ffine in mold was laid,
76 where itt consumed speedilye :
her sisters teares her tombe bestrewde,
he[r]⁶ subjects greeffe their kindnesse shewed.

and her
sisters and
subjects
bemoan her.

Her sister
writes
Æneas
a letter,

Then was Æneas in an Ile
80 in greycya, where he stayd long space,
wheras her sister in short while
writt to him in ⁷ his vile disgrace ;
In speeches bitter to his mind
84 shee told him plaine, he was vnkind :

¹ said shee.—P.

² And.—P.

³ bids thee not to fear.—P.

⁴ did [end].—P.

⁵ smart.—P.

⁶ Her.—P.

⁷ to.—P.

- “ ffalse harted wretch,” *quoth* shee, “ thou art !
 & traiterously thou hast betraid
 vnto thy lure a gentle hart
 88 *which* vnto thee much welcome made,
 my sister deere, & carthage Ioy,
 whose folly bred her deere annoy.
- “ Yett on her deathbed when shee lay,
 92 shee prayd for thy *prosperitye*,
 beseeching god *that* euery day
 might breed thy great ffelicitye.
 thus by thy meanes I lost a ffreind :
 96 heauens send thee such an v[n]timely ¹ end !”
- When he these lines, ffull ffraught with gall,
 perused had, and wayed them right,
 his Losty ² courage then did ffall ;
 100 & straight appeared in his sight
 Queene didoes Ghost, both grim & pale,
 which made this vallyant souldier for to quaile.
- “ Æneas,” *quoth* this gastly ghost,
 104 “ my whole delight when I did liue !
 thee of all men I loued most,
 my ffancy & my will did giue ;
 ffor Entertainment I the gaue ;
 108 vnthankfully thou didst me graue ;
- “ Therefore *prepare* thy fflitting soule
 to wander with me in the aire,
 where deadly greeffe shall make itt howle
 112 because on me thou tookest no care.
 delay not time, thy glasse is run,
 thy date is past, & death is come ³ !”

calling him
a false-
hearted
wretch,

saying that
Dido prayed
for his
welfare,

but her
sister wishes
him an un-
timely end.

Æneas, on
reading this,

is cast down;

and Dido's
ghost
appears,

reproaches
him for his
ingratitude,

and
summons
his soul to
fly howling
about the
air with her.

His death is
at hand.

¹ untimely.—P.

² ? Lusty or Lofty.—F.

³ thy life is done.—Child's *Ballads*.

Æneas prays
for a respite,

116 " O stay a while, thou [lovely sprite !]¹ [page 516]
be not soe hasty to conuay
my soule into eternall night,
where itt shall neere behold bright day !
O doe not ffrowne ! thy angry looke
120 hath made my breath my liffe fforsooke.

but all in
vain ;

" But woe is me ! all is in vaine,
& booteles is my dismall crye !
time will not be recalled againe,
124 nor thou surcease before I dye.
O lett me liue, & make amends
to some of thy most deerest ffreinds !

and seeing
she is
obdurate,

128 " But seeing thou obdurate art,
& will no pittye to me show
because ffrom thee I did depart,
& lefft vnpaid what I did owe,
I must content my selfe to take
132 what Lott to me thou wilt partake.² "

he is content
to die.

Ugly fiends
dance
around him,

And thus, as one being in a trance,
a multitude of vglye ffeinds
about this woffull prince did dance :—
136 he had no helpe of any ffreinds ;—

and carry off
his body.

his body then they tooke away,
& no man knew his dying day. ffinis.

¹ O stay a while thou gentle sprite,
Be not so hasty to conuay.
Query.—P.

MS. pared away.—F. lovely sprite.—
Child.

² to admit, to share : to extend parti-
cipation. "So Spencer." see Johns?—P.

Alfonso & Ganselo.¹

A COPY of this ballad occurs in the *Garland of Good Will*, (reprinted by the Percy Society) to the tune of "Flying Fame"—a tune to which, says Mr. Chappell in his *Popular Music*, "A large number of ballads have been written," one in *Collection of Old Ballads*, and one in Evans's *Old Ballads*.

The ballad celebrates the friendship of the two heroes whose name it bears. These stuck closer to one another than brothers. Such fast friendships between two knights were favourite subjects with the old romance-writers.² Every true knight could boast not only of a lady love, but of a "brother sworn." And perhaps the writer of the following ballad does but echo some older poem. The generous eagerness of Alphonso to die for his friend, when overwhelming circumstantial evidence was condemning that friend to death, will remind the reader of the well-known old story *Damon and Phintias*, told by Cicero in his *De Officiis* (III. 10), and by others elsewhere.

<p>IN Stately Roome sometime did dwell a man of worthy³ ffame, who had a sonne of ffeatures rare,⁴ 4 Alphonso called by⁵ name. when hee was growne & come to age, his ffather thought itt best to send his sonnes⁶ to Athens ffaire, 8 where wisdomes Schoole did rest.</p>	<p>A Roman gentleman had a son, Alphonso, whom he sent to Athens</p>
--	--

¹ In the printed Collection of Old Ballads, 1726, Vol. 2, p. 145.—P.

² See *Eger and Grime*, vol. i. p. 355, l. 46, and note ⁸.

³ Noble.—O.B.

⁴ seemly Shape.—O.B.

⁵ was his.—O.B.

⁶ Son.—O.B.

He sent him vnto Athens towne,¹
 good letters for to learne ;
 a place to boord him with delight
 12 his ffreinds did well discern ;

 where a knight
 took charge
 of him
 whose son,
 Ganselo,
 16 a noble *knight* of Athens towne
 of him did take the charge,
 who had a sonne GANSELO cald,
 iust of his pitch and age.

 was so like
 Alphonso
 20 In stature & in *person* both,
 in ffauor, speech, and fface,
 in quality & condityon eke,²
 thé greed in euery case³ ;
 soe like they were in all respects,
 the one vnto the other,
 they were not knowne, but by their names,
 24 of ffather nor ⁴ of mother.

 that they
 were only
 known apart
 by their
 names.
 The youths
 love one
 another.
 28 And as in ffauor they were found
 alike in all respects,
 euen soe they did most deerly loue,
 as proued by good effects.

 Ganselo
 loves
 a beautiful
 lady,
 32 GANSELO loued a Lady faire
 which did in Athens dwell,
 who was in bewtye peereles found,
 soe ffarr shee did excell.

 takes a fancy
 to visit her,
 36 vpon a time itt chanced soe,
 as ffancy did him moue,
 that hee wold visitt for delight
 his Lady and his loue ;
 & to his true and ffaithfull ffreind
 he did declare the same,
 asking of him if hee wold see
 40 that ffaire & comely dame.

¹ And when he was to Athens come.
—O.B.

² Conditions.—O.B.

³ Place.—O.B.

⁴ or.—O.B.

- Alphonso did therto agree,
 & with GANSELO went
 to see the Lady whom ¹ hee loued,
 44 *which* bred his discontent :
 ffor when he cast his christall eyes
 vpon her angells ² hue,
 the bewty of *that* Lady bright
 48 [*Did strait*] ³ his hart subdue. Alphonso
goes,
- [His gentle Heart so wounded ⁴] was [page 517]
 with *that* faire L[ady's] ⁴ face
that afterward hee daylye liued
 52 in sad & woefull case ; and becomes
very sad,
 & of his greeffe he knew not how
 therof ⁵ to make an end,
 ffor *that* hee knew the Ladyes loue
 56 was yeilded to his ffreind. as he knows
she's his
friend's
sweetheart.
- 'Thus being sore *perplext* in mind,
 vpon his bed hee lay He takes to
his bed,
 like one *which* ⁶ death & deepe dispaire
 60 had almost worne away. as one like
to die.
 his ffreind GANSELO, *that* did see Ganselo
 his greeffe and great distresse,
 att lenght requested ffor to know
 64 his cause of heauinesse. asks the
cause,
- with much adoe att lenght he told and on
hearing it,
 the truth vnto his ffreind,
 who did release ⁷ his inward woe
 68 with comfort ⁸ in the end :

¹ which.—O.B.² Angel.—O.B.³ O.B. MS. pared away.—F.⁴ O.B.⁵ Therefore.—O.B.⁶ whom.—O.B.⁷ relieve.—O.B.⁸ to.—O.B.

at once gives
his love up
to his friend,

“take courage then, deere freind!” quoth hee;
“though shee through loue be mine,
my right I will resigne to thee,
72 the Lady shalbe thine.

tells him to
put on his
(Ganselo's)
clothes,

and marry
the lady.

“You know our ffauors ¹ are alike,
our speech alike ² likewise;
this day in mine apparrell then ³
76 you shall your selfe disguise,
& unto church then shall you goe
directly in my stead;
soe ⁴ though my ffreinds suppose tis I,
80 you shall the Lady wedd.”

Next day
Alphonso
does marry
her,

and is taken
to her bed.

Alphonso was ffull ⁵ well apayd;
& as they had decreed,
he went next ⁶ day, & weded plaine
84 the ladye there indeed.
But when the nuptyall feast was done,
& Phebus light ⁷ was fled,
the Lady for GANSELO tooke
88 Alfonso ⁸ to her bed.

But in the
morning

Alphonso is
summoned
to Rome,

the
deception is
found out,

That night they spent in pleasing sort,⁹
& when the day was come,
a post ffor ffaire Alfonso came
92 to ffetich him home to Roome.
then was the matter plainly proued,
Alfonso weded was,
& [not ¹⁰] GANSELO, to *that* dame;
96 *which* brought great woe, alas!

¹ Favour.—O.B.² also.—O.B.³ O.B. omits *then*.—F.⁴ Lo.—O.B.⁵ so.—O.B.⁶ that.—O.B.⁷ quite.—O.B.⁸ Part of a letter, or an *r*, follows *o* in the MS.—F. Alphonso.—O.B.⁹ pleasant Sport.—O.B.¹⁰ O.B.

Alfonso being gone to Roome
 with this his lady gay,
 Ganselos ffreinds & kinred all
 100 in such a rage did stave
that they deprived [him ¹] of his welth
 his lands ² & rich attire,
 & banisht him their country eke ³
 104 in rage & wraathfull Ire.

and
 Ganselo's
 friends,
 enraged,
 seize his
 property,
 and
 banish him.

with sad & pensiuie thought,⁴ alas!
 Ganselo wanderd then,
 who was constrained through want to begg
 108 releeffe of many men.
 In this distresse oft wold he say
 "to Roome I mean to goe,
 to seeke Alfonso, my deere ffreind,
 112 who will releue my woe."

He is forced
 to beg,

To Roome when pore Ganselo came,
 & found Alfonsoes place,
 which was soe ffamous, huge, & faire,
 116 himselfe in such poore case,
 he was ashamed to shew himselfe
 in *that* his poore array,
 saying, "Alfonso knowes me well
 120 if he shold ⁵ come this way ;"

goes to
 Rome,
 and finds
 Alfonso's
 place so
 grand that
 he daren't
 go there.

wherfore ⁶ he staid *within* the street.
 Alfonso then came by,
 but heeded non ⁷ Ganselo pore,
 124 his ffreind *that* stood soe nye ;

So he stops
 outside.
 Alfonso
 passes by,
 taking no
 notice of
 him.

¹ O.B.

² Land.—O.B.

³ quite.—O.B.

⁴ Thoughts.—O.B.

⁵ would.—O.B.

⁷ Therefore.—O.B.

⁶ not.—O.B.

This grieues
Ganselo, so

which greened Ganselo to the hart :
quoth hee, " and is itt soe ?
doth proud Alfonso now disdaine
128 his freind in need ¹ to know ? "

that he
draws his
knife to stab
himself ;
but, while
weeping,

falls asleep.

In desperatt s[ort away he went] ²
into a barne hard by,
& presently he drew his k[niffe,]
132 thinking therby to dye ;
& bitterlye in sorrow there
he did lament & weepe ;
& being *ouerwayd* with greeffe,
136 he fell full ³ fast asleepe.

[page 518]

A murderer

takes up the
knife,

thrusts it
into a man
he has
killed,

while soundly there he sweetly slept,
came in a murthering theeffe,
which ⁴ saw a naked kniffe lye by
140 this man soe ffull of greeffe.
the kniffe soe bright he tooke vp straight,
& went away amaine,
& thrust itt in a murthered man
144 *which* hee beffore had slaine ;

and then
puts it, all
bloody, into
Ganselo's
hand.

Ganselo is
found with
the knife,

And affterward ⁵ hee went with speede,
& put this bloody kniffe
into his hand, *that* sleeping lay,
148 to saue himselfe ffrom striffe.
which done, in hast away ⁶ he ran ;
& when *that* serch was made,
GANSELO with his bloody kniffe
152 was ffor the murther stayde,

¹ indeed.—O.B.

² O.B.

³ there fell.—O.B.

⁴ And.—O.B.

⁵ afterwards.—O.B.

⁶ away in haste.—O.B.

- And brought befor the Magistrates,¹
 who did confesse most plaine
that hee indeed *with* that same kniffe,
 156 the murthered man had slaine.²
 Alfonso sitting there as³ iudge,
 & knowing GANSELOS fface,
 to saue his ffreind, did say himselve
 160 was guilty in *that* case.
- “None,” quoth Alfonso, “killed the man,
 my lords,⁴ but only I;
 & therefore sett this poore man ffree,
 164 & lett me iustly dye.”
 thus while for death these ffaith-ffull freinds⁵
 in striuing did proceed,
 the man before the senate came
 168 *which*⁶ did the ffacte indeed,
- Who being moued *with* remorse
 their ffaith-ffull⁷ harts to see,
 did proue⁸ before the judges plaine
 172 none did the deed⁹ but hee.
 thus when the truth was plainly told,
 of all sids ioy was seene ;
 Alfonso did imbrace his freind
 176 *which* had soe wofull beene.
- In rich array he clothed him,
 as fitted his degree,
 & helpt him to his lands againe
 180 & fformer dignitie.
- and tried
 for the
 murder.
 He confesses
 that he
 committed
 it.
- Alphonso is
 the judge ;
 and to save
 Ganselo,
- vows that
 he killed
 the man.
- Just then
 the real
 murderer,
- struck with
 remorse,
- proves
 his own
 guilt.
- Alphonso
 embraces
 Ganselo,
- and helps
 him to his
 old lands, &c.

¹ Magistrate.—O.B.² flain.—O.B.³ with the.—O.B.⁴ Lord.—O.B.⁵ One stroke too few in the MS.—F.⁶ That.—O.B.⁷ friendly.—O.B.⁸ say.—O.B.⁹ Fact.—O.B.

And the
murderer is
pardoned.

the murtherrer he¹ ffor telling truth
was pardoned² att that time,
who afterward lamented much
184 this³ foule & greiuous crime. **ffinis.**

¹ O.B. omits *he*.—F.

² Had pardon.—O.B.

³ His.—O.B.

[“*All in a greene Meadowe*,” printed in *Lo. & Hum. Songs*, p. 114,
follows here in the *MS.* p. 518-19.]

Ballow :¹

THIS exquisite song is given in the *Reliques* from the Folio, "corrected by² another [copy] in Allan Ramsay's *Miscellany*," and of course touched up by Percy himself without notice, Scottified throughout. There are many versions of the song; and of them we may particularise seven, in order of date as printed, or copied into manuscripts. On several of these versions Mr. Chappell remarks below :

1. In Brome's comedy of *The Northern Lass, or the Nest of Fools*, printed in 1632, acted somewhat earlier,³ occurs a version of two stanzas found neither in our Folio nor Ramsay's *Tea-table Miscellany*. They are no doubt an imitation of one of the MS. versions now printed, and which have an earlier cast than Brome's lines.

Peace, wayward barne ! Oh ! cease thy moan !
 Thy farre more wayward daddy's gone,
 And never will recalled be,
 By cryes of either thee or me :
 For should wee cry
 Untill we dye,
 Wee could not scant his cruelty.
 Ballow, ballow, &c.

He needs might in himselfe foresee
 What thou successively mightst be ;

¹ This Song is in Allan Ramsays Collection call'd the Tea-table Miscellany, printed at Glasgow, 1753, in 4 Parts. It is there call'd Lady Anne Bothwell's lament.—And consists of 13 Stanzas. Of which only the 1st 2^d 3^d & 7th are the same with this:—In the printed copy: the 2^d & 3^d, are put 3^d & 2^d & the 7th comes in 4th, the intermediate being omitted:—after which follow 8 other. The last St. of this is something different from the Printed.—P.

² "compared with" 2nd and 3rd editions of the *Reliques*; "corrected by" 4th ed.: no notice of any comparison or correction in the 1st ed.—F.

³ Robert Chambers, in a note to his *Scottish Ballads* (ed. 1829, p. 118), says that it is to be found in *The Northern Lass, or the Nest of Fools*, 1606.—W.C. ? a misprint for 1706, the date of the reprint of Brome's play; we cannot find any notice of a book or play of this name in 1606.—F.

And could hee then (though me foregoe)
His infant leave, ere hee did know
How like the dad
Would bee the lad,
In time to make fond maydens glad ?
Ballow, ballow, &c.

2. Our Folio version, out of the first stanza of which a couplet has disappeared.

3, 4. In John Gamble's book, 1649 A.D., a musical MS. belonging to Dr. Rimbault, is the copy of *Balowe* given in the left-hand column below,¹ which Dr. Rimbault has allowed us to transcribe. By its side, on the right, we put the copy from Elizabeth Rogers's *Virginal Book*, the Additional MS. 10,337, A.D. 1658, to which Mr. Chappell has called our attention.

[*John Gamble's MS. Book*, 1649 A.D.]

[*Addit. MS. 10,337*, p. 6 *from the end.*]

1
Ballowe, my babe, lye still and sleepe,
itt grieues me sore to see thee weepe!
when thou art merry, I am glad;
thy weeping makes my hart full sad.
ballowe, my boy, thy mothers ioy,
thy father breedes thee much anoy;
ballow, ballow, ballow, ballow.

2
balow my babe, ly still a while;
and when thou wakest, sweetly smile;
butt doe nott smille as ffather did,
to cozen maidens, god fforbid!
butt now I feare *that* thou wilt leer
thy ffathers flattringe hartt to bear.
balow &c.

1
Baloo my boy lye still and sleepe,²
itt grieues me sore to see the weepe:
Wouldst thou bee quiet ist³ be as glade,
Thy morninge, makes my sorrow sad:
Lie still my boy, thy mothers Joy,
Thy father Coulede mee great a-noy:
La loo, Ba loo, la loo, la loo, la loo,
la loo, la loo,
Baloo, baloo, Baloo, baloo; Baloo
Baloo.

When he began to court my loue,
and with his sugard words did moue
His flattering face and feigned cheare,
To mee that tyme did not appeare,

¹ Pinkerton prints a version in his *Select Scottish Ballads*, 1783, vol. i. p. 86, and says:

"In a 4to MS. in the Editor's possession, containing a collection of poems by different hands from the reign of Queen Elizabeth to the middle of the last century, when it was apparently written (pp. 132) there are two *Balowes* as they are styled, the first *The Balow Allan*, the second *Palmer's Balow*; this last, is that commonly called Lady Bothwell's Lament, and the three first stanzas in this edition are taken from it, as is the last from *Allan's Balow*. They are injudiciously mingled in Ramsay's edition, and several stanzas

of his own added; a liberty he used much too often in printing Scottish poems."

Pinkerton's MS. (temp. Car. I. 1625-49) is now in the possession of Mr. David Laing, and he has kindly compared it for us with Pinkerton's text. The latter he declares to be "utterly worthless. In the MS. the ballad *Palmer's Balow* consists of six stanzas nearly verbatim with the text you have given from Gamble's MS., 1649."

² Stops, hyphens, &c., all in the MS.—F.

³ I should.—F.

[*John Gamble's MS. Book, 1649 A.D.*][*Addit. MS. 10,337, p. 6 from the end.*]

3
 when hee beegan to court my loue,
 with sugred words hee did mee move,
 his faineinge¹ fface & flattringe leares
 thatt unto me in time apeares ;
 butt now I see *that* crewelty
 cares neithther ffor my babe nor mee,
 balow &c.

4
 I cannott chose, butt euer will
 bee loyall to thy ffather still ;
 his cuninge hath parlur'd² my hartt,
 thatt I can noe waies ffram him partt ;
 in well or woe, wher-care hee goe,
 my hartt shall nere departt him fro.
 balow.

5
 ffarewell! ffarewell the ffalsettt youth
that euer kistt a womans mouth!
 lett neuer maide ere after mee
 once trust unto thy cruelty!
 ffor crewell thou, iff once shee bow,
 wiltt her abuse, thou carstt nott how.
 balow &c.

6
 Now by my greifs I uow & sware,
 thee and all others to fforbeare ;
 ile neither kiss, nor cull, nor clapp,
 butt lull my younglinge in my lapp.
 bee still my hartt, leaue off to moane,
 and sleep securly all alone.
 balow &c.

5. Watson's copy in his *Comic and Serious Scots Poems*, Pt. iii. 1711, p. 79. It is called "Lady Anne Bothwell's *Balow*," and contains 13 stanzas.

6. Allan Ramsay's copy in his *Tea-Table Miscellany*, 1724. This is called "Lady Anne Bothwell's *Lament*." It is Watson's version with emendations, and some stanzas transposed. Like Watson's, it consists of 13 stanzas; the Folio of 7. There are, as Percy notes, only 4 stanzas common to both copies; stanzas 1, 2, 3, and 7 of the Folio version occur with but slight variations in the other one.

¹ ? MS. fameinge.—F.² ? for purloin'd.—F.³ So in MS.—F.

But now I see, that Cruell hee
 Cares nether for my boy, nor mee,
 Baloo baloo.

3
 But thou my darlinge sleepe a while,
 and when thou wakest sweetlye smile,
 yet smile not as thy father did
 ozen³
 To Cusen mads, nay god for-bid

re³
 But yett i feare that thou wiltt heare
 Thy fathers face and hart still beare
 Baloo //: //: //:

4
 Now by my greifs I vow and swære
 the and all others to forbeare
 I'le neuer kisse nor Cull nor Clapp
 But lull my youngling in my lapp,
 Cease hart to moane, leaue of to groane,
 and sleepe securelye hart a-lone.
 Baloo //: //: //:

7. The version in Evans's *Old Ballads*, 1810. 'The new Balow.'

The *ordinary* account of the original personages of this ballad is that given by Prof. Child in the fourth volume of his *English and Scottish Ballads*.

The unhappy lady (he says) into whose mouth some unknown poet has put this lament, is now ascertained to have been Anne, daughter to Bothwell, Bishop of Orkney. Her faithless lover was her cousin, Alexander Erskine, son to the Earl of Mar. Lady Anne is said to have possessed great beauty, and Sir Alexander was reputed the handsomest man of his age. He was first a colonel in the French army, but afterwards engaged in the service of the Covenanters, and came to his death by being blown up, with many other persons of rank, in Douglass Castle, on Aug. 30, 1640. The events which occasioned the ballad seem to have taken place early in the seventeenth century. Of the fate of the lady subsequent to this period nothing is known. See Chambers, *Scottish Ballads*, p. 105, and *The Scots Musical Museum* (1853), iv. 203

But on this statement Mr. Chappell has been good enough to draw up, at some trouble, the following:

"*Baloo* is a sixteenth-century ballad, not a seventeenth. It is alluded to by several of our early dramatists, and the tune is to be found in an early Elizabethan MS. known as William Ballet's *Lute Book*,¹ as well as in Morley's *Consort Lessons*, printed in 1599. The words (see above) and tune are together in John Gamble's *Music Book*, a MS. in the possession of Dr. Rimbault, (date 1649,) and in Elizabeth Rogers's *Virginal Book*, in the library of the British Museum (Addit. MS. 10,337). The last is dated 1658, but the copy may have been taken some few years after. *Baloo* was so popular a subject that it was printed as a street ballad, with additional stanzas, just as 'My lodging it is on the cold ground' and other popular songs were

¹ This highly interesting MS. which is in the library of Trinity College, Dublin, (D. I. 21) contains a large number of the popular tunes of the sixteenth century . .

'Queen Maries Dump' (in whose reign it was probably commenced) stands first in the book. Chappell's *Popular Music*, i. 86, note ^b.—F.

lengthened for the same purpose. It has been reprinted in that form by Evans, in his *Old Ballads, Historical and Narrative*, edit. 1810, vol. i. p. 259. The title is 'The new Balow; or, A Wench's Lamentation for the loss of her Sweetheart: he having left her a babe to play with, being the fruits of her folly.' The particular honour of having been the 'wench' in question was first claimed for 'Lady Anne Bothwell' in Part iii. of *Comic and Serious Scots Poems*, published by Watson in Edinburgh in 1713. Since that date Scotch antiquaries have been very busy in searching into the scandalous history of the Bothwell family, to find out which of the Lady Annes *might* have been halla-balooing.

"May we not release the whole race from this imputation? The sole authority for the charge is Watson's Collection!—the same book that ascribes to the unfortunate Montrose the song of 'My dear and only love, *take heed,*' and tacks it as a second part to his 'My dear and only love, *I pray.*' Shade of Montrose! how must you be ashamed of your over-zealous advocate! Let us examine whether the spirit of 'Lady Anne Bothwell' has more reason to be grateful. Among the stanzas ascribed to her by Watson, are the two following, which are not to be found in any English copy:

I take my fate from best to worse
That I must needs now be a nurse,
And lull my young son in my lap.
From me, sweet orphan, take the pap:
Balow, my boy, thy mother mild
Shall sing, as from all bliss exil'd.

In the second we find the inducement supposed to have been offered by Lady Anne's lover:

I was too credulous at the first
To grant thee that a maiden durst,
And in thy bravery thou didst vaunt
That I no maintenance should want: [!]
Thou swear thou lov'd, thy mind is moved,
Which since no otherwise has proved.

"Comment is unnecessary. Can any one believe that such

lines were written by or for any lady of rank? ¹ Yet they were copied as Lady Anne's by Allan Ramsay, and polished in his usual style. They have been polished and repolished by subsequent editors, but to little avail, for they remain great blots upon a good English ballad.² There is not a Scotch word, nor even one peculiar to the north of England, in the whole of Watson's version.

"The remainder of Ramsay's copy will be found in the English ballad reprinted by Evans. Omit stanzas 5 and 7 of Ramsay (which are given above) and compare with Evans in the following reversed order:—Verse 2, 9, 3, 15, 10, 1, 14, 5, 6, 7 and 8.

"The acumen of Scotch antiquaries has rarely been exercised *against* claims that have been once put forth for Scotland. Such matters are left for us lazy Southrons to find out."

The sad lady and her lover are thus still to seek.

Excepting the two stanzas added in Watson's copy, the piece is, we think, singularly beautiful—the work of no common poet, whoever he was. It is marked by a most touching simplicity and truthfulness. The poor forlorn woman speaks from the abundance of a full heart. The words she utters fall as naturally as her tears. Her spirit is of the gentlest and tenderest, and she makes her plaint most gently and tenderly. She cannot bring herself to speak bitterly of him who has betrayed and left her. She regards him still with an ineradicable fondness:

¹ The verse is accordingly altered in R. Chambers's *Scottish Ballads*, 1829, p. 135, to

I was too credulous at the first,
To yield thee all a maiden durst.
Thou swore for ever true to prove,
By faith unchanged, unchanged thy love;
But, quick as thought, the change is
wrought,
Thy love's no more, thy promise nought
Balow, my boy, lie still and sleep!
It grieves me sair to see thee weip.

Chambers says that his "copy of the

Lament is composed out of that which appeared in Watson's Collection, with some stanzas and various readings from a version altogether different, which was published by Dr. Percy."—F.

² Other portions of the ballad have been treated in the same way. Even the late Professor W. E. Aytoun, not content with such changes as "O gin" for "I wish," (to make it more Scotch) must needs change "With fairest *tongues* are falsest minds," into "With fairest *hearts* are falsest minds."—W.C.

I cannot choose but ever will
 Be loving to thy father still.
 Where'er he goes, where'er he ride,
 My love with him doth still abide.
 In weal or woe, where'er he go,
 My heart shall ne'er depart him fro.

What a moving lealty of soul! What a passing constant lovingness!¹

May we do ourselves the pleasure of quoting here an old Greek song, of which "Balow" much reminds us—the Lament of Danaë, written by Simonides? The circumstances are indeed different. Danaë has been sent out to sea in a boat by her father with only her child with her. (Compare Chaucer's *Man of Law's Tale*.) This aggravation of her sufferings is wanting to the deserted lady in *Balowe*. The father is in one case a god; in the other a mortal. But each woman's one care and comfort is her child. Each bids her darling sleep as she herself weeps and watches tenderly over its slumbers. Of each the characteristic is a sweet patience, a touching meekness of nature.

ὅτε λάρνακι [δ'] ἐν δαιδαλέᾳ ἀνεμος τέ μιν
 κινήθεισά τε λίμνα
 δείματι ἤριπεν, οὐκ ἀδιάντοισι παρειαῖς
 ἀμφί τε Περσεῖ βάλλε φίλαν χέρα
 εἶπέ τε· ὦ τέκος, οἶον ἔχω πόνον·
 σὺ δ' αὐτῶς γαλαθηνῶ
 στήθει² κνώσσεις ἐν ἀτερπεί
 δώματι χαλκεογόμφῳ νυκτιλαμπεί
 κυανέῳ τε δνόφῳ ταθείς.
 Αὐαλέαν δ' ὑπερθε τεῶν
 κόμαν βαθείαν παρίοντος
 κύματος οὐκ ἀλέγεις,
 οὐδ' ἀνέμου φθόγγων,
 κείμενος ἐν πορφυρέᾳ χλανίδι, πρόσωπον καλόν.
 εἰ δέ τοι δεινὸν τό γε δεινὸν ἦν,
 καὶ κεν ἐμῶν ῥημάτων λεπτὸν ὑπεῖχες οὐδας·

¹ Mr. Robert Chambers's opinion, if it be entitled to the name, may be compared: "The editor at first thought of excluding the ballad altogether from his collection, as, although the poetry is exquisitely beautiful, the subject is one which it is

by no means agreeable to reflect upon. He, however, afterwards saw reason to change his resolution, in the fine moral strain which pervades the unfortunate lady's lamentations."—F.

² Al. τ' ἤτορι, al. ἤθει, al. μείδει.

κέλομ' εἶδε βρέφος,
 εὐδέτω δὲ πόντος,
 εὐδέτω ἕμετρον κακόν·
 μεταβουλία δέ τις φανείη,
 Ζεῦ πάτερ, ἐκ σέο.
 ὃ τι δὲ θαρσαλέον ἔπος εὐχομαι
 τεκνόφι δίκαν, σύγγνωθί μοι.

Ed. *Schneidewin*.

- Baby, sleep!
- 4 BALOW my babe, lye still & sleepe !
 itt greenes me sore to see thee weepe.
 balowe my boy, thy mothers ioy,
 thy ffather breeds me great anoy.
 balow, la-low, la-la-la, ra-row, fa-la, la-la,
 la-la, la-la-la, la-low !
- Your father
 has wronged
 me.
- 8 When he began to court my loue,
 & with his sugred words me moue,
 his ffaynings false & flattering cheere
 to me *that* time did not appeare ;
 but now I see most cruellye
 12 he cares neither for my babe nor mee.
 Balow &c.
- When he
 courted me,
 I did not see
 his falseness,
- but now I do.
- Darling,
- 16 Lye still my darling, sleepe awhile,
 & when thou wakest thoule sweetly smile
 but smile not as thy father did,
 to cozen maids : nay, god forbid !
 but yett I ffeare thou wilt goe neere,
 thy fathers hart & fface to beare.
 20 Ballow &c.
- But I cannot
 help loving
 him still.
- 24 I cannott chuse, but euer will
 be louing to thy father still ;
 where-ere he goes, where-ere he ryds,
 my loue with him doth still abyde ;
 in weale or woe, where-ere he goe,
 my hart shall neere depart him ffroec.
 Ballow &c.

- 28 But doe not, doe not, pretty mine,
to ffaynings false thy hart incline.
be loyall to thy louer true,
& neuer change her ffor a new.
- 32 if good or faire, of her haue care,
ffor womens baninge is wonderous sare.
Ballow &c.

Only, pretty
one,
be true to
your love;
never
change.

- Bearne, by thy face I will be ware ;
36 like Sirens words Ile not come neere ¹;
my babe & I together will liue ;
heelee comfort me when cares doe greene ;
my babe & I right soft will lye,
40 & neere respect ² mans crueltye.
Ballow &c.

Live and
comfort me.

- ffarwell, ffarwell, the falsest youth
that euer kist a womans mouth !
44 I wish all maids be warned by mee,
neere to trust mans curtesye ;
for if wee doe but chance to bowe,
theyle vse vs then, they care not how.
48 Ballow &c. ffinis.

May all
maids take
warning by
me, never to
trust a man.

¹ Bairne, sin thy cruel father is gane,
Thy winsome smiles maun eise my
paine. Percy in *Reliques*.—F.

² quite forgeit. Percy in *Reliques*.—F.

[“*Old Simon the Kinge*,” printed in *Lo. & Hum. Songs*, p. 124,
follows here in the MS. p. 519-20.]

Gentle Heardsman.

THIS poem is printed in the *Reliques* "from a copy in the Editor's folio MS., which had greatly suffered by the hand of time; but vestiges of the lines remaining, some conjectural supplements have been attempted, which, for greater exactness, are in this one ballad distinguished by italics." We are not quite sure that the hand of time was always more to be dreaded than the hand of the Bishop.

A lady who has killed her lover with her caprice and boldness, determines to get her to some secret place and fast and pray till she dies. The picture of the forlorn figure—young of years, fair of face, weak (that is, youthful, immature) of wits, green of thoughts—begging her way to Walsingham, remorseful, hopeless, is prettily drawn. Goldsmith has borrowed from her speech in the ballad recited by Mr. Burchell in the *Vicar of Wakefield*. The Stranger, standing "confess'd a maid in all her charms," tells how she had trifled with the affections of her Edwin:

The dew, the blossom on the tree,
With charms inconstant shine;
Their charms were his, but woe to me,
Their constancy was mine.

For still I try'd each fickle art,
Importunate and vain:
And while his passion touch'd my heart,
I triumph'd in his pain.

Till quite dejected with my scorn,
He left me to my pride;
And sought a solitude forlorn
In secret, where he died.

But mine the sorrow, mine the fault,
And well my life shall pay;
I'll seek the solitude he sought,
And stretch me where he lay.

And there forlorn, despairing, hid,
 I'll lay me down and die :
 'Twas so for me that Edwin did,
 And so for him will I.

There the likeness ends. The eighteenth century poet could not bear to let the poor thing pass away from the scene still dejected and unhoping. The sentimental bosom of his time could not abide such dismal endings. The poet in this case, as his contemporaries in many another, gives it relief and comfort at the expense of probability :

"Forbid it, Heaven!" the Hermit cry'd,
 And clasp'd her to his breast :
 The wond'ring fair one turned to chide—
 'Twas Edwin's self that press'd.

"Turn, Angelina, ever dear,
 My charmer, turn to see,
 Thy own, thy long-lost Edwin here,
 Restored to love and thee.

"Thus let me hold thee to my heart,
 And every care resign :
 And shall we never, never part,
 My life—my all that's mine ?

"No, never from this hour to part,
 We'll live and love so true :
 The sigh that rends thy constant heart,
 Shall break thy Edwin's too."

Contrast this gushing *finale* with the concluding stanzas of the older ballad, in their quietness and intensity at the same time :

Now, gentle herdsman, ask no more,
 But keepe my secretts, I thee pray.
 Unto the towne of Walsingham
 Show me the right and ready way.

Now goe thy wayes, and goe before,
 For he must euer guide thee still :
 Turne downe that dale, the right hand path,
 And soe faire Pilgrim ffare the well.

And the contrite pilgrim moves sadly away towards her appointed goal.

- “Tell me
the way to
Walsing-
ham.”
- 4 “GENTLE : heardsman, tell to me—
of curtesy I thee pray,—
vnto the towne of walsingham
which is the right and ready way.’
- “It’s bad,
and hard for
you to find.”
- 8 “vnto the towne of walsingham
the way is hard ffor to be gon,
& verry crooked are those pathes
ffor you to ffind out all alone.”
- “Not bad
enough for
me,”
- 12 “weere the miles doubled 3^{ise},
& the way neuer soe ill,
itt were not enough for mine offence,
itt is soe greuious and soe ill.”
- “Thy yeeares are young, thy face is ffaire,
thy witts are weake, thy thoughts are greene ;
time hath not giuen thee leaue as yett
for to committ soe great a sinne.¹”
- 16
- and so you’d
say if you
knew my
sin.
- 20 “Yes, heardsman, Yes, soe woldest thou say
if thou knewest soe much as I ;
my witts, & thoughts, & all the rest,
haue well deserued for to dye.
- I am a
woman,
- 24 “ I am not what I seeme to bee ;
my clothes & sexe doe differ ffarr ;
I am a woman, woe is me !
[A prey]² to greeffe & irksome care,

¹ MS. sime.—F.

² MS. torn away here and in the following lines.—F.

N.B. Since I first transcribed this

song for the Press, part of the Leaf has been worne away. It was once exactly as I have represented it in my Book.—P.

“ [1 For my] beloued & well beloued and was
loved
 [My wayward cruelty could kill :
 [And though my teares will nought avail, [page 521]
 28 [Most dearely I bewail him still.

2 “ [He was the flower of noble w]ights ; by a noble
youth,
 [None ever more sincere colde] bee ;
 [Of comelye mien and shape he] was,
 32 [And tenderlye he lov]ed mee.

“ [When thus I saw he loved m]e well, whom I
tormented
 [I grewe so proude his paine t]o see,
 [That I, who did not kn]ow my-selfe,
 36 [Thought scorne of such a youth] as hee,² and scorned.

“ And grew soe coy, & nice to please,
 as womens lookes are often soe ;
 he might not kisse, nor hand fforsooth,
 40 vnless I willed him soe to doe.

“ Thus being wearyed with delayes I wearied
him out,
 to see I pittyed not his greeffe,
 he gott him to a secrett place, and he killed
himself.
 44 & there hee dyed without releeffe.

“ And for his sake these weeds I weare, For his sake
 to sacrifice my tender age,
 & euery day Ile begg my bread
 48 to vndergoe this pilgrimage. I go this
pilgrimage,

¹ This and the following pieces in brackets were supplied by Percy, in the *Reliques* i. 73-4.—F.

²⁻² Note by Percy on a separate slip, with an irregular line (but no dots) marking the broken edge of the leaf:

. still
 oble wights
 ere . . . bee
 e hee was

. e loved mee
 ned me well
 me to see
 know myselfe
 as hee
 and grew so coy & nice to please
 N.B. This shows the state of the Leaf as it was at first, before part of it was worn away—i.e. when I first got the Book.—P.

¹ ¶ am . . .

SAY: what is a wom[ans hart] . . .
that calmes &
 is itt light he
 4 & or is itt
 out alas out
 my mother h

lay I [h]ome

 8

. . . . what is a womans hart?
 . . . has all, yett all has *part*;
 . [r]ound or square, or soft or hard,
 12 . itt in the fforging marde
 [out ala]s &c

[Tell me, my] loue & are all women true?
 [Some ar]e no doubt, but they are very ffew.
 [Most think that if their] ffaith & loue last long,
 16 [Then must t]hey doe all others wronge.
 [out alas &c]

[Why do] I loue? what are those ffemale sexe
 [that] doth mankind soe much *perplex*?
 is itt water, ffire, earth, or aire,
 20 *that* makes these creatures seeme soe rare? *ffinis.*

¹ This follows "Thomas you cannot," on a fragment of p. 522 of the MS.—F.

Corydon

[On p. 522 of the MS.]

. . . ly shepard swaine
 . . . vpon the storadyan plaine
 . . . ent to keepe his fflockes of sheepe
 4 . . . hts he did obtaine
 . . . his eye he did espye
 . . . wlyous traine to passe
 . [a]fter a deere *which* ffollowed neere
 8 *which* they had hard in chase.
 after them came amaine a faire mayd,
 which did moue corydon through the sun for to
 run,
 thinking to haue stayd her: but he frained¹ her
 12 & still prayd her, but dismaid her,
 & shee thought his sight to shunn.

 Ere they ended had their race, they came vnto a
 place
 where Pann did sitt his ffitt in a garland made of
 baves;
 16 but when the godds *perceiued* the maid,
 thé tooke her ffor diana;
 both ffor bewty & attire the like was neuer any;
 which did moue him to loue her to follow,
 20 att *which* sight, in a ffright backe againe rann the
 swai[n,]
 where his fflockes were grazing, Pann sate praising,
 but still gazing and amazing,
 ffearfull to behold the mayd.

¹ frayed, qu. P. frained = asked.—F.

24 ffrom his fface shee fled with feare lest the godds
 shold find her th[ere]
 with ffootmanshipp shee him out steppe, till shee
 came to riuer cleer[e] . . .
 but when shee see shee cold [n]ot flee
 nor cold no ffurther sc[ape] . . .
 28 but *that* shee [might] . . .
 to . . .
 . . .

[Siege] off Rouen.

[On page 523 of the MS.]

THIS is a fragment of a late copy of the old poem on Henry V.'s famous siege of Rouen, which was begun on July 30, 1418, and ended, after a most gallant defence, by Henry's triumphal entry into the city on January 16, 1419. The poem professes to be, and no doubt is, by an eyewitness, l. 21-3.¹ The first part of it was first printed by the Rev. J. J. Conybeare in vol. xxi. of the *Archæologia*, p. 48-78, from an incomplete MS., Bodley 124 (where Mr. G. Parker says he cannot now find it), and the second part was afterwards printed (with a portion of the first part, that is, from l. 636) by Sir F. Madden in *Archæol.* vol. xxii. p. 361-84, from a complete MS., Harl. 2256, the prose chronicle of *The Brute*, collated with a rather older but less accurate MS., Harl. 753. Other MSS. are Bodley 3562 (formerly E. Musæo 124), and Lord Leicester's MS. 670 at Holkham (*Madden*, p. 351). The fragments of our Folio are here completed from a late MS., Egerton 1995, bought at Lord Charlemont's sale in August, 1865, "supposed to be in the hand of Gregory Skinner, Lord Mayor of London in 1451."² The poem, says Mr. Hazlitt in a note, "must have been written about two years after the battle, as the author speaks throughout of Thomas Earl of Dorset as Duke of Exeter, to which dignity he did not attain till 4 Henry V." But as the 4 Henry V. was March 21, 1416, to

¹ It will be admitted, I believe, by all who will take the trouble to compare the various contemporary narratives of the siege of Rouen, that in point of simplicity, clearness, and minuteness of detail, there is no existing document which can compare with the poem before us. Sir

F. Madden in *Archæol.* xxii. 353.—F.

² Sotheby's Catalogue, referred to by Mr. Hazlitt, *Early Pop. Poetry*, ii. 92. The reader will perceive that the Charlemont or Egerton MS. is not unique, as Mr. Hazlitt supposed it was.—F.

March 20, 1417, it is clear that Mr. Hazlitt was induced to attribute the date of Rouen to Agincourt by his prior erroneous statement that the Charlemont or Egerton MS. exhibited a different narrative of the same event which is commemorated in the ballad he reprints of "ye batayll of Egingecourte & the grete sege of Rone by kynge Henry of Mon-mouthe"; for the writer of that ballad wisely says,

. . . in this boke I cannot comprehend
 The greatest batayll of all, called y^e sege of Rone;
 For that sege lasted .iij. yere and more;
 And there a rat was at .xl. pens,¹
 For in the Cytte the people hongered sore;
 Women and chyl dren for faute of mete were lore,
 And some for payne bare bones were gnawynge,
 That at her brestes had .ii. chyl dren soukyng.
 Of the sege of Rone it to wryte were pytye,
 It is a thing so lamentable . . .

E. Pop. Poetry, ii. 107-8.

As the poem is printed from the best MSS. in the *Archæologia*, as above-said, and as the Early English Text Society have a new edition of it in their list, I have not thought it worth while to complete the Folio late copy by printing all the long late Egerton MS. here.—F.

[GOD that dyde a-pon A tre²]
 [And boughte vs *with* hys blode so]e ffree,
 [To hys blys tham] bringe
 4 [That lystenythe vnto my] talkinge!
 [Oftyn tymys we] talke of diuercs traunells,³
 [Of saute, Sege, and of grete ba]ttells⁴

¹ And flesche, save horseflesche, hadde they none:
 They ete also bothe dogges and cattes,
 And also bothe myse and rattes,
 And also an hors quarter lene other fat,
 And a hundrede schyllynges hyt was worth at;
 And also a hors hede at halfe a pownde,
 And a dogge for ten schylynge of mony sounde:

*For forty pens they solde a ratte,
 And for two nobels they solde a catte:
 And for six pens they solde a mowse,
 full few was lefte in any howse.*

Bodley MS. 124, in *Archæol.* xxi. 63.

² From Egerton MS. 1995, fol. 87.—F.

³ of traunayle.—Eg. MS.

⁴ batayle.—Eg. MS.

- [Bothe in Romans and in rym]e,
 8 [What hathe ben done be-fore thys tyme ;
 [But y wylle telle you nowe pre]sent—
 [Vnto my tale yf ye] take tent¹—
 [Howe the v. Harry oure leg]e,
 12 [With hys ryalte he sette a sege
 [By-fore Rone, that ryche Cytt]e,
 [And endyd hyt at hys o]wne to bee² ;
 [A more solempne sege was n]euer sett ;
 16 [Syn Ierusalem and Troy] were gett,³
 [So moche folke was neuyr] seene⁴
 [One kyng *with* soo many vndyr heuynne :
 [Lystenythe vnto me A lytylle space,
 20 [And I shalle telle you howe hyt was ;
 [And the better telle I may,]
 ff[or at that sege *with* the kyng I lay,]
 & [there to I toke a-vyse]
 24 [Lyke as my wyt wolde suffyce,
 [Whenne Pountlarge *with* sege was wounne
 [And ouyr sayne, then enter was be-gunne.]
 the duke of [Exceter, that hende,]
 28 to Rowne the king [yn sothe hym sende,]⁵
 & Herrotts *with* him, to *that* Citye
 to looke if itt wold yeeleden bee,⁶
 & alsoe ioy to looken the⁷ ground
 32 all⁸ about the Cittye round,
 & how they might best lay a seege ;
 but they wold not obey their leege.
 when the duke of great renowne
 36 was come before *that* royall towne,
 he displayd his banners great plen[tye,]⁹
 & herotts into the cittye sent hee,

¹ wylle tent.—Eg. MS.² owne volunte.—Eg. MS.³ was gotte.—Eg. MS.⁴ sene.—Eg. MS.⁵ To Rone yn sothe oure kyng hym sende.—Eg. MS.⁶ yf that they yoldyn wolde be.—Eg. MS.⁷ alle soo for to se that.—Eg. MS.⁸ That was.—Eg. MS.⁹ baners on A bent.—Eg. MS.

to warne them on paine of death
 40 ' *that* they our king shold not greun[e,]
 nor [be] *with-standing* of his might,
 but deliuer this citty soone in his sight.
 & soe hee told them *withouten* bad,
 44 he wold no ffurther till hee *that* hadd ;
 ffor ere hee went ffarr ffrom this place,
 hee wold itt winne by gods grace.'
 but *that* they ffrenchmen make no answer,
 48 but bade them on their wayes to ffare,
 & made assignment *with* their hand
that he shold there no longer stand,
 & shotten out ordinance *with* great en[vye,]
 52 & maden ware dispiteouslye.
 then came fforth *Knights* keene
 on horsbace *with* armour sheene,
 & there mustered the Duke againe.
 56 on both *partyes* many were slaine,
 & this was done *without* delay ;
 to pont large the duke tooke the way,
 & told the *Knight* of *that* cittye
 60 how itt stooode, & in what degree.
 to my talking &¹ you will take heede,
 I shall tell you of accursed deede,
 & how sinfully² the ffrenchmen did thore³
 64 or our king came them before,
 ffor all the suburbs of *that* ffaire towne,
 both kirkes & houses, droue them downe,
 & att port Hillary the hend,
 68 a *parish* church they all to-rend ;
 of St. Hillary was the same
that after the port bare the name ;
 and att the same port⁴ downe thé drew
 72 a church *that* was of S^t: ANDREW,

¹ for *an*, if.—F.

² MS. *sufully*; and it transposes lines
62 and 63.—F.

³ *Nota de malicia eorum*, says the
Egerton MS.—F.

⁴ At porte Causses.—Eg. MS.

- & alsoe an abbey of S^t GERUAIS,¹
 for there the duk[e o]f Clarence lodged was
 att the port d[e Pounte] downe thé beate
 76 [A] c[hyrche of oure la]dy [swe]te,
 [²And othyr of Synt Kateryn, that maydyn meke, [last line of
 which any
 part is
 visible on
 p. 523 of
 MS.]
 [And of Synt sauoure a nothyr eke ;
 [And of Seynt Mathewe they drewne downe one,
 80 [And lefte there-of stondyng neuyr a stone ;
 [At Martyrvyle a-doune they mynde
 [Of Synt Mychelle a Chyrche fynde,
 [And of Synt Povle a nothyr thoo,
 84 [And mynede³] down [a nothyr a lytylle fro.] [page 524
 of MS.]
 the hedges, garden[s and streys,
 [They drewe hem in-to the Cytte euery pece,]
 bushes & bryars both the[y brende,]
 88 & made them bare men [as⁴ my honde.]
 & yett there was a proud a[raye]
 round about the Cittye gay ;
 well was itt ordered ffor the [warre]
 92 with all the defence *that* might [darre ;]
 for the walls all were able,⁵
 & the diches deepe, defencab[le ;]⁶
 the diches *that* were the walls [a-boute,]
 96 all the lands sayd there about,⁷
 hitt was deepe, & therto.w[yde,]
 with a strong trench o[n euery syde,]⁸
 [A trenche hyt was *with* a depe dyssende,]
 100 *that* was made the diche to de[fende,]
that no man shold come them [nere]
 but in their danger hee [were ;]
 ffor who soe come the [trenche *with*-yn,]
 104 harmelesse they might [not oute wyne.]

¹ Iamys.—Eg. MS.² Supplied from Eg. MS.—F.³ Bodl. MS. ? onynde, Eg. MS.—F.⁴ made hyt as bare as.—Eg. MS.⁵ fulle varyable.—Eg. MS.⁶ depe and fensabyll.—Eg. MS.⁷ The londe syde whythe ovte.—Eg. MS.⁸ A trenche sewynge in euery syde.—Eg. MS.

- & all the ditches through¹
 pittfalls were then b²
 & euery pittfall a s[perre hyghthe,]
 108 for therin shold sta[nde noo man to fyghte,]
 & all was for to [make hem clere]
 that no gunnes³ [a-boute them were ;]
 & ffrom the p[yttefalle vnto the walle]
 112 that was high [and stowte with-alle,]
 itt was a[s thycke of caltrappys sette]⁴
 as m[eyshys be yn a nette.]
 within the [Cytte aftyr the walle] [l. 119 Eg. MS.]
 116 mortar⁵
 with carts
 as a
 that

[Gap: of 52 lines in the Egerton MS., of 50 in the Bodley MS.]

- 120 [6 Of prynehode and no]blé the flow[r]e⁷ [page 525 of
 Percy Folio ;
 l. 176 of Eg.
 MS.]
 [Thoughe alle pryneys of hon]our are sett,
 [Nexste the beste he myghte] be sett. [l. 178 Eg. MS.]

¹ And alle that dyche thorowe oute
 by-dene,
 Pytfallde hyt was evyr-more bytwene,
 And every pytfallde of a spere of heyth,
 For no man therin scholde stond to fyzt
 in fethe.—Bodley 124, *Archæol.* xxi. 51.

² The Diche was brode and depe
 And fewe myghte fro many man hyt
 kepe ;
 The bottom of the Diche with-yn
 Was pyttefallyd ij. fote euyr by-twyn.
 —Eg. MS.

³ MS. *mn* for *nn*.—F. noo man.—Eg.
 MS.

⁴ As thycke of caltrappys hit fulle
 was sette.—Eg. MS.

⁵ With-yn the Cytte aftyr the walle
 Welle countymuryde hyt was welle
 with-alle,
 With erthe soo thyke and so brode
 That a carte myghte go per vpon lode
 That poynt they made in there werre

That noo gynne shulde not hym
 derre. [l. 124].—Eg. MS.

Then follow 52 lines more in the Eg.
 MS.—F.

⁶ And at the ende then towarde the
 Weste,

The Dewke of Clarence toke there hys
 reste,

Fore at an abbey there he gan lende
 That was beten downe and sore schende,
 At the Porte Causes that gate byfore,
 And kepte inne the Frenschemen wyth
 grete power :

There wanne he warschippe and grete
 honowre,

Off prynehode he myzte be called a flowre,
 For when alle prynces are ymette,
 Next to the beste lete Clarence be sette.
 Bodley MS. 124, in *Archæol.* xxi. 53.

⁷ Of prynehode he may bere a floure ;
 Thoughe alle pryneys were I-mette.
 Lines 176 and 177 of Eg. MS.—F.

- [At the northe syde by-t]weene,
 124 [There was loggyd Excetyr þe ke]ne,
 [And at the Porte Denys] he lay,
 [Where freynysche men yssuy]n out ouery day.
 [He bet hem in at euery sch]amffull brunnt,¹ [l. 183 Eg.
 MS.]
 128 [And wanne worschyppe] as hee was woont
 [Of alle pryncys manhode to] report,
 [Set hym for on of] the best sort.
 [Bytwyne hym and Claren]ce then,
 132 [Erle Marchalle, a man-]full man,
 [Loggyd hym next the castell]e gate,
 [And kepythe hyt bothe erly] and late.
 [And forthe in the same] way,
 136 [The lorde Haryngton] here he lay.
 [Talbot, from deumfrount] when he come,
 [He loggyd hym next] that² groome.
 [The Erle of Vrmounde] then lay hee
 140 [Next Clarence *with* a grete meanye,
 [And Cornewale, that comely knyghte,
 [He lay with Clarence bothe day and] night,³
 [And many knyghtys in a froun]t
 144 [That nowe comenot] in⁴ [my mynde to counte.] [l. 202
 Eg. MS.]

 uze

[Gap: 56 lines in Bodley MS. 124, *Archæol.* xxi. 55-6.]

⁵. w en . w . . [p. 526 of Folio MS.
 148 & he gran[te]d them comp[assyon,⁶ l. 267 Eg. MS.]

¹ at euery brunte.—Eg. MS.

² ? MS. thy. that gome, Eg. MS.,
 and adds two lines.—F.

³ ? MS. might.—F.

⁴ ? MS. in t.—F.

⁵ But be-lyve comawndede owre Lege,
 For to go to Caudybeke and sette ther a
 sege.

And when he come the towne before,
 They bygan to trete wythout eny more;
 And as Rone dyde, so thay wolde done,

And grantede hyt in compocysyone,
 And selyde hyt uppe-on thys condissione,
 That in the water of Sayne wythouten
 lette

Owre schyppis to passe forth wyth here
 frette.

Bodley MS. 124, *Archæol.* xxi. 56.

⁶ That he that dede wolde doo
 He grauntyd hem in compassyon.
 —Eg. MS. l. 266, 267.

- soe that then without lett
 our shipps might passe with our [frette.]
 then passed our shipps forth in [fere,]
 152 & cast their Anchor Rowne fu[lle nere,]
 as thicke in soyne as they neu[er did stonde;]¹
 then were thé beseeged by watte[r and by londe.]
 & when *that* warwicke *that* end [hadde made,]
 156 then to the *king* againe hee ro[de,]
 betwixt St. Katherins & the [kyng]
 there he ordered his lodgin[g.²]
 well entred the Abbey w[as,]
 160 & soone yeelded, by gods gr[ace;]
 & after within a litle space³
 he lodged att the port M[artynvace,⁴] [l. 280 Eg. MS.]
 there as spitefull warr[e there was.]
 164 euer they came forth o[wte in þat place,]
 but then be dreueth [hem yn a-gayne]
 manfully with migh[te and mayne;]⁵
 & Salsbury was fain⁶ [to ryde,] [l. 283 Eg. MS.]
 168 & yett hee turned⁷ [and dyd a-byde,
 [By Huntynghdon there lende]
 till the seege wa[s at an ende,]
 & the Gloster, *that* [gracyus home,]⁸
 172 from the [sege of Chirboroughe when he [l. 288 Eg. MS.]
 come]

[Gap: of about 70 lines in the Egerton MS., of 55 in the Bodley.]

¹ in sayn as they myghte stonde.—Eg. MS.

² He loggyd hym and was byggynge.—Eg. MS.

³ whyle.—Eg. MS.

⁴ Martynvyle.—Eg. MS.

⁵ Lines 163–166 occur two pages back in the Egerton MS. For them here, Eg. has:

Moche worschyppe there-fore to hym was,

And soo hathe ben in euery place.—F.

⁶ Saulysbury that was synyde.—Eg. MS.

⁷ Yet he returnyde.—Eg. MS.

⁸ So in Eg. MS., but read *gome* as in Bodley, 124,

And then Glowsetre that worthy gome.—F.

- warryour aght¹ [p. 527 of MS.]
 Knight
 t noble Knight
 176 he was full right
 [Mon senoure P]ewnes, this² was hee, [l. 353 Eg. MS].
 [Captayne of the p]ort of St. Hillarye ;
 [The Bastard of Teyn]osa,³ a warryour wight,
 180 tive of much might,
 [And of alle the] men⁴ that were without
 [Of alle the Cytte ro]und about ;
 [And eevery on of the]se Captaines had
 184 [V. M¹ men and moo in l]ade ;
 [And they nomberyd] were within,⁵
 [Whenn oure sege] did begin,
 [To .iij. CCC. M¹ an]d ten,
 188 [Of wymmen, chyldryn,] and men ;
 [Of pepylle hyt was a gr]eat rowte,⁶
 [A kyng to lay a se]ge about.⁷
 [And there-to they were fulle] hardy indeede⁸
 192 [Bothe in foote and eke in] steede [l. 372 Eg. MS.]
 er^{ty} men⁹
 did know

¹ Mon senyour Antonye A werryour
 wyghte, [l. 347]
 He was leuetenaunt to that knyghte
 Herre Ehanfewe was captayne
 Of the porte de pount de sayne ; [350]
 Iohan Mawtrevers that man,
 Of the porte of castelle was captayne.
 —Eg. MS.

And Mowne-Syr Antony, a werryour
 wyzte,
 He was levetenawnte under that knygte.
 And Hery Camfewe, he was captayne
 Of the Porte de Pownte of Sayne.
 And Johan de Matreways, that nobylle
 man,
 Of the Porte of the Castelle he was
 captan.

Bodley MS. 124, in *Archæol.* xxi. 59.

² Pennewys thenne.—Eg. MS.

³ The Bastarde of Teyne in that
 whyle [l. 355]
 Was captayne of porte Martynvyle

And gaunt Iaket or Iakys of werryrs
 wyse

He was captayne and alle so the
 pryce.—Eg. MS.

⁴ skarmoschys.—Eg. MS.

⁵ And whenn they wolde rayse alle the
 comynalte

Many a thousande myghte they be ;
 Men nomberyd them *with-yn*.—Eg.

MS.

⁶ a proude store.—Eg. MS.

⁷ a sege be-fore.—Eg. MS.

⁸ MS. ded indeede.—F. hardy in dede.
 —Eg. MS.

⁹ And als prowde men as euyr I saye,
 And poyntys of warre many one dyd
 shewe.

Whenn they yssuyd owt, moste co-
 mynly

They come not owte in one party ;
 At ij. gatys, or iij. or alle, [l. 377]
 Sodynly they dyd owte falle.—Eg.

. to come out
 e port

MS. There are 33 pages more in the Egerton MS.

Men nombred of hem that were withinne,
 Ffurste when owre Sege gan to beginne,
 Unto four hundred thewsande and ten,
 Off wymmen, off chyldren, and also off
 men :

Off peple that was prowde store,
 A kyng to lay a Sege tofore.
 And therto they war fulle hardy in dede,
 Bothe on fote, and also on stede,
 And the prowdest men that ever y
 knewe,

And mony poyntes of werre they wolde
 shewe.

But when they wolde come owte comenly,
 They came nott owte alle on a party,
 Nother at two gates, nor at thre, but at
 alle

Sodaynly they wolde out falle :

Bodley MS. 124, in *Archæol.* xxi. p. 59-60.

There are above 18 pages more in
 vol. xxi., in all 946 lines; the rest, up to
 l. 1312, are (with the prior lines from
 l. 686) in *Archæol.* xxi. p. 371-384.—F.

[Such a Lover am I¹]

THIS song declares that the speaker is a lover of such a temper that he varies, to use a mathematical phrase, directly as his mistress; whereas lovers, for the most part, vary inversely as their idols. If she smiles on him, he is delighted; if she refuses him, he ejects her from his thoughts. He is no woman's slave. Of lovers, as of the Jews, it may be said that sufferance is the badge of all their tribe. This gentleman tears off and throws away his badge. Should Cupid and Venus trouble him,—

Mandaret laqueum mediumque ostenderet unguem.

Mars, Bacchus, Apollo, are far superior divinities, to his thinking.

We have seen no other copy of this song.

I shan't die
for a girl's
refusal.

SUCH a Lover am I :

'Tis too late to deny

That for a refusall I never can dye ;²

4 Yet my Temper is such,

And that's very much,

My Passion Re-Kindles at every Touch ;

But if once I doe find

If once my
mistress is
unkind,

8 My *Mistress* vnkind,

I forget her.

Why then her past favours are quite out of mind.

I don't cry
and bother
myself.

My Courage Il'e Keepe,³

'Tis Childish to weepe ;

12 I'le not be disordered, awake nor a-sleepe ;

¹ This song is written in a different and later hand. It has initial apostrophes, and some commas. Though it is with the fragments, it was never part of

the MS.—F.

² Line 3 is written as two in the MS.—F.

³ ? MS. Illeepe.—F.

- ffor if like a fond Swaine
 I should pine & complaine,
 She'l scornfully Trivmph, & laugh at my payne,
 16 Or if I shold crave
 In Revenge the Cold Grave :
 He that Dyes for a woman, can nere be that brave.
 Hang Cupid and Venus! nere mencion them
 more !
 20 Such pitifull Powers I scorne to adore !
 Since I by Kind Nature my Libertye have,
 'Twere base that such Bugbares should make me
 their slaves :
 I manfully acknowledge my selfe farr above
 24 That childish Idoetry, miscalled Love.
- If I did pine,
 she'd laugh
 at me.
 Only
 cowards
 crave death
 for a
 woman.
 [back.]
 Hang
 Cupid!
- If I'm free,
 why should
 I make
 myself
 Love's
 slave ?
 I'm above
 that
 nonsense.
- Bacchus
 before
 Venus!
- A wedded Condicion contributes noe ease ;
 28 Wife, Children, and Servants, disorder their
 peace.
 When heartye ffreinds fayl, my true Comforts of
 Life,
 I then may turne desperate, & thinke of a Wife.
- When my
 friends fail,
 then I'll turn
 desperate
 and marry.

Appendix.

I. LEOFFRICUS.

[*Bodl. MS.* 240, p. 359, col. 1, by *John of Teynemouth.*]

Item de euentibus illius temporis cap. 99.

¹Haraldus et tostius filij godwini dum apud Windesoram vinum regi propinassent . capillis et manibus mutuo confligebant . quorum infortunium venturum statim prophetauit rex edwardus . Haraldus comes uolens visere fratrem suum et nepotem qui apud ²Willielmum ducem normannie obsides erant tempestate actus delatus est pontunium . Quem consul terre tradidit duci Willielmo . Haraldus antequam euadere posset . iurauit duci quod filiam eius duceret . et Angliam ad opus eius seruaret . ³Mortuo Henrico .2. imperatore . successit Henricus 3^{us} qui regnauit annis 50 . Stephanus .9. abbas de monte cassino . sedit post victorem mensibus .8. Benedictus .10. sedit papa mensibus .9. qui uolenter intrusus postmodum cessit . ⁴Circa hec tempora godiua comitissa , couentriam a graui seruitute liberare affectans , leofricum comitem assiduis precibus sollicitauit ut sancte trinitatis dei quod genitricis intuitu uillam a predicta seruitute absolueret . Prohibuit comes ne de cetero rem sibi dampnosam inaniter postularet . Illa autem uirum indoesinenter de petitione premissa

exasperans . tale ransom extorsit ab eo "Ascende," inquit, "equum tuum nuda a uille inicio usque ad finem, populo congregato . et cum redieris postulata impetrabis ." Genere godiua deo dilecta . equum ascendens nuda crines capitis et tricras dissoluens . corpus totum preter crura inde uelauit . Itinere completo . A nemine uisa ad uirum gaudens reuersa est . Leofricus uero couentriam a seruitute liberauit . cartam suam inde factam sigilli munimine roborauit . et cito post obiit . et apud couentriam , in monasterio quod ipse construxerat , sepultus est . ⁵Ubi et brachium sancti Augustini doctoris habetur , argentea techa inclusum . quod egelnothus Archiepiscopus rediens a roma apud papiam urbem aliquando emit .100. talentis argenti . Hic leofricus reparauit et ditauit monasteria leonense iuxta Herefordiam . ⁶Wenelocense et in Legecestria sancte Werburge . sanctique iohannis . Wigornense quoque et euisham[ense] In Alamannia scotorum monasterium combustum est . quod quidem incendium . quidam monachus paternus nomine diu ante predixerat ⁷ . Hic propter propositum reclusionis exire nolens . se comburi passus est .

II. NUT-BROWN MAYD.

COMPARE with this the Carol on the Virgin Mary, No. VIII. in the Sloane MS. 2593, leaf 5, printed by Mr. Wright in his *Songs and Carols* for the Warton Club, 1861, p. 11.

¹ 1620. 1056. 14.

² infra cod. libro. c. 110.

³ 1621. 1057. 15.

⁴ Flores historia.

⁵ cum brachium sancti Augustini magni doctoris.

⁶ nota de Leomenstria iuxta Herefordiam.

⁷ 16. 1058. 1632.

Wommen be bob^e good *and* trewe,
Wytnesse of marye.

Of hondes *and* body *and* face arn clene,
Wommen mown non beter bene,
In euery place it is sene,
Wytnesse of marie.

It is knowyn, *and* euere was,
þer a womman is in plas,
Womman is þ^e welle of gras,
Wytnesse [of Marie.]

þey louyn men with herte trewe,
Ho wyl not chaungyn for non newe ;
Wommen ben of wordys ffewe,
Wytnesse [of Marie.]

Wommen ben trewe with-out lesyng,
Wommen be trewe in alle þing,
And out of care þey mown vs bryng,
Wytnesse of marie.

There are several satirical songs against women in Mr. T. Wright's *Carols and Songs* for the Percy Society, 1847, in his *Ballads temp. Philip and Mary* from a MS. at Oxford, for the Roxburghe Club, and in vol. iv. of Mr. Hazlitt's *Remains of the Early Popular Poetry of England*. Mr. Hazlitt notices songs in praise of women. There is one in *Reliq. Antiq.* vol. i. p. 275 ; and as Roberd of Brunne says,

. . no þyng ys to man so dere
As wommanys loue yn gode manere.
A gode womman ys mannys blys
þere here loue ryȝt and stedfast ys :
þere ys no solas vndyr heuene
Of alle þat a man may neuene,
þat shuld a man so moche glew
As a gode womman þat loueth trew.
Ne derer ys none yn Goddys hurde
þan a chaste womman wyþ louely wrde.

Handlyng Synne, p. 62, l. 1904-13.

INDEX.

	PAGE		PAGE
A Cailere	366	Lulla, Lulla!	387
A Louer off Late	389	Marke More Foole	127
A Prop[h]ecye	371	Maudline	374
Adam Bell, Clime of the Clough, } and William of Cloudeslee }	76	Murthering of Edward the Fourth his Sonnes	162
Æneas and Dido	260	Now the Springe is come	230
Alfonso and Ganselo	507	O Noble Festus	269
Amintas	450	Patient Grissell	421
Are Women faire	364	Proude where the Spencers	478
As yee came from the Holye Land	465	Queene Dido	499
Balowe	515	Scroope and Browne	431
Bosworth Feilde	233	Seege off Roune	532
Carle off Carlile	275	Sir Andrew Bartton	399
Christopher White	494	Sir Cawline	1
Come, my dainty Doxeys	313	Sir Degree	16
Come, pretty Wanton	385	Sir John Butler	205
Coridon	530	Songs of Sheparden	303
Cressus	301	Such a Louer am I	542
Darke some Cell	123	The Drowning of Henery the I his Children	156
Death and Liffe	49	The Fall of Princes	168
Edward the Third	457	The Lauinian Shore	308
Gentle Heardsman	524	The Nutt-browne Maid	174
Great or Proude	391	The Pore Man & the Kinge	195
Hee is a Foole	386	The Rose of Englande	187
Hero and Leander	295	The Spanish Ladies Love	393
I am	529	The Squier	263
In olde Times paste	119	Thomas of Potte	135
In the Dayes of Olde	441	To Oxfforde	315
Kinge Edgar	485	Will Stewart and John	215
Kinge Humber	435	William the Conquerour	151
Ladye Bessiye	319	Winging of Cales	453
Leoffricus (or Godiva)	473	Younge Cloudeslee	102

GLOSSARY.

Almost all the words are explained in the notes where they first occur. The meanings are therefore put shortly here. Generally, only one reference is given. The French words are from COTGRAVE, except where another authority is named.

ABO

abone, i.364/307, above, outside
abotts on you! ii.155/186
accompackement, i.430/249, a compact
acton, i.358/127; i.359/173, a wadded
 or quilted tunic worn under the hauberk.—*Planché*, i.108
aduancing, i.155/342, boasting
afterclap, ii.399/184; *afterclappe*, i.435/429
again, i.93/85, gain, get to
agoe, iii.26/215; 46/819, gone
agazed, iii.154/70, agast
agramed, ii.489/2036, angered
agrise, i.469/1515, frighten, terrify
a-know, i.450/901, acknowledge, confess
all in ffere, iii.281/103, together. Perhaps *all on fire*.—*P.*
alle, i.362/247, ale
allyance, ii.58/7, aliens
allyants, iii.241/146, aliens.—*P.* *Alliant*
 or *ally*, one that is in league, or of kindred with one.—*Blount*, 1656
alner, i.143, purse, money-bag
alyant, i.215/61, alien
ancetrye, iii.240/127, ancestry
ancyent, i.303/77, ensign, flag
ancyents, ii.480/1789, heroes of old
and, iii.63/171, an
 &, i.367/405; ii.44/1, an
and, i.96/159, if
 & . . &, i.369/463, if . . and
 &, i.450/899, that, who
 -*and*, imp. part., i.26/5
ane, i.101/305, one
anonwright, i.152/241, at once
apayd, ii.559/49, pleased
aplight, i.428/187; 472/1602, at once
aply, i.153/287, bend, yield
appay, ii.568/274, own estimation?
applied, i.191/263, bent to, performed

AXS

apud, ii.265, in
archboarde, iii.407/91, ship, or side of a ship
arkward, i.386/1029; 387/1055, ? awkward, ugly
armin, ii.476/1678, ermine
arming, i.517/18
array, ii.570/305, armour
arsoone, ii.434/516, saddle
arsowne, ii.429/363, Fr. *arçon*, saddle-bow
as, iii.286/252, thus, like
aslake, i.152/247, slacken, stop. A.-Sax.
aslacian, to slacken, loosen
assignment, iii.535/49, signs
assise, ii.439/651, measure, manner, way
assoyled, iii.101/674. *assoil*, to acquit, clear, or pardon: to absolve.—*Bullockar's Dict.*
a-steere, i.357/112, astir, on the *qui vive*
astyte, i.108/193, at once, quickly
astyte, or *tyte*, ii.430/379, quickly
att, i.391/1173, from
att device, i.158/435, elegantly, splendidly
attild, i.228/318, prepared, made ready
attilde, i.221/180; 228/318, made ready
attilde, i.385/992, dealt, struck
auant, i.150/192, boast. Fr. *avanter*
avant, iii.71/366, boast. "I avaunte or bostemyself," je me vante.—*Palsgrave*
avanted, iii.253/481, advanced, raised
avanting, i.160/506, boasting
avayle, iii.226/279, pull down, from Fr. *à val*.
avoyde, I go out of a place, I avoyde out of it. Je vuide.—*Palsgrave*
awise, i.233/410 ? miswritten for "a noise."
awondred, i.466/1412, astonished
axsy, i.143, ask, A.-Sax. *acsian*

BAC

bacheleere, iii.6/61, knight
bachelours, iii.59/78, knights
badgers, ii.205/31, corn-dealers
baile, i.161/534, bale, sorrow
baine, i.94/108, ready
bale, Prov.: when bale is att hyst,
 boote is at next, i. 171/133
ball, ii.229/43, bale; iii.57/21, sorrow,
 misery
ban, i.96/158, curse
band, i.81/26, bond, agreement
bandog, i.30/58
bandshipp, ii. 564/177, ? bondship, villen-
 age, or fellowship. Sc. *band*, bond,
 obligation.—*Jamieson*.
bane, iii.21/53, perhaps lane.—*P*.
banely, iii.66/247, kindly
bann, i.55/31, curse
barathron, iii.76/406, the Latin *bara-
 thrum*, an abyss, used to signify hell.
 —*Dyce*
barme, ii.438/629, bosom
barnes, iii.59/81, children, human crea-
 tures.—*P*.
barrison, ii.580/561, for *warrison*, gift,
 reward
barronrye, i.158/442, collection, or jury,
 of barons
barronrye, i.277/118, baronry
basenett, ii.435/545, iii.45/788, a light
 helmet, like a scull cap. Fr. *bassinet* . . .
 the scull, sleight helmet or headpiece,
 worne in olde time, by the French men
 of armes.—*Cotgrave*, 1611
bashed, i.225/252, abashed
battell, iii.439/47. Column, military
 formation
baylye, ii.367/717, district
baysance, i.159/476, obeisance, bow,
 salutation
beads, gold, for prayers. i.365/331
beanes, iii.413/208, beams.—*P*.
bearing (arrow), iii.98/601; 413/211,
 ? well-feathered for far-shooting, like
 a "good carrying cartridge."
bearne, iii.56/14; 73/407, child human
 creature, man, &c.
be deene, ii.224, Dutch, *bij dien*, forth-
 with
bedone, ii.305/8, done over, ornamented
beene, ii. 583/625, baine, ready
beeten, i.227/304, lighted
began, i.448/843, grow, swell
begin the dais, ii.379/1028, take the first
 place at it:

BID

Qwene Margaret *began the deyse*;
 Kyng Arduis, wyth-owtyn lees,
 Be hur was he sett.
Syr Tryamour, ed. Halliwell, Percy
 Soc. 1846, p. 55, l. 1636-8
 Two kyngys the deyse began,
 Syr Egyllamour and Crystyabelle
 than
Sir Eglamour, p. 173, l. 1259-60
begon, i.115/595, gone over, done over,
 dressed
begon, i.394/1279, covered, ornamented
 with
behappned, i.356/78, happened to
beheard, i.236/23,31. *heard*, i.309/229
behoues, iii.25/165, is of use to
beleue, ii.71/355, be leal, loyal, true
beliue, i.21/48, suddenly; 223/212 quickly
belyeth, i.458/1177, belies, tells lies,
 against
benbow, i.36/21, 54/20, bend bow, bow
 that will bend
benche, iii.329/209, ?
benefize, ii.573/367, benefice
bent, iii.59/63, bent, where rushes grow,
 the field. *bent*, ii.341/20, dwelling ?
beraye, iii.24/138, bewray
bere, i.383/924, noise. cp. *bray*, iii.62/144
beronen, i.213/31; iii.63/172, run over
 with, covered
beseeke, i. 163/596, Northern form of
beseech, i.162/554
besene, well bysene, *bien accoustré*.—
Palsgrave, p. 844, col. 1.
besett, i.445/745, charged, exhorted
besids, i.379/802, from off
bespake, i.175/11, spoke to
besprent, ii.184/5, besprinkled
bethought were, i.460/1226; i.463/1317,
 thought
bethought was, i.486/2056, had planned
betide, "Baillez luy belle, Goodly betide
 him; some bodie spit in his mouth,
 for now he hath it sure.—*Cotgrave*
betraine, i.459/1185, betrayed
bett, i.361/238, remedied, relieved
bett, ii.485/1928, beat, *perfect*
bett, iii.36/490, better, larger
bett, i.168/53, lighted, A.-Sax. *bétan*, to
 light a fire
bettell, ii.574/408, tell of, betray
biwept, ii.373/858, lamented, wept for
bickered, i.213/27, fought, Welsh *bicra*,
 to fight
bidon, i.356/79, stayed; 368/455; 440
 /580, remained

BIG

bigged, iii.72/383, built
bigglye, iii.72/390, mightily
biled, ii.306/34, drew near
billaments, ii.330/66, ornaments ?
bine, iii.67/254, ? for *pyne* (see *byne*); or
 trick, slaughter
birth, iii.66/231, bulk, burthen
birtled, ii.310/173, cut up
bisse, iii.428/119, white silk; *bissus*,
 qwhite silke. Gloss. in *Reliq. Ant.*
 i.7, col. 1. "Pure white sylke, *soye*
bissine."—*Palsgrave*. *bissines*, silken
 words.—*Cotgrave*
bitter, iii.28/255, A.-S. *bitel*, beetle
blacke, ii.403/54, ? blacking
blanchmere, iii.41/652, ? a kind of fur
blanke, ii.164/12, a half-sous, half-penny
blanked, i.228/328, pierced point blank
blarked, iii.326/132; 337/412, blanked;
blank, pale and won, that is, out of
 countenance.—*Phillips*
blavdemere, ii.420/129, a kind of fur
bled, i.362/246, bled dry, bloodless
blee, ii.306/50, colour, hue
blee, iii.59/65, complexion; S. *bleoh*, color
blenched, iii.57/32, shrunk, started, leaned
 towards
blend, i.236/30; 134/18, mixed
blecue, i.162/555, believe
blinn, iii.67/254; *blinne*, i.175/7; 248
 /10, A.-S. *blinnan*, to cease
blood-irons, i.56/53,59, lancets
blushe, iii.72/388,
blushed on, ii.72/382, blushed at
blythe, iii.38/551, A.-S. *bliðe*, glad
board, ii.298/69, lodge and feed
bole, iii.57/32, (country word) the main
 Body, or Stock of a Tree.—*Phillips*
bombard, iii.253/491. Fr. *Bombarde*. A
 Bumbard, or murdering peece.—*Cot-*
grave
bondsman, ii.557, note. See Essay on
Bondman in vol. ii.
bone, i.381/881, village, Flemish *bonne*,
 Sw. *boning*, Du. *wooning*, Germ. *wohn-*
nen. From the same root as *waine*.—
Brockie. ? like *bane*, i.377/749, A.-S.
bana, *bona*, 1. a wound-maker, a killer,
 manslayer; 2. destruction.—*Bosworth*
bookes-man, i.237/39,43; cp. *kookes-*
man, l. 55
book-oth, i.232/395, book-oath
boolish, iii.58/58, perhaps tumid, swel-
 ling, rounded
boome, i.66/122, I suspect "lodly boome"

BRE

is an error of the copyist for "lodly
 loone."—*Brockie*. log?, dwarf
boote, i.47/6, compensation, A.-S. *bót*
bord, i.93/83, table
bord, ii.372/837, side
bore, i.213/27, boar, Richard II.'s badge
bore, i.452/967, ? *lore*, lost
borrowe, i.472/1612, surety
borrowed, ii.532/161, rescued
bote, i.474/1661, bit
bourd, i.379/811, jest
bourde, ii.557/10, merry tale
bouted, i.374/651, bolted, sprang
bowles, i.98/220, knobs
bowles, iii.287/293, bowls of wine
bowne, i.218/113, prepare, address; ii.
 298/57, dress; i.384/948, prepared;
 iii.65/216, ready, prepared
bowned, i.396/1325, made ready
bowne, i.219/145, goes, journeys
bowsing, ii.54/61, free-drinking
bradd, i.221/176, moved quickly, flew
bradd, iii.63/175, to draw, to pull
bradde, i.453/989, broadened, spread
bradden, i.228/312, flew
braggatt, ii.563/141, honey and ale fer-
 mented. See a recipe from the *Haven*
of Health in Nares
braid, ii.381/1090, dropt, fell; ii.65/
 188, leapt
brake, ii.119/1112, cut up
brake of fearne, i.27/11, in bracken or
 fern
brasyd, i.115/655, embraced
brauders, iii.59/63, embroideries
bray, i.97/192, move quickly
brayd, i.222/191, attack
brayd, iii.360/1002, ? flourished about
brayd, i.495/2349, instant, (on a) sud-
 den
brayde, att a, iii.90/366, suddenly
bread, ii.105/740, breadth
breade, ii.533/187, pulled
breaden, ii.329/35, braided ?
break, ii.358/486, cut up; see *brake*
bred, i.213/24, spread out
bredd, i.229/332, attack
breme, i.92/36; iii.57/34, fierce
breemlye, iii.71/364, fiercely, furiously
bre, *speares in*, ii.240/63 ? not for *rest*
 but up to the breast; so in Maleore's
 Mort Darthur
brether, ii.206/56, brethren
breuelye, iii.68/283, *bremely*.—*P.* ? brief-
 ly.—*F.*

BRE

brewice, ii.574/389, broth, pottage
bringer-up, i.332/332
broche, iii.60/94, an ornament, jewel, clasp.—P.
brodinge, iii.6/63, *brode*, to prick. G.D. —P. ? breadthe: cp. l. 76.—F.
broked, i.356/82, rejected, lost?
brooke, ii. 388/1279, enjoy, possess
brooke, iii. 13/167, broke, i.e. enjoy.—P.
brotherlinge, i.426/134, nincompoop:
britheling, worthless, a rascal. Cp. O. Eng. *brothel*.—H. Coleridge
bruhe, i.184/58, brooch
brushed, i.388/1075, spouted. Cp. the complaint *water-brush*, a vomiting of watery fluid
bryar, iii.26/188. Pronounced *brere*: see *Levins*, col. 209, l. 15
bryke, i.232/401, ravine, fissure, breach or break in the surface, Dan. *bræk*: or, unploughed land, Du. *braak*.—*Brockie*
buchett, iii.345/634, budget
buff, i.517/14, a leather coat
buffe, i.83/76, ? for buske, arm
builled, i. 27/11, beilded, sheltered: Old Norse *bæli*, place of shelter or refuge
burgen, iii.59/71, burgeon, the same as *bud*
burne, i.91/12, man
burnet, ii.569/284. Fr. *brunette*, fine blacke cloth, whence, *Aussi bien sont amourettes sous bureau que sous brunettes*: Prov. Loue playes his pranks as well in Cotes as Courts.—*Cotgrave*
busk, i.91/9; iii.47/843, to prepare, dress; a simple adoption of the deponent form of the Icelandic verb *bua*; *at buast* for *at buase* contracted from *at bua sig*, to make oneself ready, dress oneself.—*Wedgwood*
busked, iii.97/575. Scot. *buskit*, dress'd, decked
busted, ii.122/1202, hurtled. *buslery*, a tumult.—*Halliwell*
but if, iii.67/254, unless.—P.
butt, ii.232, note ^a
by, iii.3/5, of; iii.27/242, about, concerning
by, shold by, should go by, hold to, i. 157/405
bydeene, i.472/1614, at once, forthwith
bye, iii.56/16, abye, A.-S. *abiggan*.
bygan the dese, i.115/602, took the

CHA

highest place at the table. See *began byne*, ii.86/160, pyne, punishment
cainell bone, i.387/1041, the clavicle or neckbone. See *cannelle-boon* in *Babees Book Index*
caltrappys, iii.537/113, Fr. *chaussetrape*: f. A Caltrop or iron engine of warre, made with foure pricks or sharp points, whereof one, howsoever it is cast, euer stands vpward.—*Cotgrave*
can, i.455/1049, knowest; ii.429/353, know. "I can skylle of a craftre or science. *Je me congnois*. . Thou cannest skylle of cranes dyrte, thy father was a poulter."—*Palsgrave*, p. 475, col. 1
candle, i.248/4, ? caudle
cankred, i.48/33, ill-tempered
cantell, ii.430/388, corner, piece
capull, i.214/33; ii.562/130; 567/234, W. *keffyl*, a horse
carded, i.125/9, played at cards
carfull, iii.503/53, care-full
carle, ii.559/47, churl, peasant
carles, ii.576/452, churl's
Carlisle, i.117/183, ?
carpe, i.212/5, tell
carped, i.216/83, uttered; iii. 66/231, complained
carued, iii.71/347, pierced
cast, i.369/491, device, trick
causye, ii.428/320, causeway. Fr. *chaussée*, a woman that wears breeches, also, the causey, banke or damme of a pond or of a riuer
cease, iii.36/494, seize, give possession
cercott, ii.421/138, surcoat
certe, ii.428/335, certes
chaffe, iii.103/42, ? for *chuffe*, a term of reproach
chaffing, i.56/55, heating
chalengeth, iii.132/123, Fr. *challenger*, to claime, challenge
chalishing, i.389/1116, bother, fuss. "Sir Gray-Steeles desired that there should be 'noe *chalishing*' for his death, that is, no procession of priests at his funeral, no religious rites. *Chalice*, the communion cup. He did not want to be chaliced."—*Brockie*
champaind, i.158/458, ? ornamented in some way
chandlers, ii.70/311; *chandlours*, ii.567/248, candlesticks
chape, ii.582/606. "I *chape* a sworde, or dagger. I put a *chape* on the shethe.

CHA

'Je mets la boulerolle.' What shall I gyve the to *chape* my dagger."—*Palsgrave*
charke-bord, iii.409/114, ? same as *arche-bord*, l. 91
cheape, ii.539/369; *cheepe*, i.179/102, A.-Sax. *ceap*, a bargain
cheere, i.446/768, state, condition
cheeue, ii.563/152, thrive
chest of tree, ii.461/1263, chestnut tree?
chiualrye, i.494/2314, chiualrous, magnificent, fighting
choppes, ii.570/314, blows?
christall, iii.75/446, kyrtle. ? petticoat
christendome, i.462/962; ii.369/753, christening
Christentie, i.45/139, Christendom
chune, ii.537/314, chin
churle, iii.33, 402, a slave, a vassal.—*P.*
clemmed, i.225/258, starved: *clem* or *clam*, the latter is in Staffordshire the more common, the former considered the more correct. *Clam'd* is very hungry; *Starved*, very cold; the two are never confounded, and *starve* is never used in connection with hunger.—*E. Viles*
clergye, i.365/350; ii.488/2020, learning
clitt or *clutt*, i.15/18, clouted: see i.48/12
clippeth, i.153/272, A.-Sax. *clypian*, to call
close, i.225/249, clewes, valleys
clothes, ii.134/1568, tablecloths
clouted, iii.225/241, patched
clowes, i.232/391, clefts in the sides of hills
coate-armor, ii.192/50, tabard
cockebotte, iii.160/99, kockebotte for a shyppe, *cocquet*.—*Palsgrave*. *Nassellette*: f. A small skiffe, scull, or cocke-boat. *Nasselle*: f. A skiffe, wherrie, or cock-boat.—*Cotgrave*
cockward, i. 65/94, 106, cuckold
coice, iii.97/564. Qu. chose.—*P.*
cold, i.70/198; 457/1125, knew
cold, i.111/89; 385/980, did
colled, ii.493/2151, curled
colour, iii.60/89. Qu. collar
combrance, i.448/825, encumbrance, ill-doing, stratagem
comen, i.220/150, coming
comment, i.29/47, read conuent, convent, lot
comunye, i.66/125, communing, consultation

CUM

confounde, ii.386/1213, perish
contrition, ii.547/585, lamentation
cooasten, i.224/235, marched
coparsonarye, i.275/64, coparceny
coppe, i.28/20, head
cordiuant, i.185/91, of Cordovan leather
coste, ii.558/38, province?
couer, ii.543/467, recover
couett, ii.67/235, courtt?
countenance, grimace, "Wrinkled as ones face is by makynge of a *countenance*, m. et f. *froncé*.—*Palsgrave*, p. 330, col. 2
counter, vb. i.358/144, encounter, fight
counter, sb. i.382/895, attack
countred, iii.255/545, encountered
course, *corpes*, i.462/1295, 1297, corpse
course of warr, a, ii.292/49, tilt, joust
courtnolls, ii.151/80, courtiers
couthe, i.433/339, known
cowle-tree, ii.440/680, cowlstaff, a big pole. Fr. *tiné*, a Colestaffe or Stang; a big staffe whereon a burthen is carried betweene two on their shoulders.—*Cotgrave*
cowthe, ii.557/14, knew
coye, i. 233/414, man
coyfe, ii.430/394, hood of mail
coyle, ii.52/2, fuss. Fr. *carymari*, *carymara*. Fained words expressing a great *coyle*, stirre, hurlyburly, or the confused muttering of a rude companie.—*Cotgrave*
coyse, ii.53/29, ? coyle, fuss, or Fr. *cause*, chat, and thence carouse
creame, iii.74/438, chrism, sacred oil
creepers, ii.151/68, lice
cricke, ii.323/12, louse
crinkle, ii.308/114
cristency, i.41/48, Christendom
croche, i.514/155, crouch
crowde, ii.422/149, a kind of fiddle
crownackles, ii.451/983, note; spearheads
crownall, ii. 451/993, coronel; see note ¹, p. 451
crownalls, ii.477/1712, spearheads
crope, i.360/188, crept
crowt, ii.308/114, curl up
cryance, iii.7/82; MS. cryamee, fear; Old Fr. *criente*, crainte
cth for *teh*, i.23/73; ii.139/76, macth, i. 228/316
cuchold, ii.310/150,161, cuckold
cumber, i.197/416, distress, torture

CUR

cursing, i.435/415, state of excommunication, heathenness
cut-tailed dog, i.20/17, note *
 Whistles *Cut-tayle* from his play,
 And along with them he goes.
 1627.—*Drayton's Shepherds Sirena*.
cutted, i.27/10; i.29/44, short-frocked,
 generally *curtal*. Fr. *Roussin*: A Cur-
 tall or strong German horse.—*Cot*.

dain, i.366/371, ? corner, or hole, spying-
 place
dained, iii.66/226, ordained, bade.—*Sk*.
 The context wants the meaning—was
 told to.—*F*.

dale, ii.76/482, share
dange, i.359/166, dashed, struck
danger, ii.566/207, endanger
danger, i.472/1611, power
danger, i.471/1598, difficulties, hesitation
daredst, iii.74/419
darr, ii.73/395, hurt
daymye, iii.68/281, delight
dead, i.100/258, death. Mr. Peacock
 says, a Lincolnshire woman told him
 that she "would rather be nibbled to
 dead with ducks, than live with Miss
 —; she is always a nattering."—*Mirk*,
 p. 73
deane, i.444/693, injury ?
deared, iii.69/312, destroyed, injured
dearfe, i.213/25; fierce, 'great, bold, O.N.
diar, fr. Sw. *djerf*, strong, bold.—*Morris*
dearne, i.464/1356, A.-S. *dearn*, secret
decke, ii.403/58, pack of cards
deede, iii.134/184, death
deene, ii.559/48, e'en, evening
deere, i.364/320; iii.238/79, A.-S. *dar*,
daru, destruction, injury
deere, i.481/1879, injure
degree, i.369/478; ii.103/674, the *pas*,
 place of honour
delay, ii.382/1107, an appearance: Fr.
delay, in Law, a day given for appear-
 ance, or for the bringing in or amend-
 ing of a plea.—*Cotgrave*
delfe, i.445/732, delven, buried
delicates, ii.285/145, delicacies
deliuerlye, i.358/135, nimbly
demeaning, ii.442/727, walk or ride; Fr.
demener, to stirre much, mooue to and
 fro, remoue often
derfe, i.228/329, fierce; i.213/32, hard;
 iii.70/325, cruel
desease, ii.561/106, harm

DRA

device, at, i.159/485, elegantly; ii.240
 /125, neatly, correctly
deske, i.427/148, dais
desoures, ii.451/989, discours, tellers
desse, iii.40/629, dais, the upper part of
 the Hall, where the high table stood.
 —*P*.
difformyd, i.117/700, misshapen, put out
 of shape
dight, i.466/1434, make ready
dight, iii.44/736, deck'd, dressed
dight, i.355/54, conditioned
dight, ii.543/468, used up
dild, iii.107/122, yield it, requite
dilffull, iii.257/603, doleful
dill, iii.4/22, grief, A.-S. *déol*, deceit,
 trouble ?
ding, ii.361/537, batter
dinge, i.236/22, beat, knock
dint, ii.423/183, 192, charge, thrust
dint, iii.34/436, *dent*, impression, mark.
 —*P*. *Dint*, an impression or mark.—
Phillips (by Kersey); and so Shak-
 speare:
 His tenderer cheek receives her soft
 hand's print,
 As apt as new-fall'n snow takes any
dint.
Venus and Adonis, l. 53-4.—*E.V*.
discreeme, iii.495/7, ? discreue
discreue, iii.4/19, describe, discover
dish-meate, ii.576/463, sweets; 'peire
dischmetes ar dressid with hony not
 clarified.—Russell in *Babees Book*,
 150/514
dispence, i.286/392, dispensation
distance, ii.115/996, dispute, difference
distayned, i.357/89, worsted, vanquished
distere, ii.456/1107, destrier, war-horse
disworship, i.156/392
doe, i.449/877, put
doe away! ii.569/297, go along with you!
dole, i.428/181, sorrow, misfortune
donge, ii.361/531, battered
donge, ii.384/1172, dashed, charged
dop, iii.103/21; *dope*, i.e. do open.—*P*.
doubt, i.48/14; iii.74/439, fear
doubtfull, iii.259/649, fearful, dreadful
dought, ii.332/122, enjoyed
doughtilye, iii.75/447, valiantly, reso-
 lutely, undauntedly
downe, iii.25/183, perhaps *done*.—*P*.
doxie, Fr. *Gueuse*: f. A woman begger,
 a she rogue, a great lazie and louzie
 queane; a *Doxie* or Mort.—*Cotgrave*
drayned, i.221/174, dawned

DRE

dreadfullye, i. 470/1563, in great dread
dree, iii.73/397, endure, hold out, A.-S.
dreogan, Goth. *driugan*, to serve as a
 soldier, fight, to hold out in fighting.
driht, iii.57/38, great, noble, fine, A.-S.
driht
droughten, i.214/35, A.-S. *drihten*, the
 Lord, God
drouyers, ii.8/32, drivers of the deer
druryes, iii.60/87, lovelinesses, graces
drye, iii.67/263; *dry*, *drien*, o[*ld*] w[*ord*],
 suffer, Coles's Eng. Dict. 1677.—*V.*
dunge, iii.65/211, dang
dungen, i.213/32, beaten, Scotch *ding*,
 to beat, Isl. *daengia*.—*Jamieson*
dunish, iii.133/160. ? *dunny*, deaf, stupid
dunned, i.228/329, resounded

easing, iii.267/113. See note
easend, i.361/222,230, attention, doc-
 toring
easments, i.362/260, attentions, care
eft, iii.434/75, quick, ready
eke, for 'epe,' bold, i.226/282
elke, i.226/282, ilke, same
elkes, ii.577/468, wild swans, or? omelettes
emes, ii.431/434, uncle's, A.-S. *eain*, uncle
enfante, i.443/669, get with child by
enginy, ii.29/36, scheming
epe, i.223/220; 229/340; 231/371, bold
error, ii.423/196, running, haste; or
 anger?
 -es, 2nd pers. sing. 'slayes thou' i.20/21;
 see *gables*
ethe, i.396/1352, easy
euereche, i.486/2070, every
eues, ii.437/601, eaves, overarching trees
euyes, ii.75/450, ivies
examiter, iii.318/39, hexameter
eze[n], i.28/39, hose?

faikine, i.43/90
faine, iii.79/69, glad
faire, iii.75/450, fair thing
falling, iii.197/5. This transitive sense
 of the verb to fall is common in Staf-
 fordshire, where people always speak
 of *falling* a tree instead of *felling* it.
 —*V.*
fame, ii.80/12, evil report, disrepute
famed, ii. 100/570, defamed
fane, ii.383/1137, vane, weathercock
farden, iii.63/165, i. e. fared, passed,
 went, were.—*P.*

FFO

fare, ii.355/402, went
fare, i.472/1608, doing, business, object
farr, i.232/404, ? fare, go
farren, i.391/1165, fared
fate, *fute*, i.30/51, whistle
faugh, i.228/315, fallow ground. Scotch,
fauch, "Tenants' fauch gars lairds
 lauch."—*Brockie*
fay, i.94/92, faith, Fr. *foi*
fayrye, ii.472/1540, enchantment
feare, i. 158/454; 178/72, company
feared, i.378/756, frightened
felly, i.325/123, savagely
fend, i.21/32, ward off; ii.61/78, defend
fended, i.365/346, guarded, fought
fettle, i.221/163, in constant use in Staf-
 fordshire, 'to prepare or get ready.'—
E.V.
ferre, i.355/41, mate, lover
ferle, i.233/413, wonderful; or *ferse*,
 fierce
fet, i.149/166, fetch
fett, ii.328/19, fetch
fettled, i.221/183, set to work quickly
fettled, i.231/388, prepared
fettlen, i.227/304, get ready
few, i.213/17, ? for *fele*, many
ffaine, iii.31/340, glad
ffaley, ii.588/766, ? ferley, wonderful
ffare, ii.547/583, going-on, grief
ffarley, ii.229/36, wondrous
ffarrand, ii.572/353, 358, looking
ffaxe, iii.326/121, faxe, hair. A.-S.
fear
ffayre, iii.59/64, i. e. fair thing, fair crea-
 ture, see l. 450.—*P.*
ffald, iii.285/239, a truss of straw.—*P.*
ffareth, iii.68/282, frighten
ffate, ii.545/533, natty, handy
ffere, in, iii.44/763, together
ffeiht, iii.502/25, fet, fetched
ffeley, ii.451/994, savage?
ffelled, ii.435/548, feeled, felt
ffere, iii.77/20, companion
ffetteled, ii.230/60, made ready
fflar, iii.266/93. A.-S. *fear*, hair of
 the head
ffleeringe, iii.73/412, ? fleinge
fflome, ii.425/251, river
fflomes, ii.577/468, cheesecakes
fflourished, ii.485/1913, ornamented
ffome, iii.263/5, sea, qu.—*P.*
ffood, ii.385/1195, lady, dame
ffoode, i.456/1084, imp, child
ffootmanshipp, iii.531/25, running, speed
ffor, iii.291/420, through

FFO

- fforbott*, iii.113/313, see Vol. I. p. 18, note. "I fende to Goddes forbode it shulde be so: a Dieu ne playse qu'aynsi il aduiengne."—*Palsgrave*, p. 548, col. 1
- fforceth not*, iii.370/29, doesn't mind
- ffore*, iii.285/228, fared
- fforfare*, ii.459/1200, destroy
- fforlore*, iii.45/790, lost
- fforthinketh*, iii.96/548, repents. "I repente me, I forthynke me. *Je me repens*.—*Palsgrave*, p. 686, col. 2
- Forthink*, o[ld], to be grieved in mind.—*Coles's Eng. Dict.* 1677
- fforthought*, iii.333/304, repented of
- fforward*, agreement, ii.461/1271
- ffounded*, ii.544/493, tried
- ffraine*, iii.61/130, to ask or desire.—*Phillips*
- ffrankish*, ii.590/826, ? liberal, or French
- ffreake*, iii.62/157, freke, *homo*, a human creature.—*Lye*
- ffreane*, ii.534/224, ask
- ffreededge*, ii.564/176, condition ?; but *freelage*, an heritable property as distinguished from a farm.—*Jamieson*
- ffreelye*, ii.385/1195, A.-S. *freólic*, noble, lordly
- ffrom*, iii.265/76, ? frame: cp. *ffrane*, l. 153
- ffroterye*, ii.577/468, fritters
- ffrowte*, ii.588/771, hit, punch
- ffled*, i.441/594, defiled
- fflinge*, ii. 276/118, 124, defiling, dirtying
- fflaugh*, i.71/227, flew
- ffleame*, i.472/1624, A.-S. *flyman*, banish
- ffleamed*, i.435/426; ii.133/1526, banished
- fflorences*, i.393/1232; 396/1350; ii.89/238, florins
- fflyte*, ii.322/9; 324/41, 57, scold, quarrel
- ffooder*, i.172/160, German *fuder*, a wine-tun. l. 162, "God will send to us auger" = God will enable me to tap you, draw your life blood.—*Blackley*. *Ein fuder oder stückfass rheinischen weins, so sechs ohm oder zwey hundert und vierzig stübchen hält*, a tun of Rhenish wine; a great fat containing two butts or 240 gallons.—*Ludwig*
- ffooder*, i.216/94, A.-S. *fožer*, a mass, load
- fforce*, i.100/266, matter, consequence
- fforce*, i. 288/455; need, necessity
- ffordoe*, i.157/408, destroy
- fforefend*, i.100/277, forbid

GAR

- fforefendant*, i.150/191, forbend, forbid
- fforefore*, i.91/33, vanquish ?
- fforfowhte*, iii. , ? see notes, tired out with fighting
- Thus lasted longe that ilke Melle be-twene hym and Me full Sekerle, tyl that I was so *fforfowhte* that non lengere stonden I Mowhte. *Seynt Graal*, ii. 208, l. 765
- fforlaine*, i.464/1369, lain by, violated
- fforlaine*, ii.86/168, lain with, adulterated with
- fforlore*, i.150/194, entirely lost
- fformen*, i.213/30; i.220/167; 369/492, foemen
- fforshapen*, i.117/752, misshapen
- fforth of*, i.356/80, from
- fforth-wise*, i.444/714, forthwith
- fforward*, i.229/335, ? advance, attack; or, as in note *
- fforwardes*, i.114/536, agreements; A.-S. *foreward*, an agreement
- fforward*, ii.192/43, foreguard, advance-guard
- ffosters*, ii.116/1037; ii.117/1058, fosters
- ffowle*, i.223/231, bird
- ffox*, ii.54/43, make drunk
- ffraye, that*, i.365/341, at that seizure
- ffreake*, i.214/50, warrior
- ffrened*, ii.385/1201, frained, asked
- ffronse*, iii.366/last line, a sore in a hawk's mouth
- ffrythes*, i.357/105, fords, passages, Germ. *furth*, *furt*; Scan. *furd*; Swed. *färj*. —*Brockie*. cp. *ryding places*, i.383/937. *Vadum a forthe*, *Red. Ant.* i.9, col. 1.
- ffurbrished*, i.391/1192, sorely bruised
- ffurley*, ii.68/280, wonder
- ffurley*, i.384/974; ii.68/275, wondrous
- ffute*, i.30/51, whistle, cp. *Cleveland*, *whewt*, *whewtle*, to whistle; to pipe as a bird does.—*Atkinson*
- ffuting*, i.30/54, whistling
- ffyle*, i. 445/727, defile
- gables*, i.454/1027, gabblest, talkest stuff and nonsense
- gainest*, iii.65/208, *gain*, clever, handy, ready, dextrous.—*Johnson*
- gallyard*, ii.579/530, a lively dance
- garr*, i.91/23; ii.564/173, make, cause
- garrison*, i.484/1998, reinforcement ?
- garsowne*, ii.474/1607, boy, youth

GAT

gate, ii.206/58, ford
gate, iii.279/38, begat
gates, ii.229/46, ways, paths
gaule, ii.306/41, gules, red
gauelocke, i.489/2138, staff, an iron
 crowbar or mace. Gothic *gastack*,
 weapon, club.—*Brockie*
gaynest, iii.73/412, quickest
gengells, ii.288/213, gentle folk
gent, i.160/500, gentle, gracious
gentles, ii.573/382,385, gentlefolk's
gentrise, ii.559/65, gentlemanlike be-
 haviour
gentryes, i.159/461, gentrise, grace
ghesting, i.64/66,68, lodging, entertain-
 ment
giffe, i.169/85, if
gilt, i.450/907, sinned: A.-S. *gyltan*, to
 make or prove guilty
ginne, i.239/88, trick
girthers, i.385/995, girding leathers,
 straps
giue, i.519/81, if
gladedd, i.357/111, became glad, re-
 joiced
glased, ii.538/326, glanced, struck
glasht, ii.333/137, glanced, sprang
glaue, i. 57/75, sword
gleads, ii.568/264, kites
gled, i.65/113; iii.252/477, live coal
glented, iii.72/384, glanced
glenten, i.215/71, went quickly
glode, iii.57/28, glided
gloring, i.217/103, shining
gneu, iii.334/328, gnawed
godly, i.215/55, goodly, well
godsmen, ii.543/484, almsmen
gods-penny, i.176/20, 179/105, earnest-
 money
gogled, i.16/26, waggled; iii.62/147, jog-
 gled, wagged, shook
gold chaines, i.509/13, servants who
 wore gold chains
gone, ii.373/859, dead
good, i.251/82, truly
gorgere, ii.478/1726, throat-armour
graine, ii.323/29, crimson
graine, i.75/12, fork of a tree. See Mr.
 Peacock's note, i., see Notes
graines, ii.570/319, prongs
gramarye, ii.604/144, 164; 607,265,
 magic
grame, i.441/614, get angry
grame, ii.72/386, vexation, ii.448/893,
 torture

GRY

granado, ii.41/16, fire grenades into;
granado sb., l. 20
grange house, i.338/482
grantesse, ii.346/163, agreement, pledge?
grasse, iii.279/64, fat
graunt, i.114/531, agreement
greathes, i.215/55, makes ready
greau, ii.91/311; 440/661, grove
gree, i.380/833; ii.346/154; first place,
 prize
greece, iii.92/421. Fr. *graisse*, fat
greete, i.58/100, grit; i.357/109, gravel
green (applied to a man's face), i.356/69
grett, iii.343/579, greeted
griffon, ii.370/776; 371/800,805; see
gripe
grill, ii.487/1995, fierce
grinde, ii.336/25, polish
gripe, i.148/105, γρῦψ, *gryps*, a griffin.
 A gryphe hyghte *Griphe*s, and is ac-
 counted amonge volatiles, Deutero-
 nomi, xiiii. And there the Glose
 saythe, that the grype is foure
 fotedde, and lyke to the egle in heed
 and in wynges. And is lyke to the
 lyon in the other parte of the body,
 and dwelleth in those hylles that
 ben called Hyperborei, and ben
 mooste enemyes to horses and men,
 & greueth them mooste, and layeth
 in his neste a stone that hyght *Sma-*
ragdus agaynste venemous beastes of
 the mountayne.—*Trevisa's Barthol-*
omæus, bk. xii, ch. xix, leaf 171, col.
 2, ed. 1535. See Mr. Ruskin's con-
 trast of the ancient and modern
 sculptured griffin in his *Modern*
Painters, iii. 106
grise, ii.439/648, horrible
grislye, i.467/1468; 469/1505,1510,
 1513, A.-S. *grislic*, horrible, dreadful
grisse, i.391/1179, A.-S. *agrysan*, fear,
gryre, horror, terror
griste, ii.540/389, ? power, A.-S. *grist*,
 grinding
grith, i.230/266, protection
groomes, i.93/85, men; iii.26/204,
 60/84
growden, iii.256/578, ? fighting
grounding, i.57/75, ground, sharpened
gryme, iii.65/225. ? *foregrim*, i.e. very
 grim; A.-S. *grim*, fury, rage;
grymetan, to rage
grype, i.169/73; iii.63/173, griffin, see
gripe

GRY

gryse, ii.448/902, grey fur?
guests, i.232/402, Scotch, *guest*, *ghaist*,
 English, ghost.—*Brockie*
guilt, i.172/168,170, gilt
gurde, i.216/93; Sc. *gird*, to move with
 expedition and force.—*Jamieson*
gurding, i.228/323, letting fly, shooting
gynne, i.480/1854, engine; i.491/2223,
 wile, device
gysarmes, ii.457/1166, "guisarme, a
 lance with a hook at the side."—
Planché

habergion, i.358/128; i.364/309, dim. of
hauberk, the little throat-guard.—
Planché, i.110
hailow, i.150/173, A.-S. *halig*, holy
halch, i.110/65; iii.284/190, salute, O.N.
heilsa, say "hail" to. *hay/se*, or greete,
je salue. I halse one, I take hym
 aboute the necke, *Jacole*.—*Palsgrave*,
 p. 577
halched, i.217/98; i.301/27; i.306/146-7;
 372/581, saluted
haled, ii.13/180, drew
handfasted, i.394/1274, betrothed
hansell, ii.192/37, greeting, gift
happen, i.359/146, fall, strike
harbarrowes, ii.71/342, lodges
harbor, ii.560/78; 581/573, lodging,
 entertainment
harborrowe, ii.69/294,300, lodging
harke, ii.482/1851, hearken to
harllot, i.152/260, scamp, worthless fel-
 low
harlotts, i.445/726,737, loose fellows,
 scamps
harold, i.304/106, herald
harrowed, ii.349/241, broke open and
 despoiled
harrowes, ii.73/414, breaks open and
 despoils
hart, tooke his owne to him, i.163/606,
 took courage
harvenger, i.38/5, harbinger, courier,
 "one sent on to prepare harbourage
 or lodgment for his employer."—*Wedg-
 wood*
hattell, i.224/237, nobleman
have, ii.579/530, hay, a winding country
 dance, a reel. It was also a winding
 in-and-out figure in a round country
 dance.—*Chappell*
havere, i.149/150, Fr. *avoir*, possessions
hawtinge, i.92/56, halting?

HYN

he, i.477/1757, they
head, give one's horse his, i.358/124
head, iii.192/75, A.-S. *heafdian*, to be-
 head
headed, iii.321/8, beheaded
heare, iii.63/158, hair
heate, ii.305/18, a promise
heathennest, i.63/56; *heathinness*, ii.184
 /125; *heathynesse*, i.498/3, heathen-
 dom
hecke, iii.285/232, the lower half of a
 stable door
hee, i.92/56; 147/102, high
heede, iii.24/134, perhaps keep.—*P.*
heese, iii.139/63, he will be, or must be
heire, i.97/179, higher
hend, ii.345/120, bid
hend, i.152/244, gentle
hendlye, i.427/147, gently
hent, i.100/263, seized; i.28/29,35, caught,
 took
herrott, i.230/353, herald
hett, iii.355/877, promise; i.443/666,
 671, promised
highinge, ii.110/876, haste
hight, i.439/558, was named
hind, i.159/463; i.162/577, hend, gentle
his, i.387/1042, i.390/1153, ii.375/921, is
hoe, ii.489/2058, hold, stop
hoglin, ii.360/529, dear little hog
hold, iii.25/161, to its . . . hold, i.e. held.
 —*P.*
hollen, i.109/55, A.-S. *holen*, holly
holte, iii.58/55, a wood, a rough place.
Holt (Sax.) a small Wood, or Grove;
 whence the Street call'd *Holborn* in
London had its Name.—*Phillips* (by
Kersey). Fr. *Touche de bois*. A hault;
 a little thicke groue or tuft of high
 trees, especially such a one as is neere
 a house, and serues to beautifie it, or
 as a marke for it.—*Cotgrave*
home, iii.28/258, on whom
homly, i.67/153, home, close, tight
hony, i.151/203, love, sweetheart
hore, ii.473/1585, mud, dirt
hose, i.67/153, cuddle
houed, ii.383/1151, iii.31/358, halted
houzle, sb. i.57/88; *houzle*, vb. i.172/
 178, to administer the Sacrament:
 A.-S. *huselian*
hurt, i.67/153, heart
hyde, i.362/263, a lady's skin
hynd, iii.61/107; *hynde*, iii.70/340, hend,
 gentle
hyndes, iii.68/279, servants

IAC

iacke, iii. 415/255, leather tunic over the armour
ierffaucon, ii. 451/977, gerfalcon
iest, ii. 549/632, story
ietted, i. 42/71, marched showily
ietters, ii. 568/275, strutters
if, iii. 203/174, even if
ilke, i. 56/52, same (time); i. 73/278 time
Imupetelazze, iii. 300/118, qu. MS.—*F.* *himpettelaze*, corruptly written for *immortalize*.—*P.*
incontinent, i. 286/384, forthwith
inde, ii. 455/1105, Fr. *indé*, m. *Indico*; light Blue, Blunket, Azure
inestimable, i. 288/461, not to be estimated or valued
ingling, iii. 314/15, perhaps jingling
inholder, i. 283/78, innkeeper
inne, ii. 563/136, house
insame, ii. 434/501, together: A.-S. *sám*, together
intertalked, ii. 35/2
iollye, ii. 295/130, pleasure
ioyinge, i. 230/352, joining
irke, i. 177/54, angry, A.-S. *yr*
irke, i. 361/232, dread
is, ii. 423/188, are
is, i. 155/341, his
is (for the possessive 's) i. 161/548
ishueles, i. 290/513, issueless
ishulese, i. 274/31; i. 290/496, issueless
Isl, iii. 45/780, I'll, I shall
ist, ii. 218/2; 219/30; 223/145, I'll
it and *itt*, as genitives, for *its*, ii. 248/34 ii. 251/131
Judaslye, ii. 258/96, Judasly, traitorously
iunpe, iii. 369/13, iust. . . . due, right, even, *jumpe*, levell, straight.—*Cotgrave*. See *Othello*, A. ii. s. 2.
iuster, ii. 292/62, joustler
I-wis, i. 19/10; 333/343, &c.: every *I* is hyphened to its *wis* wherever this word is printed, under the belief that it stands for the A.-S. adverb *gewis* certainly; but in the passage where it is used with *as*, "as I wis," ii. 583/627, the words are of course separate, a pronoun and verb
i-wis, i. 146/59, A.-S. *gewis*, certainly. But see "as I wis" ii. 583/627
iwitt, i. 453/981, A.-S. *gewitan*, understand
iacke, iii. 415/255, leather tunic over the armour

KYT

jack, i. 311/296, a sleeveless tunic
jig, ii. 334
jolly, ii. 422/155, merry
journey, iii. 239/88, a day's work
jousts and tournaments, i. 85/9, note 1
jury, i. 196/397

kayred, ii. 62/117, passed over
keere, iii. 74/436, turn
keered, i. 229/333, turned; A.-S. *cerran*
kell, ii. 67/255; 502/12; 503/44, a net for a lady's hair, for Breddbeddle's wife
kempe, ii. 606/219, *kemperye man*, ii. 605/215, magician?
kempes, ii. 527/5, warriors
kempys, i. 90/6, A.-S. *kempa*, *cempa*, a soldier, warrior
ken, iii. 62/131, to inform. See *Witt*, l. 120
kend, ii. 457/1152, taught, showed
kere, i. 229/347, return
kered, i. 222/192; iii. 61/118, turned
ketherinckes, i. 219/131, 135; 230/351, Cateranes, Katheranes, Highland robbers; Gael. and Ir. *caetharnach*, a soldier.—*Jamieson*. Highland or Irish soldiers. Gaelic, *cath-sheara*, fighting-men, warriors, Scotch caterans, kerne.—*Brockie*
kin, ii. 233/143, relation
kindle care, ii. 539/360
kirtle, iii. 180/100. Kyrtille is not upper petticoat, but our modern gown, a waist and petticoat. A kirtle and mantle completed a woman's dress.—*Crit. Rev.* Jan. 1795, p. 49
kissed, i. 449/857, the whore's euphuism for having connection with her, current in London as well as in the North.—*Atkinson*.
kithe, ii. 233/143, acquaintance
kithe, iii. 74/436, A.-S. *cyð*, a region; *cyððe*, a home, native country
kithen, iii. 73/392
knaue, i. 438/511, male
knaue, iii. 23/97, a boy, a male child; ii. 547/573, page, lad
knouledge, i. 163/585, acknowledge, confess
kut, iii. 130/77
kyreth, iii. 66/230, A.-S. *cyrran*, to turn
kythe, iii. 58/47, region, A.-S. *cyð*

LAB

labordd, ii.69/301, worked, travailed
labored, ii.85/134, toiled through, performed
labored, i.307/185, sailed
lach, iii.69/303; *lachelh*, iii.69/298, A.-S.
læccan, *gelæccan*, to take, catch, seize
laine, iii.190/26, conceal
laine, ii.75/469, concealment
laine, i.452/970, lay?
lake, i.300/7, fight
lake, iii.69/302, play, sport. To *lake*,
to play.—*Ray's North Country Words*,
1674
lake, i.363/281, fine linen. *Laecken* is
said to be Flemish for a kind of fine
linen used for shirts, bleached very
white, perhaps milk-white. The Ger-
man *lei-laken*, Dan. *leie-lagen* (*leie* =
bed), Swedish *bädd-lakan* = bed-
sheet. Dutch and German *laken*,
cloth in general.—*Broekie*
lambes woole, ii. 152/105, a drink of ale
and roast apples
land, ii.226/214, lord, like *state*, noble
lanke, i.226/269, ? lean, thin, poor (is
their praise)
largness, iii.293/478, largesse
lase, i.451/934, lies
laten; Cornish dial. *lateen*, tin, iron
tinned over:
“Well then, down a great shaft goes
the man in *lateen*,”
the ghost of Hamlet's father in ar-
mour.—*Spec. of Cornish Dialect*, p. 18
lathe, ii.593/896, barn; not A.-S. *Læð*,
Lathe, district or division peculiar to
Kent
lauding, ii.593/895, praise
laueracke, i.383/922, lark
lauge, ii.532/155, laugh
launche, ii.427/311, lance, thrust; ii.430/
386, rush
launderer, ii.450/965, washerwoman;
Fr. *lavandiere*, a laundresse or wash-
ing woman
laus, ii.37/5,6, ?
lawnde, iii.92/419, a clear space in a
forest.—*F. Lawne*, a plain, untilled
ground.—*Bullokar's Dict.* 1656. Not
far from here—just on the border of
Shropshire in fact, is a considerable
tract of waste land. It is very rugged
and uneven, with pits or pools here
and there, some containing water.
It is studded with gorse bushes and
other prickly shrubs: a more *unlevel*

LEE

place you could scarcely find, yet this
tract is called Oaken *Lawn*. Oaken
is the name of a village not far off. The
old dictionaries define *laund* “a piece
of ground that never was tilled,” some
add (in a forest). I was much sur-
prised when I first saw the place and
heard its name—nothing more un-
lawnlike in appearance could be con-
ceived.—*Viles*
lay, iii.9/115, law
layeth, iii.66/228, loathsome, deadly
layine, ii.436/575, concealment, reserva-
tion
layke, i.231/380, A.-S. *lác*, play, sport
layne, i.493/2282, concealment
lazar, *lazer*, i.167/11,13, leper
layned, ii.277/139, leaned
lead, i.197/412; *leade*, i.99/239,255,
cauldron, copper; Gaelic *luchd*, a
pot, kettle.—*Morris*
lead, ii.375/921; *leade*, i.359/162; 388/
1069, leaved, left
lead, ii.528/47, carry as a load
lead, ii.585/671, swear
leadand, i.393/1253; i.397/1362,1372,
leading
leaetenant, i.319/27, lieutenant
leake, iii.67/249, A.-S. *lác*, play, sport
leame, ii.546/546; *leames*, i.228/309,
A.-S. *leoma*, ray of light, beam, flame
leane, iii.214/74, Old Norse *leina*, to
conceal. *Leane* is a Cheshire pro-
nunciation for *layne*, conceal.—*Dr.*
Robson
learing, i.182/5, A.-S. *lér*, *lár*, lore,
learning; *læran*, to teach
lease, ii.504/69, ? leash, thong, cord.
Bowe, arrowes, sworde, bukler, horne,
leishe, gloues, stringe, and thy bracer.
(‘Gere’ that ‘a Gentylmans Servant’ is
not to forget. *Fitzherbert's Husbandry*,
1767, p. 87)
leasinge, i.439/547, iii.96/528, lying,
lies
leath, ii.297/10, soft, supple
lee, i.92/47, ? lea, meadow
leeches, i.361/224, doctors
leeching, iii.5/38, from the French *allegier*,
to assuage, mitigate, allay, solace
leed, i.318/10; 319/26; iii.69/315;
leede, i.215/58, A.-S. *leod*, a man
leefe, iii.95/514; Fr. *Cher*: m. Deare, leefe,
well-beloved
lecte, i.149/140, let go, lose
leewe, i.370/514, dear

LEE

leeve, i.56/58, believe
leggs, ii.154/158, curtseys, bows
lemman, i.152/235; ii.299/88, love, sweetheart; i.444/713, mistress, concubine
lene, i.305/120, 134, conceal; Old Norse *leyna*, to hide
lenge, i.361/221, linger, delay
lenging, i.369/463, ? delaying, wanting, refused
lent, ii.388/1268, ? landed, or remained
lent, iii.64/188; 239/97, short for *lenged*; thus *were lent* = abode, dwelt; *lend*, to dwell, remain, tarry.—*Halliwell*
lerd, ii.424/211, learnt; A.-S. *læran*, to teach, instruct
lere, iii.63/170, countenance, complexion
lesse, i.439/558, lies
lett, ii.377/984; iii.245/256, hinder. I *let*, I forbyd, or stoppe one to do a thinge. *Je cohibe*.—*Palsgrave*
lett, i.359/151, leave; i.365/334, left
letted, i.158/446, hindered
leuer, i.94/95, liefer, rather
lidder, iii.67/249, A.-S. *lyðre*, *lyðer*, bad, wicked
liggand, i.365/334, lying
light, i.171/150, alighted
lightfoote, ii.151/85; 152/89; 156/208, venison
lighted, ii.283/95, alighted, dismounted
light att a lott, i.219/139, determined by lot
light woman, i.443/660; 444/722, prostitute
lightt, ii.60/54, for *lythe*, joint
lin, i.55/40, cease, A.-S. *linnan*. If Wantonis knew this, she will neuer *lin* scorning.—*Wit and Wisdome*, p. 30, l. 30
lin nor light, i.373 597, limb and lith (joint, and then body?) *lin nor light* = lung nor light. *Lungs an' lights* are a common term in Scotland for what butchers call the pluck, the other intestines being comprehended under *gut and ga'*. But the true reading here appears to have been *limb nor lith*.—*Brockie*
lind, ii.455/1099, lime-trees; Fr. *Til*: m. The Line, Linden or Teylet tree.—*Cotgrave*
line, i.362/251, linen, petticoat
line, ii.580/555, linen

LOS

list, i.38/1, A.-S. *hlýstan*; lithe, Icel. *hlýða*, to listen
list, iii.57/37, ? for lift, left, left alone
list, i.149/164, desired; A.-S. *lystan*, to desire, covet, list
lite, i.212/9, few
lith, i.479, *ym and lith*, a common expression in Scotland, in speaking of full-length statues or portraits.—“Of gude free-stane, in limb an' lith.” It is literally limb and joint = bone and sinew. From *lith* come the English words *lithe*, *lither*, &c. The root signifies smooth, supple.—*Brockie*
lithe, ii.373/872, A.-S. *liþe*, mild, gentle
lithe, iii.77/17, attend, hearken, listen
lither, i.249/33, 250/47, wicked
liuer, i.17/46, and note¹, nimble. Quykke or *delyver* of ones lymmes, *agil*, *deliure*.—*Palsgrave*. I foote a daunce or morisque, I shewe myselfe to be *delyver* of my lymmes in daunsyng.—*Ibid.* p. 553, col. 2
liuerance, ii.219/31, pay
liuernes, ii.532/170, nimbleness
liverr, i.432/306, wages, pay, Fr. *livrée*
liuerye, ii.545/536, allowance of food
liueryes, ii.580/552, allowances of meat and drink for the night
liues, iii.9/115, leeves, i.e. believes
liuings, i.370/508, properties
liuor, ii.219/36; 220/53, deliver
lode, on, ii.11/123, heavily
lodly, i.66/122; *lodlye*, iii.63/162; 283/182, loathly
lodlyest, i.154/324, most loathly or ugly
lome, i.168/47, man, object
longe of, iii.325/116, cp. *Cotgrave's* “*A toy n'a pas tenu*. Thou wert no hindrance . . . it was not *long of* thee.”
longed, i.226/280, iii.73/394, belonged
longed, i.144. We talk in Cleveland thus: not only “a dog *belonging* his master,” but his master “*blonging*, ‘*longing* his dog.” “And with him the dog *belonging* him” would be every day Cleveland. I believe there is also a form *leng*, tarry, stay.—*A.*
longed, iii.58/60 62/136, abode, dwelt; A.-S. *lengian*.
loafe, i.229/336, A.-S. *lof*, praise
lope, i.17/43, 44, leapt
losse, i.226/269; iii.69/305; ii.85/132, 443/719, *los*, praise, fame; ii.416/23, reputation

LOS

losty, iii.505/99, ? lusty or lofty
lote, i.471/1567, lighted, alighted
lothelich, iii.69/303, loathsome
louge, ii.374/883; *lough*, ii.384/1163;
lought, i.190/215, laughed
lout, i.95/142, blow
loved with, for *loved by*, i.153/265
low, i.78/70, hill
lowde and still, ii.114/990
lowe, ii.235/186, hill
lowte, i.102/316, A.-S. *hlutan*, to bow;
 ii.75/456, stoop; *lowted*, ii.460/1243,
 iii.59/70. *A capo chino*, with head
 bending, that is, reverently stooping
 or *louting*.—*Florio*, p. 4
lowte, i.375/672, abuse, blackguard
lowtest, i.162/562, most humble
lucett, ii.402/38, ?
lumpryd, i.114/555, lolling
lurden, iii.85/242. *Lourdant*: m. A sot,
 dunce, dullard, grotnoll, jobernoll,
 blockhead; a lowt, lob, lusk, boore,
 clown, churle, clusterfist; a proud,
 ignorant, and unmannerly swaine.—
Cotgrave
lyed, i.151/217, lay
lyer, ii.448/903, shoulders, body; A.-S.
lira, the flesh, muscles
lynde, iii.90/376. *Lynde*, tre. *Tilia*.
prompt. parv.—*Tilia*, a tree bearing
 fruit as great as a bean, round, and
 in which are seeds like to anise seeds.
 Some call it linden or teil-tree.—
Gouldman's Dict. 1664
lyne, a, ii.228/6; of *Lyne*, ii.231/88, of
 the line or linden tree
lyre, ii.493/2151, 568/255, body
lyte, i.434/385, little
lythe, listen to, ii.527/3
lythe, i.480/1860, A.-S. *lið*, a limb,
 joint

magre, iii.367/9, Fr. *malgré*, illwill
maidenhead, ii.343/74, maiden state
mailes, i.386/1009, plates of mail
maisterye, ii.382/1104, being the best
 joustier
make, ii.274/74, 82, mate, match, love
makeles, i.214/46, matchless; A.-S. *maca*,
 a mate
maklesse, i.227/292, matchless
mammetts, ii.466/1383, images of idols
man, iii.144/213; 238/82, maun, i.e. must
margarett, ii.449/941, pearl
mangerye, iii.268/168, eating, feasting

MIS

manhood, i.450/883, a man; i.457/1121,
 reputation
manner, ii.585/678; 590/802, dwelling-
 place
margarett, ii. 449/941, pearl
marx men, i.233/415, men of the March
 or Border
masked, i.212/3, ? maked
mastery, i.99/226, superiority; or for
mystery, trade, tricks of trade, Fr.
mestier
masterye, ii.133/1538, power, sove-
 reignty
masteryes, ii.116/1026, conquering; ii.
 232/107, game ?
may, ii.387/1237, A.-S. *mæg*, son, kins-
 man
may, iii.254/524, me. In and near
 Newcastle, Staffordshire, *me* is to-day
 pronounced *may*.—*V.*
meane, i.102/332, make mention, tell
meanye, iii.60/98. Fr. *Mesnie*: f. A
meynie, familie, household, household
 company, or servants.—*Cotgrave*
meate, ii.545/528, food
meate-fellow, i.393/1256; ii.572/347,
 companion at table
meaten, ii.353/328; iii.99/633, measured
meete, iii.225/242, A.-S. "*mide* and
mæte," great and small
meetter, i.361/222, more need
mele, ii.86/180, mingling, adultery
mell, ii.59/37, meddle, speak
meny, i.222/194, following, host, army
merke, ii.561/103, dark
merke, i.93/69, A.-S. *mirc*, darkness
merlion, i.169/82; 171/128, merlin, the
 smallest kind of hawk
met-yard, i.58/104, measuring-rod
midd, iii.89/343, middle, middst
middlearth, i.92/40, earth, this world
Millaine, i.359/169, Milan steel and work
min, iii.282/140, mention
mind, i.227/292, remembrance
mine, i.214/34, mention
minge, i. 319/23, mention, say
minged, iii.7/94, mentionedst
minion, i.63/45, spruce
minned, iii.71/349. The alliteration and
 sense both show it should be *nemned*.
nem is miswritten *min*.—*Sk.*
mint, ii.130/1444, minded, aimed
mise, iii.340/493: Fr. *mise*, expense, dis-
 bursement
misken, ii.324/39, forget
misnurtured, ii.569/301, ill-bred

MIS

missaide, i.446/778, abused (her sister like mad)
miste, i.76/25, miss, omit
molatt, iii.279/57, mullet
monand, ii.277/156, moaning
mood, i.57/85, help
moods, ii.11/123, for *woode*, wild
moone, ii.381/1096, month
more, i.232/398, hill
mores, iii.57/40, moors. *Mores* or *maurs*, a word used in the northern parts of England for high and open places; in other parts, it is taken for low and boggy grounds.—*Phillips* (by Kersey)
morespikes, iii.253/493, a large pike.
mote, i.222/199, may
mould-warpe, i.303/79, mole. See that there be no *mouldye warpes* castyng in the medowes. 1539, *Fitzherbert's Surveyenge*, chap. xxv. p. 78, ed. 1767
mountenance, i.373/620, amount, quantity
musters, iii.68/277, devices, tricks
myn, i.231/295, say; i.328/231, mention
myny, i.386/1025, ? for *many* (and *many* for *mail*)

$\bar{n} = m$, ii.65/note ¹
naked, iii.432/14, unarmed
narr, ii.538/339, nearer
nay, i.427/142; 449/880, ne, not
neave, i.30/56, fist, O.N. *hnēfi*
nebb, iii.63/169. The whitish horn-like knob at the tip of the beak of a duck or goose is, in Staffordshire, called the neb.—*V.*
neere-hand, i.362/246, nearly, almost.
hand is the corruption of an old termination.—*Morris*
neere hand, i.359/158, close
new-fangle, ii.306/35
nicked, i.215/53, refused
nille, ii.402/37, needle
nithing, ii.593/880, niggardly
noble, iii.537/120, nobility
nomen, i.362/255, maimed, deprived of one finger
nomm, iii.32/399, taken, undertaken, or taken upon him
nones, iii.34/443, ffor the nones, made on purpose for this adventure.—*P.*
note, ii.484/1897, ? for *rote*, 'dulcimers or dowble harpe called a roote, *barbitos*.'—*Huloet*, 1552, in *Halliwell*

PAL

num, 156/363, dazed, stupified, slow; "a *num* hand" = a slow, fumbling workman: "noo, *num* heead, wherestee gannan?" = Now, stupid, &c. Cleveland dialect.—*A.*
nume, i.480/1853; iii.23/110, took; Sax. *niman*, to take
nursery, ii.450/966
nurterye, ii.96/466, nurture, training, good manners

obaid, i.149/163. Fr. *obeir*, to yeeld vnto submissiuely, to be subiect vnto.—*Cotgrave*.
obayd, i.162/577; i.163/603, bowed
of, iii.61/112, by; ii.422/169, for; i.148/134, ii.267/35, 369/485, on; i.362/243, off
on, i.387/1049, an, if
on live, iii.292/454, alive
opposed, i.437/496; 444/718; 448/848 and note ⁴, apposed, questioned
or, i.163/590; iii.22/72; iii.71/367, ere, before
ordnance, ii.41/21; iii.253/487. Fr. *Artillerie*, f., Artillerie, Ordnance.—*Cotgrave*
ore, ii.468/1445, mercy
oste, iii.58/57, host
ostler, i.382/910; i.389/1124, ? chamberlain, or horse-keeper
other, iii.6/65; iii.289/361, next.
overfrett, ii.68/272, studded
ouerhand, ii.427/293, upper-hand, victory
ought, iii.391/11, out, *interj.*
out-g-out, i.155/336, extremely
outraved, ii.10/81
outcept, ii.563/156, except
out-horne, iii.89/345, ? *nouthorne*, a neat's horn. *Nowt* cattle. *Wright's Gloss.*—*Sk.*
outrage, i.422/655, copulation, rape. Fr. *müiere*: Malapert, outrageous, euer doing one mischiefe or other.—*Cotgrave*
outrake, ii.222/129, excursion
outsyde, iii.143/172, on one side: the expression is still used in Northamptonshire.—*P.*
owne, (he is in *owne*), iii.373/41, ?

paine, ii.94/389, pains, endeavour
pale, i.93/81, pall, hangings. L. *pallium*

PAL

pallett, ii.582/594; 588/750, scull-cap
pane, ii.370/793, skin
pannell, ii.155/174, the treeless pad or pallet, without cantle, with which an ass is usually rode. "Pannell to ryde on, *batz*, *panneau*." Palsgrave. See Tusser, p. 11.—*Halliwell*
paramour, i.149/142, ii.60/47, in love, in affection, as a lover
parle, i.502/120, parley
part, iii.292/454, depart
partake, iii.506/132, to admit, to share: to extend participation
patten, i.513/136; *patent*, 514/153, grant by letters patent
pattering, ii.307/82, mumbling
pay, i.66/129; 96/165, pleasure; ii.476/1668, satisfaction
payment, ii.575/428, spiced
paynture, ii.476/1681, painting
pee, i.81/33, piece
peece, iii.42/700, a cup. I don't like to be too positive about anything; but, with respect to "a piece of wine," I still believe that "piece" in that connection means—if not a cask (its proper meaning)—at least a vessel of greater capacity than what we now understand by cup.
 "Une pièce de vin, a piece—a cask—of wine." Tarver's [excellent] *Dict. Phraseol.*, &c.
 "PIECE. s. for cask, or vessel of wine. The expression is borrowed from the French, in which language it is still used in that sense.
 'Home, Lance, and strike [i. e. tap] a fresh piece of wine.' B. and Fl. *Mons. Thom.* v. 8." Nares's Glossary.—Dyce
pees, iii.327/149, cups:
 The keruer anon withouten thouzt
 Vnkouers þe cup at he hase brouzt.
 Into þe couertoure wyn he poures owt.
 Or into a spare pece, withouten doute
Boke of Cortasye, in *Babees Book*, p. 325, l. 792
peere, iii.4/16, peer, equal, mate, match
peertly, i.218/126, quickly, readily;
peart, brisk, lively.—*Halliwell*. It's not *peertly*, but boldly, straight-forwardly. "A bonny, pawky, *peert*, lahtle chap," said a regular Yorkshireman to me one day about my eldest child, a baby boy of 10 or 12 months, who crowed, and chuckled, and laughed at the speaker's homely good-humoured-

POT

looking face, "a handsome, lively bold little fellow,"—not afraid of strangers, in other words.—*Atkinson*
penman, i.312/316, secretary, scribe
pentarchye, iii.125/12, pentateuch
perish, ii.460/1247, pierce
pertye, i.222/198, quickly
pesanye, ii.478/1726, gorget?
peytrelle, i. 351, horse's breastplate
picke, i.332/316, pitch
picklory, i.36/16, a colour
pight, i.147/102, pitched
pight, i.284/332, planted, fixed
pight, iii.35/458, struck. *Porre*, to put, to set, to lay, to place, to pight.—*Florio's Ital. Dict.* 1611
pikelforke, ii. 570/319, pitchfork. And if the grasse be very thicke, it wolde be shaken with handes, or with a shorte pykforke. *Fitzherbert's Husbandry*, p. 25, ed. 1767
pinder, i. 32/1. And if thy horse breake his tedure, and go at large in euery man's corne and grasse, then commeth the *pynder*, and taketh hym, and putteth hym in the pynfolde, and there shall he stande in prison, without any meate, vnto the tyme thou hast payde his raunsome to the *pynder*, and also make amendes to thy neyhbours for distroyenge of theyr corne. *Fitzherbert's Husbandry*, ed. 1767, p. 95
pine, ii.297/31; 298/51, difficulty, trouble
pinn, i.249/38; 250/64, boss or knob
pinn, ii.331/98; 297/35; 298/54; 299/93, ? high point, or fancy, humour
pith, i.359/149, strength, vigour
planere, iii.31/363, full
play, i.150/183, copulation
play, i.443/683; 444/703, fornicate
pleasure, ii.336/34, give pleasure to
plee, i.386/1025, fold
plewed, iii.223/195. Fr. *plier*, to plait, plie, bend, turne, wrie.—*Cotgrave*
pockye, ii.45/35, very
polaxis, ii.245, note, col. 2, ? tax-collectors: "And have wynked at the *pollyng* and extorcion of hys unmeasurable officers."—*Hall's Union*, 1548, in *Halliwell*.
pomell, i.147/103, knob, apple-like ornament
posstee, ii.490/2063, power
potewer, ii.305/21; ? bag, case, or—iii. 47/866—a pocket or pouch. It may

POU

be from *poke*, or *palk*, both forms of *pouch*. See note in *Piers Ploughman's Crede* on *Powzhe* in the glossary.—*Sk.*
pouthered, iii.126/50, salted
poynt of time, in, i.387/1060, near time's up, nearly done for
poyntment, ii.533/200, pledge
praisment, i.153/289, praise, bragging; i.162/561, boast
praty, i. 115/616, very, extremely
present, i.62/72, present himself to, see note.⁴
prest, i.485/2032, quickly
prestlye, iii.64/203, readily
price, i. 485/2021, ? prize or praise
prick, iii.97/582, ? the wooden pin in the centre of the target
prickes, ii.232/114, long-range targets? In shooting at butts, or broad arrow marks, is a mediocrity of exercise of the lower part of the body and legs by going a little distance a measurable pace. At rovers or *pricks*, it is at his pleasure that shooteth, how fast or softly he listeth to go: and yet is the praise of the shooter neither more nor less, for as far or nigh the mark is his arrow when he goeth softly, as when he runneth.—*The modernised 1834 edition of Sir Thomas Elyot's Book named the Governour*, 1564, A.D. p. 91
prime, ii.529/61; iii.87/286, four A.M. in summer, 8 in winter
priuitye, i.461/1252, secret
prize, ii.352/299, the call blown when a hart was killed
proched, i.228/325, progged, jobbed, pricked

quarrell, i.511/78, questions
quell, i.438/499; 453/994, A.-S. *cwelian*, to kill
quell, i.472/1601, killed
queme: I queme, I please or I satysfye. (Chaucer in his *Caunterbury tales*.) This worde is nowe out of use.—*Palsgrave*, 1530 (ed. 1852)
querry, ii.8/41, quarry
quest, i. 196/393, jury; iii.86/275, search; searchers collectively, also an impanel'd jury. See Johnson.—*P.*
quicke, i.443/659, alive
quilletts, ii.187/80, quibbles
quintfull, iii.62/155, quaint?

REU

quitt, iii.251/443, quite, requite.

race, i.231/385, rush; if it is not a misreading for *care*
radd, iii.288/327, furious, O. Fr. *roide*, fierce
radlye, i.221/179, A.-S. *hrædlice*, immediately, speedily
railinge, iii.72/376, gushing
Raines, i.364/305, fine linen or cloth made at Rennes in Brittany
raines, i.384/975, reins
raked, i.221/168, Sc. *raik*, to move expeditiously.—*Jamieson*
random, iii.34/445, precipitation
randome, i.478/1820, violence
range, i.381/856, wrang, wrung
ranger, i.338/475
rasen, i.398/1422, overthrew, destroyed
rason, i.364/212, arson, bow (of a saddle)
ratch, ii.454/1076, 1081, a sporting dog
raught, i.385/978, reached, handed
rave, iii.27/219, rathe
rawnke, iii.219/94. (See note.)
rawstye, ii.236/224. ? Sc. *rawlie*, moist, damp
rayed, ii.531/145, arrayed
rayled, i.93/8, decked, i.213/26, adorned, A.-S. *hrægel*, a garment.
To a chamber she led him vp alofte,
Ful wel beseine, there-in a bed ryjt softe,
Rychly abouten apparaild
Withe clothe of golde, all the floure irailed
Of the same, bothe in lengthe and brede.
The Story of Thebes, quoted in *Domestic Architecture*, v. iii, pt. 1, p. 111
rayling, iii. 57/24, decking, glorious
reacheles on, ii.234/151, careless of
reade, i.232/404, ordered
rebound, ii.108/812, blow, thrust
recreate, ii.564/161, home
reede, i.157/411, counsel, A.-S. *réd*
reeme, i.467/1466, A.-S. *ream*, *rem*, cream
religious, ii.542/438, monks
renegatoe, ii.45/25, renegade
renisht, ii.601/29, 30, got ready, harnessed, arrayed
repayre, ii.564/164, dwelling, abode
esse, i.446/780, rush, violence
retyre, i.518/53, retreat
reuarted, ii.548/605, recovered

REW

reward, iii.366/3 (from bottom), look
ribble, ii.422/151, a small fiddle played
 by a bow
riche, iii.75/455, ? rule, control. A.-S.
ricsian. Or, *riche* = *rithe*, *rihte*, set
 right.—*Sk.*
ridge, ii.359/493; 367/708, back
riggs, i.219/143, ? rinckes, men; Scotch
rinks, *rings*, ranks, Germ. *reih-en*.—
Brockie
right, i. 389/1103, righted
right-wise, iii.236/8, righteous, A.-S.
rihtwis
ring, i.227/303, man
rise, ii.464/1340; iii. 189/8, branch,
 bough, A.-S. *hris*, the top of a tree,
 a thin branch; iii.59/66, a twig—
 Germ. *reis*
riue, ii.460/1231, rife, frequent
riued, i.62/32, arrived, travelled
rocher, i.233/412, rock
rockett, ii.40/6, outer coat
roken, iii.336/399, revenged
romans, ii.366/684; 380/1066, romance
rooke, iii.290/370, a ruck, a heap
rookes, i.383/923, reeks, mists, vapours,
 Scotch, *rooks*, thick mists, (*Jamieson*),
 from Dutch, *rook*, Scotch, *rook*, *reek*,
 Swedish, *rök*, *riuk*, Danish, *rög*, *ryg*,
 A.-S., *rec*, *reoc*, Icelandic, *reik*, Germ.
rauch.—*Brockie*
rote, "An instrument of the harp kind,
 resembling in form an ancient lyre.
 See one in *Popular Music*, ii. 767."
Chappell
rothe, i.370/513, wroth
roughe, ii.560/70, rough, stormy
rought, ii.441/701, reached, hit
rought, ii.67/236, reached, took in, un-
 derstood
rought, i.384/966, wrought, ii.374/878;
 iii.66/239
round (bowstrings), iii.86/270
roundd, i.44/107, whispered, A.-S.
runian, to whisper
rouse, ii.64/160, boast
rowe, iii.142/139, row, roll
rowe, ii.548/606, be at peace
rowed, i.391/1181; 392/1217, redness,
 gore
rowne, ii.561/99, whisper
rownd, i.321/77, whispered
rowning, ii.578/494, 497, 501, whisper-
 ing
rowte, ii.583/619, blow, crack: cp. *rowte*
 as a verb:

SCA

Fresly smyte thy strokis by-dene,
 And hold wel thy lond that hyt may
 be sene;
 Thy rakys, thy rowndis, thy quarters
 abowte,
 Thy stoppis, thy foynys, lete hem fast
rowte.
*On Fencing with the Two-handed
 Sword*, *Rel. Ant.* i. 309
rowze, i.154/304; 155/358, boast
rud, i.361/217; 379/795, ruddy cheek
rudd, ii.306/51; iii.59/66, complexion,
 A.-S. *rudu*, ruddiness
rudlie, i.221/172, radlie, quickly
rudlye, i.382/899; iii.71/355, radlye,
 quickly; ii.63/147, readily
rule, i.155/334, measure, disposition
run, ii.557/14, round?
ryalte, iii.534/12, royal host, army
ryke, ii.568/263, kingdom

sacring, i.161/526, consecration of the
 elements at the mass
sadd, ii.532/168, firm, fixed
sadd att assay, iii.244/233, stedfast in
 trial
saddest, i.215/59, most stable, trust-
 worthy
sadlye, ii.380/1050, firmly; iii.70/322,
 seriously, composed, still.—*P.*
safteye, iii.128/32, reward promised
said, ii.92/336, essayed, tried
saine, iii.79/74, said: common in Staf-
 fordshire, but pronounced more as if
 written *sen*.—*V.*
sail: *were* sailed, for *had* sailed, i.95/120
salle, i.385/996, saddle
salt, ii.181/4, salt-cellar
sand, i.160/518, went
sandall, i.146/69, thin silk or linen
sarazen, i.425/73; 479/1829, Saxon
sarke, i.359/174, shirt
sarpendines, iii.253/489, Fr. *serpentine*,
 the artillerie, called a serpentine or
 basiliskoe
saute, iii.533/6, assault
sawes, i.109/225, sayings
say, ii.276/128, essay, try
say, iii.45/774, saw
sayke, iii.105/75, such
scaclech, i.221/170, ? destructive, harmful,
 but see i.224/243
scantlye, ii.197/184, scarcely
scarlotts, i.223/210, for 'harlots,' ras-
 cals

SCA

scarsnesse, i.307/178, scarcity, want
scattered, i.224/243; see 221/170
scorke, ii.12/143, struck
scrike, iii.159/81, shriek
scot, i.242/9, misprinted with a capital letter for "scot," *scat*, shot, rate, tax, tribute, money. "Scot and lot;" *Matt.* xxii. 19, "*soont mij den schatting-penning.*" "Show me the tribute penny." "Pay your shot, gentlemen!" *Brockie*
scott, i.112/477, witch?
scray, i.20/14, leafage?; *scray* is *scrub* = shrub, A.-S. *scrobb*, a shrub. There is a piece of land near here (Brigg, Lincolnshire) called Corringham *Scroggs*: in the 6th Henry VIII. it was spelt "Scrobsse." In John Leyden's ballad of L^d Soulis (*Scott's Border Minst.* vol. 4. p. 253) we have "And May shall choose, if my love she refuse,
 A *scrog* bush there beside."
schrobbe, a busshe, *arbrisseau*.—*Palsg.*
seale, ii.221/96, sail
sealed, ii.85/142, sailed
sealing, i.302/56, sailing
seasens, iii.318/40. Beyond all doubt an error for *scazons* (the well-known verses, called also *chol-iambics*).—*Dyce*
securly, i.114/520, certainly
seeding, ii.150/38, boiling
sea, i. 282/264, ? fee
seed, i.447/811, *semen*
seege, i.228/313; i.220/163, A.-S. *seeg*, a man
seege, i.216/84, besiege
seeth, i.87/56, sith, since
seile, ii.578/502, bliss
seized, iii. 30/330, put into possession
sekyr, i.114/528, sure
selcamar, i.351/41; *selcamoure*, i.384/971, an Indian stuff; ? *serica mori*, mulberry silk.—*Brockie*
selcoth, i.449/875; 451/931, strange; *selkoughth*, iii.60/96, *Sa*, seldom known, *Coles's Eng. Dict.* 1677
selcothes, iii.64/181, rarities
selfeer, i.177/49, ? seller, cf. l. 53. Prof. Child reads "landles feer." See Notes, vol. i.
sellcoth, i. 215/72, strange; A.-S. *selcuð* for *seld-cuð*, seldom known, rare, wonderful
sensyng, ii. 165, incense-burning

SHO

sent him, i.240/121, betook himself
sented, i.355/38, consented
sercote, iii.41/651, sur-coat
sermocination, ii.525, col. i.
serrett, iii.11/126, ? closed fist
serued, i.450/906, deserved
served, ii.435/547, ? for "greeved"
servelle, i.106/47, perhaps the Old French *cerveller* = cut the throat, sever the cervical veins.—*Brockie*
sett, i.216/86, ? for *hett*, promise
shadding, ii.31/39, lying in the shade
shake, i.111/441, pace
shales, ii.227/1, husks; not Elyot's *shayles*.
 The good husband, when he hath sown in his ground, setteth up clouts or threads, which some called *shayles*, some blenchars, or other like shews, to frighten away birds which he foreseeth ready to devour and hurt his corn.—*Elyot's Governour*, ed. 1834, p. 75
shame, in, ii.439/646, insame, together
shamefully, ii.456/1158, shamefully
shames, i.228/320. *shalms*, a wind instrument, from Lat. *calamus*, a reed. The Musitians . . . At great feasts, when the Earles service is going to the table, they are to play upon Shagbute, Cornett, *Shalmes*, and such other instruments going with winde.—*R. Braithwait's Rules and Orders for the House of an Earle*, ed. 1821, p. 44. *Shalms* are now called Clarionets. See *Popular Music*, i.35, note b.—*Chappell*
share, ii.540/384, shearing; A.-S. *seear*, sheared
shaves, i.228/322, groves, woods
sheer, iii.58/59, pure, clear
sheild, ii.576/460, ? a broad piece of pork or bacon
shent, iii.29/293, marred, spoiled, &c.; 72/370, destroyed
shimered, iii.58/59, glimmered; A.-S. *scymrian*, to shine, glitter
shimmer, ii.108/807, shiver
shire, i.229/330, Cheshire
shivers, *went all to*, ii.535/243
shoggs, i.218/118, moves, goes; Fr. *berser*, to rocke, in a cradle; to *shog*, or swing up and downe.—*Cotgrave*. To *shog* is to trot in Staffordshire: "Let me see her *shog*," said the *vet.* who came to see my lame mare the other day. The groom changed her pace from a walk to a trot.—*E. Viles*

SHO

shogged, iii.191/56, moved. See vol. i. p. 218, note ⁵
shontest, ii.75/460, finchest
shooters, i.46/141
shoots, i.332/323, shots (with arrows)
shop, i.57/73, ? shot, with a slip shutter before it
shope, iii.241/155, shaped
shotten, i.54/25; 55/39, went quickly
shoure, i.375/665, scold, threaten; Scotch *shore*, to threaten.—*Brockie*. ? show of fight, bravado.—*F*.
shower, ii.112/929, A.-S. *scúr*, battle, fight
showing horne, iii.227/311
shradds, ii.227/1, twigs
shread, ii.585/672, cut, crack, hit
shroggs, ii.232/111, stunted shrubs. See *scray*
sib, i.355/45; *sibb*, ii.379/1030, related
sibb, iii.36/508, kin, relations
side, ii.566/223, broad, or long; iii.63/176, long. And also to see mens seruantes so abused in theyr aray: theyr cotes be so *syde* that they be fayne to tucke them vp whan they ryde, as women do theyr kyrrels whan they go to the market or other places, the whiche is an ynconuenient syght.—*Fitzherbert's Husbandry*, ed. 1767, p. 96
sigh, ii.323/30, sorry, miserable?, straining (cloth), says Mr. Dyce. See Notes
siked, i.356/60, sighed; ii.68/263, ? sickened or sighed
siking, i.363/272, sighing
silly, ii.283/75, poor
siluen, ii.502/1, silver; see 503/29
sinne, i.364/314, since
sirrupps, ii.578/507, syrups
sist, i.236/27, sighed
sithe, i.151/228, afterwards; ii.480/1781 ? for *swithe*, quickly
sithe, i.438/521, either *sithe*, since, afterwards, or *swithe*, quickly
sithe, iii.24/130, time; i.149/162, iii.30/324, times
skill, i.116/168, feint; Old Norse *skil*, reason; i.163/611, reason, cause
skye, i.438/508, 518, cloud; Old Norse *sky*, (but see Professor Child in Notes); i.470, 471. I feel almost sure it is connected with or corrupted from *scin*, *scine*, or some cognate word, a phantasm, vision, spectre.—*Atkinson*
slade, ii.229/50, an open place

SOW

slake, i.238/76, assuaging
slauen, ii.542/448, Fr. *esclavine*, a pilgrim's cloake or mantle
slauish, ii.136/12, of slaves
slawe, iii.97/562, slain
sleight, i.366/386, skill, cleverness
slode, iii.8/99, slid, went
sloe, ii.588/754, slow, stupid
slopps, ii.257/66, breeches
slowe, i.429/203, slain
slowen, i.428/174, slain; 428/190, slay
smire, i.113/129, ? for *swire*, neck
smocke, ii.329/51, chemise: "Neare is my peticoate, but nearer is my smocke. Ma chemise, m'est plus près ke ma robe."—*Holyband's French Littelton*, 1609, p. 76-7
snapped, i.229/336, for swapped; iii.50, swept off
snell, ii.342/34, active; 546/557, quickly
soft, i.364/328, soften
soine, ii.38/22, ?
sond, i.426/119; 433/337; 439/536, message
sonde, ii.430/389, attack, blow
sonse, i.227/286, soul
soonde, i.154/314, swoon
sooned, i.396/1347, swooned
soones ffell, iii.46/833, *sansfaile*, without fail, see l. 841
sooth, iii.61/120, truth
sore, i.93/60, A.-S. *sorh*, sorrow; 364/318, pain; 380/821, sorrowful, pained, grieved
souce, ii.150/38, pickled pig's head and trotters
sound, ii.101/624, swoon
sounde, i.443/679, try, pat, stroke
sounded, i.361/234, made sound, relieved
souse, iii.367/1, ? death
souter, i.362/265, psaltery
sowle-knell, i.232/409, funeral knell
sowre, i.358/116, sorrel-coloured horse
sowte, iii.244/222, assault
sowter, i.381/853, 861; *sowtrye*, ii.422/149, psaltery.—*De Psalterio*, ca. cxliiii. The Sawtry hyghte *Psalterium* and hath that name of *psallendo*/singyng: for the consonant answerethe to the note therof in syngyng. The harpe is like to the sawtry in sowne/but this is the dyuersytee & discord bytwene the harp & the sawtri: in the sawtry is an holowe tree/and of that same tree the sowne cometh vppewarde; And the stringes ben

SPA

smytte downward/and sowneth v-
warde. And in the harpe the holow-
nes of the tree is byneth. . . Stringes
for the sawtry ben beste made of
laton, or ells those ben good that
ben made of syluer.—*Trevisa's Bar-*
tholomæus, lib. xix. leaf 383, col. 1,
ed. 1535

sparhawk, i.160/517, sparrow-hawk

sparkells, ii.459/1223, sparks

sparred, i.447/815, shut, barred

spartle, ii.440/675, sparkle, spark

speere, i.178/80, ? hole in the wall for
enquiries to be made through

sperrred, ii.528/31, enquired

spill, i.236/18, kill

spilt, iii.326/124, ? splent (cf. splinter)

spirituality, i.96/160, spiritual or clerical
lords

spite, i.77/54, respite, grace

splents, i.384/959, see note 1

spole, iii.415/251, Fr. *espaule*, a shoulder

spousage, i.442/656, wedlock

spousing, i.443/688, marriage

spowed, i.374/652, shot, rushed

sprent, ii.65/194; 532/167, sprang

springalls, iii.256/573: *springal*, an an-
cient military engine for casting stones
and arrows.—*Halliwell*

spurred, i.446/759, sparred, shut

spurred, i.394/1259, asked

spyrryng, i.109/223, enquiring; A.-S.
spirian, to enquire

squires, i.229/337, for *swyres* (cp. *sweere*,
l. 345), see iii.11/132; not A.-S.
swira, *sweora*, a neck, but *squire*

squier, ii.373/876, baby boy

srow, i.460/1221, shrew

-st, i.20/28 (see note 4), shalt, must;
youst, ii.219/47, you shall. See *Ist*,
thoust

stackered, i.388/1076, staggered

stage, i.376/713, time

stake, ii.538/342, ? stuck, or for *strake*

staleworth, iii.27/235; 60/105, stout,
lusty, strong

states, iii.251/442, nobles

statuinge, ii.563/155, ordinance

staunche, ii.427/308, resist, stop

steade, iii.24/142, place

steale, i.147/98, stalk

steddie, i.99/238, ? *stede*, place; *stithy*
is a smith's anvil

steere, i.357/112; i.363/298, stir, the
move

stent, ii.475/1654, stint, stop

SWE

stent, ii.461/1267, portion, property;
stente, or certeyne of valwe, or deede,
and ober lyke (of value or dette).—
Tarecio. Promptorium

sterne, iii.158/49, A.-S. *steór-ern*, the
steering-place, the stern

steuen, i.148/135; ii.236/208; iii.73/408,
voice, A.-S. *stefn*

steuen, i.395/1310, ? stuffs, garments, &c.

steven, ii.232/110, time. See *vnsett*

stint, i.439/538, stay, stop; A.-S. *stint-*
an, to be weary

stond, i.98/201; iii.21/45; A.-S. *stund*,
a short space of time; Du. *stond*,
Dan. and Sw. *stund*, Germ. *stunde*

stonde, iii.86/272, time, moment

store, ii.559/55, Sc. *stoor*, strong, rough

store, ii.579/536, big

stoure, ii.420/115, space of time

stower, i.96/149, stir, fight

stovre, i.365/352, battle; iii.89/356,
fight, conflict; ii.299/97; 300/107,
hurry, rush

stovre, i.96/151, strong; A.-S. *stór*, great
vast; ii.484/1885, strong, fierce

strand, i.360/187, shore, *met.* stream;
i.367/413, ? the 'riuere' of l. 415;
ii.534/209, stream or sea. *Strand*,
1. a rivulet.—*Douglas*; 2. a gutter.
—*Wallace*. *Jamieson*

stranger, i.182/13, extraordinarily gifted
person

stray, i.385/1001, his saddle

strayned on, ii.286/184, sang

strond, i.426/111, land, country

strond, ii.85/144, sea. See *strand*

studd, iii.370/28, a thorn

sumpter-man, ii.568/271

sunne, iii.481/ ?

surbat, iii.366/17 . . . *surboted* or riven
of their skin.—*Topsell*. *Hall!* —*sur-*
bating, f. a galling or over-heating
the soles of the feet.—*Coles's Eng.*
Dict. 1677.—*V.*

swaine, i.185/100, thread or ornament

swapt, i.311/289, struck

swarned, iii.413/209, swarmed, i.e.
climbed.—*P.* MS. may be *swarued*.
—*F.*

swee, iii.256/575, qu. perhaps flee.—*P.*
Sway (and fall).—*F.* In Stafford
and its vicinity *ay* is continually pro-
nounced like *ee*, e.g. *pee* for *pay*, *dee*
for *day*, *lee* for *lay*, *bull-beeting* for
bull-baiting, &c. At Newcastle, how-
ever, a few miles off, the very oppo-

SWE

site prevails, *may for me, hay for he*, &c.—*V*.
sweeres, iii.58/54, squires
sweeuens, ii.228/13, dreams
swelt, iii.70/337, to die
swicke, ii.537/297; A.-S. *swican*, to deceive
swilled, i.73/278, shook
swire, ii.467/1432; iii.70/337, neck
swithe, i.102/314, quickly
swiue, i.130/7, copulate with
szt, ii.524, *scilicet*, namely

tables, take up the, iii.97/569
takells, iii.125/23, tackle, qu.
talke, iii.65/225
tame, ii.417/36, dead
tane, i.152/253, taken, come
tane sworne, i.192/289 (taken) sworn
tap, iii.297/47, top
taughe, iii.30/320, tough
teddar stakes, iii.283/185, tethering stakes
teemed, iii.221/144, A.-S. *teám*, issue, offspring, anything following in a row or team: *teámian*, to produce, propagate
teene, i.153/274, A.-S. *teóna*, injury, wrong, insult; iii.83/192, vexation
teene, ii.471/1524, vex, trouble
teene, ii.92/336, ? for *keene*, as in l. 342, or *teen*, angry.—*Halliwell*
teenful, iii.63/174, full of injury, destruction
teenously, i.321/88, grievedly
temporalitie, i.96/161, lay lords
tenants to the booke, i.223/228, ? copy-holders
tent, ii.208/111, take charge of
tented, i.363/278, plugged up, dressed
tenting, i.363/283, plugging, dressing
tenting, i.187/139, tending, taking care of
tents, i.363/277, plugs of silk in wounds
ter, ii.466/1381, tar
thakked, ii.164, thwacked, beat
thee, ii.346/150, thrive
there, ii.424/213, where
therefore, iii.349/712, on that account
thick, iii.106/113, that
thinke, i.451/928, things, necessaries
thinke, ii.425/238, fume, fret: cp. *thought*, anxiety
tho, iii.28/263; 61/115; 108/175, then
tho, i.97/195, the, thrive

TOT

thoe, i.359/119, suffer
tholed, iii.56/1, qu. *tholedst*, *sufferedst*
thore, iii.22/68, there
thought, i.157/425, anxiety
thouse, ii.324/54, thou art
thoust, i.77/59, 81/27, 150/188-9, 168/52, 187/130; ii.205/24, ii.218/16, 329/32, 331/102, 291/13-15 (3 times), thou shalt
thratt, ii.565/181, threatened
thraw, i.92/34, bold
thraw, ii.251/106, thrøe, pang
threape, ii.324/61, strive
threw, i.99/251, wriggled about
thriid, i.249/38; 250/54, knocked
thringe, iii.253/494, A.-S. *þringan*, to rush
throee, i.358/144, fierce; ii.75/461; iii.282/151; A.-S. *þrá*, bold
throstlecocke, i.121/19, thrush, merle
throw, i.463/1328, A.-S. *þrah*, time, space
throwe, ii.72/364, eager
trub-chadler, i.66/123; *trub-chandler*, i.68/172, a tub or barrel? It may be *tuba ciadlaigh*, Irish, tub used in giving milk to calves.—*Brockie*. I have met with *trubchandlers*, but have searched for it now successlessly. I take it to mean some kind of shallow tub, from *trub*, squat (v. *Littleton*) and *chandler*, a kind of vessel used perhaps by candle-makers, a kind of vat, but I cannot in any dictionary I have here (about 100) find the word *chandler* thus used.—*E. Viles*
thytill, ii.570/322, thwittle, knife
tike, i.30/66, dog, O.N. *tik*
tilden, i.216/91, pitched (tents)
tint, ii.490/2066, lost
tinye, i.192/272, bit
tipen, iii.64/194, dip
tise, i.440/587, entice
to, i.226/276, too
to-brast, ii.429/362, burst in pieces
toke[n]inge, i.461/1254, a token
too-too: excessively. See Mr. Halliwell's collection of examples in his edition of *The Marriage of Wit and Wisdom* (Shakespeare Soc.) p. 71-6
toote, ii.535/235, to it, to fight
top (on a mast), i.302/60, and note
topcastle, iii.408/106. *Topcastles*, ledgings surrounding the mast head.—*Hal*.
toting, ii.53/16; *tote*, to bulge out (Somerset), large, fat (Glouc.)—*Halliwell*

TOT

totorne, i.436/464, torn up
toward, ii.422/163, going on, that has happened
towne, ii.564/178, tone, the one?
trace, ii.579/531, ? proper step
traine, i.447/806, embryo. Comp. ordinary expr. "put in train" = "trained him on," provincial, and other like.
 —A.
traine, i.214/52, harass
traitorye, ii.218/7; 267/43, treachery
tranckled, i.62/33, went slowly
transpose, ii.60/52, transfigure
trauncell, ii.94/410, travail, childbearing
trattle, iii.133/142?
tree, ii.221/88, suffering
tree, ii.559/54, wood
treene, ii.181/1, wooden
trinde, ii.117/1073, tind, branch of a deer's antler
trothelesse, ii.240/45, untrusty
truce, take, ii.114/972
trumpetts, ii.474/1604, trumpeters
truncheon, i.356/57, a broken shaft (of a spear)
truse, iii.56/11, trusse, package
trusse, i.482/1931, pack
trustilie, i.149/155, faithfully
turke, i.91/14, and note², a dwarf
turnamentrye, ii.342/41, tourneying
turtle, ii.81/21; 84/104, turtle-dove
twatling, ii.156/215, peddling, pottering
twinke, iii.339/461, a wink; see Shak.
 Temp. Act i. Sc. 2.—V.
tydand, iii.217/36; 353/880, tidings
tydants, i.232/404, tidings
tyke, ii.541/407, tick, dog-louse
type, ii.293/70, ? separate
tyred, i.146/71, attired, dressed, adorned
tyte, i.458/1167, quickly

uglyest, iii.62/152, most fright-causing
vmstrode, ii.61/75, bestrode; iii.238/68.
 Umstrid, astride, astridlands. *Ray's Words not generally used*, 1674.—*Viles*
vbethought, i.76/35; 177/62; 236/17, bethought
vncoth, i.367/405, unknown
vncothe, ii.378/991, strange
vndertane, i.368/446, undertake
vndernome, i.477/1780, understood, perceived
vndight, i.150/178-9, undressed
vne, i.64/66, one

VIS

vnfaine, i.93/88 unfain, sorrowful
vnfolded, i.366/379, closed
vngracious, i.224/246, difficult of access
vnheld, ii.492/2130, open
unmackley, iii.11/133, ill-shapen, clumsy in appearance, *unmake like*. *Brockel's North Country Words*.—*Viles*
vnnethes, ii.478/1721, hardly, scarcely
unrid, iii.63/171, large.—*Halliwell*
vnryde, i.468/1501, "unrude, vile."—*Jamieson*
vnsett steuen, ii.386/1230, and note; ii.232/110; ii. 561/192, unappointed time
vnsett, i. 331/292, umsett, surrounded
vnskill, ii.558/41, senselessly
vnskillfullye, ii.560/84, without reason
vnsoughte, i.111/435, A.-S. *unseht*, unhappy
vnsteake, iii.265/73, unfasten, open
vnstill, i.75/6, unto
vnyceld, ii.530/106, unwieldy?, or unyielding, stiff
upbraided with (for by), i.331/308
upon, i.185/83, to
upon, be, iii.129/53, cp. our "I'll be down upon you"
vttered, i.228/324, pulled

vai[r], *you*, 53/12, read "your vaines"
vacand, ii.545/523, empty
valoure, ii.422/168, worth
valours, ii.368/739, skill, worth
vaward, i.215/68, van, leading division of an army
venere, i.106/20, deer
venison, iii.13/165, all for his warryson, i.e. reward.—P.
ventale, ii.132/1498; *ventayle*, ii.478/1726, face armour of different shape and material to the visor.—*Planché*
venturer, i.308/216
verditt, i.155/351, verdict
verome, i.470/1535, (? randome, see 478/1820,) pace, rush; ? *gyrum*, circuit, veering.—*Brockie*
vew, ii.324/47, ?
vew-bow, i.58/103, yew-bow
veve, i.332, note³; *veive*, ii.230/59; iii.256/572, yew.—*Wilbraham's Cheshire Glossary*
vice, i.148/116, devices
vile, ii.462/1319, ? for "fele," numerous
vis, iii.78/51, ? MS., for *vus* or *vs*, us
vised, i.447, taught, advised

VIS

visor, ii.478/1724
vuulye, iii.58/45, fortè *winlye*, i.e. pleasantly, jucunde. Lye.—*P.* ? *viewlye*.—*F.*

waches, i.383/944, watchers
waile, i.163/615, weal
waite, ii.94/388, expected; *waiteth*, iii.67/250, is used for *waitest*; this agrees with *tholed* for *tholedst*, in l. 1.—*Sk.*
wake, iii.268/144, A.-S. *wæccan*, to watch
waken, ii.331/96, ? watching or waking
waleth, iii.69/296, afflicteth, A.-S. *welan*, to afflict, vex
walker, ii.306/53, fuller, whitener
walling, i.387/1057; ii.592/854, boiling, passionately. Walling = yelling, howling, jowling, bellowing, wailing, squalling, squealing. The root forms a component part of most languages.—*Brockie*
walts, iii.69/299, A.-S. *wæltan*, to roll, tumble
wanhope, i.445/739, despair
wappeth, iii.65/217, rusheth, fluttereth
war, iii.272/5, see note
warder, ii.241/65, a kind of truncheon or staff of command. See *Nares*
warle, i.146/59, weariness
warne, ii.107/779, A.-S. *warnian*, to take care of
warned, iii.67/269, forbade
warre, i.427/158, beat, drive
warre, i.429/207, A.-S. *werian*, to protect, defend
warre, ii.533/190, worse
warryson, ii.589/790, reward
warth, iii.66/248, to go
wary, iii.67/255, curse. I warrye, I banne or curse. *Je mauldís*. This is a farre northren terme.—*Palsgrave*
wate, i.227/287, clever, wise
waward, i.216/89, vanguard
wawe, ii.458/1184, wall, shelter
way, i.218/114, wight, man
wayes, i.229/331, men
way-gate, i.366/380; 374/648, by-going, passage
wayte, iii.68/287. Qu. *wate*, Scot. i.e. *wott*.—*P.*
wayted, iii.58/48, Old Fr. *gaiter*, to spy about
wed-bed, i.235/9, marriage-bed

WON

wed, i.384/952; *wedd*, *weed*, i.367/421 420, A.-S. *wed*, pledge
weede, i.99/234, garment, A.-S. *wéed*
weene, i.454/1024; 457/1144, doubt
weldded, i.148/112, possessed
weldeth, iii.56/13, governeth
wellaway, ii.52/6, lamentation
weme, ii.221/82, womb, circle
wend, iii.43/722, go
wend, iii.236/13; *wende*, i.447/812; *wenden*, i.456/1082, thought
wendes, i.462/1280, thinks
whales bone, ii.369/748; iii.20/16; iii.268/154, ivory
whall, ii.378/1012, walrus
whalles-bone, ii.342/23, ivory
what, ii.380/1070, why
what devill! ii.364/625; ii.588/795, what the devil! devil take you!
when, iii.64/196, wan
whether, i.469/1525, weather
whighest, i.23/77, nimblest
white, i.327/216, A.-S. *witan*, to blame
who, i.230/355, what or whose
who and *that*, rel. i.376, note ⁶
whom, i.249/21, home
whore, i.327/214, hoar
whylye, iii.364/7, wilye
wight, i.386/1031, 387/1047, quick; i.331/287; iii.65/217, nimble
wightilye, ii.65/194, nimbly
wilfull, ii.231/95, wishful, desirous to know?
wilsome, ii.371/802; 558/36, wild, lonely
wince, ii.580/545, winche, kick
wingge, i.487/2091, woning, dwelling
winlye, iii.74/428, A.-S. *wynlice*, joyously
winne, iii.238/62, A.-S. *win*, pleasure
winne, iii.68/293, pleasant; iii.56/5, joyful
winne, i.178/78, get to
winne, iii.39/590, to go, to depart
wishe, i.481/1904, 482/1943, ii.548/608, wisse, teach, instruct
withsay, i.373/590, deny, refuse
witt, i.152/238, know
witt, iii.61/120, to tell
witt, i.226/280, with
witterlye, i.438/509, A.-S. *witodlice*, clearly
witterlye, i.447/812, for certain
woe, *winne to*, iii.62/139?
wold, i.218/114, was
won, ii.564/175, wone, dwell
woning, i.164/632, dwelling

WOO

wood, iii.81/139, furious
woodhall, i.383/922, ? witwall or golden
 ouzle. *Loriot* (French) a Bird called
 a Wit-wal, Wood-pecker, or Green-
 finch.—*Phillips* 1671
woodweete, ii.228/5, wodewale, bryd *idem*
quod reynefowle or wodehake (or no-
 thac. *Picus*) *et lucar*. Promptorium.
witwall, the great spotted woodpecker
woone, i.332/314, dwelling
woone, ii.537/313, win, get
woonen, i.441/605, dwell
wooninge, iii.26/191; 38/567, dwelling
wore, ii.533/196, worse
worme, ii.367/694, dragon
worth, i.122/note, col. 2; ii.89/255; 230
 /63, be to. A.-S. *weorþan*, to become,
 be
worthes, iii.56/9, goes
wracke, i.101/294, A.-S. *wrac*, vindictive
 punishment, mischief, evil
wrapp, iii.266/97, wrapper
wrath, i.485/2032, rathe, early
wreake, iii.44/758, revenge
wrecke, i.375/673, avenge
wright, i.425/94, iii.66/238, right
wrist, i.15/14, foot. In old Frisian,
 hand-wrist and foot-wrist occur, and
 the same use is found in Middle High
 German, &c. Ger. *riester* denotes
 both wrist and instep.—*Child*

ZEL

writhe, ii.223/135, twisted, took
wrocken, i.194/348; *wroken*, i.358/137;
 ii.228/12, revenged
wrought, i.70/205, rought, reached; i.474
 /1672, seized
wrought, iii.65/215, troubled, wretched
 Scot. *wraik*, to vex
wrucked, i.69/190, thrown up as wrack
wytterly, i.108/197, certainly

yare, i.452/948; 490/2193, ready
yare, i.95/138, before, A.-S. *ær*
yarne, ii.432/450; 439/631, nimbly,
 quickly
yate, i.356/65; ii.274/72,80, gate
yearded, i.234/419, earthed, dwelt
yearne, i.231/381, A.-S. *georn*, eager.
 "yearn" is, I rather think, *airn* = iron,
 from the Norse *jern*.—*Brockie*
yenders, i.153/282, afternoon's
yerne, iii.64/185, iron?
yerning, ii.117/1067, running or yearning
yode, i.158/429; iii.40/619, 343/575,
 A.-S. *eodon*, went
youd, i.250/46, yode, went away
youst, ii.219/47, you will

zely, iii.368/3, A.-Sax. *selig*, happy,
 lucky, blessed, prosperous.—*Bosworth*



INDEX OF NAMES, SUBJECTS, AND PHRASES.

The Titles of the Ballads are printed in italics. i.20(5 means vol. 1, page 20, line 5.

ACA

A Caulere, iii.366
A Jigge, ii.334
A Louer off Late, iii.389
A Propeceye, iii.371
 Abbot of St. Austin's, ii.152(23)
 Abell, iii.70(326)
 Aberdonie, i.191(255)
 Abraham, iii.70(329); 74(423)
 Abydos, iii.296(13)
 Acctollen, iii.171(49)
 Achilles, iii.171(52)
 Acon (Acre?), i.284(325-36; the siege and taking of, i.283(291)
 Acteon's hounds, iii.126(45)
 Adam, iii.170(9); 70(326)
 Adam and Eve, iii.74(422)
 Adam Bell, iii.76(9); 77(27 passim)
Adam Bell, Clime of the Cloughe, and William off Cloudelee, iii.76
 Adam Carre, i.82(52)
 adder, the, which caused Arthur's last battle and death, i.503(145)
 Adderton, i.325(169; Atherton)
Adland, King, ii.600(18; 601(31, &c.
 Adler, ii.600(5; 601(41. See *King Adler*
 Adlatt's park, iii.216(1)
 Adventurous Chapel, ii.424(206; 428(321
Ægyptian Queene, the, ii.26
 Agincourt, ii.169(65)
 Agincourt Ballads, ii.595(597
Agincourte Battell, ii.158
 Agostes, ii.60(49)
 Agravaine, Sir, i.145(40; ii.425(259; 426(274)
 Ayyana, i.498(23, Igerne, Arthur's mother
 Air-fiends, i.440(580 to i.447; 455(1073
 Æneas, iii.261(8,17; 502(7; 504(71,79; 505(103
Æneas and Dido, iii.260
 Æolus, iii.306(47)
 Akerson, Sir William, iii.245(271)
 Akerston, Sir Roger, iii.245(270)
 Albanack, King, iii.437(2)
 Albert, Archbishop of Yorke, iii.152(7)
 Alcides, iii.305(27

ANG

Aldingar, Sir, i.165
 ale, women drinking at the, i.446(771. Cp. *The Good Wife in Babees Book, &c.*, 39(73 80
 Alexander, King, i.148(109; ii.451(1001; iii.70(334)
 Alexander the mightye, iii.170(25)
 Alexios, St. ii.518
 Alexis, St. ii.525
Alfonso and Ganselo, iii.507
 Allen, Lord of Galloway, i.290(518)
 Almaine, ii.536(291; iii.268(164
 Almaine Emperor of, (Maximilian), i.319(16
 Almaine, Sir James of, ii.107(790
 Alphonso, iii.507(4; 509(41; 510(81,8E; 510(91,94, *passim*
 Althea, ii.19(3)
 Amadis of Gaul, ii.404
 Amarant, ii.136(13; 138(49, &c.; 139(83; 140(108
 ambling steed, ii.87 208
 Ambree, Mary, i.515
 Ambrosius Aurelianus, i.417
 Amilion, the jolly island of, i.164(621; Avilion, the apple-land. Cornish *Aval*, s. m. An apple. It also signifies all manner of tree fruit of a similar kind, as *pomum* was used by the Romans.
Avallen, s. f. An apple tree. Cornish Vocab. *malus*. Nans *avallen*, the valley of apple trees; *nomen loci*. W. *avullen*, *aballen*. Arm. *avalen*. Cf. nom. loci in Gaul, *Aballone*.—Williams's *Lexicon Cornu-Britannicum*
Amintas, iii.450
 Amintas, iii.450(1; 451(21,31
Amongst the Mirtles, ii.35
 Amyntas, iii.307(60
 Analaf, ii.520
 Andrew, Young, a Scotch ruffian, ii.327
 angels, dropping, for a wedding portion, ii.284(104-19
 Anguish (Angus), Earl of, i.290(512
 Anguish, King of Denmark, i.423(19; 424(69; 426(108,117; 431(267-96; 433

ANG

(364; 434(369; 435(410; 473(1648; 474(1689; 475(1713; 478(1803; 479(1845; 480(1870; 481(1895; 486(2043-67 his death; 492)2250. King Anguis or Anguish of Denmark, whom Vortiger sent for to come and help him, may have been a namesake of the King of the Picts. *Aonghus, Oongus, Oengusa, Onnust, Onius, or Ungust* I, of whose numerous wars and victories Pinkerton gives a long account, *Hist. Scot.* I. 304-7. Aonghus was possibly, after all, the redoubtable enemy of King Arthur.—Broec-kie

Angus, Earl of, ii.192(41
 Anne, James I.'s queen, dead, ii.319(198
 Antonye, Mon-senyour, iii.540. note¹
 apes, lead, in hell, ii.47(16; ii.46, note
 Apollo, ii.54(53; iii.305(31
 Apollos, iii.450(2
 Appolloes teeme, iii.125(19
 Arabian Nights, ii.303
 Archbishop of Canterbury, iii.152(22
 Archbishop of York, the, iii.152(7
 Archduke Leopold of Austria, i.285(350
 archery, i.8,37
 Ardine, King, ii.297(16, same as Estmere, 297(11
Are Women Faire. iii.364
 Argus' eyes, ii.325(16
 Argyle Castle, iii.220(110; 223(186,187; 224(228; 224(229
 Argyle, Marquis of, i.343
 Armorica, i.403
 Armoure, Madam de, ii.470(1508 to 472(1560
 arms, Eglamore's, described, ii.383(1130-8
 Armstrong, ii.225(209
 Armstrong, Hector, of Harlaw, i.294
 Armstrong, Lord Jocke, i.301(9
 Arnada, daughter of the King of Sattin, ii.360(517; 363(594; marries Degrabell, ii.388(1275
 Aronn, iii.70(327
 Arr, ii.533(201, ?
 Arradas, King, ii.80(9; 84(124; 106(765; 108(810; 110(866; 112(920; 113(938; 114(965; 115(1004; 118(1099; 119(1124; 120(1156; 123(1252; 132(1522; 133(1534; 134(1558; &c.
 Arragon, ii.95(441; 112(937; 116(1028; 119(1123; 126(1336
 Arragon, King of, ii.106(765; 108(810; 112(920
 Arrard of Arden, Sir, ii.529(79
Arrarde of Arden, Sir, ii.548(599
 Arrndell, Lord, iii.137(7; 138(38; 150(374

BAC

Arthore, Sir, father of Vylett, ii.442(723; 443(742; 445(819
 Arthur: a general Introduction to *Merline and Kinge Arthurs Death*, discussing the facts and some of the stories about Arthur, i.401
 Arthur: Mr. C. H. Pearson's Essay on, i.401-4; traditions of, and romances about, i.405-16; his ballad history, i.497-507; mere historians may doubt of him, ii.524
 Arthur, i.59; 105(1; 144(1; 153(275; ii.58(1,8,12; 59(37; 62(112; 66(207, 214; 69(299; 77(508,516; 305(15 &c. ii.416(11; 417(42, 46, 55; 418(67; ii.419(85,103; 424(232; 425(244; 426(286; ii.431(417,428; 436(576; 443(746; 453(1042; 462(1312; 466(1394; 475(1634; 497-9; iii.172(73; 277(12; 278(31; 279(42
 Arthur of England, iii.70(338
 Arthur, Prince of Wales, ii.316(98
 Arthur's Court, ii.61(68; 76(491,497
 Arthur's hall, ii.60(58
 Arthur's Law, ii.424(219
 Artigall, ii.145(9
 Artoys, ii.341(13; 343(220; 358(467; 363(610,628; 369(743; 373(866; 386(1218; 387(1258
 Arundel, Earl of, i.290(505; iii.483(105
 Arundel, Lord, iii.244(235. See *Arrndell*
As it befell one Saturday, i.241
As yee came from the Holy, iii.465
 ash, oath by the, i.251(72
 Ashton of Middleton, i.325(162
 Ashton, Sir Ralph, iii.247(323
 Ashton-under-line, i.325(165
 Astrea, iii.305(33
 Athelstan, ii.519-20; 528(34,55; 539(347; 542(439; 543(462
 Athens, iii.507(7; 508(9,13,30
 Attelston, Sir; Loosepain's husband, i.377(735; i.381(867; 390(1157
 Attherston, iii.193(93
 Audley, Lord, iii.244(239; 245(250
 Auelocke, king of Denmark, ii.528(37,55; 533(185; 539(353; 540(394
 Aueragus, iii.152(19
 Augustus, iii.170(28
 Aurora, iii.306(37
 Austrich Duke, i.282(282
 axletree, flinging of the, i.90; i.97(192
Ay me: ay me: ii.43
 Babington, Sir John of, iii.246(294
 Babylon, iii.273(29
 Bacchus, ii.53(24; iii.126(37

BAC

backbone, Sir Geffron's, cracked in jousting, ii.452(1024)
 bacon for supper, ii.563(139)
 bag puddings, ii.151(76)
 Bagilie, John a, i.243(4)
 Bagily, in Cheshire, i. 233(418)
 ball, ladies playing at the, ii.275(88)
 Ballads of the North of Scotland, by Buchan the forger, ii.269
Balowe, iii.515
 Banbury, ii.40(4); 42(41)
Banburye, the tribe off, ii.39
 Bandello, ii.303
 Baner, Sir, ii.434(507)
 Banier, Sir, i.113(120, Bedivere?)
 Banister, ii.255(21); 257(57); &c.; 258(85), &c.; 259(125)
 Barathron, iii.73(405)
 Barbary corsairs, i.298
 Barbary, the heathen Soldan at, i.308(214); 310(250)
 Barekley, Don, ii.524, col. 2. ? Alex Barclay who writ the Ship of Fools
 Barfleet, i.278(155)
 Barnard Castle, i.293
 Barnsdale, ii.229(45,47); 233(141); 235(181)
 bare as my hand, iii.536(88)
 Bartley, Lord, iii.244(241)
 Barton, Sir Andrew, iii.405(37); iii.407(84); 409(132); 410(151); 411(159, *passim*)
 Barton, Sir John Booth of, i.229(338); 326(173)
 Bartton, John of, iii.414(235)
Bartton, Sir Andrew, ii.399
 Barwicke side, i.226(213)
 Bassett, i.275(64)
 bastardy no real stain in knightly times, ii.405, note
 Bateable, the, i.294, the debateable land, Scotch border
 bath of herbs, ii.359(508)
 Battle of the Spurs, i.201
 Bawbener (*for* Bulmer), Sir William, i.220(157)
 Bawmer, Sir William, iii.354(854)
 Beame, the land of, i.354(1); 375(683)
 bean bread, ii.574(387)
 Beauchamp, the family of, ii.524, col. 1
 Beaumayns, i.143, note ⁵
 Beaumont, Sir John, iii.483(115)
 Beckett, Thomas à, tomb of, iii.480(14)
 Bedever, Arthur's butler, i.504(162,179); 505(196)
 Bedlam, Tom of, iii.124(8)
 Bednall Greene, ii.283(70)
 beeffe, pouthered (salted), iii.126(50)
 Beeston, i.328(224, Bidston)
 Beeston, the Castle of, i.289(479)

BOA

begging, a good trade for Scotchmen in James I's time, ii.43-5
 begin the bord, ii.590(820, take the highest seat at table)
Bell my Wiffe, i.320
 Bellefaunt, Lady, ii.393(3)
 Bellona, iii.306(36)
 Bells ringing backwards, iii.89(346)
 Belward, William, i.276(98)
 Belzebub, iii.72(390)
 Berwick, i.230(364); iii.238(84); 433(63); 459(3)
 Berwick Low, iii.431(1, Berwick Hill)
 Bessye, Lady, iii.325(4,100, *passim*), 343(576); 352(801); 362(1055); 363(1069)
Bessie off Bednall, ii.279
 Bethelam, iii.292(443,455)
 Bethlem, ii.85(136)
 Beufise, Ginglaine or Libius called, ii.416(26); 418(66)
 Bevis, Sir, ii.509,517
 Bianju, Renals de, author of *Li Biaus Desconneus*, ii.406-410
 Bigeram Abbey, iii.347(661); 351(763)
 Bikez, Robert; his *Lai du Corn*, ii.301
 Bilbo blade, iii.110(225)
 Birkhead, i.328(221, Birkenhead)
 Biron, Sir John, i.213(21)
 Bishop of Ely, James Stanley, i.226(281); i.231(387)
Bishoppe & Brown, ii.265
 Bittons-borrow, the Castle of, i.80(3)
 Blackater, i.219(129, Boroughmoor, see l. 203)
 Blanch faire, iii.278(35)
 Blanch Land, Lady of, iii.279(40)
 Blanchard my stede, i.144
 Blandamour and Paridal of 'The Fairy Queen,' i.293
 Blasye, the hermit, i.445(741); i.448(821); 450(892); 451(944); 452(959); 474(1679)
 bleared his eye, ii.472(1541)
 blind beggar of Bednall Green, ii.281
 Blondville, Randle, 6th Earl of Chester, the Paragon of England, i.281(251); i.264; confused with Randle Glanville, i.267(6); i.283(304); 284(329, &c.)
 blood, charm for staunching, iii.147(303)
 "blow thy horne, good hunter," i.75(3)
 Bloyes, i.288(225, Blois)
 Blunt, Sir James, i.213(19)
 boar, a (Richard III.), iii.190(13)
 boar, the big, of Sattin, ii.353(347)
 boar's head that no Cuckold's knife can carve, ii.310(161)
 boar's Lead, the first dish, ii.576(459)

BOD

- Bode, Sir, i.326(177)
Bodwell, Earle, ii.260
 Bodwell, Lord, ii.263(43,45, &c.)
 Bodwine, Bp., i.96(154)
 Bodwim, Bishop, iii.277(17; 280(72)
 Bolingbroke (Henry VII.), i.274(37; ii.241(73)
 Bolton, Lord Scrope of, iii.244(246)
 Bolton, Sir Robert, i.p.74
 bondman, the Name and the Class; essay on, ii.xx.
 bondmen, the King's, ii.551,555
 book, a French, ii.441(706)
 book, the, i.490(2180; 494(2313)
 book, swearing on a, ii.533(187)
 book, the great, of Rome, ii.371(821)
 booke and bell, swear by, ii.574(407)
 Booker, ii.24(1, an almanack-maker of Charles II.'s time)
 Booth, Sir John, of Barton, i.229(338; 326(173)
 Bootie of Dunham, i.277(124)
 Bordeaux, iii.407(90)
 Bordeaux, Huon of, iii.171(45)
 Bore, Sir, i.113(120, Bors)
 Boroughbridge, i.293
 Borron, Robert de, i.411
 Bourron, Helie de, i.411
 Bostock, Richard, author of the *Earles off Chester*, i.258, and Notes vol. i.
 Bosstockes daughter, i.276(83)
 Bosworth, iii.357(927)
Bosworth ffelde, iii.233
 Bosworth Field, iii.166(93; 355(875; 357(929)
 Bosworth town, i.213(24)
 Boulogne, taking of, i.317
 Boulton in Glendower, i.224(238; ?Bolton in Glendale
 bow, good of shooting with the, i.217, note 8
 Bowdrie, Sir Henry, ii.246(277)
 Bowes, Lord, iii.244(238)
 Bowes, Sir George, i.293; ii.215(125)
 Bowman, iii.126(47)
 Bowmer, Sir Roger, iii.245(266)
Boy and Mantle, ii.301
 Bragas, Erle, i.354(5; 367(397; i.374(633; 396(1324; 397(1378)
 Brakenbury, Sir Robert, iii.245(276)
 Brakenburye, iii.257(612)
 Bramaball More, i.300(8)
 Bramham Moor, i.293
 Brampton, Battle of, i.211
 Brancepeth, i.293
 Brandon, Sir William, iii.258(619)
 Brankstone, or Flodden, battle of, i.202, 206, 228-34. See Notes to vol. i.

BUR

- brass, an oracular head of, ii.397(128 398(141)
 Braunche, Sir William de la, ii.427(207; p.428-32)
 Bredbeddle, Sir, i.67(159; i.71(242; is the Green Knight, i.70(213; ii.59(40; 62(109; 65(175, 187, 193, 66(211; 67(248)
 Bremish river, i.225(259, note)
 Bremor, Syr, the kyng of Spayne, ii.601(46; 602(81; 603(105; 605(198)
 Brereton, Sir William, i.277(110; 321(69
 ———— Sir Randle, i.227(116)
 Bretton, Humphrey, iii.331(249; 256(263; 333(311; 336(391; 340(502; 342(537; 345(623 347(663; 351(764)
 Bridge of Peril, ii.424(205; 428(324)
 Brinston, i.233(401; the village of Brankston
 Bristol, ii.193(63; iii.374(2; 375(25; 380(164; 383(250; iii.482(79; 483(95, 108-120; 484(129)
 Bristowe, i.493(2273, Bristol
 Bristow Taylor, as briske as, ii.45(29)
 Britaine, Little, i.62(15; 65(91; England
 Brittain, i.499(27; iii.277(8)
 Briuse, Sir Robert, iii.3(7)
 Bruite, i.498(1; Brut
 Bromsgrove, the jovial Hunter of, i.p.74
 Broninge, Sir, i.75(18)
 Brooke, Sall, ii.146(16)
 Broomefield, i.281(244)
 Broughton, Sir Thomas, iii.247(318)
 Browne, iii.432(13,17,29 passim
 Browne, Kinge James and, i.135
 Bruise, Robert, i.290(523)
 Brunne, Robert of, referred to, ii.406; & in Bondman essay, vol. ii.
 Brute, the colonizer of England, i.213(18)
 Buchan, a daring forger, ii.269 note 2
Buckingham betrayed by Banister, ii.253
 Buckingham, Edward, Duke of, i.324(136; i.329(255; 330(273; 334(374)
 Buckingham, the Duke of, i.215(65)
 Buckingham, Duke of, ii.255(6; 256(33, &c.; 257(61, &c.; 258(103, &c.)
 Buckingham, the Duke of, iii.163(17; 166(79; 322(35; 323(60; 336(399)
 Bucklesfeildberry, i.120(5; 121(13)
 Bullen, i.339(502, Boulogne
 Bullen, Godfrey of, iii.171(41)
 Bulmer, Sir William, i.203; 220(157)
 Bun, the princess, i.401
 Burgundy, Duke of, iii.173(85)
 Burlonge, ii.126(1340; 127(1348; 128(1396; 129(1411, &c.; 130(1442, &c.; 131(1468, &c.; 132(1501)
 Burlow-Beanie, the King of Cornwall's fiend, i.71(236. This "lody feend, with his seven fire-breathing heads, was possibly

BUR

the Horned Gareloup or werewolf. *Bean-nach* is Gaelic and Irish for horned. Beanie may have been the Cornish."—William Brockie.

Burton-upon-Trent, ii.193(58)

Busye Hall, iii.211(2,5; 213(67; 214(79)

Butler, i.326(177)

Butler, Ellen, iii.212(21,25,27,29,33, passim)

Butler, Lady, iii.213(57; 214(81,87,89, 93,97,99)

Butler, Sir John, iii.205

Butler, Sir John, iii.211(3)

Cade's, Jack, daughter, i.8

Cadiz, ii.145(1; iii.455(17; 456(53)

Cadiz Voyage, ii.144

Cadwallo, i.246

Caerleon, ii.433(492)

Cæsar Iulys, ii.171(59)

Calais, i.215(71; 339(506; great gun of, ii.168(49)

Cales, ii.145(1; iii.455(17; 456(53)

Cales Voyage, ii.144

Cales, Wininge of, iii.453

Callice, i.318(9, Calais

Caluarye, ii.85(137; iii.72(372)

Cambridge, i.510(40)

Camden, the historian or antiquarian, i.277(140)

Came you not from Newcastle, i.253

Cameleye, the castle of, i.302(48)

Camfewe, Hery, iii.540(note 1)

candlelight keeps out fiends, i.446(757)

Canterbury, iii.153(29)

Canterbury, archbishop of, iii.152(22)

Canterbury, bishop of, i.509(6)

Canterbury, the see of, i.285(365)

Captain Carre, i.79

Cardigan, ii.446(851; 447(864; 453(1053)

Carle of Carlile, iii.275

Carle of Carlile, iii.280(97; 281(105, 108; 283(169)

Carleile, ii.304(2; iii.77(24; 293(488)

Carlile, the Countesse of, ii.456(1139)

Carlile, i.458(1159; iii.77(29; 77(38, passim)

Carlile, i.105(1; 107(20; 144(4; ii.61(85, 89)

Carlisle, Lord of, ii.196(162; 197(177)

Carlisle, Sheriff of, his son, i.140(104)

Carnakie (or Carnaby, i.306(160), John, of, i.301(20)

Carres in Tavidale, the, i.294

Carthage, iii.261(1; 502(10; 505(89)

Castle Flatting, ii.61(86)

castle, Vortiger's, that was torn down every night, i.436(9; 467(71)

CIU

Cauntry, i.39(15; Coventry

Cawline, Sir, iii.1

Cawline, Sir, iii.3(12; 4(17, 30, 33, passim cent. per cent., ii.182)

Ceres, iii.306(35)

Cestos, iii.296(14)

charcoal fire, ii.567(247; 571(331)

Charlemagne, i.59; iii.172(77)

Charlemount, i.148(111; Charlemagne

Charles, King of France, ii.294(121)

Chartley, Lord Ferrers of, iii.244(242)

Chaucer's rebuke of grasping lords and stewards, ii.553, 554

Chandos, a knight, ii.453(1037)

Chearpside, Standard in, iii.483(89)

checkmate with him, ii.589(793, right up to him)

Chelt, the river, i.295

Cheshire, iii.248(362)

Cheshire and Lancashire, ii.272(19, 23, 27)

Cheshire men at Flodden, i.225(265)

chess, ladies playing at, ii.275(92)

Chester Abbey, i.290(509)

Chester, Earl of, iii.156(15; 475(2)

Chester, Earles off, i.258

Chester Fair, i.266

Chestre, Thomas, translator of *Sir Launfal*, i.142

Chevy Chase, ii.1

Chevy Chase, ii.7(4, 13; 15(215; 16(236, 251)

Child of Ell, the, i.132; 133(5)

Child of Elle, ii.278 note

Childe Maurice, ii.500

Childe Waters, ii.269

child's voice; Charles Nevill, Earl of Westmoreland, had one, i.306(143; 309(246; 311(281)

chimney, flinging of the, i.90; i.98(199,217)

chip on his eye (Proverb), ii.342(68)

Chirboroughe, iii.539(172; Cherbourg?

Chorlton, Sir Richard, iii.246(278; 257(614)

Chortley Castle, i.289(481)

Chrestien de Troyes, i.211

Christabell, ii.342(25,28; 345(129; 364(618; 365(643,663; has a son, 369(747; 371(813; marries her son Degrabell, 380(1065, and then her husband Eglamore, 388(1275)

Christopher White, iii.494

Christ's Church, iii.317(21)

Churchlees, or Kirkleys, where Robin Hood was killed, i.53(3; 55(41,43; 57(92)

churl and noble, the gulf between, i.248(4; iii.136)

Cinaris, iii.306(43)

Ciuill Land, i.307(173,187)

CIU

Ciuillee, i.305(122; 307(187 ? Seville or Cicily
 Claramande, ii.397(138; 398(158
 Clarence, Duke of, iii.536(74; 537, note 6; 538(131,142
 Clarke, David, i.276(97
 Clarke, Philip, i.276(101
 Clarrett, iii.126(49
 clean, kept, in youth, ii.544(508
 Cleves, i.317
 Clifford, Lord, i.226(272
Cloris, ii.21; 22(1; 23(21
 Cloudeslee, William of, iii.76(11; 78(44, 49,68, *passim*
Cloudeslee, Younge, iii.102
 Clough, Lord, ii.207(88
 Clymm of the Cloughe, iii.76(10; 82(157
 Clutton, Sir Robert of, iii.245(262
 Clyfton, Sir G., iii.246(291
 Cobham, Lord, i.330(279
 Cockle, Sir John, ii.155(184
 Codner, Lord Grey of, iii.244(237
 Cœur de Lion, Richard, i.282(278; 283(301; 284(338; 285(349; iii.173(81
 Colbrand, ii.533
 Colebrande, Guy and, ii.509
 Colbronde, Lunsford, ii.40(7; 41(17; 42(39,43
 Coleburne, Sir John, iii.247(327
 collar, the sign of a gentleman, i.249(35; 250(61; the sign of knighthood, ii.590(809
 collar: after a collar comes a rope, ii.590(815
 Collen brand, i.68(167; 69(171,179, sword from Cologne
Come, Come, Come, ii.52
Come my dainty doxeys iii.313
Come pretty Wanton, iii.385
 Comfort, Sir, iii.60(100
 Compton, i.321(77
 Confessor, Edward the, his laws, iii.155(79
 Conqueror, William the, iii.151
Conscience, ii.174
 Conscience, ii.184(21; 185(38; 186 49,65
 Conscience, Court of, ii.187(75
 Constable, Cecil's spy, i.294
 Constable, Sir Marmaduke, iii.246(281
 Constantine, Emperor of Rome, ii.368(729
 Constantine, king of England, i.423(14; dies, i.424(53
 Conway, Sir Robert, iii.245(269
 Conyers, Sir William, iii.246(283; 257(611
 Cooke, ii.41(10
 Coplande, John of, ii.198(206
 'coq-à-l'âne,' the French, i.241
Coridon, iii.530
 Cornelius Agrippa, ii.525 (col. 1

DAN

Cornwall, Duke of, iii.438(31
 Cornwall, King of, i.63(54,62
 Cornwall, traditions of Arthur in, i.403
 Cornwayle, the Erl of, one of Arthur's council, i.157(399
 Corydon, iii.307(64
 County Palatine, i.280(206
 courtesy, boys sent to school to learn, i.182(4
 courtesy taught to boys, ii.96(468. See *Lord of Learne*, &c.
 courtiers are jolly and needy, ii.567(239; 568(275-6
 Coventry, i.40(29; 293; ii.40(5; 193(68; 201(8; 240(59; iii.475(3
 Craddockes Lady, the only faithful one in Arthur's Court, ii.308(99; 309(129; 310(171; 311(189
 cranes for supper, ii.576(466
 Craven, Skipton in, i.223(223
 Crespy, i.318
Cressus, iii.301
 Cressus, iii.301(1; 302(11, *Cressida*
 Cressy, Battle of, ii.200(255
 criticism, historical, very poor stuff, in John Dane's opinion, ii.524
Cromwell Thomas Lord, fragment of a Ballad on, i.127
 cross, keeps fiends out of a house, i.446(761; 447(803
 cross, headless, fight at the, i.310(254,266, (272
 cuckolds' horns, ii.402, note 2
 Crumbocke, cow, ii.322(7; 323(17
 -eth for -tch, i.23(73, &c.
 Culerton, ii.205(36
 Cumbermeare, the Abbey of, i.280(217
 Cunninge, Sir, iii.60(103
 Cupid, ii.28(20; iii.305(25; 389(2
 curlews for supper, ii.576(465
 Curtesye, Sir, iii.60(103
 Cuthbert's banner, St., i.226(271
 Cynthus, ii.54(54
 Cyprus Ile, i.283(302
 Cythera, iii.306(35

d and th, changes of, ii.411,412 notes
 Dacre, Edward, i.299,300
 Dacre, Leonard, i.295
 Dacres, Lord, i.220(152; 229(331; 231(371; iii.244(247; 247(313; 361(127
 Dade, an almanack-maker, ii.25(9
 Dakers, Lord, i.306(155; 307(169
 Damiatte, i.289(468
 Danyatte, i.288(451
 Damietta, siege of, i.268
 Dancastr (Doncaster), Sir Roger of, i.p. 51

DAN

dancing, men, ii.579
 Dane, Sir, i.326(185)
 Danibus, the vgly gyant, i.499(45)
 Daniel, ii.532(160)
 Danish axe, i.68(169; ii.512; 540(376)
 Danish giant Colbrand, ii.528(40)
 Danyell, iii.74(424)
 Darby, Earl of, i.129(9; 275(51; 290(506;
 319(39; 320(61, &c. See *Derby*
 Darby, the dear Earl, i.215(66)
 Darbyshire, i.231(382)
Darkesome Cell, iii.123
 Darlington, i.293
 Darnall, i.290(514)
 David, King, iii.170(16)
 David, iii.70(332; 74(424)
 David of the Scotch royal line, i.290(501)
 David of Scotland, iii.459(2)
 dead, death, i.382(885)
Death and Liffe, iii.49
 Degrabell, son of Eglamore and Christabell,
 ii.371(801; 377(972; his wedding with
 his own mother Christabell, 380(1065,
 and then with Arnada, ii.388(1275)
Degree, Sir, iii.16
 Degree, Sir, iii.20(5; 26(212, passim. A
Degarer would no doubt be formed from
 a Low-Latin *devagari*, as *degaster* from
devastare
 Delacrese, the abbey of, i.289(480)
 Delamere Forest, ii.61(87)
 Delamont, Sir, i.218(212, La Mothe-Fé-
 nelon
 Denbigh, i.282(267)
 Denise, St., ii.418(69)
 Denmarke, i.499(33)
 Denys, ii.41(10)
 Derby, Earl of, i.329(246; 335(388; iii.
 322(20; 355(863; 357(917; 358
 (931; 363(1071; 326(128; 327(154;
 328(182; 331(272; 339(464; 343(576;
 346(643. See *Darby*
 Derby, the dear Earl of, i.212(10)
 Derbyshire, ii.192(51)
 Derngill, wife of John Balliol, i.290(520)
 Devoushire, iii.487(6; 489(50)
 Diana, iii.305(17)
 Dido, iii.261(1, 9, 11, 19; 262(21, 29; 502
 (11; 503(36; 504(55, 68; 505(101)
 Dieulacres Abbey, i.265(271; 289(480)
 Dighton, James, iii.165(61)
 Diomede, iii.302(18)
 Disaware, the Lord of Learne's name
 changed to, i.186(115; 189(201; 191
 (245)
 Disconyus, Sir Lybius, iii.278(33)
 Dodcott, i.280(225)
 Dodsley, Robert, ii.279

EAG

dog and a bell lead a blind beggar, ii.283(74)
 Dogstarr, iii.125(27)
 Don John of Austria, i.296; 304(81;
 his arms, and his way of brushing his
 hair, i.303, note ⁴
 Dorchester, ii.41(26)
 Douglas (*temp.* James VI.), i.137(9)
 Douglas, ii.193(53; 219(21)
 Douglas, Earl, ii.7(15; 8(43, 49; 9(69; 9(79;
 11(110; 12(137, 143, 151, passim
 Douglas, James, ii.194(103; 195(109, &c.
 Douglas, Mary, ii.219(26)
 Douglas, William, ii.193(73; 194(85; 223
 (132, 153; 224(178; 225(198, 203
 Dove, ii.25(9)
 Dover, i.215(63)
 Dover, besieged by the Dauphin Louis, i.
 287(408)
 Dover Castle, iii.152(17)
 Dractons-Borrow, i.83(80)
 dragon, near Rome, Eglamore's fight with,
 ii.366-7
 dragons, the two under Vortiger's castle, i.
 467(1465 to 470(1549)
 drink, stopping to, in the middle of a fight,
 ii.536
 driven to a book, i.155(330; sworn as a
 jury
Drowning of Henery I. his children, the,
 iii.156
 drunk, girl getting at the ale, i.446(773)
 Drurye, Sir William, ii.221(91)
 dryd, ii.533(180; tried?
 Dudley, Lord, i.276(108)
 Duke Charles, iii.173(85)
 Duke of France, i.188(161)
 Duke William, iii.156(13)
 Dulake, Sir Lancelot, ii.66(218; iii.278(23)
 Dulake, Sir Lancelott of, iii.120(4; 121(41.
 See *Lancelot*.
 Dulcina, iii.172(66)
 Dun bull, the Neville crest, i.304(95)
 Dun Bull, the Earl of Westmoreland's crest,
 ii.214(118; 216(156)
 Dun Cow of Dunsmore Heath, ii.201(11)
 Dunsmore Heath, ii.201(9)
 Durham, i.254(11; i.293; ii.195(110, 113;
 196(153, 157; 197(170; 200(253)
 Durham, Bishop of, ii.196(147; 197(165,
 173, 185, 189; 564(178; iii.354(853)
Durham Feilde, ii.190
 Dutton, i.326(185)
 Duzeper, ii.173(167)
 Dyana, iii.125(21)
 eagle of the Stanleys, i.21; iii.340(535)
 Eagle an (Lord Derby), iii.190(21)

EAR

- Earl Douglas, ii.7(15; 8(43, 49; 9(69; 9(79; 11(110; 12(137, 143, 151, passim
 Earl of Mars, iii.217(37; 221(151; 222(159; 223(205; 225(239; 259(261; 228(339,341; 229(349,351,359
 Earl Percy, ii.7(6,17; 9(55,74; 10(84, 85,91; 11(129; 12(137,148,149, passim 196(155; 210(13
Earle of Westmorlande, i.292
Earle Bodwell, ii 260
Earles off Chester, i.258
 Eaton Water, i.243(5
 Echo, iii.306(42
 Edinburgh, i.139(72; ii.15(225; iii.223(189, 201; 495(13; 496(32, 39, 51
 Edinburgh, i.177(44
 Edinburgh Castle, ii 220(52
 Edinburgh, Sir Richard of, ii.193(61
 Edmond, King of Sattin, ii.362(582
Edom o' Gordon or Captaine Carre, i.79
 Edward the Confessor's laws, iii.155(79
 Edward I., i.291(530
 Edward I., Longshanks, ii.557 12; 558(17; and all through *John de Reeue*, ii.557; 594(910
 Edward III., ii.191(5; 569(293; iii.173(83; 236(26; 459(1
Edward the third, iii.457
 Edward IV., ii.255(7; iii.163(2
Edward the ffourth his sonnes, the murthing of, iii.162
 Edward VI., i.125(2; iii.167(110
 Egace, or Sir Eger, i.354(24, &c.
Eger & Grine, i.341 (correct *Grine to Grime*, see ii.65, note 1)
 Egerton, descended from Philip Clarke, i.276(102
 Egerton, Sir John of, ii.14(190
 Egerton, Sir Raphe, i.320(53; 321(79; 334(374
 Egerton, Sir Rowland, i.337(441-5, 457; 338(473-8
 Egil, ii.519
 Eginion ap David, i.276(91
Eglamore, ii.338
 Eglintone, Lord, i.352
 Egrabell, Sir, i.75(1; 76(37
 Egramye or Egranye, Sir, i.371(554-5; 372(565
 Egypt, King Marmaduke of, ii.372 827; 373(851
 Ehanfewe, Herré, iii.540, note 1
 Elderton, the ballad-writer, i.135
 Eldridge hill, iii.6(62; 9(112
 Eldridge, King, the, iii.6(66; 8(102; 9(116, passim
 Elinor, Queen, i.168(48; 166(5

FES

- Elizabeth of Yorkshire, Henry VII's queen, ii.313(35
 Elizabeth, Queen, i.292; 300(6; ii.317(127, 134; iii.167(122
Ell, the Child of, i.132
 Ellen (& Childe Waters), ii.272(13, &c.
 Ellen, see Hellen
 Elliots, the, i.294
 Ely, the Bishop of, i.223(213
 Emanuell, iii.272(9
 Emperor, an, wanted for a correct wedding, ii.338(1269, and note
 Emperor of Greece, ii.393(2
 Emperor of Rome, ii.367(710
 Emyas, Gray-Steele's daughter, marries Pallyas, i.399(1438; and has 3 children, 400(1462
 England, formerly Mikle Brittain, i.425(82
Englande, the rose of, iii.187
 Erkyin, i.372(557; Egeking, i.373(593; 386(1005; Sir Egramye's sword, i.387(1045
 Esau, iii.70(329
 Escalberd, Arthur's sword, i.505(206; is caught by a hand and an arm, i.506(228
 Essex, Erle of, iii.454(9; 455(33
 Estmere, our King, ii 297(11; same as Ardine, 297(16
 Estrilde, iii.438(29-37; 439(60, 62; 488(26, 34, 43
 Ethelwold, iii.490(101
 Euphemian, ii.525-6
 Eve, iii.70(326; 170(11
 Ewaine, Sir, ii.425(460; 426(268; iii.278(25
 Exeter, Bishop of, iii.482(83
 Exeter, Duke of, iii.534(27; 538(124
 eyes, grey, ii.450(949

Faine wolde I change, ii.46
 faire words make fooles faire, ii.224(179; 225(187
 Fairfax's Tasso; Lane on, in 1617; ii.525, col. 2
 Fairy Queen, ii.303
Fall of Princes, the, iii. 168
 Farnose, Alexander, i.515
 Fawne, Sir Alexander, iii.247(316
 Felix, Dame, ii.530(89
 Felton, Jacke, ii.145(8
 Felys, Guy's wife, ii.515
 fennel hangs green in June, ii.463(1322
 Feragus, King, ii.398(152
 Ferdinando, King of Spayne, ii.316(101
 Fernherst, i.294
 Ferrers, Lord, iii.257(605; 349(731
 Festus, iii.272(1

FIE

fiends of the air who can beget children on women, i.440, 447
 finger, little, a token of victory, i.75(6; i.77(43; cut off by the victor, i.360(192, 196; 367(422, 424; 368(457; 371(536
 Fitton of Gawsworth, i.326(189
 Fitzhugh, Lord, iii.244(245,
 Fitzhugh, Robert, Baron of Malpas, i. 276(85
 Fitz-Norman, Robert, i.274(41
 Fitzwater, Lord, i.329(527; 230(277
 Fitzwilliam, at Flodden, i.229(342
 Fitzwilliams, Lords, ii.196(163; 197(179
 Flanders, Earl of, ii.449(131
 Flanders files, ii.208(124
 Flatting Castle, ii.61(86
 Flint, i.282(267
 Flodden, battle of, i.202, 206, 228-34
Flodden Feilde, i.313
 Flora, iii.157(25; 306(38
 Florimel, girdle of, ii.303
 Fœlix, Guy's wife, ii.543(472, 481; 544(492; 546(537; 547(563; 548(590-608
 folio, wrongly applied to a leaf of a MS. instead of two pages spread open, i.14, note 3
 Fontaines abey, i.27(15
 Forbidden Country, the, Gray Steele's land, i.357(102; 347, 350; i.383(940
 forest, a night in the, ii.437(596-606
 Forest of Delamere, ii.61(87
 fornication or adultery; burying alive was the old English punishment for, i.442(654-61
 Forrest, Miles, iii.165(61
 forty days, i.77(54; i.170(93, the time for grace
 forty days' feast, ii.453(1053; 498, 499
 forty days' wedding feast, ii.388(1281
 Foster, Sir John, ii.222(107
 fowl, the fairest that ever flew; the eagle of the Stanleys, i.223(231
 Fox, his Martyres, iii.272(16
 France, boy sent into, to learn languages, i.183(40
 France, King of, ii.291(8; 393(4; 395(58; 396(97; iii.350(749
 Franciscan friars' short frocks, i.27, note 1; 29, note 1
 French horses, poor ones, ii.293
 Frenchmen feared Henry VII., i.214(39, and Henry VIII., i.214(51
 friendship of sworn brethren, i.345
 Froland, i.499(43, Frolo
 fuel scarce, ii.565(194
 Fullshow, i.229(347, I think, *Walshaw*, Brockie

GIL

Fundus, King, i.372(560
 Fyenys, ii.41(12
 gabs made by Charlemagne, &c., i.p.59
 Gaines, iii.173(83
 Gaion, Sir, i.145(35
 Galloway, i.219(133; iii.70(340
 Galloway, Allen, Lord of, i.290(518
 Galloway, traditions of Arthur in, i.403
 Gallya, now called France, i.499(41
 Gamor, Sir, i.492(2256
 Ganselo, iii.508(15, 29; 509(42, 61; 510(87, 95, *passim*
 Gare-, Erle, i.377(730, 743; 393(1239; 398(1398
 Garrett, Sir, i.113(121; i.145(41, Gareth
 Garsed, Jamie, i.329(241; 331(303; 333(335
 Garnwicke, i.396(1346
 Gasconie, iii.173(83
 Gawaine, i.61(1; 66(136; 67(144; 155(354; 157(421; dies, i.500(73; appears to Arthur, i.502(103; ii.60(46, 64; 61(70; 64(164; 65(182, 188, 196; 66(223; 67(236, 245, 254, 258; ii.68(259, 268; 69(293, 298; 70(321, 338; 71(362; 72(370, 382; 73(403, 412, 416, 420; 74(421, 429, 433; 75(455, 459, 461, 470; 76(478; 76(500; 77(509, Lybius, his bastard, ii.405; teaches Lybius, ii.419(94; 423(194; 425(257; 457(1164; 479(1754; 494(2173; blesses Lybius, his son, ii.498; iii.70(340; 172(75; 277(7; 278(28; 279(38; 280(71, 83; 281(115, 124; 282(133, 155; 285(221; 289(335
 Gawaine & the Turke, i.90
 Gawaine; Sir R. Lee descended from, i.43(84
 Gawaine, the Marriage of, i.103
 Gawsworth, Fitton of, i.326(189
 Geffelett, Sir, ii.472(1566; 474(1621; 483(1868
 Gefferon, or Giffon la Fraudens ii.445(802; 444(782, 792; 445(823 to 453(1035
 Genches, Dame, ii.515
Gentle Heardsman, iii.524
 gentles' blood not to be set with bondmen's, ii.573(385. See Introduction to *Glasgerion*, ii.247-8; 249(79, & *Thomas of Potte*
 Geoffrey's (Henry the Second's son's) widow, i.282(259; i.264
 Gerard of Cornwall, or Cornubyece, ii.511, 521, col. 2
 Gerrard, Sir Thomas, i.230(360
 Gesta Romanorum, ii.303
 Gibcliffe or Guycliffe, ii.516
 Gilboa, iii.70(331

GIL

Gildas, i.402, 404
 Gildas, Life of, i.402, 404
 Gilford Greene, iii 140(90; 142(158; 143
 (186; 146(268
 ginger, powder of, in wine, ii.579(522
 Ginglaine, Gawaine's bastard, ii.416(7, 13,
 32; christened Lybius Disconius by
 Arthur, ii.418(80
 Ginnye his Filly, ii.401(12
 Giraldus Cambrensis on Arthur's tomb,
 i.402
Gisborne, Guye of, ii.227
 Glanville, Randle, i.267
 Glasenburye, i.496(2372; ii.417(41, Glas-
 tonbury
Glasgerion, i. 246
 Glendower, Bolton in, i.224(238
 Glenkindie, i.246(3
 Gloster, Erle of, i.279(193; ii 564(179; iii.
 539(171
 Gloucester, ii.146(32
 Gloucester, Richard Duke of, iii.163(5; 164
 (41; 165(57
 Glyn, John, i.316
 go, suck thy dame, ii.424(230
 God before, iii 30(304, God going before,
 God giving his aid
 gods forbott, i.18(59, see note 1; 30(64;
 393(1230
 Godfrey of Bullen, iii. 171(41
 Godiva, iii. 475(13
 gold: *Prov.* a man may buy gold too dear,
 i.187(156
 gold wire likened to a girl's cheeks, i.148
 (131; to her hair, ii.450(94, &c; both
 red
 Golyas, iii.170(16
 Gordon, iii.413(205, 212, 216
 Gordon's Lute-Book, i.343
 Gornordine, the sowdan, i.376(691, 700, 704
 Gorwaine, Sir Terry of, ii.527(26
 Gotheland, i.499(35
 Gower's Story of Florent, i.104(7
 grass-green soothing drink, Looselain's
 wonderful one, i.363(291
 Gray, Sir John the, iii.245(273
 Gray Steil, i.342-3; i.352
 Gray Steele, Sir, i.365(345,356; 377(737;
 381(864; 382(890; described 384(953;
 his fight with Sir Grime, i.385 8, & death,
 388(1088
 Graystocke, Lord, iii 245(257
Great or Proude, iii.391
 Grecian Emperor, i. 499(39
 Greycya, iii.504(80
 Greycyan land, the, ii.393(1
 Greekes sea, i 372(561
 Green Knight, the; Sir Bredbeddle, i.70

HAR

(213, 221; ii.56; 62(109; 65(175, 187,
 193; 66(211; 67(248; 71(340, 361;
 73(415; 74(442; 75(451; 77)511; iii.
 278(27; 279(38
 Greene Chappell, the, ii.64(149; 65(198;
 67(233; 69(287; 71(343; 75(448; 76
 (484; 77(503
 Greenham, iii.273(40
 Gresley, Johannes, ii.523, col. 1
 Griffine, Sir, i. 145(41
 Grime, Sir, Lord of Garwicke, i.354(20
 Grime, his fight with Sir Gray Steele, i.
 385-9
 Grissell, iii 424(23, 26; 425(55, *passim*
 Groby, Lord Ferrers of, iii. 244(242
 Gromer, Sir i.102(320, 329
 Gromersomer, Sir i.106(62; 107(73
 Guenevere, Queen, i.61(5; 105(3; 115(592;
 118(207; desires Lambwell's love, i.152
 (236, 249; 159(487; 500(65; ii.59(17;
 305(15; 306(33; 309(131
 Guendoline, Queen, iii. 438(25, 41; 439
 (55, 64
 Guilpin quoted, i.181
 Gunild or Gurder, i.166(1
 Gurnon (or Gernon), Randulphe, 3rd Earl
 of Chester, i.278(157
Guye & Amarant, ii. 136
Guy & Colebrande, ii.509
Guy & Phillis, ii.201.608
 Guy of Lusignan, i. 283(287
 Guy of Warwick, ii.136(1, &c.; 137(31,
 &c.; 138(50, &c.; 139(80; 140(133;
 141(151, &c.; 143(194; 231(85, &c.;
 232(115; 233(121, &c.; 234(139, &c.;
 235(175, &c.; iii.171(44
Guye of Gisborne, ii.227
 Gyfre my knave, i.144
 Gyle, St., sworn by, ii.438(618; 445(807
 Gyles, Sir, i.235(12; 239(87, 90
 Gynye, i.339(498, Guisnes

 Haion, Sir, i.151(222; 155(254; 160(504
 hair, like gold wire, ii.450(944
 Hale, Archdeacon, his opluion on *John de*
Reeve, ii.556-7
 Half-moon, the Earl of Northumberland's
 badge, ii 214(122
 Halton, Nigel of, i.274(25
 Hambleton, James, iii.413(217
 Hambleton, Lord of, ii.193(19
 hand, holding up the as a pledge, ii.574
 (414
 Hannibal, iii.170(29
 Hans, town, i.339(498
 Harbyetowne, iii.142(140
 Harcliffe, Sir James, ii.14(192

HAR

- Harcliffe, Sir Robert, ii.14(191)
 Harcliffe, Sir Roger Heuer of, ii.15(205)
 Harcliffe, Sir William, ii.14(191)
 Harding or Hawardin Castle, i.275(53)
 Harebottle, Sir Ralph, iii.245(258)
 Harfleete (Harffleur), ii.167(39)
 Harley Woods, ii.223(158)
 Harold, i.273(1)
 Harrington, Sir James, iii.247(332)
 Harrington, Sir Robert, iii.248(333)
 Harrington, Sir William, iii.354(859; 360
 (992, 1005; 362(1036
 Harry, King, i.130(4)
 Harry, King, the wife of Queen Elinor, i.
 173(199)
 Hartlepool, i.294
 hart's head, iii.194(113)
 Harwich, ii.482(67)
 Haryngton, Lord, iii.538(136)
 Hassall, the hind, i.330(281)
 Hastings, Henry, i.291(526)
 Hattley, Sir Henry, iii. 245(268)
 Hattersey, iii.250(412)
 Hauforde, i.229(345; ? Holford
 Hawarde, Sir Edmond, i.315
 Hawarde, Thomas, Duke of Northfolk, at
 Flodden, i.208, note 1
 head-gear, a girl's, ii.330(65)
 Hearne (Heron) the bastard, i.220(161)
 Hector; mere historians may doubt of him,
 ii.524
 Hector of Troy, ii.225(207; iii.70(338; 170
 (33
Hee is a ffoole, iii.386
 Helen (daughter of the King of Hungary),
 ii.102(648; 107(772; 135(1587
 Hellen, iii.299(101)
 Hellen, the maiden of the Lady of Sinadone,
 ii.420(121; 422(157; 424(220; 425
 (238; 427(297; 433(478; 437(589;
 439(658; 443(757; 447(871; 448(895;
 454(1060; 455(1084; 458(1180; 461
 1279; 464(1334; 472(1544; 473(1588;
 479(1771
 Hellespont, iii.297(17,36 *passim*
 Henault, Sir John, iii.481(46
Henry I. his children, the Drowning of, iii.
 156
 Henry I., iii.156(1)
 Henry II., ii.148(1)
 Henry III. crowned (at Glo'ster Oct. 28,
 1216), i.287(420)
 Henry V., ii.167(27; iii.173(84; 534(11
 Henry V., his siege of Rouen, iii.532
 Henry VI., ii.236(20; 323(63
 Henry VII., his landing at Milford, i.212(7;
 his reign, i.214(36; crowned at Bosworth,
 iii.166(104

HON

- Henry VII., ii.312; iii.236(8,24; 237(34;
 251(428,440,449
 Henry VIII., his expedition into France in
 1513, i.200; in 1513 and 1544, i.317-18
 Henry VIII., i. 214(49; his invasion of
 France and siege of Turenne, i.215-16
 Henry VIII., ii.316(115 to 317(128; iii.166
 (107; 173(91; 263(47; 403(3; 404(3
passim
 Henry, King of England, i.41(52; i.43(78,
 &c.; ii.16(233
 Heraud, tutor of Guy's son, ii.520
 Hercules, iii.170(20; 306(51
 Hereford, iii.484(127,132,145
Hereford and Norfolk, ii.238
 Hereford, Bp. of, i.43(85; i.45(114
 Hereford, Duke of, ii.238(5; 239(11, &c.;
 240(38, &c.; 241(74, &c.
 Herefordshire and Morris-dancers, i.38
 Heremus, i.418 10; may be Snowdon, or
 any other desolate mountain. The word
 seems to be Greek: *Eremos*, desert.—
 Brockie
 Herlott, i.273(7; Arlotta, William the Con-
 queror's mother
 Hermes, iii.307(79
 Herne, Sir Roger, iii.247(331
 Hero, iii.297(24,32,37,43, *passim*
Hero and Leander, iii.295
 Herod, King, iii.171(53
 herons for supper, ii.576(466
 hert (hart), Twety on the, ii.351, note 1
 Heuer, Sir Roger, ii.15(205)
 Hickathrift, ii.517
 High Peak, ii.192(51
 Hind, Sir, iii.60(101
 Hippeau, M., his edition of *Le Bel Inconnu*,
 ii.406; of *Lybeaus Disconius*, ii.412
 Hippon, iii.346(657
 historian, the mere, is most malignant to-
 ward the Poet historical, ii.524, col.1-2
 Hobby Noble, ii.204(20; 205(24, &c.; 206
 (62; 207(96; 208(108, &c.; 209(136,
 &c. See Notes to vol. ii.
 Hobkin long, ii.575(422
 Hob of the Lath, ii.578(512; 579(527,
 537; 580(542; 583(624; 593(896
 Hodgkin, long, ii.578(512; 583(624; 584
 (641,649; 543(896
 Holcroft, iii.212(41
Hollowe me Fancy, ii.30
 Holt, Castle of, iii.248(358
 Holy Ghost, the inspirer of learning, i.182
 (12
 Holy Land, i.284(322; ii.376(945; iii.243
 (209; 471(7
 homemade brown, a hood of, ii.569(283
 Honor, Sir, iii.60(104

HOP

Hope, Sir, iii.60(101)
 Hope Castle, i.275(53)
 Hope, the manor of, i.328
 Hopedale, i.328(235)
 Horn and Rinnild, ii.303,304
 horn, the testing, ii.301-2
 horn that no Cuckold can drink from without
 spilling, ii.311(179; ii.301
 horne and lease, i.338(470, ? horn and the
 lace or cord to it
 horns, cuckolds', ii.402(33, note
 Horrtton, Sir John, iii.247(310)
 Horseley, iii.413(211, 224, passim
 Horsley, Sir Oliver, iii.245(263)
 Horsley, William, iii.406(56, 57
 Horswood, iii.492(169)
 Horton, Sir Richard, iii.246(286)
How fayre she be, ii.50
 Howard, Lord, iii.454(7; 408(97; 409
 (117; 411(162, passim
 Howard, Lord Charles, iii.405(29, 37; 406
 (66; 407(73
 Howard, Lord Thomas, leads the van at
 Flodden, i.225(262
 Howard, Sir Edmund, i.225(264; i.205
 Howards, the, i.313
 Howbrame town, ii.209(140
 Howbrame Wood, ii.206(64; 209(148
Hugh Spencer, ii.290
 Hugo, King of Constantinople, i.59,60
 Humber, King, iii.437(1,6,10,11
 Hume, Lord, i.294; 301(27, 35; ii.220(53
 Hungary, ii.94(404; 104(689; 124(1286;
 127(1354; 133(1537; iii.263(6
 Hungary, King of, ii.102(644
 Hunsden, Lord, ii.221(87; 222(123
 Hunston, Lord, i.295
 Hunt, Henry, iii.407(77, 81; 408(101,
 passim
 Hunting of the Gods, iii.303
 Huntingdon, Earl of, i.282(265; iii.539
 (169
 Huntingdon, Sir John, iii.246(299
 Huntley, Lord, i.126(25
 Huon, Sir, i.145(35; 159(463. See *Haion*
 Huon of Bordeaux, iii.171(45
 Hurlstean, S r John, iii.247(330
 Hutton Castle, ii.76(494
 Hymen, iii.305(33

I am iii.529

I have a loue thats faire, i.255

I live where I loue, ii.325

Ignobytes, iii.306(49

Ile dore, ii.464(1336; 465(1377; the
 Golden Isle

In olde times paste, iii.119

JOH

In the Dayes of Olde, iii.441
 increase and waning of a knight's strength,
 i.382(891-4
 Inde, silk of, i.384(973
 Ingleby, Isabel, i.299
 Inglewood Forest, i.106(16; i.109(217
 inn, at a burgess's house, i.378(763; i.390
 (1136
 Innocent III., i.285(371; 286(382
 Ireland, i.499(33
 Irish knife, ii.234(167; 236(219
 Iron, or Irowne, ii.481(1804, 1807; 486
 (1947 to 491(2091
 Ironside, Sir, i.146(43, iii.278(35, 37; 279
 (49
 Isabel, Queen, iii.480(9
 Isace, iii.74(423
 Isace, iii.70(329
 Isarell, the King of, ii.370(782; 377(960;
 378(993
 Iseland, i.499(35
 Italian singers, i.180

 Jack or Jill, ii.585 676
 Jacob, iii.70(328
 Jame. St., ii.418(61, 76; 432(442; 439
 (643; 442(718
 James IV., Lamentation of, i.211; death
 of, i.208
 James IV., i.342; i.231(373
 James V. i.343
 James VI. of Scotland and I. of England,
 i.135; i.130(12,15; saved by Browne,
 ii.267; ii.315(78; 317(149; iii.167
 (123
 James, King of Scotland, ii.16(229
 Jason, iii.171(49
 Jehosaphat, Valley of, iii.373(46
 Jerusalem, i.283(290; 288(444; 289(466;
 ii.83(137; iii.72(368; 75(457; 534(16
 Jesu, iii.70(345; 72(368; 75(457
 Jesus leeve, ii.150(176, by dear Jesus!
 Jesus; the Devil's scheme to upset his re-
 demption for man, i.441
 Jew, hard-hearted, i.184(64
Jigge, A, ii.334: Ital. *contadinella*. a yongue
 or pretty country wench. Also country
 songes or *giggas*. Florio
 Joan, Pope, ii.402(52
 Jockye, Lord, iii.141(122; 142(134
John a Side, ii.203
 John-a-Side, i.204(2,15,23; 206(71; 207
 (98 &c.; 208(113 &c.; 209(139 &c.
John De Reeue, ii.550. See "Bondman"
 Essay in vol. ii.
 John, King, and the Bishop of Canterbury,
 i.508(514

JOH

- John, King, dies (17 Oct. 1216) i.287 (410)
 John, Little, i.40(35). See *Little John*
 John of the Scales, i.175(11, &c.)
 John Stewards wiffe, ii.502(9; 503(37; 505 (107; 506(113)
 John's reign, King, i.285(362 to 287(410
 Jonathan, iii.70(331
 Joppa, i.283(290
 Jordan, ii.85(136; 425(251
 Joseph, iii.70(328
 Josua, iii.70(328
 Josua, Duke, iii.170(17, 21
 Jove, ii.29(27; iii.261(16; 307(78, 82
 Jowler, iii.126(47
 Judicium Dei, the, i.166(11
 Julius Cæsar, iii.171(59
 Julius Machabeus, iii.171(43
 Juno, ii.29(26; iii.306(39
 Jury, i.289(468,470, Judæa
 Justice Cell, ii.146(31
- Kahames, William of, i.261
 Katherine, Princess of Wales, ii.316(103
 Katherine, Princess, ii.173(169,179
 Katherine, Queen, her letters to Hen. VIII. and Wolsey after Flodden, i.316,17
 Katherine, Quene, i.37
 Kay of Kaynes, a Northern Knight, i.376 (707
 Kay, Sir, i.91(20; ii.64(154,160; iii.277 (22; 280(71,77; 281(103,119,128; 282 (147; 286(249
 Kay, that crabbed Knight, i.145(37
 Kay's lady is faithless, ii.307
 Keeglye, Sir Henry, i.230(359
 Kelsall Wood, i.244(25
 Kent, iii.152(15; 153(28
 Kent, Earl of, iii.244(227
 Ker, Sir Thomas, i.294
 kerchers of silke, ii.566(226
 Kester (Stewart), ii.224(221
 Kevelocke, Hugh, 5th Earl of Chester, i.281(238
 Kighlye, i.325
 Killingworth, ii.193(58
 Kinderton, the Baron of, i.229(344; 277 (126; 326(187
King Arthur and the King of Cornwall, i.59
 King Arthur, iii.172(73). See *Arthur*
 King Edgar, iii.487(1, 21
 King Edward II., iii.480(8; 482(73
King Estmere, ii.200, note; Appendix ii.
 King Harry's hose, ii.324(49
King James and Browne, i.135
 King John and Abbot, ii.278, note
 King of Man, i.330(275

LAN

- Kinge Adler*, ii.296
Kinge and Miller, ii.147
Kinge Arthur's Death, i.497
Kinge Edgar, iii.485
Kinge James and Browne, i.135
Kinge John and Bishope, i.508
 King's, the, fraternizing with the commonalty, ii.147,550; iii. "The Pore Man and the Kinge."
 Kirion the Pale, i.246
 kirtle of silk, ii.329(35,37,41
 kiss, the Lady of Sinadone's, ii.422, note 6; 493(2150
 kiss to make up a quarrel, ii.592(864
 knee, to fall upon the, before a lord or lady, i.189(192, note 2
 Knight, the Green, iii.278(27
 Knighton's Chronicle quoted, ii.512
 Knowsley, i.327(213
- lace of silk, the magic, ii.73(397; 74(427; 76(479
 Lacys' name, i.274(26
 ladies' bedchambers, knights going to, ii.365(643
 ladies cutting silk and sewing, ii.298(72; 299(76
 ladies healing the wounded, ii.368(737
 ladies, old tests of their frailty, ii.301-4
 lady, Geffron's beautiful one described, ii.449(931-54; Lambwell's, i.148; Lady Life, iii.
 Lady Bessye, iii.322(14
Ladye Bessye, iii.319
 Lady Butler, iii.213(57
 Lady Gray, iii.214(100
 Lady Mary, iii.157(18
 Ladye, our, ii.274(64
Ladyes ffall, ii.246
 Lamberd, Sir, ii.473(1595; 475(1640 to 483(1861; 496(2207; 497(2237
Lambwell, Sir, i.142. As to his liberality, cp. *Qui vient est beau, qui apporte encore plus beau*: Prov. No man's esteemed so faire as he that comes full-handed.—Cot. For the Oxford fragments of the old printed edition, see Appendix to vol. i.
 Lambwell, Sir David, ii.15(207
 Lancashire, ii.557(8
 Lancashire and Cheshire, i.319(37; 320 (49,57,63; 322(111; i.333(341,349; they have done the deed, i.334(368-70, but see, i.207-8; i.335(391; i.340(508
 Lancashire Song, i.241
 Lancaster, i.327(205; iii.243(203
 Lancelot, i.112(116; i.166; i.501(75; 502(109; ii.451(1002; iii.70(339

LAN

Lancelott of Dulake, iii.120(4; 121(41; iii.172(76
 Lancelot, the Romance of, ii.303
 Landreci, i.317
 Lane, John, address to the Reader on Guy of Warwick, ii.521-5
 Langton Stephen, i.285(368; 286(376
 Latham, Lord Derby's place, i.325(159; i.327(209; iii.190(24; 248(347; 254(514; 324(70; 334(334,348; 352(805
 Latham gates, iii.334(350
 Latham of Lancashire, iii.359(974
 Laurence, John, of Lancashire, i.230(348
 Lauinian, iii.311(1
Lauinian Shore, The, iii.308
 Layamon, i.410
 Layston, ii.146(24
 Lazarus, ii.532(158
 Lealand, the lusty, i.330(282
 Leander, iii.296(9 31,35,39, passim
 Lee, Peeter, iii.213(48
 Lee, Piers of, iii.214(91
 Lee, Sir Richard, i.43(81
 Leicester, i.214(33; ii.313(23; iii.258(641; 352(801; 362(1055
 Leo X., i.201, 209
Leoffricus, iii.473; 475(1
 Leonades, iii.70(339
 Lepanto, i.298
 Leslie, ii.34(13
 Lewis, i.287(429; the dauphin Louis, in 1217 A.D.
Libius Disconius, ii.404-499 .
 lice, ii.151(68, 71
 Lichfield, iii.249(390; 250(393, 397, 401; 357(923
 Liddesdale, i.294
 Liffe, Sir, iii.60(102
 Ligny, i.317
 liking, i.333(359, spouse, wife
 Likinge, Sir, iii.60(102
 Liles, Lord, iii.346(641
 Lin, the Mayor's daughter of, i.235(5
 Lincoln, i.261; 287(426; ii.193(71; siege of, i.279(173
 Lincoln, Earl of, i.282(265; iii.244(229
 Lincoln green, i.15(5; 36(15
 Lincolnshire, ii.193(71
 Lisle, Lord, iii.349(729
Listen, Jolly Gentlemen, i.130
 Little John, ii.228(13; 229(31; 230(55, &c.; 231(81, &c.; 236(207, &c.; 237(233; i.40(35
Little John, the Beggar, & the three Palmers, i.47
 Littlebury, i.275(74
 Locrin, King, iii.437(4; 438(37
 London, i.40(40; lovely London, i.42(73;

LYO

82(64; 319(31; 334(363; cp. Dunbar's poem, 'London! thowe arte of townes *a per se*,' *Reliq. Ant.* i. 205; Laing's Suppl. to Dunbar's Works
 London, i.501(78; ii.186(60; 191(23; 192(25; 194(87; 199(224, 225; 211(19; 215(137; 221(104; 502(13; 503(45; iii.152(14; 212(31; 213(57,61; 214(81; 322(19; 333(318; 338(435, 449, 455, 456; 341(532; 352(807; 408(95; 482(77, 82; 483(92; 497(53
 London gates, iii.333(319
 London, Mayor of, iii.483(85
 Lonelich, Herry's. *Merlin*, i.419
 Longborth, Battle of, i.401, 407
 Loospaine or Loosepine, Lady—first named at i.398(1406-7,—i.362(244; 378(772; 379, &c.; i.391, 394; marries Gryme, i.398(1406; has ten children, i.399(1458; i.348-50
Lord Barnard & the little Musgrave, i.119
 Lord Barnett or Barnard, i.121(17, 31
 Lord Gray, iii.164(21
Lord of Learne, i.180
 Lord Richard, iii.156(14
 Lord Percy, ii.218(16, 20; 225(197; 226(214
 Lord Rivers, iii.164(23
 Lord Strange, iii.324(69
 Lords, setter of the, iii.264(16
 Lothaine, Sir Lott of, iii.278(26
 Lough Leven, ii.221(103; 222(127; 223(146, 147; 224(163, 176
 Louis, son of Philip of France, invades England (21 May, 1216), i.287(405; quits it (11 Sept. 1217), i.287(434
 Loue, Sir, iii.60(102
 love-sick knight, ii.345(112
 Loxley, the river, i.38
 Loxly (Robin Hood), i.40(34; 43(93, 97
 Lucifer and the fallen Angels, i.440
 Lucifer, iii.73(416
 Lucina, ii. 305(13
 Lucyes, the Emperour of Roome, i.499(49
 Lukin, Duke of Gloster, i.504(161; 505(204; flings Escalberd into the river, 506(227; dies, 507(247
Lulla: Lulla, iii.387
 Lumley, Lord, i.226(270; for Sir Marmaduke Constable, i.205
 Lumley, Lord, iii.245(250
 Lunsford, Colbronde, ii.40(7; 41(17; 42(39, 43
 Lupus, Hugh, i.273(17; 278(158
 Lydgate's Guy of Warwick, ii.514, 520-1
 Lynet, the damoyssel, i.145, note ³
 Lyones, Dame, of the Castel Peryllous, i.145, note ³

MAB

- Mabam, ii.481(1803; 486(1947 to 491 (2083
 Mable, the book of, i.306(141; 309(243
 Mabinogion, the, i.407
 Machabeus, Julyus, iii.171(43
 Maclefeild, Sir Thomas, iii.247(324
 Mad Tom, iii.124(3
 Maelgoun, or Maglocunus, i. 402
 Major, Sir John, i.516(5
 Malador, Sir, i.492(2261
 Malbancke, Hugh, i.280(215,220
 Malbeddinge, Wm., Baron of Nantwich, i. 275(57
 Maleore's abstract of the French Arthur Romances, i.412,414
 Maligo sacke, iii.126(51
 Mallinere, Sir Richard the, iii.247(309
 Mallynere, Sir Thomas, iii.247(311
 Malpas, iii.347(676
 Malpas, Baron of, i.276(86
 Mamasse, giant Marrocke's brother, ii.358 (470
 Man, Isle of; giants in, i.88
 Man, the King of (Earl of Darby), i. 320 (48; 322(96; 95(129
 Manchester, iii.240(115; 324(76; 336(384, 385
 Mangerton, Lord, ii.204(8; 207(80; 209 (156
 Mangys, the giant as black as pitch, ii.464 (1342; 465(1378 to 470(1502
 Manners, Sir Richard, iii.245(267
 Mansfield, ii.153(126; iii.103(19; 105(76
 Mantle, the Boy and, ii.301
 Map, Walter, i.411
 Marc, King, ii.304
 Marchalle, Earl, iii.538(132
 Margaret, Queen, ii.80(10; 95(440; 134 (1555
 Margaret, daughter of Henry VII., ii.317 (115
 Margrett, ii.335(1
 Marke Anthony, ii.28(7.15
 Marke More, iii.131(89; 97(113; 132(123, passim
Marke more ffoole, iii.127
 Markenfield, Thomas, i.299; or Martin-field, i.301(14; 302(61; 310(269
 Marmaduke, King of Egypt, ii.373(851; 378(1008; 379(1040; 380(1049
 Marradas, Sir, ii. 120(1157; 121(1189; 122(1207; 123(1241; 126(1333; 130 (1463
 Marramiles, Sir, i.62(26; 71(240,244,250; 72(252
 Marrocke, Sir, the giant whom Eglamore kills, ii. 349(239; 351(294 to 353(341; 358(469

MER

- Marrocke, Sir (Triamore's steward), ii.81 (13; 82(51; 83(70, 79; 84(97; 86(158, 174; 87(196,205; 91(308,323; 92(328; 99(550; 100(569,585; 133(1528
 Marrocke, Sir, iii.277(21
 Marryan, Maid, i.40(33
 Mars, ii.54(41; iii.125(28-31; iii.303 (24
 Mars, the Earl of, iii.217(37; 221(151; 222(159; 223(205; 225(239; 259(261; 228(339,341; 229(349 351,359
 Martingsdale, iii.226(291; 228(324,325
Mary Aumbree, i.515. See Notes to vol. i.
 Mary, Queen, iii.167(113
 Mary, Queen of Scots, i.292
 Mary, Queen of France, and Duchess of Suffolk, ii.318(153
 Mass in the morning, ii.580(556, passim
 Massey, Hugh, i.277(117
 Massinger's 'Picture', ii.303
 Matreways, Johan de, iii.540, note 1
 Mattrevis, Lord, iii.244(234
 Maud, Queen, i.279(166,189
 Mandlin, iii.374(2; 375(14,33; 379(121; 379(125; 380(142,153,166; 381(173, 185
Maudline, iii.374
 Maurice, ii.34(23
 Maurydden, i.335(391; ? the nobles, grantees, or presidency, command
 Maximilian, i. 201
 Maximus, the Emperor, his conquests attributed to Arthur i.406
 Maxwell, Lord, i.219(140; i.222(191; for Lord Home, i.203
 Maxwell, Lord, ii.15(209
 Maya, iii.306(38
 Mayd Marryan, iii.120(7; 121(43
Mayd, the Nutt browne, iii.174
 Melampus, iii.306(49
 Meliagraunce, Sir, i.166
 Melton, Sir John of, iii.246(290
 Memering, i.166(2
 Menelaus, King, ii.401(22
 merchantmen going to London, ii.502(13 503(45
 Mercury, ii.53(31; iii.305(29; 126(35
Merline, i.417
 ———, English Romances of, i. 419-21
 Merlin's personality discussed, i.417-18
 Merlin: how he was begotten and born, i. 440-51; his life till he was 7 years old, i.451-9; he is found by Vortiger's messengers, and goes to court, i.460-7; tells Vortiger about his fall-down castle and the Dragons, i.467-74; is sought for by Pendragon's messengers, i.481-7; then by Pendragon himself, i.487-90; advises

MES

him and Uther till Perdragon's death, i. 490-6
 Meschieffes (or Meschines), Randulph, 4th Earl of Chester, i.278(161; 281(237
 Messene in Cicilee, i.283(293
 Methasula, iii.70(327
 Michaelmas is a well good time, i.36(17
 Michall, St., ii.462(1290; 468(1463; 474 (1602
 Michall, the archangel, ii.546(551
 Middleton, Sir Robert of, iii.247(326
 Midsummer Day, ii. 463(1324
 Mikle Brittain, the old name of England, i. 425(82
 Milan plate, scullcap of, ii.582(595
 Milfield, close by Flodden, i.219(146
 Milford-haven, i.212(8; i.323(127; iii.190 (29; 237(50; 351(781
 Millaine (knife), i.68(168; 69(180, from Milan
 Miller of the Mills of Dee, i.338(466
 Millers and mass priests only, left in England to oppose James IV., i.217(109
 Million, the King's daughter of, i.148(114
 Minerva, iii.305(34
 minstrels' rewards, i.151(210; gifts to, ii. 386(1226
 Mirth, the benefit of, ii.557(4
 Muthy drates, iii.171(42
 Mutton, Master, iii.192(58; 65(79
 Moberly, Sir Nicholas, iii.245(261
 Modred, the Scotch harper, i.246
 Molyneux, Sr William, i.230(361
 Momus, ii.53(16, 22; iii.306(48
 Monmouth, Geoffrey of i.409; called an impudent liar by Giraldus Cambrensis, i. 402, and William of Newburgh, i.410
 Montague, Sir William, iii.459(11
 Monteagle, Lord, i.227(296; 231(370
 Montgomery, Sir Thomas of, iii.245(274
 Mordred, Arthur's son, i.500(63; 501(77; 503(133; killed by his father, i.505(187, and wounds him to the death, i.505(192
 Mordred, iii.278(31
 Moresbye, Sir Christopher the, iii.247(314
 Morrell, Sir Charles, ii.14(203
 morris-dancers, i.38
 Morte Arthur, i.414
 Morton, i.294
 mother and son, marriage between, ii.340
 Mould, i.328(236
 Mould Castle, i.275(53
 Moulesdale, i.328(236
 Mountfort, young, ii.288(223
 Mountgomerye, Sir Hugh, ii.13(161; 14 (181; 14(202
 Mountrealt, i.274(42; 275(49, Montalt
 Mowbray, Thomas, ii.241(75

NOR

Mowswinge, Sir Bernard, ii.95(427; 104 (703, 706, 105(712; 106(743, 757; 107(772; 108(820; 110(869
 Moyne, Prince, i.423(28; 424(43; is made King, i.424(60; is defeated, i.426(114, and killed, i.429(202; i.472(1621; 477 (1759
 Moyses, iii.70(327
 Much, the Miller's Son, ii.207(84; 208(116, &c.; 209(142, &c.
 Mulciber, iii.306(45
 Mullenax, i.325(166, Molyneux
 Muckenfeild, Sir George, iii.247(317
 Murray, i.294
Murthring of Edward the fourth his Sonnes, iii.162
 Musgrave, Sir William, iii.247(315
 Musgrave, the Little, i.119
Musleboorowe Feild, i.123
 Muttrel, i.339(504, Montreuil in Picardy
 Nantwich, i.280(211; iii.248(359; 249 (367
 Nappy, a hound, iii.306(50
 nappy ale, good and stale, i.151(77
 Narcissus, iii. 306(41
 Nash, D.W., quoted, i.407 417
 Navarne, Prince of, ii.107(778
 Naworth Castle, i.294
 Nebuchadnezzar, iii.170(27
 Nennius, i.402,404,408; his account of Merlin, i.418
 Neptune, iii.305(23
 Nero, iii.172(61
 Nevill, Charles, Earl of Westmoreland, i. 296; 301(21 to 312(323
 Nevill, Lord, ii.193(65
 Neville, Sir John, iii.247(329
 Nevills, the, ever noble, i.226(284
 Newark, i.214(34
Newarke, ii.33
 Newarke, iii.259(645
Newcastle, came you not from, i.253
 Newcastle, ii.204(4,19; 206(70; 208(126; iii.459(4
 Newcastle-upon-Tyne, i.318(7; iii.407(80
 Newport, iii.193(92
 Nilus flood, i.288(450; the river Nile
 Nilus streams, ii.401(7
 Noram, i.222(205, Norham in Northumberland
 Norfolk, Duke of, i.292-3; ii.239(9, &c.; 240(44; 241(75, &c.; 242(105; iii. 244(225; iii.253(481; 257(604, 354 (849; 361(1019
 Normandy, iii.268(165
 Normandy, the King's daughter of, i.249(25

NOR

- North, the Rising in the, A.D. 1569, i.292
 North, Sir Thomas, iii.246(293)
 North Wales, i.39(14; i.40(28; ii.194(93)
 Northumberland, ii.192(48)
Northumberland betrayd by Douglas, ii. 217
 Northumberland, Earl of, i.293; i.215(69; ii.7(9; 8(41; 210(9; 214(121; 218 (8,12; iii.244(230)
 Norton, Francis, ii.213(85, &c.
 Norton, Kester, ii.211(61, &c.
 Norton, Master, ii.211(43; 212(51, &c.; 214(109; 216(157)
 Nortons, the four, i.299, or five, i.301 (17-18; i.306(157)
 Norway, i.499(33)
 Nottingham, i.16(27; i.24(97; i.40, note²; ii.149(15; 153(121; 237(227)
 Nottingham, Earl of, iii.417(311)
 Nottingham, Sheriff of, ii.235(185; 236 (213)
 Nottinghamshire, i.282(272)
Now the Springe is come, iii.230
Nutt browne Mayd, the, iii.174. Fr. *brune*, f. A browne wench, a lovely nut-browne woman. *Brunette*, a nut-browne girle. *Fille brunette est de nature gaye & nette*. Prov. A nut-browne girle is neat and blith by nature.—Cotgrave
- O Noble Festus*, iii.269
 oath by oak & ash & thorn, i.251(72)
 'Old Buskins for new Brooms,' ii.402(46)
Old Robin of Portingale, i.235
 Olyes, Erle, i.370(505)
 Orgarus, Earle, iii.488(42)
 Orkney, Isle of, i.219(132)
 Orleans, Duke of, ii.172(149)
 Orson, ii.396(92; 397(108,121)
 Osbaston, Sir Alexr., i.330(283)
 ostler, arrays Sir Gryme, i.382(910)
 Othello: 'Bell my Wiffe' quoted in, ii.320
 Our Lady's church at Rouen, iii.536(76)
 Owain Fynddu identical with Arthur, i.403
 Owen, Sir Christopher, iii.247(319)
 Oxenford, i. 510(40, Oxford
 Oxford, iii.316(1)
 Oxford, Erle, iii. 192(71; 253(484, 255 (548; 349(730
- Padua, iii.375(26; 377(71; 378(104; 380(144-146)
 Page, John, author of *The Siege of Rouen*, iii.541, note
 Painter's *Palace of Pleasure*, ii.303
 Palestine, i.284(324

PHE

- Pallyas, or Palyas, Sir Gryme of Garwicke's brother, i.370(523; 371(537, &c.; 373 (605; 374(644; 375(656, &c.; 394 (1288, &c.; 398(1415)
 Palmerin of England, ii.303
 Pan, iii.306(46; 530(15,21)
 Pandarus, iii.301(5)
 Pandora, iii.306(37)
 Papistry put down by Henry VIII., ii.316 (122)
 Paris, city, ii.173(163,180; iii.350(747)
 Paris work, armour of, i. 359(173)
 Paris, pride of Troy, ii.401(21)
 passports carried by travellers, ii. 150(48, 51
Patient Grissell, iii. 421
 Patricke, Robert, i. 276(99)
 Patrinton, Dicke; Queen Katherine's page, i. 39(24)
 Pauey, 5 Kings of, i.499(37)
 payment, ii.565(199; spiced bread?
 Pearson, C. H., on the historic Arthur, i. 401
 Peeres Payfforall, ii.568(257, Edward I.
 Peeres of Lee, iii.214(91)
 Pegasus, iii.305(25)
 Pegg,—short for Margrett.—ii.335(20)
 Pembroke, Earl of, i.283(306; 287(416; 288(441 (A.D. 1216)
 Pendragon, Constantine's third son, i.423 (30; 429(24; 430(243,254; 475(1722; 476(1751; 479(1836; 480(1850,1869; 487(2077, &c., to his crowning, i.492 (2240; and burial, 496(2371)
 Pepys quoted, ii.280
 Perceforest, ii.303
 'Perceval,' of Chrestien de Troyes, ii.302
 Percival, Sir, i.145(38; ii.423(194; 425 (257; 426(273; 451(1002; iii.278(26)
 Percy, Bp.: his Life, i. xxvii.; was the son of a grocer, i. Appx. vii.; his polishing of the *Child of EU*, i.132; of the *Heir of Lin*, i.174. See Forewords
 Percy, Earl, ii.7(6,17; 8(41; 9(55; 9(74; 10(84,85,91; 11(129; 12(137,148,149, passim; 196(155; 210(13. See *Earl Percy*
 Percy, Lord, ii.218(16,20; 225(197; 226 (214; iii.354(846; 361(1018)
 Percy, Sir Henry, iii.245(265)
 Percy, Sir Wm., i.226(273)
 Perkins's Table, iii.274(41)
 Perpoint, Sir Henry, i. 246(292)
 Persall, Sir Hugh, iii.252(460; 255(557)
 pestilence of 1349, ii.552
 petticoat, a girl's scarlet, ii.329(43)
 Pewnes, Monsenoure, iii.540(177)
 Phebus, i.227(308, 383(931; the sun

PHE

Phebus, iii.171(51)
 Phenix, Lord, iii.137(9,13; 138(34, passim
 Phero, the son of Sesostris, ii.304
 Philip Augustus, i.267; 282(281; returns home, i.284(337
 Philip II. of Spain, i.298
 Phillis, ii.202(30,40
 Phillis, iii. 307(64
Phyllis, hoe! ii.1507
 Phoebus, iii.307(78
 Phylar, Sir, ii.109(830
 Pilkinton, Sir Thomas, iii. 248(334
 Pironius, iif. 172(65
 Pinkie, or Pinkie Cleugh, the battle of, i. 123(7
 Platin, Claude, his prologue to *L'Histoire de Giglan*, ii.414
 plovers at Bessie's wedding feast, ii.285(147
 plucked up his heart, ii.460(1250
 Pluto, iii.124(7
 Plymouth, iii.454(12
 Poetry, the divisions of, ii.522, col. 2
 Poitiers, ii.199(240; 200(255
 Pomfret, i.222(209
 Pond, ii.24(5
 Pontfracte Castle, iii.164(30
 poor palmers fed by Guy's wife, ii.344(487
 Pope Innocent III., i.285(371; 286(382
 Pope Joan, ii.402(52
 Pope John, ii 146(17
Pore man and the Kinge, iii.195
 Port de Pounte of Rouen, iii.536(75
 Port Hillary, iii.525(67; iii.540(178
 Porte Denys, iii.538(125
 Port Martynvace, of Rouen, iii.539(162
 porter, a proud, i.63-40
 porters, the King's, i.591-2
 Portingale, Old Robin of, i.235
 Portingall, ii.397(126; iii.410(155
 possett, a poisoned, ii.266(10
 Pott, Thomas a, iii.138(25,26, passim
Potte, Thomas of, iii.135
 Pount Tornere ii.466(1403
 Pountlarge, iii.534(25
 pouthered beeffe, iii.126(50; salted beef
 Powis lands, i.282(267
 Powles, ii.402(31, St. Paul's Cathedral
 Powtrel, Johannes, ii.523, col. 1
 Poynings, Sir Edward, i. 213(20
 Poynton, Warreyn of, i.277(137
 Prester John, iii.243(197
Pretty Nannie, i.255
 pride, ii.324(55
Princes, the fall of, iii.168
 Prinsamoure, Earl, ii.341(16; 342(40; 348(201; 358(466; 364(614; 373(867; breaks his neck, 388(1264

ROB

Prophecye, A, iii.371
 Proserpine, iii.124(7; 305(18
 prostitution, open, in old England, i.443(660; 445(726
Proud were the Spencers, iii.478
 Pulton Abbey, i.265; founded, i.281(231
 purveyors, the fear of, ii.552,555
 Pyramus, iii.434(75
 Pyrrhus, iii.172(65

 Ragecrosse, i.316; Rouge Croix
 Rainborne, Guy's son, ii.529(85
 Raines (Rennes), shirts of, i.373(610; 378(779
 Randle, Earl of Chester, i.259
 Randle II., i.260-3; 278(161
 Randle III., i.264-272; 281(251
 Raphe, son of Eginion ap David, i.276(92
 Ratcliffe, Sir Alex. i.336(425,429,434
 Ratcliffe, Sir Richard, iii.247(305; 257(609
 Ratcliffe, Sir Thomas, iii.247(308
 Ratcliffe, Sir William, iii.247(307
 Ratcliffe, the royall, i.331(285
 Ravengaard, i.166(2
 Read, Captain, i.295; 302(44
 Rebbye, Sir Ralph, ii.14(195
 Red Roger (of Doncaster), i.57(81
 Red Rose (Edward V.), iii.189(7
 Ree, Isle of, ii.145(2
 Rhenish wine, i.188(163
 Rice ap Thomas, Sir, i.331(289; iii.353(819; 358(939; 359(955; 361(1015
 Richard, Duke of Gloucester, iii.163(5; 164(41; 165(57
 Richard, second Earl of Chester, i.278(149
 Richard I., iii.173(81
 Richard II., ii.244(179; 551-3; his death, i.213(32
 Richard III., ii.256(29, &c.; 257(80; ii.313(21; iii.237(47; 238(74; 321(5; 322(23,25
 Richmond, Erle of (Henry VII.), i.214(36; iii.166(89,101; 192(65; 192(70,73, 77; 193(81, passim; 241(145; 323(43; 324(90; 328(187; 348(699; 356(898; 328(941
 Richmond in Yorkshire, i.293
 Ridley Hall, Cheshire, i.338(483, note
 Ridley, Sir Archibald, iii.245(260
 rings for a tournament, ii.382(1121
 Ringwood, iii.126(47
 Ripon, i.293
Risinge in the Northe, ii.210
 Rivers, ii.24(6
 Rizzio, Lord David, ii.261(15
 Robbye, Sir Ralphe, iii.246(279

ROB

- Robert, Lybius's squire, ii.408,411
 Robin Hood: Introduction to the Ballads, discussing his personality and character, i.1
Robin Hood, a Beggar, and the Three Squires, i.13
Robin Hood and the Butcher, i.19
Robin Hood and the Pindar of Wakefield, i.32
Robin Hoode and Queene Katherine, i.37
Robin Hoode his death, i.50
Robine Hood and Fryer Tucke, i.26
Robin Hood and the Beggar, verses quoted from, i.14, note 1
 Robin Hood, ii.228(11; 229(44; 231(85 &c.; 232(109, &c.; 233(119, &c.; 234(139, &c.; 235(175, &c.; iii.120(5; 121(44
 Rochelle, ii.145(3
 Rodger, Sir, ii.88(230; 89(247,257.90(272; 90(278; 90(286,289,293; 91(298; 91(313,322; 92(325, *passim*
 Rodingham, i.165(9
 Roger of Doncaster, Sir, i.50
 Romans, ii.91(316. Romance? Norman-French.
 Romance; a knight reading books of in a window, i.374(627-8
 Rome, i.500(57; ii.146(22; 366(667,685; ii.367(712; iii.170(30; (171(60; 172(65; iii.272(19; 507(1; 510(92; 511(110, 113; 534(13
 Rome, no cuckolds in, ii.402(51
 Rome, the Court of, ii.199(248
 rooks, the blissful noise of, i.383(923
 Rome, the great booke of, ii.371(821
Rose of England, the, iii.187
 Rose, the (Henry VII.), iii.190(30
 Rosebury Castle, iii.459(5
 Roses, White and Red, ii.314
 Rosse, Sir Richard, iii.246(287
 Roswal and Lillian, referred to, i.181
 Rotherham, i.229(343
 Rouen, the Siege of, iii.532
 Round Table, Arthur's, i.61(7; 84(8; 498(13; ii.58(13; 475(1643; 479(1769; whence the French *Table ronde*. Open house-keeping; also a merrie meeting or feasting together of friends and allies. —Cotgrave
 Round Table, the Roll of, brought to Glamorganshire in the 12th century, i.407
 Rous, John (Rosze, ii.522, col. 1), on Guy of Warwick, ii.515
 Rowland and Oliver, iii.170(35
 Rowlands, Samuel; his 'Guy and Amaranth,' ii.136, and 'Guy and Colebrande,' ii.509, 514

SAT

- Rowne, iii.534(28, Rouen
 Royster, iii.126(47
 Royston downes, iii.317(30
 Rozamund, Lady, iii.142(161
 Ruisburn, Guy's son, ii.520
 Rumford, ii.281(22; 283(90
 russett gowne, ii.569(282
 russett, gray, ii.281(14
 Rusticien de Pise, i.411
 Ryalas, Sir, i.74
 Ryder, Sir Robert, iii.246(297
 Sabine, iii.439(63; 440(70
 Sabyn, Dame, ii.515
 Saint Andrew's, Ronen, iii.535(72
 St. Andrew's day, iii.219(90
 St. Andrew's, the Bishop of, i.141(108
 St. Austin's, the Abbot of, iii.152(23
 St. Barnard's Mount, i.499(47
 St. Bartholomew's Hospital, ii.186(55
 St. David's land, iii.243(209
 St. Geruais, abbey of, at Rouen, iii.536(73
 St. George, iii.236(5
 St. George's Day, i.41(44, April 23
 St. Gyle, sworn by, ii.438(618; 445(807
 St. Hillary's church at Rouen, iii.535(67,69; 540(178
 St. Jame, ii.562(132; 592(860 See *Jame*
 St. John, sworn by, ii.435(536; 558(34; 559(63
 St. Jollye, ii.564(170; 581(572
 St. Katherine's, Rouen, iii.536(77
 St. Leonard, ii.74(421
 St. Martine, ii.70(325
 St. Matthew's, Rouen, iii.536(79
 St. Michael's, Martyrvyle, iii.536(82
 St. Patrick's Church, iii.219(89; 220(125; 221(129
 St. Paul's, Martyrvyle, iii.536(83
 St. Swithin's church at Winchester, ii.541(632. See Notes to vol. ii.
 Saladin, the great Souldan, i.283(285; 284(343; iii.173(82
 Saladine, the Egyptian Souldan, i.289(465
 Salamon, i.148(110; iii.70(333; 127(3; Solomon
 Salisbury, i.434(385; 436(445; 480(1849; iii.258(104; 321(8; 322(40; 336(400
 Salisbury, Countess of, iii.460(32; 461(62
 Salisbury, Earl of, iii.539(167; 459(10
 Samson, iii.170(19
 Samuel, iii.70(330
 Sandwich, i.500(69
 Sanford, Sir Roger, iii.245(275
 Sarasins, iii.171(58
 Sathans, iii.73(395

SAT

- Sattin, or Sydon, the country of, ii.353(345; 354(357; Edmond, king of, 355(402; 362(582; 382(1118; 387(1242
 Savage, Christopher, i.229(347
 Savage, Sir Christopher, i.324(144; 326(181
 Savage, Sir Gilbert, i.212
 Sauage, Sir John, i.276(81; iii.252(459; 255(549; 324(77; 330(233; 337(408; 343(569; 344(597; 353(815; 358(933; 359(953
 Sauage, William, iii. 211(11; 213(53; 214(92
 Sauyl, Sir Henrie, his Tacitus, ii.524, col. 2
 Saxons, i.499(29
 scarlet coats, ii.315(70
 Scarlett, Will, i.15(23; i.40(32; ii.229(51
 schoolmasterz writing in school, ii.503(19, 49
Scottish Feilde, a short alliterative Chronicle in honour of the Stanleys, i.199
 Scotland, i.189(197; 499(32; iii.217(34 219(91
 Scott, John, 7th Earl of Chester, i.290(500, 511
 Scottish brand, ii.330(69
 Scotts, a fling at the, ii.43
 Scroope, iii.431(9; 432(13, 27, passim
Scroope and Browne, iii.431
 Scroope, Lord, i.226(279; iii.354(855
Seege of Roune, iii.532
 Setter of the Lords, iii.264(16
 Severn, origin of name of, iii.440(69
 Seville, Duke of, ii.109(830
 shanks, men with small, can't charge, ii. 292(55, 62
 Sheffield Castle, iii.324(84; 337(419
 Shene, James IV.'s body placed there, i.209
 shepherd, the next cleverest to David, i.514(155-66
 Sheriff of Nottingham, i.17(50, &c.; 19(9 — his wife, i.21(37; 25(113
 Sherwood Forest, i.45(140; ii.148(4; 152(95; 157(236; iii.108(160
 Shilbrooke, Guarren Vernon of, i.275(70
 shoes, knights to win their, ii.77(504; 123(1232
 Shrewsbury, i.323(130; ii.193(67; iii.191(56; 192(57; 351(784; 353(831; 354(833; 354(843
 Shrewsbury, Earl of, i.129(10; 215(67; 329(256; 330(274; 336(420; iii.243(203; 244(228; 253(482; 337(432
 Sidney, Sir Philip, ii.522, col. 1
 Sidon, i.283(291
Sil'ye Siluan, the, iii.419
 Simon, iii.411(169
 Simon, Peter, iii.405(44, 45

STA

- Sinadone, the Lady of, ii.442(166; 425(254; 472(1552; 480(1793; appears as a worme, 493(2134; turns to a fair woman, 494(2156; marries Lybius, ii. 497
 Sinadowne city, ii.433(489; 462(1302; described, ii.473(1572
Sir Aldingar, i.165
 Sir Bredbeddle, ii.71(340, 361; 73(415; 74(442; 75(451; 77(511 See *Green Knight*
 Sir Degre, i.344. See *Degree*
Sir John Butler, iii.205; 211(3; 212(38, 40; 214(76, 77
 Sir Kay, ii.64(154, 160. See *Kay*
Sir Lambewell, i.142. See *Lambewell*
Sir Lancelott of Dulake, i.84. See *Lancelot*
Sir Lionell, i.74
 Sir Otes de Lile, ii.454(1069 to 462(1312
 Sir Rice ap Thomas, iii.191(53
Sir Triamore, ii.78
 Sirya, the King of, ii.401(13
 Si-lye, iii.103(21,25; passim
Sittinge Late, ii.400
 Six can do more than three, ii.230(76
 Skinner, Gregory, Lord Mayor of London in 1451, iii.532
 Skipton in Craven, i.223(223
 Smith, Toulmin, his opinion on *John de Reeve*, ii.557
 smock, shift, of white silk, ii.329(51
 smoke in olden houses, ii.150(40. See 'charcoal fire'
 Smyth, Sir Ralph, iii.245(270
 Snoden in Wales, the forrest of, i.338(469
 Solomon, iii.131(90,93 See *Salamon*
 Somnus, iii.306(43
Songs of Sheparden, iii.303
Sonnes of Edward the ffourth, murdering of the, iii.162
 Southampton, ii.167(35
 Southwarke, i.325(163
 Soyne, iii.539(153, Seine
 Spain, iii.272(19
Spanish Ladies Love, the, iii.393
 Spencer, Hugh, iii.483(104,110; 484(124; 484(130,134,148
 Spencer, Sir Hugh, ii.290(4
 Spencer, Sir John, iii.245(257
 Spencers, iii.479(1; 482(79
 Squier, The, iii.263
 Stafford, i.275(75; iii.249(368,370; 356(889,895,897
 Stafford, Sir Humphrey, iii.246(295
 Staffordshire, i.282(272
 stale ale good, ii.151(77
 Stanley, iii. 214(91; 321(9; 322(25
 Stanley family, poems in honour of, i.199

STA

- Stanley, Lord, iii.237(59; 238(81; 239(97,107; 248(345; 250(405; 250(413, 420; 251(450; 252(465; 253(498; 258(636
 Stanley, Sir Edward, i.223(220; 324(151; 328(230,233
 Stanley, Sir Edwd., made Lord Mounteagle, i.334(375; iii.250(422; 324(73; 336(387; 342(559; 344(609; 353(817
 Stanley, Sir Humphrey, iii.252(461
 Stanley, James, Bp. of Ely, i.223(213; iii. 324(75
 Stanley, Sir John, i.223(226; 227(294; 325(155; 334(377
 Stanley, Sir William, iii.192(67; 238(67; 248(357; 249(366; 250(421; 252(469; 256(565; 324(65; 333(309; 342(539; 344(589; 351(777; 352(809; 353(821; 355(870; 356(890; 358(951; 363(1072
 Stapleton, Sir Bryan of, iii.246(302
 Stapleton, Sir William, iii.246(303
 statue, wooden, Christabell likened to, ii.378(1015
 Stephen, King, i.261; 279(165
 Steven, Sir, i.112(116
 Steward, John, ii.504(63; 505(103; 506(117
 Stewart, John, iii.216(6; 217(33,41,43; *passim*
 Stewart, Will & John, iii.215
 Stewart, William, iii.216(6; 220(111; 221(137; 222(157, 169; *passim*
 Stewkley the romanist, i.296
 stirrups of silke of ynd, ii.68(273; of wood, ii.559(54; 583(637
 Stone, iii.249(367, 388; 356(890; 337(911
 stone, to pitch the, i.332(316; i.97, note 4, a game
 And when knyghtes went to put the *stane*, Twelve fote over thaim everylike ane, He kest it als a balle.—Sir Isumbras, p. 113, l. 606-8 (Thornton Romances)
 Stony Stratford, iii.163(11
 Stopport, Nicholas of, i.277(133
 Store, a river called, iii.439(49
 Strange, Lord, iii.239(98; 240(117; 241(151; 242(189; 253(499; 254(505; 329(214; 336(383; 342(548; 344(601; 352(806,807; 355(865,882; 359(967
 Stratford-the-bow, ii.281(17
 Strawberry Castle, iii.139(54-72; 144(206
 Strench, Johannes, ii.523, col. 1
 Sturley, Sir Robert, iii.246(289
Such a Lover am I, iii.542
 such more, ii.591(832, such another, another like it

TER

- supper, a villan's, ii.563(137-143
 suppers: John de Reeue's bad and good ones, ii.574-9. See Bondman essay in vol. ii.
 Surrey, Earl of, Lord-Lieutenant of the North, i.201, 204; 215(59; 225(260; 226(278
 Surrey, Earl of, i.318(3; 335(400,406; iii. 244(226; 354(851
 Susanna, ii.532(161
 Swaley, Sir Robert, iii.246(301
 Swallow, ii.25(9
 swans for supper, ii.576(464
 Swanscomb Hill, iii.153(44
 Swethland, i.499(35; Sweden
 swooning, knights, ii.375(910
 sword, title-deeds left in pledge for the loan of a, i.372(586
 sworn brethren, i.355(46; 369(489; 388(1098; ii.516(15
 Swynard, James, ii.221(81
 Sybill o the side, ii.204(5; 206(76
 Syria, i.283(299
 Syria, Sir Terry of, ii.109(839
 Syria, Sowdan of, iii.243(198
 syrups at supper, ii.578(507
 Table Round, the, i.498(13. See *Round Table*
 Talbott, i.326(195; iii.194(111
 Talbott, Sir Gilbert, ii.255(553; 324(83; 330(234; 337(422, 425; 343(569; 351(787; 353(813
 Tamburlaine, iii.172(69
 Tamworth, iii.250(411
 Tarqine, Lancelot's opponent, i.86(46,
 Tarto, ii.145(9
 Tasso's Armida & Rinaldo, ii.408
 Te Deum, ii.542(442
 Tearne Wadling, i.104; 108(33; 'Tarn Wadling . . . has been for the last ten years a wide meadow grazed by hundreds of sheep.—J. S. Glennie, *Arthurian Scotland*, in *Macmillan's Mag.*, December, 1867, p. 167, col. 2.
 Teddelyne, dwarf, ii.421(145; 423(196; 424(226; 427(298; 433(484; Teod-line, 434(514; 438(607; 447(883
 Tegan Eurvron, the wife of Caradog with the strong arm, ii.302
 Tempest, Sir Richard, iii.247(322
 Tempest, Sir William, iii.247(321
 tennis, i.89; 95(140; 96(173
 tennis balls sent by the Dauphin to Henry V. ii. 167(25; ii.161
 Termagant, the fiend, ii.467(1409
 Terrey of Gorwaine, Sir, ii.527(26
 Terouenne, the siege of, i.201

TEY

Teynemouth, John of, extract from, iii.544
 Teynosa, the Bastard of, iii.540(179)
 Thames, iii.403(4; 405(68; 417(284
The Child of Ell, i.132
The Emperour & Childe (or Valentine and Orson), ii.390
The Heir of Lin, i.174
The Kinge enjoyes his rights againe, ii.24
The Marriage of Sir Gawaine, i.103
The Nuttbrowne Mayd, iii.174. See *Nuttbrowne*
The rose of Englande, iii.187
The Turke and Gowin, i.88
 Thetis, iii. 306(36
 Thisbye, iii.434(76
 Thomas a Pott, iii.138(25, 26. *passim*
Thomas Lord Cromwell, i.127
Thomas of Potte, iii.135
 Thribald, Sir Percival, iii. 258(625
 Thribald, Sir Robert, iii.246(284
 Thyrsis, iii.307(62
 Till, the river, i.204-5
 Tirrells, James, iii.165(59
 Tiuydale, ii 9(53; 205(27
To Oxfforde, iii.315
 Tocstaffe Parke, i.328(217; Toxteth Park
 Tom-a-Bedlams, i.241(3
 Tom of Bedlam, iii.124(8
 Tournay, i.314; 319(15; taken, i.201-2; 336(417
 Towder. Saint, i.231(368; see i.226, note 2
 Tower of London, iii.323(64; iii. 338(434; 355(883; fatal to princes and queens, ii. 318(176-182
 Townley, i.325(161
 Trafford, the trustye, i.331(286
 Trent, William a, ii.230(70, 71
 Tresilian, ii.146(39
Triamore, Sir, ii.78
 Triamore, Sir, ii.96(458; 102(633; 104(691, &c.; 105(713, &c.; 106(742, &c.; 107(781, &c.; 108(811, &c.; 109(833, &c.; 110(852, &c.; 111(855, &c.; 112(919, &c.; 115(1005, &c.; 116(1041 &c.; 117(1054, &c.; 118(1078, &c.; 119(1110, &c.; 120(1141, &c.; 121(1177; 122(1208, &c.; 123(1228, &c.; 124(1262, &c.; 125(1292, &c.; 126(1322, &c.; 127(1351 &c; 128(1378, &c.; 129(1405, &c.; 130(1444, &c.; 131(1465, &c.; 132(1495, &c.; 133(1531; 135(1585.
Tribe of Banbury, the, ii.39
 Tristan, the romance of, i.411
 Tristram, Sir, i.62(26; 113(122; iii.172(74
 Troilus, iii. 301(2
 Troy, iii.502(1,6; 534(16

VYA

Troy, Hector, of, iii.170(33
 Troylus of Troy, iii.172(68
 Tuck, Fryer, i.26; 40(33
 Tunstall, Sir Robert, iii.252(457
 Turkoys bowes, ii.458(1193; Turkish bows
 Turhay, town of, i.339(501
 Turwin, town of, i.339(501; i.318(11; besieged by Henry VIII., i.216(78
 Tutbury, i.293
 Tuxburye, ii.193(58
 Tweed, ii.9(54
 twenty-nine pence, why King John was worth, i.512(102-6
 Tyburn, ii.146(40
 Tyler, Wat; his rebellion, ii.553,556
 Tyntagill, the castle of, i.498(21
 Tyranna, i.283(300
 Tyre, i.283(291
 Tyrry, Sir, Guy's sworn brother, ii.516
 Tyvidale, ii.205(27
 Unicorn, iii.194(112
 Upsall, Lord Scrope of, iii.244(246
 Urien, i.401
 Vrmounde (Ormonde), Erle of, iii.538(139
 Vrsin, ii.398(149, Orson
 Vther, Constantine's 2nd son, i.423(30; 429(211; 430(243,254; i.475(1723; 477(1768; 480(1850,1869; 484(1997; 486(2060, &c. 493(2288; to 495(2366; 498(22
 Utridge, Sir Robert, iii.246(298
 Valentine and Orsin, ii.390
 Vaughan, Earle of, ii.192(49
 Vaughan, Sir Thomas, iii.164(25
 Venables, Gilbert, i.277(125
 Venables, Peter, i.277(129
 Venice, ii.244(172
 venison pasty, ii.151(87
 Venus, ii.27(3; 54(46; iii.125(28
 Vernon, i.275(60
 Vernon, Guarren, of Shibbrooke, i.275(69
 villans, condition of, in England in the 15th century, ii.551-6. See *Bondman* essay in vol. ii.
 Vivers, ii.41(10
 Volens, Sir, iii.172(67
 Vortiger, Sir, King Constantine's steward, i. 424(48, 61; 425(87; 426(135; is made King of England, i.430(236, and rules till he is burnt, i.480(1858
 Vulcan iii.125(23-29-32
 Vulcan's head of horn, ii.402(33
 Vyardus, daughter of Constantine, Emperor of Rome, ii.368(736

VYL

- Vylett, Sir Arthore's daughter, ii.442(724)
- Wace's Brut, i.410
- Wadington, William of, ii.407
- Wakefield, the Pindar of, i.32
- Wales, ii.332(130)
- Wales, North, ii.194(93)
- Wallingford, i.289(491); ii.529(86)
- Walsingham, ii.293(88); iii.471(1); 526(4, 5)
- Walsingham, our Lady at, i.316
- Walter of Exeter, ii.510
- Warburton, Rowland, iii.353(830); 354(837)
- Warburton of Cheshire, i.331(287)
- Ward, Sir Richard, iii.247(325)
- Ward, Sir William, iii.245(259)
- Wardley, Sir Martin of the, iii.246(285)
- Warreyn, Earl of Surrey, i.277(139)
- Warrington, iii.211(1)
- Warwick, ii.201(21); ii.543(471,480); ii.546(562); 549(624)
- Warwick Castle, ii.201(6,13. On the Custody of the "le Guy Warwyke Swerde," see Ashmole MS. 1115 (247)
- Warwick, Earl of, i.293; ii.215(149); iii.462(68, 77, 85)
- Warwick, Guy of, iii.171(44)
- washing before meals, ii.571(338)
- Waters, Childe (a beast), ii.271
- wedding-feast, ii.285
- Weddyng of Syr Gawen and Dame Ragnell*, quotations from, i.106-112,114-15, 117
- Werkoppe, Sir William, i.229(341)
- Westchester, i.39(14); i.40(28); 328(225)
- Westchester Monastery, i.278(146)
- Westerton town, i.80(20); 81(36)
- Westhardin, i.328(231, Hawarden?)
- Westminster, ii.153(122)
- Westminster hall, ii.185(30); 187(81)
- Westmoreland, Earl of, i.293; ii.210(5); 214(117); 216(153); iii.244(231)
- Wethersby, ii.214(113)
- whale's bone, white as, iii.20(16)
- what devill is that flor thee? What the devil is that to you? ii.588(755)
- wheat, sold by the King's bondman, ii.563(144)
- When first I sawe*, ii.48
- When Love with unconfinde*, ii.17
- Whifeild, Peter a, ii.204(1)
- White, Christopher, iii.495(4, 23); 496(43, 47); 497(53, 65); 498(83, 92, 95)
- White Rose and Red*, ii.312
- Whitehall, ii.25(25)
- Whitsontyde, playes att, iii.121(25)
- Whitworth, Kattye, i.243(8)
- Wickam, ii.41(26)

ZOU

- Wilbraham, i.275(74)
- Wilkslye, i.280(224)
- Will Stewart & John*, iii.215
- William, duke of Normandy, iii.152(1)
- William of Malmesbury on Arthur, i.402
- William the Conqueror*, iii.151
- Willmarley, Sir John, iii.246(300)
- Willowbye, Lord, i.329(258); 330(278)
- Winchester, i.279(194); 424(55); 428(195); 476(1734-52); 477(1772); 501(79); ii.541(431); 548(616)
- Winchester, taken by the Dauphin Louis, i.287(407)
- windows and doors to be barred against fiends, i.446(758)
- Windsor, ii.581(565); iii.198(34, 37); 199(44, 50, 51)
- Windsor, taken by the Dauphin Louis, i.287(408)
- Windsor Forest, ii.201(1)
- Winglanye, or Winglayne, the Lady, i.354(9, &c., 374(647); 396(1339); 397(1390); has ten children, i.399(1452)
- "Winglayne," Welsh *gwynn glain*, Gaelic and Irish, *fionn glan*=pure milk-white, fair to perfection, thoroughly sincere and true.—Broekie
- Winging of Cales* (Cadiz), iii.453
- Witherington, ii.10(94, 99); 14(197)
- Woller, i.225, note 7
- women, the one thing they desire, i.111(424); 112(104)
- women: what are they? iii.529
- woodcocke, beware thine eye: Proverb, 1. 44(104, and note 1)
- woodcocks for supper, ii.576(462)
- Woolsley Bridge, iii.249(391)
- Worcester, ii.193(57)
- World is changed*, ii.37
- Worrall, ii.454(1074)
- 'Wright's Chaste Wife,' ii.303
- y, infinitive, ii.412
- Yalle, or Yale, i.281(244)
- yeomen, English, the state of, in 1547, ii.180
- York and Lancaster, ii.314(45-6)
- York Castle, ii.215(151)
- York, the Archbishop of, iii.152(7)
- York, Duke of, ii.171(117,121)
- York, Lord of, ii.196(161)
- Younge Andrew*, ii.327
- Younge Cloudeslee*, iii.102
- Zouch, Lord, iii.244(233)

LONDON: PRINTED BY
SPOTTISWOODE AND CO., NEW-STREET SQUARE
AND PARLIAMENT STREET

2

Number 2

Early English Text Society.

The Subscription is £1 1s. a year, and another for the *Extra Series* of re-edited works, due in advance on the 1st of JANUARY, and should be paid either to the Society's Account at the Union Bank of London, 14 Argyll Place, Regent Street, W., or by post-office order (made payable to the Chief Office, London) to the Hon. Secretary, HENRY B. WHEATLEY, Esq., 53 Berners Street, London, W.

List of Works published in 1867, by the Early English Text Society.

24. HYMNS TO THE VIRGIN AND CHRIST; THE PARLIAMENT OF DEVILS; AND OTHER RELIGIOUS POEMS. Edited from the Lambeth MS. 853, by F. J. Furnivall, Esq., M.A. 3s.
25. THE STATIONS OF ROME, AND THE PILGRIMS' SEA-VOYAGE AND SEA-SICKNESS, WITH CLENE MAYDENHOD. Edited from the Vernon and Porkington MSS., &c., by F. J. Furnivall, Esq., M.A. 1s.
26. RELIGIOUS PIECES IN PROSE AND VERSE. Edited from Robert Thornton's MS. (ab. 1440 A.D.) by the Rev. G. G. Perry, M.A. 2s.
27. LEVIN'S MANIPULUS, 1570; the earliest Rhyming Dictionary. To be Edited by Henry B. Wheatley, Esq. 12s.
28. LANGLANDE'S VISION OF PIERS PLOWMAN: the earliest Version from the earliest MS. Collated throughout with three other MSS. of the same (or earliest) type. To be edited by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 7s.
29. ENGLISH GILDS, THEIR STATUTES AND CUSTOMS: with an Introduction, and an Appendix of translated Statutes. To be edited from the MSS. 1389 A.D. by Toulmin Smith, Esq. Part I. [In the Press.]
30. PIERS PLOWMAN'S CREDE. To be edited from the MSS. by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 2s.

List of Books for 1868.

31. MIRK'S DUTIES OF A PARISH PRIEST, IN VERSE. Edited for the first time from the MSS. in the British Museum and Bodleian Libraries (ab. 1420 A.D.) by E. Peacock, Esq. 4s.
32. THE BABEES BOKE, THE CHILDREN'S BOOK, URBANITATIS, THE BOKES OF NORTURE OF JOHN RUSSELL AND HUGH RHODES, THE BOKES OF KERUYNG, CORTASYE, AND DEMEANOUR, &c., with some French and Latin Poems on like subjects. Edited from Harleian and other MSS. by F. J. Furnivall, Esq. M.A. 15s.
33. THE KNIGHT DE LA TOUR LANDRY, 1372: a Father's book for his daughters. Edited from the Harleian MSS. 1764, by Thomas Wright, Esq., M.A., and Mr. William Rössiter. 8s.
34. EARLY ENGLISH HOMILIES (ab. 1220-30 A.D.) from unique MSS. in Lambeth and Trinity College, Cambridge, Libraries. To be edited by R. Morris, Esq. [In the Press.]
35. SIR DAVID LYNDESAY'S WORKS. Part III. The Historie & Testament of Squyer Meldrum. Edited by F. Hall, Esq., D.C.L. [In the Press.]
36. MERLIN. Part III. To be edited by H. B. Wheatley, Esq. [In the Press.]

Proposed List for 1869.

- VARIOUS POEMS RELATING TO SIR GAWAINE. To be edited from the MSS. by R. Morris, Esq.
- PALLADIUS ON HUSBONDRIE; the earliest English Poem on Husbandry. To be edited from the unique MS. in Colchester Castle (ab. 1425 A.D.) by the Rev. Barton Lodge, M.A. Part I. [In the Press.]
- THE RULE OF ST. BENET. Four Texts: 1. Anglo-Saxon and 2. Semi-Saxon Prose: 3. Northern Verse of the 15th Century: 4. Fox's Prose Version, 1530. Edited from MSS. and a black letter copy, by Richard Morris, Esq. [In the Press.]
- THE ALLITERATIVE ROMANCE OF THE DESTRUCTION OF TROY. Translated from Guido de COLONNA. To be edited from the unique MS. in the Hunterian Museum, Glasgow, by the Rev. G. A. Panton. [In the Press.]
- SIR DAVID LYNDESAY'S WORKS. Part IV. To be edited by F. Hall, Esq., D.C.L. [In the Press.]
- POEMS ON MANNERS AND MORALS, in the Northern Dialect, from a unique MS. in the Cambridge University Library. Two Texts. [In the Press.]

Extra Series. (8vo. £1 1s.; Large Papers, £2 2s.)

1867. I. WILLIAM OF PALERNE, and a Fragment of an Alliterative Romance of Alexander. Re-edited from the unique MSS. by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. [In the Press.]
- II. CHAUCER'S PROSE WORKS. To be edited from the MSS. by R. Morris, Esq. Part I.
1868. III. CAXTON'S BOOK OF COURTESY, with two MS. copies of the same Treatise. Edited by F. J. Furnivall, Esq., M.A. [Ready.]
- IV. HAVBLOK THE DANE. Re-edited from the unique MS. by the Rev. W. W. SKEAT, M.A.
- V. CHAUCER'S PROSE WORKS. Part II. Edited by R. Morris, Esq.

LONDON: N. TRÜBNER & CO., 60 PATERNOSTER ROW,
EDINBURGH: T. G. STEVENSON, 22 SOUTH FREDERICK STREET.
GLASGOW: OGLE & CO., 1 ROYAL EXCHANGE SQUARE.
BERLIN: ASHER & CO., UNTER DEN LINDEN, 20.
NEW YORK: C. SCRIBNER & CO. LEYPOLDT & HOLT.
PHILADELPHIA: J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.
BOSTON: DUTTON & CO.

Bishop Percy's Folio Manuscript.

This long hidden MS., the foundation of the celebrated PERCY'S RELIQUES, is printed in 4 Volumes (BALLADS and ROMANCES, 3 Vols. ; LOOSE and HUMOROUS SONGS, 1 Vol.) of the following sizes, and at the following Subscriptions :

	£	s.
Large 4to., on Whatman's Best Ribbed Paper, made expressly by Messrs. Balston of Maidstone for this edition. (65 copies printed : 50 for Subscribers, 10 for Public Libraries, 5 for the Editors).....	10	10
Extra Royal 8vo., on Whatman's Best Ribbed Paper. (50 copies printed : 23 on sale)	5	5

The following editions of the BALLADS and ROMANCES, 3 vols., half-roan, cloth sides, are on sale to the public, through the Trade, at the prices under-mentioned :

Extra Demy 8vo., on Whatman's Ribbed Paper. (250 copies printed : 125 on sale)	3	15
Demy 8vo. (1,000 copies printed : 375 on sale).....	2	2

Subscriptions should be sent, with Subscribers' Names, to F. J. FURNIVALL, Esq., 3 Old Square, Lincoln's Inn, W.C., Post Office Orders being made payable to him at the Chancery Lane Post Office, and Cheques to THE PERCY MANUSCRIPT FUND, crossed 'Union Bank, Chancery Lane.' Messrs. Trübner & Co. also receive Subscriptions.





